

Chapter 1901 - Nine Eyes All Opened

Chapter 1901: Nine Eyes All Opened

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's expression was gloomy, all of the nine eyes on his body had opened, all staring at Zhang Ruochen, causing goosebumps to form.

Boom!

A surge of Saint Path Precepts rushed out from the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's body, and densely covering the sky as a terrifying aura spread across in all directions. Those with a weaker cultivation base could not help but be compelled to kneel and worship him.

“Path's Anterior.”

Zhang Ruochen's expression changed a little, and the look in his eyes became much grimmer.

He could tell that the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was breaking through his cultivation base and truly enter the realm of Path's Anterior.

A Supreme Saint was the king among Saint Kings. Upon reaching the realm of Path's Anterior, one could be called a quasi-Supreme Saint, and the aura it exuded was indeed not something ordinary persons could withstand.

There was no doubt that the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord had already reached the peak of Heaven's Reach realm, and was just a step away from Path's Anterior realm.

Under extreme pressure, he had finally passed the step successfully.

Speaking of which, it was Zhang Ruochen who had helped him.

At this point, he was no longer an elite comparable to a Path's Anterior's powerhouse but a bona fide powerhouse of the Path's Anterior realm, and his combat power was by no means comparable to the ordinary Path's Anterior elites.

When he opened his mouth and inhaled, the blood Qi of the bodies of the dead on the ground of the Black Wilderness all converged toward him, forming a whirlwind that was sucked into his abdomen.

With him at the center, a devastating blood Qi revolved into a massive vortex, exuding power that could destroy heaven and earth. The Black Wilderness was rent asunder as if the end was nigh.

“Retreat.”

Knowing that it was imprisoned to stop the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, Zhang Ruochen asked everyone to fall back.

Once sucked into the blood vortex, even a Saint King would be drained dry of blood in an instant, becoming a tonic for the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord to break through his cultivation.

“Dimensional Collapse.”

Zhang Ruochen unleashed a secret space technique.

Boom!

The space in the area he pointed at suddenly collapsed, but before it could expand, it was smothered by the blood vortex and disappeared without a trace.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen frowned. The power of the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was far stronger than he had anticipated.

Moreover, this person was extremely ruthless. After not getting enough essence, not only did he struck at the cultivators of the Zhenyu Clan, he did not even let the warriors on his side go as well.

Holding his hands out, the Azuresky Pagoda appeared, and a large number of inscriptions rapidly appeared on its surface, unleashing an energy signature that was getting more and more powerful.

With a clash, a layer of cyan halo rushed out and bombarded the blood vortex head-on.

This was the Supreme power, and no matter how devastating the power the blood vortex had gathered, it could not withstand the power and was torn apart.

Immediately after, the cyan halo crashed onto the body of the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord.

Even if the Supreme power had been weakened, the impact onto the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was still considerable. Many cracks appeared on the Hundred-Saint Blood Armor on his body, and it was close to shattering.

Immediately afterward, the Azuresky Pagoda unleashed streams of Supreme power and targeted both the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord and also the Immortal Vampire army at the same time.

“Damn it!” The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord roared, almost driven to madness.

When he broke through his cultivation base, Zhang Ruochen dared to hinder him, that absolute cur.

However, the power of a Supreme Sacred Artifact was really devastating, and its power was not something he could withstand.

If he was just an ordinary Path’s Anterior powerhouse, that blow, even if it did not kill him, he would have been horribly maimed.

The damage suffered by the Immortal Vampire army was even heavier, everyone within a hundred miles of it was instantly reduced to blood mists, and Saint Kings were no exception.

Back then, Heavenly King Lingxiao had used the Azuresky Pagoda to cause heavy losses to the old cadre of the

Shengming Empire, and almost crushed the entire city. The power of a Supreme Sacred Artifact was not just tales.

“You think that you can deal with me with just a Supreme Sacred Artifact? I will let you know now, the consequences of angering me.” The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord opened his flesh wings and kicked up a terrifying storm.

A blood beam shot out from the center of his brow and transformed into an ancient mirror.

A series of inscription patterns appeared on the ancient mirror, and a bloody halo poured out, forming terrifying ripples, and many small cracks appearing in the space.

Incredibly, the bloody halo unleashed by the ancient mirror actually resisted the attack of the Azure Pagoda.

“A Supreme Sacred Artifact.”

A glint flashed past Zhang Ruochen’s eyes and immediately saw through the identity of the ancient mirror.

Without a doubt, it was a Supreme Sacred Artifact, and for the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord to have a Supreme Sacred Artifact was really beyond his expectations.

Looking at the ancient mirror, he soon discovered that there were many cracks on the mirror surface, and there was a spot with a missing piece.

It was clear that the ancient mirror was damaged and was not a perfect Supreme Sacred Artifact.

Of course, even if it was an incomplete Supreme Sacred Artifact, the power it could unleash was similarly terrifying, especially in the hands of a cultivator beneath a Supreme Saint, the difference was insignificant.

After all, unless one was a Supreme Saint or a God, it was impossible to fully draw out the power of a Supreme Sacred Artifact.

“Fall back!”

Zhang Ruochen immediately ordered everyone on his side to pull back.

When the Supreme Sacred Artifact collides, the impact could destroy the world, and in that situation, he would not be able to take care of anyone else.

“Too late.”

The eyes of the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was cold, as he roused the ancient mirror with all his might.

All nine of his eyes opened as a terrifying light burst out of them and converged upon the ancient mirror.

The next moment, ninety rays of light blasted out from the ancient mirror, and its power was no different than the first ninety rays.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was born with nine-eyes. These eyes were no mere decorations but held various terrible powers.

Normally, he only kept two eyes open while the rest are closed. Once all opened, it meant that he was furious and no longer had any reservations.

“Dimensional Rift.”

Zhang Ruochen repeatedly unleashed his secret space techniques, creating a large number of dimensional rifts in a larger area.

At the same time, he put forward the Azuresky Pagoda and did his best to rouse the Supreme power out of it.

Boom!

The Azuresky Pagoda transformed into a blue mountain, blocking most of the light.

Part of the light was swallowed by the cracks in the space, but there were still a few rays of light that were missed, and they bombarded the ancient cultivators in the prison.

“Pah, don’t think I’ll let you do as you please.”

Awesome, the Little Taoist shouted and quickly deployed the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror.

Relatively speaking, the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror was more incomplete than the ancient mirror of the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, but in the hands of Awesome, the Little Taoist, it could still unleash an astonishing surge of Supreme power.

After secluding itself for refinement, Awesome, the Little Taoist had broken through the realm of the Greater Precept World and could better control the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror.

Sikong the Elder and Sikong the Younger both also made a move as they combined to blast out a Black-White Chaotic Strike, and actually managed to withstand one ray of light.

On the other side, Ji Fanxin struck, as her fingers, white as jade, tapped at the sky.

“Watermoon Sky Mirror.”

A surge of Saint Path Precepts intertwined and fused with her Saint Qi, forming a white holy mirror that looked like a round moon with a diameter stretching tens of feet.

The holy mirror’s light curtain may only look like a thin layer, but its defensive power was extremely powerful.

Boom!

The remaining two rays of light both bombarded the light curtain of the holy mirror.

Cracks appeared on the light curtain, and it soon shattered, but the bombarding rays of light too were annihilated in the process, the light curtain of the holy mirror exhausting the entirety of its power.

Seeing this, the Zhenyu Clansmen all heaved a sigh of relief, and the threat was finally temporarily lifted.

The threat was only temporarily lifted because the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was still there, and no one knew what other terrifying techniques he would be using.

Without any hesitations, the cultivators of the Zhenyu Clan quickly retreated to make way for Zhang Ruochen to fight with the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord.

The ancient mirror hung above the head of the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, and countless rays of blood light gathered and formed a vertical eye on the surface of the mirror.

The next moment, another giant eye appeared in the skies above the Zhenyu Clan as if a god was overlooking the mortal realms.

The Black Wilderness was instantly dyed blood red, and a strange power permeated over it, making it extremely gloomy.

“Aargh!!!”

A cultivator of the Zhenyu yelled, his face contorted as he suddenly struck at the people around him.

The condition then spread like a plague.

In a moment, the Zhenyu Clan was thrown into disarray.

“What a bizarre ability, it can actually muddle one’s thoughts, and the area of effect is so wide.”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed drastically, as even he was faintly affected.

This sort of ability was just too powerful, and anyone with slightly weaker minds would not be able to resist and, and would fall under control.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord’s natural ability was already extremely powerful, and it was even more terrifying when it was boosted by the ancient mirror.

With this ability, it was not difficult for the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord to fight against ten thousand alone.

“I need to stop him. Break!”

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Ruochen pulled out the Azuresky Bow and the Whitesun Arrow as he loosed an arrow with all his strength.

The Azuresky Bow and Whitesun Arrows were treasures of the Kunlun realm’s Immortal Vampire’s Qingtian tribe. Both items were all sacred artifacts of the Tenth Radiance.

In the hands of a truly powerful person, it could be used to kill a Supreme Saint.

Whoosh!

The Whitesun Arrow shot out in an unimaginable speed, as it flew out locked onto the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord.

The blood Qi outside the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord roused and quickly formed a shield to protect himself.

Bam!

The shield shattered and was unable to withstand the Whitesun Arrow.

But in breaking the shield apart, the power of the Whitesun Arrow was mostly consumed. With the protection of the Hundred-Saint Blood Armor, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was unharmed.

Seeing the Whitesun Arrow struck the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, the corner of Zhang Ruochen's mouth suddenly rose slightly, revealing a faint smile.

"Tarnation."

The expression of the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord changed drastically as he finally realized Zhang Ruochen's true goal.

There was a Mark of Time on the Whitesun Arrow that could slash someone's lifespan.

When the arrow hit the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, a Mark of Time fell onto the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's body.

A sudden sense of weakness appeared and spread across his body, causing the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord to tremble and sweat.

In such a situation, it was difficult to control the ancient mirror anymore, and the giant demonic eye in the sky disappeared as the strange power dissipated without a trace.

Taking the opportunity, Zhang Ruochen activated the Azure Sky Pagoda and sent it crashing toward the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord.

If he was hit by the Azure Sky Pagoda head-on, no matter how powerful the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was, it would still hurt, and even if he did not die he would be wounded.

Once a powerful foe like the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was taken out now, the following battles would become much easier.

Boom!

A massive cross that was hundreds of feet long suddenly appeared out of thin air and collided with the Azure Sky Pagoda.

The Azure Sky Pagoda flew back and failed to slam against the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord as expected.

The cross stabbed onto the broken ground and painted the area thousands of miles blood red.

A series of divine patterns flowed on the cross, and one could vaguely see a god being crucified on it. The god's blood continued to flow, and it looked extremely dreadful.

Chapter 1902 - The Clash of Divine Powers

Chapter 1902: The Clash of Divine Powers

A incomparably elegant blood-haired man appeared above the Godslayer Cross Shield as if a true god had manifested in the world, looking extremely outstanding.

Looking at Xia Wenxin, the look in Zhang Ruochen's eyes changed slightly.

The last time, it was this man who had stopped him from killing Prince Wujie.

Now he intervened again, and prevented him from dealing with the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord. Annoying.

While he had wounded Xia Wenxin previously, he still did not underestimate Xia Wenxin, as the attack was a surprise attack.

If Xia Wenxin had worn a Hundred-Saint Blood Armor, then Zhang Ruochen might not even be able to pierce his skin.

Zhang Ruochen could see that Xia Wenxin was beyond comparison to the likes of Prince Wujie and the others. Even the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was some distance behind him in capability. He was a veritable great enemy.

“Heal your wounds first, and consolidate your cultivation. Let me deal with him.” Xia Wenxin said indifferently.

While the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was furious, he still listened to Xia Wenxin's words, and immediately consumed a blood pill.

With Xia Wenxin standing in the front, Zhang Ruochen was no longer able to continue to strike against the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, missing the chance to take out the latter.

“Losing so many men and generals even before you break into the Sword Vault, you lot sure are useless.” A sudden, extremely contemptuous voice rang out.

Behind the Immortal Vampire army, a thick black fog surged and quickly came to the front.

Seeing the fog, anyone would feel extremely pressured, as if their mind was going to be sucked away by the black fog.

Zhang Ruochen's brow tightened. "The Netherkind."

When the curse attack was launched at the start, he already knew that there was a Netherkind elite helping the Immortal Vampires, but he was not sure who the person was.

"Let me help you."

Immortal Ming spoke, and looked a little impatient.

WHOOSH!!

The black fog surged violently, revealing countless of ghost warriors. Their ranks were thick and their killing intent covered the heavens.

The ghost army charged forth, their momentum tempestuous and terrifying.

"These ghosts are cursed, do not let them get close." Zhang Ruochen warned as he struck out at them.

A massive surge of Divine Purification Flames rushed out from his body, forming into a fire Qilin as it charged at the ghost army.

At the same time, he opened the Secret Tome of Time and Space, and created a multi-dimensional space, imprisoning a large amount of the ghosts within it before killing them with his dimensional techniques.

However, the ghost army was massive and were charging in from all direction, he was not able to fend them off alone.

He wanted to use the Azure Pagoda, but Xia Wenxin was standing by the side watching, and his Godslayer Cross Shield was definitely not just for show.

"Let us aid you!"

Both Sikong the Elder and Sikong the Younger flew up, their body radiated a limitless Bodhi light.

The Buddhism was best at exorcizing demons and ghosts, and had many means to restrain evil. At this moment, they would work wonders.

Ji Fanxin too joined in the fray, releasing pollens that were difficult to see with the naked eye to stop the ghost army.

Among the Zhenyu Clansmen, many talismans were shot out, unleashing lightning and fire, the power of Yang was the strongest at countering Yin.

BOOM!

Just as everyone were busy dealing with the curse, countless of complex patterns appeared on the broken ground, forming a series of high-level formation array.

It was clear that Immortal Ming was behind this. Aside from being proficient with curses, he was also an array master.

If not for his aid, how could the Immortal Vampires break into the Zhenyu Clan's grounds so easily?

"Awesome, awesome, let me fight you then." Awesome the Little Taoist was very excited.

It too was an array master, and was now able to play a role.

Immediately, Awesome the Little Taoist unleashed its formation array techniques to fight against Immortal Ming.

"I'll let you witness my power."

Awesome the Little Taoist roared, and released the seven Divine Planets carved with inscription wards.

In an instant, seven Divine Planets formed a Nine-rank Formation Array as it shrouded over the black fog.

An ancient array flew out from the black fog. Its surface was densely filled with arcane wards as it violently collided with the Ninth-rank Formation Array created by the seven Divine Planets.

BOOM!

The devastating impact produced by the collision swept through all directions.

The already broken Black Wilderness was ruined even more. The ground had disintegrated, forming a massive crater as if it was struck by a meteorite.

“AHHHH!!!”

Awesome the Little Taoist suddenly cried out, bleeding from its nose and mouth.

“A spiritual attack.”

Ji Fanxin frowned, and appeared beside Awesome the Little Taoist.

She immediately unleashed her own spiritual powers, and formed a spiritual shield as it engulfed Awesome the Little Taoist within.

Immediately after, she unleashed a powerful counterattack as her spiritual powers formed into a razor sharp sword, as it stabbed out in lightning speed.

She have already sensed that her opponent’s spiritual power was extremely powerful, and it was no wonder Awesome the Little Taoist suffered a blow.

Both were array masters, and the gap of their spiritual powers would have a great impact of the combat strength.

“Evil Spirit.”

Zhang Ruochen growled as he summoned the Evil Spirit.

Evil Spirit, now fused with the body of a Supreme Saint corpse, appeared as an immense amount of evil Qi exuded from its back.

Looking at the imposing horde of ghost soldiers, Evil Spirit let out a cackling laughter. “Good stuff, good stuff, all of them are my supplements.”

Without needing Zhang Ruochen to command it, Evil Spirit pounced and wantonly devouring the cursed ghosts without any concern at all.

With the Evil Spirit joining the fray, the cursed army unleashed by Immortal Ming was completely stalled, and were unable to attack the cultivators of the Zhenyu Clan.

With Ji Fanxin, Awesome the Little Taoist and Evil Spirit in tow was enough to hold Immortal Ming back, that way, Zhang Ruochen was able to free himself to deal with Xia Wenxin.

Since the beginning, his attention had always been focused on Xia Wenxin, and was wary that Xia Wenxin would suddenly strike.

“It looks like you’re ready to fight with me. I want to see how powerful you are after breaking through.” Xia Wenxin said with a faint smile.

Even on the battlefield, he was still very calm as if Zhang Ruochen was no threat to him.

“Xia Shenzi is finally going to strike. Can’t wait.”

“With Xia Shenzi making his move, we can sweep through the Zhenyu Clan soon enough.”

“That Scion of Time and Space, is nothing but fodder before Xia Shenzi.”

“Xia Shenzi is invincible, and he will sweep across Kunlun Realm.”

Seeing that Xia Wenxin was about to strike, many Immortal Vampires were excited.

In their eyes, Xia Wenxin was invincible, and anyone Xia Wenxin wanted to kill, will never survive.

And they believed that this time will be no exception as well.

“What dogshit Xia Shenzi, before my Big Bro, he is nothing but scum!” Xiang Chunan could not help but to yell back.

No matter what, he could not let the other side keep pressing them down.

“Black-faced swine! You dare to belittle Xia Shenzi, you want to die that much?” A Immortal Vampire Saint King stood out and rebuked.

Xiang Chunan naturally would not show any weakness, and raised his voice as he roared. “I do want to belittle him, what can you do about it?”

“Die!” That Immortal Vampire Saint King immediately struck.

Seeing the other side charging over, Xiang Chunan sniggered and blasted out a iron hat over.

BOOM!

The iron hat unleashed supreme power, and crushed the Immortal Vampire Saint King.

“You...”

The Immortal Vampire Saint King glared and tried to say something, but it was too late.

The iron hat had instantly reduced him into a cloud of blood.

“Want to fight me? Now you know how strong I am.” Xiang Chunan smiled and recalled his iron hat, looking very pleased.

Against the Immortal Vampires, there was no need for pleasantries.

Expecting him to fight with his fists when he had a Supreme Sacred Artifact to use, did his foe take him for a fool?

And seeing Xiang Chunan so proud of himself, many of the Immortal Vampire Saint Kings were furious. If not for the fact they were wary of the Supreme Sacred Artifact in his hand, they would have launched a group attack long ago.

Xiang Chunan laughed out loud. “Anyone else not happy? Come on, all of you, Lord Xiang here will teach you how to act like a proper person.”

Hearing this, the Immortal Vampires were even more pissed off. If their gaze could kill, then Xiang Chunan would have died many times over.

BOOM!

At this moment, thousands of miles of earth suddenly collapsed, as an overwhelming blood Qi emerged, as if a colossal catastrophe had been unleashed.

Everything happened too suddenly, and no one was able to prepare. The moment the blood Qi erupted, many of the

Zhenyu Clansmen perished, their bodies destroyed.

Seeing that, Zhang Ruochen could not help but clench his fist tight, his expression became extremely severe.

He still miscalculated, Xia Wenxin had not been sitting there quietly as he thought, but instant had been secretly activating the Godslayer Cross Shield.

In contrast, the power of the Godslayer Cross Shield in Xia Wenxin's hands was many times stronger than when Qi Sheng had used it.

It was undoubtedly a bad decision to hand over such a powerful weapon to Xia Wenxin.

“Your opponent is me.”

Zhang Ruochen roared, and blasted out the Azure Sky Pagoda with all his might.

Seeing the Azure Sky Pagoda flying over, Xia Wenxin was unfazed, looking extremely calm, as if this had nothing to do with him.

The Godslayer Cross Shield shuddered as countless of divine inscriptions appeared, forming a cross-shaped divine light, and met the Azure Sky Pagoda.

BOOM!

The divine cross light was extremely powerful, and the moment it collided with the Azure Sky Pagoda, it actually dissipated the supreme power unleashed by the pagoda.

It was clear that the Godslayer Cross Shield was stronger than the Azure Sky Pagoda in essence, after all, it was a supreme weapon that had crucified a god.

After neutralizing the Azure Sky Pagoda's attack in a single blow, a blood shadow appeared above the Godslayer Cross Shield, looking like the god that had been crucified on the cross, as countless of blood light blasted out from its body and shot at Zhang Ruochen.

At this moment, anyone could clearly feel the terrifying divine aura, and it was so intimidating that people could not help but

to kneel down.

As the target of the Godslayer Cross Shield attack, Zhang Ruochen naturally felt it even more profoundly, as if a divine mountain was about to crush him.

“Yanshen’s Leg”

With a growl, Zhang Ruochen lifted the god’s left leg.

A series of red circuits appeared on his left leg as a terrifying divine power exuded out from it.

BOOM!

A crimson divine power swept out and annihilated the beams of blood light rushing towards him.

In the end, everyone the blood shadow exploded, unable to withstand the overwhelming divine power of Yanshen’s leg.

After several years of secluded refinement, Zhang Ruochen had refined nearly half of the Precept of the Gods inside Yanshen’s leg, and his use of it was more flexible and powerful.

The Godslayer Cross Shield had only roused a part of its divine power. It was just too much for an enslaved soul of a god to going up against Yanshen’s leg.

Chapter 1903 - White Bone Mountain

Chapter 1903: White Bone Mountain

“Take this.”

The Evil Spirit roared as it brandished a blade and slashed out with a light blade that was hundreds of feet long.

The blade in its hand was an artifact of the Tenth Radiance, and when fully activated, its power could not be underestimated.

Xia Wenxin was still unfazed, and it activated the divine power of the Godslayer Cross Shield. The remnant of the divine spirit reappeared and caught the blade of light with its outstretched hands.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, Zhang Ruochen used the Dimensional Shift, appeared before Xia Wenxin, and activated the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

.

Originally, the space within a thousand miles had been affixed by the Godslayer Cross Shield, but the continuous attacks earlier had affected the strength of the shield, and that allowed Zhang Ruochen to use his Dimensional Shift.

The

Secret Tome of Time and Space

opened, and dozens of layers of silver light veil appeared, forming a multi-dimensional space, instantly shrouding Xia Wenxin and the Godslayer Cross Shield within it.

It had to be said that Evil Spirit did well this time and caused Xia Wenxin to be distracted, giving him the opportunity to close in.

“Retract.”

Zhang Ruochen continued to infuse Saint Qi into the Secret Tome of Time and Space

to reinforce the silver veil and suppress Xia Wenxin.

In a blink of an eye, he also unleashed a flurry of secret dimensional techniques, like Dimensional Consolidation, Dimensional Segmentation, and the like. With the help of the Secret Tome of Time and Space

, the power of these secret techniques were multiplied.

He was absolutely unwilling to let go of such a good opportunity.

No matter how strong Xia Wenxin was, as long as the former was sealed inside the S

ecret Tome of Time and Space

, he had full confidence to keep him suppressed.

Finally, Xia Wenxin acted, the flesh wings on its back unfolded and became extremely huge, like a cloud in the sky.

A surge of blood-colored lightning struck, as the destructive Qi spread quickly as if Armageddon was nigh.

Boom!

The multi-dimensional space created by the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

ruptured, and simply could not suppress such a force.

Putting away the tome, Zhang Ruochen quickly retreated and drew a distance between him and Xia Wenxin.

“This power...”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked, and could not calm down.

It was hard to imagine that a Saint King could have mastered such power that was comparable to that of a Neverwither Supreme Saint.

With his current strength, by fully mobilizing the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

, he could suppress an elite of the Path's Anterior realm, but absolutely not a Supreme Saint.

Xia Wenxin's crimson hair flew, as his flesh wings became larger and larger, and blood-colored lightning full of destructive force coiling around him. He looked like a demon god who had risen to bring an end to the world.

"I'll be your foe."

Evil Spirit rushed over and wielded its blade as it slashed at Xia Wenxin.

Boom!

Xia Wenxin flapped the flesh wings on its back, forming a blood-colored lightning storm that swept toward Evil Spirit.

The Evil Spirit was unfazed, and it used its body to withstand the attack.

Countless dense Supreme Saint Runes appeared on its body, causing the Precepts of Heaven and Earth around it to revolve around it as the center.

"So, it turns out to be a Supreme Saint Corpse servant, Zhang Ruochen, you sure have a lot of trump cards." Xia Wenxin's eyes flashed and saw through Evil Spirit's form.

Zhang Ruochen did not respond. While the Evil Spirit held Xia Wenxin, he began to strike at the Immortal Vampire army.

In fact, the Zhenyu Clan cultivators were already clashing with the Immortal Vampires, but the battlefield was further away from here.

After all, the battle on this side was so ferocious that the strength exuded was not bearable by the average person.

The Zhenyu clansmen relied on terrain advantage, and a large amount of Blood Suppressant Talisman they had refined earlier to finally hold the Immortal Vampire army at bay.

Of course, it was also due to Sikong the Elder and Sikong the Younger, Murong Yue, Xiang Chunan, and the others holding

back the elites of the Immortal Vampires. Otherwise, the battle would have been lopsided.

On the other side, Ji Fanxin and Awesome the Little Taoist joined forces and fought against Immortal Ming to a stalemate.

With Ji Fanxin fending off Immortal Ming's spiritual attacks, Awesome the Little Taoist was able to use its array techniques without fear.

Being in this situation, Immortal Ming had to concentrate all of his attention and was no longer turn away to use his curses.

Immortal Ming was furious, and he never thought that he would encounter a foe whose spiritual power was on the same level as him. That shackled him and meant that he could not use his abilities at will.

If he was Ji Fanxin or Awesome the Little Taoist alone, he had no fear of them. But once the two joined forces, he was left a little helpless.

“If I can be an array master, dealing with them would be easy.” As he thought of this, the more he wanted to get The Big Dipper Portrait.

It was not easy to be an array master, especially if one was not a spiritual power Supreme Saint.

Suddenly, Immortal Ming blasted out a palm strike.

Countless Precepts of Darkness fused with Saint Qi and formed into the life-like demon dragon that was about thousands of feet long.

What he was good at was not just formation arrays and curses, his martial arts was equally terrifying. If not, how could he be that powerful lunatic in the eyes of the vampiric princes and princesses?

“Help me.”

Awesome the Little Taoist roared and held the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror up high.

Ji Fanxin did not hesitate and infused her Saint Qi into the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror, unleashing its supreme power.

On the matter of martial arts, Ji Fanxin was stronger than Awesome the Little Taoist, and the supreme power she could stimulate was naturally more.

Boom!

The supreme power collided with the demonic dragon and unleashed a cataclysmic impact, ripping the space apart and sundering the land.

Although the demonic dragon was powerful, it was still torn about by the supreme power and was reduced to billowing black smoke. Numerous spirits flickered within as if the gates of the nether had been opened.

In the face of the powerful shock wave, Ji Fanxin quickly deployed a series of defensive Saint Arts from the Heavenly Light Techniques.

At the same time, Awesome the Little Taoist deployed the seven Divine Planet to strengthen the defense.

It could sense the terrifying threat from Immortal Ming, and dared not let the latter get close to it. Otherwise, even when working together, they might not be able to beat him.

Also, it had not fully become an array master, otherwise, it would not have so passive in this battle.

Zhang Ruochen appeared in the skies above the battlefield, deploying Dimensional Mazes and Array of Time, as he sent a large number of Immortal Vampires into them.

The main reason was that the Zhenyu Clansmen were in close combat with the Immortal Vampire army, and it was not convenient for him to use his Supreme Sacred Artifact. Otherwise, wiping the Immortal Vampire army out would have been easy.

“Zhang Ruochen, die!”

With Prince Yun in the lead, the remaining five princes and princess launched an attack on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold, saying. “You lot aren’t nearly enough.”

Whoosh!

With astonishing speed, Zhang Ruochen reappeared before Prince Yun and unloaded the Luoshui Fist.

A river then appeared, cutting through the void and striking Prince Yun's chest.

In an instant, Zhang Ruochen roused the Precepts of Truth in his body and unleashed eight times the power.

Prince Yun was shocked, and he used all of his strength to block the attack.

Previously, he had seen Prince Wujie and the Long-faced Princess perishing in Zhang Ruochen's hands, and he was already fearful of the latter. Now that he saw Zhang Ruochen charging at him, an ominous feeling suddenly appeared in his heart.

Baaamm!!

Prince Yun could not withstand the punch, and his body exploded into pieces.

In this situation, no matter how strong his vitality was, it would not help it.

“This...”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen killing Prince Yun with just a fist, the other four princes and princesses were stunned.

The next moment, they snapped back to their senses and chose to escape without hesitation.

Even a fool could tell that the Zhang Ruochen now was not someone they could fight against.

“Want to run?” Zhang Ruochen sneered.

Whoosh!

Stepping on the Luan and the Phoenix, Zhang Ruochen's speed was so fast and he instantly caught up with a silver-haired princess.

“Sky Soaring Dragon-Elephant”

The Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm was unleashed, and countless dragon, as well as elephant shadows, blasted out, engulfing the silver-haired princess.

The silver-haired princess had a look of terror as she screamed in despair. “NO!”

Baaam!!

The silver-haired princess exploded as her flesh was reduced into billowing ashes, only her Saint Source and weapons remained.

Zhang Ruochen would never show mercy to the Immortal Vampires, and even if his foe was a peerless beauty as beauty would not affect him.

After putting away the Saint Source and weapons, Zhang Ruochen did not dither and immediately went after the other princes and princesses.

As long he killed all of the princes and princesses, the Immortal Vampire army would be leaderless, and many would lose the will to fight because of fear.

Just as he was about to catch up to a prince, suddenly he had a premonition of danger, and immediately turned around, and unleashed a palm strike, creating a giant flame dragon that was hundreds of meters long.

Boom!

The flame dragon smashed into an ancient mirror and instantly disintegrated.

A terrifying divine light blasted out from the ancient mirror and bombarded the position Zhang Ruochen was at.

The divine light struck Zhang Ruochen and blasted him into smithereens.

However, the next moment, Zhang Ruochen's fragmented body dissipated and turned into a series of afterimages.

His real body had already reappeared tens of feet away as he activated the Azure Sky Pagoda, and shot it out.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord infused his power into the ancient mirror, and a vertical eye appeared on the mirror as it unleashed a bizarre light, colliding against the Azuresky Pagoda.

The two forces collided, canceling each other out and neither giving any ground.

After healing himself, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord became significantly stronger, as tens of millions of Saint Path Precepts flowed through his body as a surge of vitality continued to pour into his body.

“Zhang Ruochen, do you really think that I’m powerless against you?”

Murderous intent surged in his eyes, making his intention of killing Zhang Ruochen no secret.

A white light blasted out from the center of his brows and transformed into a huge mountain of white bones.

White Bone Mountain was thousands of feet high and was made out of countless white bones. Blood-red air currents shuttled across the mountain, like flowing blood veins.

Zhang Ruochen used his God Seal Eye and clearly saw that each white bone on White Bone Mountain was glowing in Saint Light, and they were all genuine Saint Bones.

More importantly, all of these Saint Bones were engraved with arcane patterns, linking all of them together as a whole.

He could confirm that White Bone Mountain had both the bones of Saint Kings and Supreme Saints.

The deepest part of the mountain was filled with a strange energy, and even his God Seal Eyes could not see through it.

“Could it be there are the bones of a god inside it?” Zhang Ruochen had some guesses in his heart.

Unexpectedly, his eyes became serious, this trump card of the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was quite tricky to deal with.

Just as the two confronted each other, two powerful auras suddenly appeared and landed beside them.

The one who appeared beside Zhang Ruochen was Bao Lie, and the person appearing beside the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was a tall, ironclad-like scion of the gods.

There were several hideous wounds on Bao Lie's body, and his blood was flowing profusely, the wound looked serious.

"Third brother, are you all right?" Zhang Ruochen asked with concern.

Bao Lie radiated a powerful fighting spirit and smiled. "I'm fine, just a flesh wound. The side is not faring much better anyway."

After coming out from the Nether Dungeon and being able to meet such a strong opponent had him extremely excited, the blood in his body was boiling in anticipation.

Chapter 1904 - Each One's Technique

Chapter 1904: Each One's Technique

Standing before the White Bone Mountain, both Zhang Ruochen and Bao Lie looked tiny, however, the aura exuding from their body was not weak at all, and blocked all of the aura released by the White Bone Mountain.

Standing on top of the White Bone Mountain, both the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord and the third Shenzi looked down coldly at Zhang Ruochen and Bao Lie, as if they were looking at two gnats.

It could clearly be felt that the White Bone Mountain was recovering as countless wards appeared and the blood-colored air current flowing in the mountain got stronger and stronger.

With the White Bone Mountain as the center, the spirit Qi of the land spun violently and forming a vortex in a blink of an eye.

The storm vortex moved forward slowly, and wherever it passed through, all things were destroyed. Even a sacred artifact would not be able to withstand it.

“Zhang Ruochen, you have completely pissed me off. I will completely annihilate the Zhenyu Clan now.” The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord looked down at Zhang Ruochen and hiss coldly.

He was not boasting, with the recovery of the White Bone Mountain, destroying the Zhenyu Clan was not something difficult.

It won't be long before this wilderness will cease to exist, and the entire area spanning tens of thousands of miles will sink.

“Third brother, help me.”

Zhang Ruochen's expression was grim and immediately deployed the Azure Sky Pagoda.

Bao Lie acted soon after, as he continuously infused his saint Qi into the pagoda.

With one more person infusing it, the supreme power unleashed by the Azure Sky Pagoda will naturally be stronger.

BOOM!!

The Azure Sky Pagoda transformed into a blue mountain as a blue halo blasted out and collided with the White Bone Mountain.

The supreme power was released in a frenzy, causing the storm vortex to slow to a crawl, blocking the advance of the White Bone Mountain.

Unfortunately, before the Azure Sky Pagoda had exhausted its supreme power before it could break the storm vortex, and was sent flying.

“Wanting to stop my White Bone Mountain with just the two of you powering a Supreme Sacred Artifact? What wishful thinking!” The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord sneered mockingly.

Since he had already used this trump card, then no one can even think of stopping him.

Especially now that he had broken through his cultivation base, his confidence was even stronger.

“I'll help you, let's destroy the Zhenyu Clan as soon as possible.” The third Shenzi spoke, thick murderous intent radiated from his body.

In the previous battle with Bao Lie, he could not get the upper hand, and that upset him. That made him want to kill Bao Lie right this instant even more.

With two Path's Anterior elites of the Immortal Vampires teaming up to activate the White Bone Mountain, the storm vortex suddenly became even bigger, unleashing a terrifying suction power as it swallowed everything around.

There was a cultivator of the Zhenyu Clan that stood too close and was instantly sucked into the vortex.

“AHHHH!!!”

He only had the time to let out a scream before being reduced to a cloud of blood and then absorbed by the White Bone Mountain.

The White Bone Mountain seethed with evil and could devour the blood of living beings, consistent with the characteristics of the Immortal Vampires.

“Fall back!”

An anxious look appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes as he urged the cultivators of the Zhenyu Clan to fall back.

At the same time, he launched the Azuresky Pagoda again, hoping to delay the White Bone Mountain for a while longer.

“RAAAWRRR!”

Bao Lie roared and shot out a fist seal.

The fist seal carried with it wind and thunder that shook the earth, as it transformed into a running divine leopard and crashed against the White Bone Mountain.

The divine leopard was extremely real as if having flesh and blood as it resisted the storm vortex, and slowing its advance.

The next moment, an overwhelming saint Qi rushed out of Bao Lie’s body, transforming into a nebula, and engulfed the storm vortex.

Immediately, the speed of the storm vortex slowed, as it gradually came to a halt.

“Break!”

Bao Lie roared as he stretched his hands out, forming two phantom claws hundreds of meters long as he slashed at the storm vortex.

His purpose was very clear, only by ripping the storm vortex apart can he attack the White Bone Mountain.

“Naive.”

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord sneered.

Boom!!

The storm vortex quickly revolved again, tearing the nebula apart, and crushing the two leopard claws at the same time.

Bao Lie grunted, and spat out a mouthful of blood, his injuries obviously worsened.

After that short delay, the cultivators of the Zhenyu Clan had retreated far away and were temporarily outside the range of the vortex's sweep.

“Is this really the end of the Zhenyu Clan?”

Seeing the might of the White Bone Mountain, many cultivators of the Zhenyu Clan felt despair in their hearts.

Even a Supreme Sacred Artifact could not defeat it, what else can they do?

Boom!!

Suddenly, thousands of blood-colored air streams rushed out from the White Bone Mountain, like a swarm of vipers.

The blood-colored airstreams were extremely fast, stretching over thousands of miles and instantly entangled themselves on the bodies of the Zhenyu Clan cultivators.

And whoever the blood-colored air stream wrapped around, in barely a moment's time, they would be sucked dry, their bodies turning into dust in the wind.

After draining a person dry, the blood-colored air streams will attack the next person.

The blood-colored air streams released by the White Bone Mountain were so terrifying that even a normal Saint King was unable to withstand it.

In a very short period of time, tens of thousands of the Zhenyu Clansmen were killed, their bodies and spirit destroyed, leaving only piles of ashes behind.

“Who can stop me?”

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord laughed haughtily as he enjoyed the pleasure of harvesting life.

As long as it devours enough blood Qi, the White Bone Mountain will become stronger, and in the future, even if he encounters a Supreme Saint he will still have something to fight with.

“I can.”

Zhang Ruochen roared and stood at the front, undaunted.

Around him, countless Dimensional Rifts appeared, slashing off the blood-colored air streams.

Bao Lie also joined the fray and used his leopard claws to rip a large amount of the blood-colored air streams apart.

“Futile, Zhang Ruochen, since you want to die that much, I’ll kill you first.” A ferocious murderous intent roiled in the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord’s eyes, as he infused more saint Qi into the White Bone Mountain.

Located in the interior of the White Bone Mountain, countless arcane wards appeared, as the aura of destruction was slowly released.

“Third brother, help me block this for a moment.”

Zhang Ruochen said to Bao Lie with great seriousness.

Bao Lie nodded solemnly, saying. “Don’t worry, even if I cost me my life, I will definitely protect you.”

Between words, he stood before Zhang Ruochen, unleashing his Precept Dominion, and shrouded Zhang Ruochen within it.

With his cultivation base, his Precept Dominion was extremely strong, and was not easy to break.

With Bao Lie standing before him, Zhang Ruochen had no more worries, as he held the Azuresky Pagoda in his hand and his sword spirit entered the tower.

Inside the Azuresky Pagoda was a gaseous, nebulous world as countless of stars floated in, arranged in accordance to strange universal laws.

Behind the stars was a cyan Biian beast that was asleep.

It was one of the spiritual consciousness of the Azure Sky Pagoda's vessel spirit, and had existed for other a hundred thousand years. While it was not a vessel spirit, it was still very powerful.

At first, Zhang Ruochen had used the power of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree to tame the Biian beast, and obtained control of the Azure Sky Pagoda.

Unfortunately, the Biian beast refused to see him, after all, he was a nemesis of the Chi Clan, and so the Biian beast put itself into a deep sleep as it waited for the true form of the spirit vessel to return.

Because of that, while Zhang Ruochen had control of the Azure Sky Pagoda, he was not able to draw out its real power.

Now that he was in great trouble, and the situation was critical. To get through this tribulation, he needed to get the Cyan Biian beast to help.

It might take a while to rouse the Cyan Biian beast. Plus, it also took time for him to convince the beast, so that's why he asked Bao Lie to help him fend off the attacks for a while.

It was a pity that the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron had been borrowed by Yueshen, or else there was no need for such trouble, and the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was far stronger than the Azure Sky Pagoda.

BOOM!!

A bright light burst out of the White Bone Mountain and blasted straight at Bao Lie.

Normally, Bao Lie would be able to dodge it, but now he was protecting Zhang Ruochen, and could only take the attack head-on.

The divine light blasted out one after another as they bombarded him in a frenzy, each hit was enough to kill a top-level Saint King.

Bao Lie unleashed a ferocious display of defensive techniques as he desperately resisted the attacks, annihilating the divine

lights as they came.

To protect Zhang Ruochen, he was putting his life on the line.

But the divine light barrage was just too dense, and no matter how strong he was, there were times that he was unable to fend them off.

DUSSHH!

Bao Lie's body was pierced by the divine light, as bloodied hole appeared on his body and blood gushed out of the open wound.

But no matter what, he had managed to block the attack, and did not let it hurt Zhang Ruochen.

“Come!”

Seeing another bombardment of divine light, Bao Lie's eyes turned into a frenzy.

His body lit up in flames, and stars shone as countless saint path precepts appeared and transforming into a shield.

BOOM!!

The divine light crashed upon the shield, and the impact was only able to shake it, but not destroy it.

“Hmm?”

A curious look appeared in the eyes of the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, he did not expect Bao Lie's defense techniques to be so powerful.

Immediately after, he used another ability of the White Bone Mountain as a bone saber slashed out at light's speed.

This bone sabre was carved out of a Supreme Saint's bone, it was extremely tough and sharp, and there was nothing it could not destroy.

“Crack.”

Bao Lie's shield was pierced through, and it cracked.

“RAAAWRRR!”

Bao Lie let out a roar, and his spirit was completely on fire.

This moment, he felt something inside him seemed to be broken, as a powerful and unparalleled force surged out.

The center of his brow suddenly cracked open, showing a third eye, as a bright starlight shot out of it, and smashed against the Supreme Saint bone sabre.

BAAAMMM!!!

The Supreme Saint bone saber was blown away, and the inscriptions on its surface darkened.

“Hahahaha, I have finally opened the Eye of the Star God.”
Bao Lie could not help but laugh out loud.

With his desperate burning of his life force, he had accidentally opened the Eye of the Star Soul, and that came as a great surprise to him.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen also blasted the Azuresky Pagoda with all of his might.

“Still not giving up.”

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord sneered, and did not even put the Azuresky Pagoda in his eyes.

What he did not notice was that the Azuresky Pagoda was different now, with more inscription wards, and bursting out with an even more dazzling azure halo.

BOOM!!

The Azuresky Pagoda struck the storm vortex, and actually forcibly stopped it.

The rampaging supreme power erupted, like countless stars going supernova, instantly annihilated the storm vortex.

Immediately after, the Azuresky Pagoda smashed against the White Bone Mountain.

While the tower was not big, it still carries power beyond imagination, and the impact shook the White Bone Mountain.

Even more shocking was that cracks appeared on many of the saint bones, and then they started breaking one after as the inscriptions engraved on the bones were obliterated.

“How can that be?”

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord’s eyes widened in disbelief.

The White Bone Mountain was created using piles of saint bones, and had array masters carving wards all over it. It should be indestructible, and even a Supreme Sacred Artifact would struggle to destroy it.

But now, the White Bone Mountain was damaged, and even the core divine bone too was hit, and was on the verge of falling apart.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord stared at the Azure Pagoda, his eyes filled with incredulity.

Chapter 1905 - Danger Index Level 10

Chapter 1905: Danger Index Level 10

Baaaam!

White Bone Mountain was stopped and crushed as numerous Saint Bones were torn apart.

“Ahh... my White Bone Mountain...”

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord spat out a mouthful of blood, feeling both fury and sadness at the same time.

White Bone Mountain was severely damaged, and he had no idea how much effort it would take to repair it. The loss was just too great.

After breaking White Bone Mountain, the Azure Sky Pagoda gradually calmed down as the power it had roused had been exhausted.

Zhang Ruochen looked slightly pale, as he called back the Azure Sky Pagoda and held it in his hand.

That blow earlier had used up too much of his Saint Qi. If it had been someone else, that person would have collapsed long ago.

Of course, he had immediately consumed a sacred pill. He was in battle right now, and he could not fall.

No matter what, he was in time. He had managed to wake the Cyan Biian beast and explain the situation to the beast.

Knowing that the foe was the Immortal Vampires, the Cyan Biian beast immediately agreed to help. After all, they were a common enemy to all in the Kunlun Realm.

Standing beside Bao Lie, Zhang Ruochen took out a jade bottle and handed it to him as he said, “Third brother, drink the Springwater of Life first.”

“All right.”

Bao Lie did not hold back as he took the jade bottle and gulped the springwater down.

The Springwater of Life’s effect was almost immediate. The moment he drank it, the gaping hole on his chest instantly began to heal as flesh and bones regrew at a speed visible to the eye.

A moment later, the hole was healed, and there was no trace of it.

On the other side, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, as well as the third Shenzi, quickly retreated and recalled the damaged White Bone Mountain.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was extremely gloomy as his heart bled. He had wanted to use this opportunity to strengthen and elevate White Bone Mountain. He never expected the outcome to be like this; it was a massive loss.

“That tower had become different, and the supreme power it unleashed is very powerful,” the third Shenzi said solemnly.

He knew exactly how strong White Bone Mountain was, and ordinary powers would never be able to break it.

He had roughly guessed that the Azure Pagoda’s vessel spirit had awakened, which then led to this situation.

At first, they had assumed that the Azure Pagoda did not have a vessel spirit, but it seemed like that was not the case.

It was at this time that a dark divine light shot out of Ji Fanxin’s body and blasted into the thick black fog.

The black fog trembled and dissipated quite a bit before quickly pulling back.

“This woman is strong.”

A look of wariness appeared in Immortal Ming’s eyes as he controlled the black fog and pulled a distance between him and Ji Fanxin.

She was the first person to make him suffer like this.

Boom!!

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to strike again, a huge commotion rang out from the other direction.

Turning his head around, he saw a massive light cross slamming against the Evil Spirit, sending it flying.

The light of the cross was extremely terrifying, and wherever it passed through, the dimension shattered.

The Evil Spirit possessed an immortal body but even that could not help it withstand the attack. There were hideous wounds all over its body, and it was nearly torn apart.

It was not that the immortal body was not strong, but the Evil Spirit was instead too weak and unable to fully utilize the strength of the body, causing it to suffer such a blow.

Zhang Ruochen immediately appeared beside the Evil Spirit and poured a lot of the Springwater of Life into its mouth to repair the damaged immortal body.

“A cross light appeared from Xia Wenxin’s body and combined with the Godslayer Cross Shield. It’s really powerful,” the Evil Spirit said in a hoarse voice.

Hearing that, a sharp glint flashed past Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. It seems like there was a reason why Xia Wenxin could use the Godslayer Cross Shield.

He had tentatively tested before, and the Godslayer Cross Shield does have a vessel spirit. However the spirit was in state of deep sleep, and Xia Wenxin had not fully taken control of it yet, otherwise he would have been invincible. This was a somewhat lucky thing.

Fortunately, the Evil Spirit’s immortal body was not destroyed, otherwise, it would be really troublesome. After all, he would not be able to find another immortal body quickly.

In the blink of an eye, Bao Lie, Ji Fanxin, and Awesome, the Little Taoist all gathered around, while Xia Wenxin joined the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord.

Xia Wenxin, who was usually calm, could not help but frown slightly.

He used his killer move to inflict heavy damage on the Evil Spirit was because he had seen both the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord and Immortal Ming on the backfoot. If he did not gain some advantage on his side, the overall situation would be even more disadvantageous for them.

Xia Wenxin had thought that taking the Sword Vault would be easy, but he did not expect things to turn out the way they did.

He thought himself to have already look highly upon Zhang Ruochen, but it now seemed that he had still underestimated him.

The latter had plenty of trump cards in hand, and he really did not know what sort of hidden hands he had yet to pull out.

The morale of the entire Immortal Vampire army had tanked, and they no longer dared to go on the offensive again.

After repeated attacks, they had lost a third of their men, including four princes and princesses. It was not an insignificant loss.

However, even after paying such a high price, they could not even destroy the Zhenyu Clan. It was an utter failure.

“Hmm?”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen sensed something and immediately raised his head to look at the sky.

The Azuresky Pagoda turned and blasted out a cyan halo as it spread layer by layer.

Boom!!

The sky exploded as the blood clouds disintegrated, and a massive fireball appeared and came crashing down at a rapid speed.

The fireball was colossal, and brought it with an unparalleled force of impact, like a star crashing down.

“Stop it!”

Zhang Ruochen roared and blasted out the Azuresky Pagoda with all his might.

Bao Lie did not hesitate and immediately activated Eye of the Star God, shooting out a powerful blast.

“Awesome, Awesome, block it!” Awesome, the Little Taoist yelled and activated the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror with Ji Fanxin.

“Big bro, I’ll help you.”

Xiang Chunan rushed over and shot the iron hat out.

With three top-tier weapons being unleashed at the same time, coupled with Bao Lie’s Eye of the Star God, the burst of power was extremely devastating, and it could shoot a star down.

The Azuresky Pagoda’s power was the strongest as it held up a cyan-colored divine light, wanting to halt the fireball.

However, the power of the fireball was too strong, and it directly pushed the Azuresky Pagoda back.

“The Infernal Purgatory Tower, he really came.” Looking at the fireball falling from the sky, Xia Wenxin could not help but whisper.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord’s expression changed drastically. “You mean Xuetu?”

“Aside from him, who else can control the Infernal Purgatory Tower?” Xia Wenxin said plainly.

Hearing that, both the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord and the third Shenzi gasped. Even as Shenzi, they were still extremely wary of Xuetu.”

For Xuetu to strike now, it meant that he had already arrived long ago, and had just been observing in secret. Only when their assault on the Sword Vault failed did he make a move.

Baaaam!!!

At the same time, the Azuresky Pagoda, the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror and the iron hat were all sent flying, unable to stop the fireball.

Dushhh!

A terrifying force landed, causing Zhang Ruochen and the rest to puke out blood.

Boom!!

The fireball hit the ground and caused it to sink, as a devastating force shot out in all directions.

Although Zhang Ruochen and the others were injured, they still tried their best to resist the impact, otherwise the Zhenyu Clansmen would suffer grievous casualties.

On the other side, Xia Wenxin deployed the Godslayer Cross Shield and secured the dimension, protecting the Immortal Vampire army behind him.

With great effort, Zhang Ruochen and the rest finally managed to block off the shock wave.

Only then did they see the true face of the fireball; it was a dark red tower that was thousands of meters tall, and the tower's body was wrapped in crimson flames.

On the top of a tower stood a figure with crimson cloak and crimson hair, even the eyes were blood-colored. A extremely powerful blood Qi swirled around him, as if he had just walked out of a sea of blood.

“Xuetu Shenzi is here. Taking down the Sword Vault will be easy now.”

“Xuetu Shenzi alone can annihilate the Zhenyu Clan. The Scion of Time and Space is no match for Xuetu Shenzi.”

“Xuetu Shenzi is invincible!”

Many of the Immortal Vampire warriors became excited and wanted to bow down to worship Xuetu Shenzi.

“Seems like it's out of our hands now. Never thought that after so much effort, the final credit would go to Xuetu,” the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord said bitterly.

However, no better how bitter he was, there was nothing he could do about it. He dared not challenge Xuetu.

Xia Wenxin smiled faintly and said, “That may not be true. Everything is still not set in stone yet.”

Hearing that, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord could not help but show a trace of doubt, not understanding what he meant.

“Xuetu Shenzi, he is recorded to be of the Path’s Anterior realm in

The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans

, and his danger index is Level 10,” Zhang Ruochen said very solemnly as he looked at the figure at the top of the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

The danger index in

The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans

was divided into ten levels, and the most terrifying one was Level 10.

Anyone whose danger index reaches Level 10 could at least have the ability to challenge a Neverwithers Supreme Saint or even defeat one.

Just like the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord before his breakthrough, his danger level was only eight, and was far from comparable to Xuetu Shenzi.

According to

The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans

, Xuetu Shenzi possessed an Infernal Purgatory Tower, a complete Supreme Sacred Artifact. He had used it to defeat a Supreme Saint before.

For such a brutal character to actually come to Kunlun Realm, it was indeed bad news.

“Even the Swordbearer could not stop that person, do the heavens want our clan to perish?”

Feeling the terrifying aura from the Infernal Purgatory Tower, many cultivators of the Zhenyu Clan could not help but feel despair.

Just now, they had truly felt the terror of the Infernal Purgatory Tower, how could they not fall into despair?

“You lot really disappoint me, useless.” Xuetu Shenzi spoke coldly, without giving Xia Wenxin and the rest any face.

Perhaps only he dared to call Xia Wenxin and the others useless.

“I...”

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was furious and wanted to refute, but he was stopped by Xia Wenxin with a hand on his shoulder.

Xia Wenxin smiled slightly. “Since Xuetu Shenzi is here, we will naturally defer to your orders.”

“Hmph.”

Xuetu Shenzi only snorted coldly and said nothing.

It would not be too late to reprimand them once he took the Sword Vault and released Lord Ming.

“Retreat immediately into the Sword Vault.”

Zhang Ruochen reacted and shouted.

With the appearance of Xuetu, the situation of the battle had changed completely. If the Zhenyu Clan did not retreat back into the Sword Vault, the entire clan may very well perish.

Shi Qiankun did not hesitate and immediately summoned the Sword Tomb Palace. At the fastest speed, he took in all of the Zhenyu Clan cultivators before retreating.

“Want to run?”

Xuetu Shenzi smiled coldly as the Infernal Purgatory Tower rose from the ground.

Since he had decided to join the fray, it was impossible for anyone to escape, and the Zhenyu Clan would perish today.

The flames on the surface of the Infernal Purgatory Tower roared, as the scorching aura made it seem as if the space itself was about to melt.

It was the Purgatory Flames that could melt anything, and even an immortal body might not be able to withstand it.

“Damn it.”

Zhang Ruochen gritted his teeth and summoned out the Azuresky Pagoda again.

Shi Qiankun had yet to retreat into the Sword Vault, and he needed to buy some time for him.

At this moment, Bao Lie, Ji Fanxin, and the rest also struck, each doing their best.

Boom!!

Once again, Zhang Ruochen and the others were knocked away by the devastating force, all of them spat out blood, and their wounds significant.

The power of a complete Supreme Sacred Artifact was truly terrifying.

Chapter 1906 - Despair

Chapter 1906: Despair

“Xia Shenzi, your Godslayer Cross Shield should also be a complete Supreme Sacred Artifact. Why can't you unleash such power?” the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord asked suspiciously.

Xia Wenxin gently stroked the Godslayer Cross Shield and shook his head “It's extremely difficult to master a complete Supreme Sacred Artifact if you are not a Supreme Saint. It had only been a short time since I've gotten the shield, and it will take some time for me to fully familiarize myself with it. Only by getting the vessel spirit's acknowledgment that I can unleash its full power.”

Hearing this, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord could not help but sigh. “Xuetu sure is lucky and had already refined the Infernal Purgatory Tower long ago, and even a Neverwithers Supreme Saint is not his match.”

Hearing that, Xia Wenxin just smiled faintly and said nothing else.

At this moment, the Infernal Purgatory Tower flew into the air, and orbs of Purgatory Flames flew out from the tower, falling into the ground like a rain of fire. The resulting thumping noise sounded like it was about to completely destroy the place.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to use his dimensional techniques to take everyone back into the Sword Vault, however, he found out that the space was restricted, and even his flying speed was much slower.

“I only need ten percent of my power to deal with this rabble, and you lot actually lost that many men? The pride of the Immortal Vampires has totally been besmirched by you fools!”

Xuetu Shenzi admonished Xia Wenxin and the rest as he attacked Zhang Ruochen and his allies.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's face was extremely gloomy as he seethed in fury. As a Shenzi, he too had his pride, and the desire to protect that pride as he had never been admonished by anyone like this before.

If Xia Wenxin had not stopped him, he would have argued with Xuetu. After all, the dignity of a Shenzi was not to be trampled upon.

“Who's that bastard? What's with the grandstanding?”

Xiang Chunan was very miffed at Xuetu as he rubbed his palm together, eager to punch the latter's face in.

Zhang Ruochen recalled the content he had seen in

The Maleficent Records of The Infernal Court's Ten Clans

, and his expression was grim as he said, “Xuetu Shenzi is one of the Immortal Vampires' top five elites beneath a Supreme Saint rank. He had fought with a Neverwithier Supreme Saint, Supreme Saint Chunyi in the stars for two days and three nights, destroying over a dozen stars in the process.

“In the end, Supreme Saint Chunyi retreated bloodied, and Xuetu won.

“That battle shook the top echelon of the Celestial Court, and it was at that time that his danger index was rated as ten.”

Hearing that, everyone gasped hard, and their hearts almost went cold.

Even a Supreme Saint was not his match...

Supreme Saints were emperors among Saints; their bodies immortal, their strength repressive.

Fighting with Xuetu was no different than fighting a Supreme Saint.

How could they fight such a terrifying existence?

How could they not fall into despair?

“No matter how strong he is, we have to fight.”

Zhang Ruochen looked behind him and saw Shi Qiankun desperately rushing to the Sword Vault. No matter what, he

needed to fend Xuetu off for a moment to buy time for Shi Qiankun to retreat.

Moreover, after breaking through the rank of a Nine-step Saint King, Zhang Ruochen's power had greatly increased, and he wanted to see the level of this famous Immortal Vampire elite's strength.

Only by knowing his foe could he figure out a way to win.

“No matter who he is, Lord Xiang isn't afraid.”

Xiang Chunan roared as he unleashed all of the meridian points in his body. A series of demonic Qi pillars continuously converged toward the metal demonic crown.

As Zhang Ruochen's sworn brother, he would stand firmly beside him no matter when or where. They would face life and death together.

Murong Yue did not speak and only silently roused her demonic Qi before she infused it into her Bluelight Blunt Crescent as she prepared to strike.

“Awesome, awesome, let's fight!” Awesome, the Little Taoist gritted its teeth.

As for Bao Lie, there was nothing else to be said. He put both his index fingers together as the Saint Qi inside his meridians revolved in a frenzy and converged between his brows. His Eye of the Star God was ready to open at any moment.

Divine light radiated out of Ji Fanxin's body, and it was obvious she was going to unleash some sort of powerful technique.

“If I do not bring salvation to those in hell, who else would. Amitabha,” Sikong the Younger recited the Buddha's name softly.

Thwack!

Sikong the Elder slapped Sikong the Younger's head. “What the hell are you talking about? If anyone deserves to be in hell, it's that dogsh*t Shenzi.”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen and the rest standing before him, Xuetu Shenzi could not help but sneer, “Since all of you want to die that much, I’ll fulfill your wish then.”

Before his voice even trailed off, the Infernal Purgatory Tower spun as rivers of flames rushed out of it, sending scorching heat waves that struck at extreme speeds.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were determined as he did his best to rouse the Azure Sky Pagoda and transformed it into the size of a mountain to strike the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

Although the Azure Sky Pagoda’s vessel spirit was not around, with the consciousness of the vessel spirit willing to help, its power was not to be underestimated.

At the same time, Awesome, the Little Taoist temporarily transformed into the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror’s vessel spirit so that its power could be pushed to the extreme.

Murong Yue shot out her Bluelight Blunt Crescent, while Xiang Chunan threw his metal demonic crown. Bao Lie activated his Eye of the Star God, while Ji Fanxin unleashed a powerful divine light as Sikong the Elder and Sikong the Younger joined hands and created the Chessboard of Heaven and Earth, its divine aura spreading all over.

This time around, everyone was unleashing their strongest techniques to fight Xuetu Shenzi.

Boom!!

A terrifying force erupted, and the ground within hundreds of miles sank rapidly as everything within thousands of miles was swept away.

When it came to such power, even a tiny aftershock, was enough to kill a Saint King elite.

Baaaam!!!

Zhang Ruochen and the rest endured the powerful shock wave, and like leaves in the autumn wind, all of them were sent flying.

On the other side, the Infernal Purgatory Tower stopped and did not continue to advance.

Xuetu, who was standing on top of the tower, his body exploded into a cloud of blood mist.

Seeing that, Xiang Chunan, who was lying in a pool of blood, laughed while he coughed out blood. “Hahaha!! What top five elite? What powerful Supreme Saint? Ain’t he still dead after meeting Lord Xiang here?”

A look of joy appeared on Awesome, the Little Taoist’s face, and it could not believe its eyes as it said, “We actually killed Xuetu. Won’t I become famous after this battle?”

Zhang Ruochen wiped off the blood at the corner of his mouth, but he was not as elated as Xiang Chunan or Awesome, the Little Taoist. Instead, his face turned pale, and his heart sank as he said, “Run.”

“Run, why run?”

“Yeah, we should take advantage of this and let the Immortal Vampires know that who has the final say in the Kunlun Realm.”

...

Ji Fanxin looked at the Infernal Purgatory Tower hanging high in the air, and she frowned like never before, saying, “We have only destroyed one of Xuetu’s avatar. When his true form arrives, we won’t even be able to leave.”

“What... an avatar...”

“Impossible!”

Both Xiang Chunan and Awesome the Little Taoist gasped, and could not help but take a few steps back.

Right then, when no one was operating the Infernal Purgatory Tower, the space was no longer restricted, and that was the best time to retreat.

Whoosh!

Using the Dimensional Shift, Zhang Ruochen took everyone and retreated back to the Sword Vault at top speed.

Boom!!

Just then, a powerful surge of blood Qi fell from the sky and appeared above the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

Xuetu's figure reappeared, and the aura that exuded from his body was nearly ten times stronger than before. It was like a blood-red sun hanging in the air and shining over the world.

However, his expression was extremely grim.

A mere swarm of ants could actually destroy his avatar?
Where would he put his face?

One needed to know that the avatar had been created using a large amount of blood Qi and had ten percent of his cultivation at peak strength.

Plus, with the Infernal Purgatory Tower, other than a Supreme Saint, who could have fought him?

“Run, then. I'll see where can you run to. Seal the exit of the Zhenyu Clan grounds, and don't even let a fly out. I want to suck everyone dry of their blood,” Xuetu Shenzi growled.

On the surface of the Infernal Purgatory Tower, runes and wards emerged like millions of tadpoles as the blood Qi shot into the air, the supreme power rushed out as if it was about to seal the dimension in place.

To use his real body to activate the Infernal Purgatory Tower, its power was definitely drastically different now.

“I never thought that there would be a time where Xuetu suffers a setback, heh.” The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord chuckled.

Xuetu drove the Infernal Purgatory Tower and broke into the Sword Vault at top speed.

There were only Precepts of Sword inside the Sword Vault, and aside from sword cultivators, anyone who broke in would see their strength suppressed.

However, even after breaking into the Sword Vault, Xuetu still appeared to be extremely powerful as if he did not care about the suppressive effect of the Sword Vault against him.

Even if his powers were suppressed, that did not affect him from taking out Zhang Ruochen and the rest.

The Seven Divine Planets suddenly flew out and instantly formed a powerful formation array that rushed toward Xuetu Shenzi.

Xuetu Shenzi did not even look, just casually launching a palm strike.

Boom!!

The formation array instantly disintegrated, as the Seven Divine Planets were scattered.

Bao Lie quickly appeared as he stabbed out with his golden spear.

With the power of the Seventh Radiance fully unleashed, the golden light all converged onto one spot, and there was nothing it could not destroy. Clang!

Xuetu flicked his finger, and the golden spear was sent flying.

Immediately after, he struck his palm out, and it landed squarely on Bao Lie's chest.

Dush!

Bao Lie puked blood and flew backward like a broken kite.

Many small cracks appeared on his body as blood seeped out of them as he almost burst apart.

With just a single palm strike, Bao Lie had suffered horrendous wounds and nearly died.

They might be of the same Path's Anterior realm, but the gap in their strength was abnormally large.

Just as Xuetu Shenzi was about to follow up with another strike, Zhang Ruochen intervened and blasted the Azuresky Pagoda in out.

The instant the Azuresky Pagoda held Xuetu Shenzi at back, Zhang Ruochen immediately rescued Bao Lie and fed the latter a large amount of the Springwater of Life.

“For you lot to even entertain the thought of fighting me... The audacity.” Xuetu Shenzi blasted the Azuresky Pagoda away and hissed coldly.

Seeing how badly wounded Bao Lie was, everyone’s heart sank, and they had no idea what they could muster to fight against Xuetu Shenzi.

They had only managed to destroy Xuetu’s avatar after suffering heavy injuries earlier. Up against his true form, they did not have any means to retaliate.

Zhang Ruochen clenched his fist, as his desire for strength was even more pronounced. If his cultivation base had reached Precept Dominion or the Path’s Anterior realm, why would he even fear Xuetu Shenzi?

He was not short of resources or potential, but what he was short of was time.

Give him another hundred years, he would fear no one beneath a Supreme Saint.

Xuetu Shenzi did not seem to be in a hurry to kill Zhang Ruochen and the rest. He enjoyed looking at their fearful faces as he pushed them back deeper into the Sword Vault, step by step.

There were many swords in the Black Wilderness: some perfect, some broken, with all kinds of shapes, and their number, innumerable...

The deeper they got in, the more active the Precepts of Sword and the stronger the suppressive effect against other cultivators.

Aside from Zhang Ruochen, Bao Lie, Ji Fanxin, and the others all suffered great suppression to their power, and their combat strength fell.

Conversely, Xuetu Shenzi was still as strong as he was before. With a complete Supreme Sacred Artifact in hand, even the Sword Vault was hard-pressed to suppress him.

In one of the secret spots in the Sword Vault, Luo Yi appeared and looked at the menacing Xuetu Shenzi with a frown.

“I’ve finally found something nice and these Immortal Vampire fools had broken into the place. Damn them.”

Luo Yi’s wore a disgusted expression, unhappy that the Immortal Vampires were ruining his plan.

He released a powerful spiritual power, and a giant appeared behind him carrying a giant heavy blade.

The giant was not a living being but a corpse that had been dead for who knew how long. It had been buried inside the Sword Vault, and its body was preserved, still bearing within it a powerful strength.

“Want to release Lord Ming? Not that easy. Go,” Luo Yi sneered as he controlled the giant with his spiritual power.

Boom!!

The giant leaped out and stood tall as it swung its giant blade in a murderous arc toward Xuetu Shenzi.

“Hmph.”

Xuetu Shenzi snorted heavily and stuck his finger out.

A burst of blood light cut through the space and slammed onto the giant blade.

“Raaaaawrr!”

The giant roared like a beast as it lashed out with repeated slashes, fearless of death.

While it was dead, it was still a sword cultivator, and it enjoyed a great advantage inside the Sword Vault.

Zhang Ruochen looked in the direction that the giant had leaped out from, and a glint appeared in his eyes as a thought crossed his mind.

The next moment, he snapped back to reality and without hesitation, brought Bao Lie and the rest at the fastest possible speed to a distant snow-covered ancient mountain.

Now that Xuetu Shenzi was held back by the giant, they could take the opportunity to get away, and any delay would mean squandering the chance.

Chapter 1907 - The Dreadblade's Lineage

Chapter 1907: The Dreadblade's Lineage

“It looks like a war corpse isn't enough, probably need another one. Can't bring them out anyway, so might as well just use them to block Xuetu for a while.”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen rush toward the snowy mountains, Luo Yi summoned another war corpse again.

After entering the secret grounds, he had only managed to find two Supreme Saint corpses, and now both of them were deployed, they should be able to block Xuetu Shenzi for a moment.

The second Supreme Saint war corpse looked frail and appeared very old. The war corpse held two long swords in both hands, and its offense was a brutal flurry.

“A mere two Supreme Saint war corpse and you think of stopping me? Begone and turn to ash!”

A thick surge of blood Qi exuded from Xuetu Shenzi and transformed into raging flames as they fused together with the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

He was able to control the Infernal Purgatory Tower because he had mastered the Purgatory Flames. It was a type of flame even more terrifying than the Divine Purification Flames, and only a few people had managed to master it.

A tide of Purgatory Flames rushed out of the Infernal Purgatory Tower and engulfed two of the war corpses, incinerating them into ashes. Even the swords were not spared.

Boom!!

A Purgatory Flame orb flew out and transformed into a fireball as it crashed into the secret ground where Luo Yi stood.

The mountain top collapsed but Luo Yi had long disappeared.

Xuetu Shenzi did not bother to look for him. Instead, he drove the Infernal Purgatory Tower as he pursued Zhang Ruochen and the others.

In the depths of the secret grounds, Luo Yi's figure reappeared and murmured, "Zhang Ruochen, I trust that you will not die so easily."

On the other side, just as Xuetu Shenzi was about to catch up to them, they have arrived at the foot of the snowy mountain.

"Why did you lot stop running?"

Xuetu looked down at Zhang Ruochen and the rest, breaking into a cruel smile.

In his eyes, the reason why Zhang Ruochen and his group stopped was entirely due to despair. There was also nowhere to run.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and shouted, "Because the one that will be running after this is you."

As he said, the Dreadblade appeared in his hand as countless sword precepts converged upon him.

"I beseech you, ancient masters, help me defeat my foe."

Zhang Ruochen soared into the air as he summoned the ancestral masters of the Dreadblade's lineage.

At that moment, all of the tips of the blades on the ground were pointing toward Zhang Ruochen, and they shook slightly as if worshipping him.

This was the so-called Advent of the Sword Saint, and all swords needed to bow.

Between the layers of clouds, an ancient voice rang out. "The Immortal Vampires dare to step foot into the Sword Vault! Slay them, show no mercy."

Suddenly, a series of tyrannical auras appeared and formed into the shadows of sixteen humanoids. They were the Saint Souls of the Dreadblade's sixteen masters.

"Saint Soul Possession."

The Saint Souls of the sixteen ancestral masters rushed toward Zhang Ruochen and formed a humanoid shadow that was thousands of feet tall, radiating a majestic aura.

Zhang Ruochen was floating between the Saint Shadow's brows, surrounded by a powerful Saint Qi. His entire body was brimming with power.

Back then, when he first came to the Sword Vault, he was just a first-order Demi Saint, and he could only borrow the Saint Soul of one ancestral master. Now, he could borrow the souls of sixteen ancestral masters.

In the past, Ling Feiyu had used the Saint Souls of the Heavenfall Blade line and fought against the Qingtian Blood Emperor, desperately preventing the Immortal Vampires from releasing Lord Ming.

Now, it was his turn to do the same thing. It was a mission that a Swordbearer must shoulder.

"Hmmm?" Xuetu Shenzi revealed a surprised look in his eyes.

He could feel Zhang Ruochen's aura soar after fusing with the sixteen Saint Arts. Zhang Ruochen's aura was comparable to that of a Neverwithers Supreme Saint.

"A ghost should just stay in your tomb. You dare to hinder me, then perish from this world for good!"

Xuetu Shenzi had a look of contempt in his eyes, as a terrible murderous intent burst out from his body.

Even if Zhang Ruochen had borrowed the Saint Souls of the sixteen ancestral masters and was as strong as a Neverwithers Supreme Saint, he still did not view him on the same level.

Xuetu had even defeated a Supreme Saint who had reached the Neverwithers rank before, so what of Zhang Ruochen who had reached this state using borrowed powers?

"All of you, fall back. I might not be able to take care of you after this," Zhang Ruochen said very seriously.

Everyone knew very well that if they were to join in the fight now, not only would they not be of help to Zhang Ruochen, they would hinder him instead.

So, without any hesitation, all of them backed away and gave Zhang Ruochen a wide enough berth to fight.

The sixteen ancestral masters' soul continuously mobilized the spiritual Qi of the heaven and earth and converged them toward Zhang Ruochen. That made the power within him grow even stronger, transforming into a five-colored chaotic cloud.

Now that he had cultivated to this stage, his five-element chaotic body had naturally gotten even stronger, and he could carry a vast amount of Saint power.

Whoosh!

The sword spirit awakened.

The Dreadblade unleashed a blinding glow, as it triggered millions of sword precepts.

Instantly, with Zhang Ruochen at the center, the entire area transformed into a sea of swords, with tens of thousands of swords flying, and Zhang Ruochen was like the sword emperor, supreme and unparalleled.

“Is this the power of a Supreme Saint?” Zhang Ruochen murmured as a wave of pride subconsciously emerged in his chest.

This was his absolute home ground, and he would never allow Xuetu Shenzi to step over.

Raising the Dreadblade, a powerful sword dominion stretched across all directions.

“Sword Nine.”

Zhang Ruochen swung the Dreadblade and unleashed the Sword Nine.

While he had yet to fully understand the final techniques of the Sword Nine, its strength was still not to be underestimated when unleashed.

At that moment, the thousands of ancient swords around him shot out at the same time, and under the Sword Will's lead, they formed a torrent of swords.

Similarly, aided by the ancestral masters and coupled with the boon given by the precepts inside the Sword Vault, the Sword Nine's power was completely different from what he unleashed normally.

Xuetu Shenzi stood above the Infernal Purgatory Tower as a large amount of Purgatory Flames rushed out of his body and blasted out as a fist.

Boom!!

The flaming fist mark clashed with the torrent of swords, exploding with an annihilative might.

It could be seen that the fist mark was disintegrating, and the torrent of swords was also disappearing at the same time.

A moment later, both the fist mark and the torrent of swords disappeared without a trace, with no one gaining an advantage.

“Purgatory Fire God's Fist.”

Zhang Ruochen murmured as his gaze was locked onto Xuetu Shenzi.

Xuetu Shenzi had learned this fist technique through the Infernal Purgatory Tower, and it was powerful. Barely anyone in the same realm as him was able to take a hit from it.

“True Thunder-fire Sword!”

Zhang Ruochen did not stop and struck again.

With the aid of the ancestral masters, naturally, the True Thunder-fire Sword, which was from their own technique lineage, possessed the most powerful strength.

After all, the ancestral masters all have cultivated the True Thunder-fire Sword to its apex level, and the Sword Will could be linked together.

Xuetu Shenzi continued to unleash the Purgatory Fire God's Fist. The fist technique was unpredictable, and every fist carried the power to shock the heavens.

For a time, the two fought fiercely against one another as a terrifying force raged and spread across all directions.

However, the environment of the Sword Vault was extremely special, so no matter how brutal the fighting was, it would not cause too much damage.

If not, the moment the two struck, the entire Sword Vault would have been annihilated.

“Xuetu Shenzi is indeed powerful for him to still be able to display such strength after entering the Sword Vault,” Bao Lie said solemnly.

A glint flashed past Ji Fanxin’s eyes as she said, “It is true that Xuetu Shenzi is very strong, but for him to be able to deploy such strength, it is all due to the Infernal Purgatory Tower. That is a complete Supreme Sacred Artifact. Its vessel spirit is extremely powerful, and it has greatly weakened the suppressive effect of the Sword Vault.”

“His Royal Highness is a sword cultivator, and he is also borrowing the power of the Dreadblade’s ancestral masters; he will definitely be able to defeat Xuetu Shenzi.”

Murong Yue spoke and had full confidence in Zhang Ruochen.

Ever since she followed Zhang Ruochen, no matter what sort of powerful enemy he had encountered, Zhang Ruochen could always figure a way to deal with them.

“Damn it, it’s a pity that the metal demonic crown does not have a vessel spirit, or else I’ll be crushing that bastard.” Xiang Chunan was extremely anxious yet helpless at the same time.

In the past, he had used his Supreme Sacred Artifact to bully people, and now the tables were turned on him instead.

They were both Supreme Sacred Artifacts, and the difference between having a vessel spirit or not was heaven and earth.

A Supreme Sacred Artifact with a vessel spirit, in the hands of a top-tier elite, was more than enough to kill a god. Like the Godslayer Cross Shield, which once crucified a god.

There were too few Divine Artifacts, and most of the artifacts the gods have were mostly Supreme Sacred Artifacts.

However, for some unknown reason, all of the Supreme Sacred Artifacts passed down in Kunlun Realm, all of their vessel spirits were missing, and could not unleash their full power at all.

“If Zhang Ruochen cannot defeat Xuetu Shenzi, we may need to give up the Sword Vault,” Ji Fanxin said grimly.

If they really were no match to him, then they could not just stay there and wait for their death.

There was a saying, as long as they live, they have an opportunity to turn things around.

Hearing that, Shi Qiankun’s expression turned sorrowful, as he clenched his fists, his eyes affixed on Zhang Ruochen.

As the patriarch of the Zhenyu Clan, if the Sword Vault fell to the Immortal Vampires, how could he face his ancestors?

The only regret was that the Zhenyu Clan was in decline, and there were no top-tier powerhouses, resulting in them unable to protect the Sword Vault.

Xia Wenxin, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, and the rest appeared out of thin air on top of a mountain peak. They then looked at the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Xuetu Shenzi from afar.

The Immortal Vampire army had rallied and regrouped. Once the battle was over, they would launch another assault.

“The Sword Vault sure is mysterious. Thankfully we were not the one rushing in here first, or else we will really be in trouble.” The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord frowned slightly.

In his current state of combining with the spirits of the ancestral masters, Zhang Ruochen was incomparably powerful and beyond his ability to fight against.

Xia Wenxin smiled and softly said, “The Sword Vault has six Swordbearers, and all of them can unleash powerful strength inside the Sword Vault. Zhang Ruochen is just one of them.”

“The six swords owned by the Swordbearers are also the keys to release Lord Ming. Back then, the Ten Clans had expended a lot of effort in Kunlun Realm to seize five of the swords, and

the only one missing is the Dreadblade in Zhang Ruochen's hands."

"If all six Swordbearers were around and defending the Sword Vault together, we would be in real trouble."

Before attacking the Sword Vault, he had a very detailed understanding of the situation in the Sword Vault, and so he had expected that even Xuetu Shenzi would not be able to take down the Sword Vault that easily.

Since Xuetu Shenzi was so aggressive, he was happy to let the former take the vanguard and was not afraid that Xuetu Shenzi would take all of the credit.

"Zhang Ruochen, you can't stop me."

Xuetu Shenzi growled as he raised his hand and blasted out the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

Being unable to kill Zhang Ruochen after a long while made him lose his patience, and he did not want to let things drag on.

Forget Zhang Ruochen with his borrowed Neverwither Supreme Saint power, even a real Neverwither Supreme Saint would fall once he used the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

Those who stood in his way would die.

Chapter 1908 - Red-robed Blood Dripper

Chapter 1908: Red-robed Blood Dripper

“Sword Nine.”

Zhang Ruochen’s gaze was grim, as he unleashed the sword strike with all his might.

The bright sword light and flames shot out together, as a destructive aura spread around, seemingly wanting to destroy everything.

If they had not been inside the Sword Vault, the lands that spanned tens of thousands of miles would have collapsed and sunk as a result of the impact.

The battle of the Supreme Saints was able to cause stars to fall.

For any macroworlds, the battle between Supreme Saints would always be a catastrophe.

Countless blades of Purgatory Flames splashed out as they fell from the sky, transforming into a rain of fire that melted everything.

“How’s it going?”

Xiang Chunan and the others looked at Zhang Ruochen, wanting to know what was going on.

Zhang Ruochen did not move as he held the Dreadblade and stared at Xuetu Shenzi. A portion of his sleeve was gone, burned to ashes by the Purgatory Flames.

On the other side, Xuetu Shenzi’s expression was grim, a wisp of his hair falling away, slashed by the sword Qi.

On the surface, he might have had some advantages, but he was not satisfied at all. For an ant-like existence in his eyes to cut off his hair, if he was any closer, would the latter not be able to wound him?

Baaaam!!

The raging Purgatory Flames emerged from Xuetu Shenzi's body, filling the sky.

The strand of severed hair burned up and instantly turned to ashes.

The Infernal Purgatory Tower shook violently, as countless arcane inscriptions appeared and bloomed in dazzling light as a faint divine power spread out as if trying to completely solidify the space.

If this was outside that domain, some stars may very well already been torn down by the impact.

“Hhhss...”

Everyone who was in the Sword Vault could not help but shudder at that moment as their scalps all felt numb.

There was no wind, however, everyone felt a passing breeze that carried along with it a strong bloody aura as if purgatory was about to descend upon the world.

Legend had it that the Infernal Purgatory Tower was itself a purgatory world, and even a god could be suppressed and refined by it.

In fact, it had indeed suppressed a god, and that was why it had a faint trace of divine power clinging onto it.

Supreme Sacred Artifacts that could kill a god had incredible power, and there were barely any pieces even after searching across many macroworlds.

Zhang Ruochen's face was grim, and he tried his best to borrow strength from the sixteen ancestral masters, while also mobilizing the Precepts of Truth.

Although the Sword Vault would suppress the Precepts of Truth, but it could still play a little role. Even if it could double the attack power, it was still very significant.

The attack by Xuetu Shenzi was overwhelming, and he needed to go all out, or else he would certainly suffer.

Unleashing the True Thunder-fire Sword, the entire area was filled with thunder and fire.

This sword technique was particularly fitting for Zhang Ruochen. First, Zhang Ruochen cultivated his spiritual power and was the best at thunder arts. Secondly, Zhang Ruochen had mastered the Divine Purification Flame to the level of Chenyan.

Coupled with his amazing talent in the art of the sword, cultivating the True Thunder-fire Sword was a simple matter for him. Plus, he had thoroughly understood its essence long ago.

Fortunately, his mastery of the Divine Purification Flame was powerful, so he had a strong immunity against the Purgatory Flames. Otherwise, he would have been at a bigger disadvantage in the battle against Xuetu Shenzi.

Boom!!

The two powerful forces collided and violently shook the entire Sword Vault.

Bam bam bam!! Zhang Ruochen stumbled a few miles back as he neutralized all of the incoming forces.

Sparks flew out of the Infernal Purgatory Tower, and part of its inscriptions darkened as its power was obviously weakened.

Xuetu Shenzi's expression was even grimmer. He thought that he could easily take Zhang Ruochen out, but the situation now was somewhat outside his expectations.

"I want to see how long can you last with that borrowed power from those ghosts?" Xuetu Shenzi sneered as he launched another attack.

No matter how powerful the external power was, it could not last forever. As long as he continued to attack, Zhang Ruochen would collapse soon enough.

"You are powerful, but defeating me inside the Sword Vault is impossible."

Zhang Ruochen held the Dreadblade in his hand as he dusted his robes. Immediately after, a sword domain formed out of

thousands of sword force automatically appeared.

In the distance, a dense blood fog poured into the Sword Vault as a series of powerful Immortal Vampires appeared.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord crossed his hands before his chest and sneered, “To think that he dared to call us useless. Even he, when faced with a difficult opponent like Zhang Ruochen, hasn’t managed to defeat him after such a long time.”

Xia Wenxin’s long hair fluttered as he looked at the battlefield with a faint smile on his face. “Be it Xuetu or Zhang Ruochen aided by the sixteen sword master spirits, both have the power to challenge a Supreme Saint. We better not get involved in this battle.”

A blow from a Supreme Saint was not something anyone wanted to take.

Breaking into their area of combat at that moment was no different than taking a pincer attack from two Supreme Saints, and it only meant death.

Wangqiu Shenzi, whose body was like an iron tower, said, “If we can distract Zhang Ruochen, perhaps Xuetu will be able to win faster.”

Xia Wenxin’s gaze looked at Bao Lie, Ji Fanxin, and the rest before he said, “If that’s the case, pick an opponent then!”

“I’ll take the vanguard.”

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord had a belly full of disgruntlement and wanted to thrash the entire place up.

The flesh wings on his back opened up like two massive blood clouds as he flew into the air. He stretched his right arm forward, and a three-foot-wide light beam blasted out of the eye on the palm.

Before the light beam had even arrived, the powerful wind had already reached it, causing the ground in front of Bao Lie, Ji Fanxin, and the rest to churn.

“Rawr!”

Bao Lie roared and blasted out a full-powered fist mark.

The fist mark then transformed into a massive, lifelike nebula leopard. Wherever it passed, it left behind a trail of stardust.

Boooooom!!!

The two collided together, and a powerful shock wave shook the realm.

A nearby volcano collapsed as magma gushed out of the ground, painting hundreds of miles red.

The next moment, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord arrived at the skies above Bao Lie as he laughed and shot out another light beam from his eyes.

Ji Fanxin took out a crystal-clear, purple petal and squeezed it in the palm of her hand, saying, “You dare to break into this place, Nine-eye Heavenly Lord... You are too conceited.”

Whoosh!!

The purple petals flew out, dividing into two, then four, then eight... finally it turned into a rain of petals.

These were not any ordinary rain of petals but was a type of spiritual attack.

When struck by any of the petals, one’s spirit and Saint Soul would suffer grievous injuries.

However, before the rain of petals had fallen on the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, it was sucked away by a force, and transforming into a torrent as it flew toward that force.

Blood-colored hair flew about as the handsome Xia Wenxin used a bamboo scroll to seal all of the petals away.

“The famous Hundred Flower Fairy sure is beautiful.” Xia Wenxin stared at Ji Fanxin with a look of appreciation.

“Be careful. Even Immortal Ming did not come out of the fight with her unscathed. A rose has thorns; beware of pricking yourself,” the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord said as he fought Bao Lie.

The next moment, Xia Wenxin and Ji Fanxin struck at the same time. The two were extremely fast that they instantly disappeared before everyone.

With Wangqiu Shenzi in the lead, the remaining princes and princesses, alongside the Immortal Vampire army surrounded Xiang Chunan and the rest.

Whoosh!!

Awesome the Little Taoist unleashed the Seven Divine Planets, and arrayed them in seven different directions as a large number of inscriptions appeared on them, forming a Ninth-rank Formation Array.

With the Ninth-Rank Formation Array and the help of Xiang Chunan, Sikong the Elder, Sikong the Younger, and the rest, they managed to hold Wangqiu Shenzi and his army at bay.

At present, only Shi Qiankun did not join the battle. He looked into the distance and saw a detachment of Immortal Vampires rushing toward the cold volcano.

“No, the cold volcano is the place Zhang Ruochen is culminating the form of the Ancient Abyssal Blade, I cannot let the blade fall into the hands of the Immortal Vampires.”

Shi Qiankun took out a talisman and stuck it onto his chest. His whole body was immediately enveloped in white light as he quickly flew over.

After catching up with the Immortal Vampires, Shi Qiankun shot out a series of Blood Suppressant Talismans and a large number of Mountain Chain Talismans, killing more than seven hundred Immortal Vampires beneath a range of stone mountains.

Standing at the top of the cold volcano, Shi Qiankun wiped off the sweat beads on his forehead and breathed a sigh of relief.

“There’s actually a talisman in this world that could counter the Immortal Vampires? Care to let me take a look?” A strange voice rang out.

Hearing the voice, Shi Qiankun’s expression immediately changed.

A wisp of black fog appeared out of thin air, forming Immortal Ming's body.

The next moment, he was still at the bottom of the mountain.

The next moment, he was already standing on the mountainside.

Shi Qiankun knew that he was no match for Immortal Ming, so he immediately turned around and jumped into the belly of the cold volcano.

“Heh, it looks like apart from the Big Dipper Portrait, there are some unexpected gains as well this time.”

The reason why Immortal Ming was after Shi Qiankun, was for the Big Dipper Portrait.

“Hmm? This cold volcano seems to be a bit weird.”

Immortal Ming stomped lightly, and a din rang out as a large number of cracks appeared on the huge mountain before collapsing away, revealing everything inside.

Inside the belly of the mountain, the Ancient Abyssal Blade was suspended under the sundial as a black-robed young man sat on the sword. His looks resembled Zhang Ruochen as he was concentrating on culminating his form.

His body appeared corporeal at times, illusory at times.

After spending many years, the culmination of the Ancient Abyssal Blade's spirit body had reached its critical moment and was about to be completed.

Shi Qiankun was standing at the other end of the Sundial. As he saw Immortal Ming coming down from above, he let out a long sigh, as a look of despair appeared in his eyes.

The foe was too strong, and any resistance was futile.

Immortal Ming's figure was upright with his hands on his back. Looking at the Sundial on the ground, and the sound of flowing water coming out of it, he revealed an expression of great interest.

“Time flows and enters the stream, what a great treasure of time.

Immediately afterward, his gaze fell upon the Ancient Abyssal Blade above, and his eyes lit up. “Hey, it’s a sword made out of the Iron of Creation, and its vessel spirit is forming. Even if I don’t find the Big Dipper Portrait, getting these two treasures will make this trip worthwhile. Wonderful, wonderful.”

The Sword Spirit of the Ancient Abyssal Blade looked up, with a worried look in his eyes. “The Immortal Vampire’s attack of the Sword Vault even involved the Netherkind. Has the Sword Vault been taken?”

Immortal Ming stared at Abyssal’s Sword Spirit and said, “The only reason I helped the Immortal Vampires is for our own benefits. The fall of the Sword Vault is a matter of time. This is the manifestation of destiny, and no one can stop it.”

“With Zhang Ruochen around, taking the Sword Vault won’t be that easy,” the Sword Spirit said calmly.

Immortal Ming held his hands and sneered, “It’s because your master is too weak that you have become the frog at the bottom of the well. Zhang Ruochen’s opponent is Xuetu, and even if he has the advantage in the Sword Vault. Defeat is all but certain.

“A good bird always chooses the trees it perches on. What’s the point of following a dead man? You might as well follow me. With my power and the resources I can mobilize, you can grow into a peerless sword in the future.”

The Sword Spirit laughed and said, “A dead man... yeah... that’s right.”

The Sword Spirit of the Ancient Abyssal Blade was too calm, and his laugh was abnormal, which gave Immortal Ming an ominous feeling.

“What are you laughing at?” With just your Sword Spirit of a Seventh Radiance sacred artifact, believe it when I say I can kill you right away, and at most I’ll just raise a new Sword Spirit later on.” Immortal Ming’s eyes darkened and turned cold.

Suddenly, Immortal Ming felt a chill on his back as the hair on his skin stood up. An unprecedented sense of crisis enveloped

him, making him unable to move.

“Tap... Tap...”

Footsteps rang out.

“Who goes there?”

Immortal Ming was startled at looked around.

It was a terrifying thing for someone to be able to come close to him without him noticing.

A beautiful woman in red walked out from the shadow. Her figure tall, her hair black and silky, her snow-white neck was slender, and so was her waist. Her eyes were cold, and her lips crimson, looking almost like Chi Yao.

She was not only similar in appearance, but even in temperament.

Any living being standing before her would feel an involuntary pressure, wanting to kneel down, to submit, to worship her.

“Empress Chi Yao.”

Shi Qiankun could not bear the pressure and knelt directly onto the ground.

“Empress Chi Yao... How can it be?”

Immortal Ming held his breath as his eyes widened. He did not believe that this person was really that god of the Kunlun Realm.

“No... you are a Sword Spirit.”

Immortal Ming was no ordinary cultivator and quickly saw through the real identity of the woman in red.

“That’s right, I am a Sword Spirit named Blood Dripper.”

The woman in red held a crimson blade. As she took another step forward, a monstrous killing intent rushed at Immortal Ming.

Perhaps, The Blood Dripper had devoured too much blood of the living, and her killing intent had a corporeal form as it

appeared as a battlefield of corpses before Immortal Ming's eyes.

The woman in red did not even act as the killing intent had transformed into tens of thousands of blades and shot out at Immortal Ming.

Immortal Ming's powerful Saint Soul seemed to almost be torn apart by the killing intent.

“The Stygian Array.”

Immortal Ming restrained the fear in his heart and gritted his teeth as he deployed a formation array, forming a Stygian World as he tried to block the woman in red's assault.

The Stygian Array was Immortal Ming's biggest trump card, and it could even withstand three strikes of a Neverwithers Supreme Saint's attacks.

But...

Dushhh!

The sword in the woman in red's hand turned into a blood light, and like lightning, instantly pierced through the Stygian Array, and landed square on Immortal Ming's heart.

Baaaam!!!

Immortal Ming was blasted away by the Blood Dropper and nailed onto a rock as blood gushed out of his wound.

“How could this be...”

Immortal Ming's eyes widened in disbelief.

There was someone beneath a Supreme Saint that could beat him with a single attack.

The next moment, all of the Saint Blood inside Immortal Ming's body was absorbed by the Blood Dropper, and he was reduced to a desiccated corpse.

The woman in red did not spare Immortal Ming another look as her gaze fell onto the Sword Spirit of the Ancient Abyssal Blade. The coldness in her eyes disappeared, and in its place was full of tenderness.”

Blood Dropper and Abyss were a couple.

Their masters might have parted, but the feelings between the two swords remained.

Chapter 1909 - Two Swords Striking Together

Chapter 1909: Two Swords Striking Together

The Abyssal Sword Spirit's eyes were also full of tenderness and even more longing. He had been separated from Blood Dropper for far too long.

However, no matter how long they were apart, the feelings between them remained unchanged and even became stronger because of it. It was like aging wine.

He just did not expect that at the moment of absolute crisis, Blood Dropper would appear next to him as if she had been secretly watching him.

“Has the Army of the Court arrived?” Shi Qiankun stood up and asked.

From his point of view, since the sword of the Empress has appeared in the Sword Vault, then the imperial court may have already sent a large army to reinforce the Zhenyu Clan.

The woman in red glanced at Shi Qiankun and said in a cold tone, “There's no army, and I did not come here under any orders. I only came here for Abyss.”

“This...”

Shi Qiankun was immediately discouraged, and he did not know what else to say.

“You may leave.”

The woman in red spoke again, but it was an eviction order.

Hearing that, Shi Qiankun snapped back to his senses and quickly withdrew from the cold volcano.

That lady had killed Immortal Ming with a single strike, and she was not someone he could afford to provoke.

Moreover, with this person around, he no longer needed to worry about the situation here. It was better if he focused on the situation on Zhang Ruochen's side.

After dismissing Shi Qiankun, the woman in red smiled and said, "I'll help you culminate your form. We'll talk about the rest later."

As she spoke, she pointed out her finger, and a ray of blood light was released. It then sank into the body of Abyss' Sword Spirit.

Abyss' Sword Spirit nodded, and immediately closed his eyes as he continued to finish the process. He had absolute trust in Blood Dripper's Sword Spirit.

Based on Immortal Ming's words, he already knew that the situation outside was dire, and he needed to quickly culminate his form so that he could rush to aid Zhang Ruochen.

There was not a lot of movement in the cold volcano, so the Immortal Vampires did not know of the Blood Dripper's arrival, let alone know that Immortal Ming was dead as the fierce battle raged on.

Even with the Sword Vault's special environment, after repeated battles, there was still some damage since many peaks had collapsed and swords shattered into fragments.

Baaaam!!!

Zhang Ruochen stumbled back again, and the giant shadow that encased him crashed against the snow-capped mountain, causing plenty of snow to fall down.

"Zhang Ruochen, as I've said before, even if you are in the Sword Vault, even if you can borrow the powers of the ghosts and increase your power to that of a Neverwithier Supreme Saint, you are still no match for me. How long can your body last?"

Xuetu Shenzi stepped forward and looked at Zhang Ruochen with a downward gaze, like a dragon looking at an ant.

If it were not for the Sword Vault, he would not have needed to expend so much effort and would have killed Zhang

Ruochen long ago.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were calm and unfazed as he faintly said, "What's the point with all that babble? If you are really capable, walk over my dead body."

There were certain things that must be done in life, and even if it meant sacrificing his life, he would never take a step back.

He had promised Elder Xuanji to shoulder the mission of the Dreadblade's line, and no matter what, he would see it to the end.

If he could not even do such a thing well, how could he fight with Chi Yao?

"Obdurate cur." Xuetu Shenzi's eyes became cold.

He took a step forward, and unleashed the Purgatory Fire God's Fist, and created a flame giant.

With the flame giant at the center, the Purgatory Flames spread across all directions rapidly, as if trying to turn the Sword Vault into an Infernal Purgatory realm.

He no longer wanted to waste his breath on Zhang Ruochen and wanted to use absolute power to crush the latter's resolve.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were firm as he infused more power into the Azuresky Pagoda, which was suspended above his head to protect himself.

Only by protecting himself well could he fight Xuetu Shenzi for a protracted period.

After all, he had not cast his immortal body yet, and his flesh still had some weaknesses. He was unable to withstand the Infernal Purgatory Tower's attacks.

Without the Azuresky Pagoda's protection, he would have been seriously wounded now.

Thankfully, the Azuresky Pagoda's vessel spirit had the same enemy as him, and they worked together to face the external foe, or else, it would be really troublesome.

Bao Lie fought furiously against the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, and he was gaining the upper hand. His Eye of the Star God

was stronger than the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's nine eyes.

“Damn it, if White Bone Mountain hadn't been damaged, I wouldn't be in such a backfoot.” The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's eyes were gloomy, and his heart raged with fury.

White Bone Mountain was his biggest trump card. With White Bone Mountain, even if he were to encounter a Neverwithier Supreme Saint, he could still fight back.

However, White Bone Mountain had been broken by the Azuresky Pagoda, and it was seriously damaged. So, it could not be used until it was restored.

Otherwise, he could have suppressed Bao Lie with just a flip of his hand.

With his seething anger, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord snapped as he launched a counterattack with all his strength. He was a scion of an Immortal Vampire god, how could he be weaker than others of the same realm?

Before the snow mountain, the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Xuetu Shenzi had entered a white-hot stage. Xuetu Shenzi was extremely powerful and had been pushing Zhang Ruochen back. Nevertheless, he was still unable to gain a significant advantage, let alone defeat Zhang Ruochen properly.

He, who was able to defeat a Supreme Saint, had his hands tied there and was unable to deal the killing blow on Zhang Ruochen.

Everything was all because of the Sword Vault and the ghosts. Compared with killing Zhang Ruochen, he wanted to turn the Sword Vault upside down and destroy the ghosts more now.

“I've lost my patience. Even if I need to pay a price, I will destroy you and those ghosts.” Xuetu Shenzi hissed.

He stretched out a hand, as a burst of blood Qi gushed out, continuously infusing the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

With the infusion of blood Qi, the Infernal Purgatory Tower shook violently as countless runes appeared. They crisscrossed across a large area of space as if they wanted to confine the entire Sword Vault and even force out the Precepts of Sword.

The Infernal Purgatory Tower flew up high and floated in the air like a scorching sun as it painted the entire Sword Vault into the color of purgatory, and made the atmosphere extremely repressive.

“This power...”

Shi Qiankun stood on a mountain peak and his body trembled involuntarily.

Everyone also looked at the Infernal Purgatory Tower, their eyes became excited grim.

Anyone could feel that the Infernal Purgatory Tower was different from before as if a seal had been broken.

Zhang Ruochen was right the Infernal Purgatory Tower as a terrifying power suppressed, making him almost immobile.

Even the Saint Shadow that encased him was trembling, with faint signs of disintegration.

“Die!”

Zhang Ruochen did not sit still and struck first.

Before Xuetu Shenzi had roused the Infernal Purgatory Tower to its limit, he still had a fighting chance. If he were to wait, the situation would spiral out of control.

His sword force blasted out like it wanted to cut down a star.

Boom!!

The Infernal Purgatory Tower stood still and withstood the blow.

“Again.”

Zhang Ruochen did not give up and struck again.

After several sword strikes, the sword force was even more condensed than the last one. The essence of the True Thunder-Fire Sword was being fully unleashed by him.

However, no matter how he attacked, he could not shake the Infernal Purgatory Tower, nor even break the purgatory barrier formed by the tower.

The entire Sword Vault was already enveloped beneath the purgatory barrier.

Even a fool could tell what Xuetu Shenzi was up to. He clearly planned to destroy the Sword Vault whole, and not sparing anyone at all.

When the Infernal Purgatory Tower's power had reached its climax, everything would be annihilated. Even a Neverwithers Supreme Saint might not be able to survive that.

"Xuetu, that bloody lunatic... He did not hesitate to deplete his own energy to rouse the Infernal Purgatory Tower. If he had done that during his fight with Sword Saint Chunyi, the Sword Saint would have been dead." In a hidden corner, Luo Yi's gaze was grim and mixed with a hint of irritation.

While he was hiding in a secret area, should the Infernal Purgatory Tower's power was fully unleashed, this secret spot may not be able to withstand the impact.

In this case, he really had to seriously think about what countermeasures he could take.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, two lights, one red and one black cut through the air like two meteors. They were extremely dazzling.

"What is that?"

Such a movement immediately attracted everyone's attention.

Even Xuetu Shenzi noticed it, and could not help but to cast his gaze at the two rays of light.

The next moment, the two lights appeared beside Zhang Ruochen, turning into two simple long swords.

One of them was as red as blood as it seethed with murderous intent, and was the most eye-catching.

"That is... Empress Chi Yao's Blood Dropper. Why has it appeared here?"

Luo Yi's eyes widened, and could not believe what he saw.

“The rumors had it that Zhang Ruochen and Empress Chi Yao had a very deep relationship, and that does not seem to be false.”

Luo Yi frowned slightly and fell into deep thought, no one knew what he was thinking.

Not only Luo Yi, but everyone else was also shocked as their eyes were completely drawn to the sight of the Blood Dripper.

Xia Wenxin, the Nine-eye Heavenly King temporarily stopping fighting and pulled a distance away from Bao Lie and the rest.

Somehow, the Blood Dripper’s appearance gave rise to an ominous feeling in their hearts.

“Isn’t it said that Zhang Ruochen and Empress Chi Yao share a deep hatred of each other? Why would her sword, the Blood Dripper, appear in the Sword Vault?” The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord wore a look of confusion.

A grim look appeared on Xia Wenxin’s face as he said, “The thoughts of an existence such as Empress Chi Yao is not something you or I can fathom. The only thing we are can be sure of is that Empress Chi Yao has been paying close attention to the Sword Vault.”

Any of Empress Chi Yao’s involvement would cause a shadow of doubt to materialize in anyone’s heart. She was, after all, a terrifying goddess that could kill a god, especially when Empress Chi Yao had only cultivated for a little over eight hundred years.

If she were given a longer period of time, she might even be able to compare to the ancient gods like Yueshen.

Looking at both the Blood Dripper and Ancient Abyssal Blade before him, Zhang Ruochen was slightly startled as the scenes of him training sword techniques together with Chi Yao in the past appeared in his mind.

During the Ancient Abyssal Blade’s most critical moment of culminating its form, the Blood Dripper Sword actually rushed over to guard it, and that caused emotions to well up within Zhang Ruochen.

Chi Yao was so ruthless yet Blood Dripper was so affectionate to Abyss. How ironic.

Shaking his head, Zhang Ruochen came back to his senses. With a wave of his sleeve, both the Ancient Abyssal Blade and Blood Dripper flew up at the same time. Like a couple, they formed the Yin-Yang Taiji Seal.

He never thought that there would be an opportunity for both the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper to simultaneously use the strongest two-person formation of the Liangyi Sect, the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation.

Xuetu Shenzi stared at the Yin-Yang Taiji Seal and sneered disdainfully as he said, “No matter how good a sword is, it still depends on the wielder. In the empress’ hand, it can slay a god, but in yours, what good can it do? These two swords made out of the Iron of Creation will be mine from today onwards.

“Being able to obtain the empress’ weapon is much more exciting than wiping out the Sword Vault.”

Zhang Ruochen turned into a sword god as the aura on his person rose steadily. His eyes were cold as he said, “I’m afraid you won’t have the chance to savor that.”

Chapter 1910 - : Killing a Shenzi

Chapter 1910: Killing a Shenzi

“Suppress and kill!”

Xuetu Shenzi growled as he waved his sleeves and blasted out the full-charged Infernal Purgatory Tower.

The tower unleashed raging flames, like a falling star, carrying with it an unparalleled power of devastation, as if it was about to totally destroy the Sword Vault.

No matter how much external force Zhang Ruochen could borrow, he would be obliterated without mercy.

It would be Zhang Ruochen’s honor to die from his strongest attack.

“Go.”

Zhang Ruochen was fearless, and his momentum quickly peaked as he blasted the Yin-Yang Taiji Seal out.

Although he was alone now, the tacit understanding between the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dropper was enough to perform the true technique of the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation.

Baaaam!!!

The Yin-Yang Taiji Seal crashed against the Infernal Purgatory Tower. As the very different powers collided against each other, they slowly ground against each other, unleashing an extremely terrifying shock wave in their wake.

The Infernal Purgatory Tower stopped mid-air. Although it continued to unleash its raging powers, it could no longer descend any further.

The Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram formed by the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dropper was extremely stable. It might

have seemed small, but it had the might to resist the Infernal Purgatory Tower's impact.

“You cannot stop me! Break!”

A sharp light flashed in Xuetu Shenzi's eyes as his true body appeared atop the Infernal Purgatory Tower, and he crashed downward with all of his might.

The aura around Zhang Ruochen's body continued to rise as it continuously infused power into the Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram.

In addition, the diagram was also drawing power from the Sword Vault on its own as if both the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper had a strange connection with the Sword Vault.

An invisible wave approached, causing Zhang Ruochen to suddenly come to a kind of understanding. His Sword Will underwent a bizarre change too.

Finally, he had managed to fully comprehend the final technique of Sword Nine, Soul Oblivion, thus reaching the perfected state of Sword Nine.

Instantly, with his evolved Sword Will, he activated the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation.

The Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation of the Liangyi Sect was born from the

Wordless Sword Tome

of the Hall of Swords. Therefore, using the Sword Will obtained from comprehending the

Wordless Sword Tome

to activate the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation was almost complementary.

The Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram burst out with brilliant divine light as a sword force rushed into the sky, cutting through the purgatory barrier.

Immediately after, the Infernal Purgatory Tower was struck by one of the sword forces as countless blades of Purgatory Flames flew out and fell like a rain of fire.

The next moment, the Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram once again unleashed a surge of Sword Force, cutting through the space while striking Xia Wenxin, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord, and the rest.

Compared with the Sword Force that struck the Infernal Purgatory Tower, the ones blasted out now was undoubtedly much weaker in power, but they were absolutely not to be underestimated. Each one of them had enough power to strike down a star.

Xia Wenxin reacted extremely quickly, and immediately deployed the Godslayer Cross Shield.

Boom!!

The Godslayer Cross Shield unleashed a series of blood light as they collided with the sword force and mutually annihilated each other.

“Xuetu Shenzi has depleted his energy to rouse the Infernal Purgatory Tower, and it’s more than enough to kill a Neverwithers Supreme Saint. Yet, it could not do anything to Zhang Ruochen, and he’s now in the backfoot. How is this possible?” Seeing the Infernal Purgatory Tower fly up into the air, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was in disbelief.

Although he did not like Xuetu, he recognized the latter’s strength and knew how terrifying Xuetu’s blow was earlier.

Under normal circumstances, that hit would be enough to kill Zhang Ruochen, and even those ghosts that aided Zhang Ruochen would have been annihilated as well.

But why did things turn out like this?

“As expected of Empress Chi Yao’s sword, it is even more powerful than the Infernal Purgatory Tower.” Xia Wenxin could not help but speak in admiration.

There were strong and weak Supreme Sacred Artifacts, and the gap was large more often than not.

Just like the Empress of Thousand Bones’ Void Blade, it was a top-tier Supreme Sacred Artifact, and some even speculate that it was not much different from a Divine Artifact.

And while the Blood Dripper's time as a Supreme Sacred Artifact was not long, it was still made out of the Iron of Creation, coupled with Empress Chi Yao's power, it was much stronger than many Supreme Sacred Artifacts from the beginning, and may even have the chance to become a true Divine Artifact.

"The situation seems a little bad, what should we do next?" Wangqiu Shenzi, whose body was like an iron hat, said with a frown.

While he had no problems fighting, the strategy was still up to Xia Wenxin.

A few gleams of light flashed in Xia Wenxin's eyes as he demurred. "Assemble the army and launch a full-on assault. Deploy all of the Saintkiller Warships."

Hearing that, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's eyes suddenly brightened. "We should have used the Saintkiller Warships from the start. It could have saved us the effort."

"When the situation is not completely clear, it is naturally better to keep some trump cards hidden. Now that even the Blood Dripper has appeared, the Zhenyu Clan probably have no other hands to play." Xia Wenxin calmly analyzed.

As he said that, he flung his sleeves, and three exquisite warships only a few feet long appeared.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord grabbed one of them and quickly poured his own power into it.

Suddenly, the miniature warships quickly became large and transformed into colossal objects that were hundreds of meters in length.

Ten thousand Immortal Vampire warriors immediately flew onto the warship, while the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord himself entered the warship.

Immediately after, Xia Wenxin and Wangqiu Shenzi each took charge of a warship as well, forming a three-pronged formation alongside the warship that was commandeered by the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord. At the same time, they flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

Xia Wenxin knew that using a normal warship against the Sword Vault was pointless, so he had brought three extremely powerful Saintkiller Warships over.

As the name suggested, the Saintkiller Warships existed specifically for destroying Saints, if it was controlled by a top-level elite, it was enough to kill a Supreme Saint.

Refining a Saintkiller Warship was not easy, and each ship was worth cities. Not only did it have extremely powerful offensive capabilities, but its defensive power was also very strong, making it difficult to be damaged.

Had it not been for the assault on the Sword Vault, Xia Wenxin would not have been able to take out three Saintkiller Warships from the clan.

On the other side, the Immortal Vampire army quickly formed up formation arrays, and each battle formation was made out of thousands of people and was extremely large.

Individual-strength-wise, these Immortal Vampires were indeed not very strong, but once in a battle formation with their collective strengths combined, they were not to be underestimated.

There was a saying that ants in a swarm could bite an elephant to death; a battle formation formed by tens of thousands of Saint-level Immortal Vampire warriors was enough to kill a Saint King.

“Xuetu, you lead the charge. We will support you from the side.”

Xia Wenxin secretly sent a telepathic message to Xuetu Shenzi.

At that moment, Xuetu Shenzi’s face was extremely gloomy. The battle earlier had caused a sense of frustration to grow in his heart, and that made him extremely furious.

“Die!”

Xuetu roared as he once again infused a lot of his essence into the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

The dimmed inscriptions resurfaced once again, as a scorching heat radiated as a purgatory world faintly emerged from it.

Boom!!

The Infernal Purgatory Tower crashed down, carrying it with it the momentum beyond any resistance.

At the same time, a large number of inscriptions appeared on the three Saintkiller Warships as each shot out lightning, flames, and violent gales.

With three Shenzi and thirty thousand Immortal Vampire saint-level cultivators powering the warships at the same time, the power unleashed was almost unstoppable.

Forget Saint Kings, even Supreme Saints needed to avoid the blow.

The Saintkiller Warships were usually used in space combat, and any strike could shoot down a star, and shatter the void.

At this moment, three forces erupted at the same time, matching the attacks launched by the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were grim as he did his best to spur the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation. The Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram grew bigger as he stood in the middle, allowing him to attack or defend.

This Sword Formation focused mostly on balance. Whether it was in terms of offense or defense, it was very strong. As long as two people were of one mind, it would be almost invincible.

Booom!!

The power of the Infernal Purgatory Tower and the three Saintkiller Warships bombarded the Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram entirely.

To the disappointment of Xia Wenxin and the rest, the diagram did not collapse and was still running slowly.

All of the power that slammed against the Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram was for naught as they disappeared away.

“My turn,” Zhang Ruochen whispered as he unleashed a powerful Sword Will.

Hummmmm

The Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram shuddered, as it shot out a barrage of extremely condensed Sword Force.

For him to be able to condense them to such a degree was thanks to the attacks by Xia Wenxin and the rest, it was those attacks that made the Sword Force even stronger.

Baaaam!!!

The Infernal Purgatory Tower was sent flying again, and even if it had unleashed a greater force, it was pointless.

Creaaaak...

The three Saintkiller Warships were all sent flying upside down as the inscriptions on their surface darkened, and was clearly damaged.

Whoosh!

A Sword Soul flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s body and used the Dreadblade as it pierced through the head of Wangqiu Shenzi like a thunderbolt.

“Imposs...”

Wangqiu Shenzi’s eyes were wide open as he fell straight down.

Zhang Ruochen’s Sword Soul did not retreat but completely spurred the Dreadblade and unleashed the Sword Nine at full power.

Baaaam!!

Many of the Immortal Vampire warriors on the Saintkiller Warships could not even react before their bodies simply exploded, dying a gruesome death.

The next moment, the Sword Soul returned as if it had never left before.

While there were some surviving Immortal Vampire warriors on the warship, it was basically paralyzed and no longer a

threat.

For Zhang Ruochen to be able to incapacitate a Saintkiller Warship so quickly was beyond anyone's imagination.

In particular, the slaying of Wangqiu Shenzi was even more shocking and inexplicable.

Hiss...

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord gasped, as a trace of fear grew involuntarily in his heart.

His strength was not that much stronger than Wangqiu Shenzi's, and since Zhang Ruochen could kill the latter, it meant that it was equally possible for Zhang Ruochen to kill him.

“Retreat.”

Without any hesitation, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord chose to retreat.

No matter what, he had to first create a distance between him and Zhang Ruochen. He did not want to be the next Wangqiu Shenzi.

“Where do you think you're going?” Zhang Ruochen asked coldly as he blasted out the Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram straight at the Saintkiller Warship that the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was commandeering.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was afraid and had chosen to flee, literally leaving himself open. How could Zhang Ruochen let such an opportunity slip?

At that moment, a dreadful blood Qi erupted, forming a massive shield blocking before the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's warship.

The giant shield was formed by a battle formation, gathering the power of tens of thousands of Immortal Vampire warriors, its defensive power was not to be underestimated.

Just as the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was about to breathe a sigh of relief, he suddenly felt a numbness in his scalp and a terrifying threat looming over him.

Boom!!

The giant shield burst apart like it was a fragile object.

The Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram did not lose momentum and crashed straight into the Saintkiller Warship that the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was commandeering as a destructive force erupted.

Chapter 1911 - Invincible

Chapter 1911: Invincible

“Sh*t!”

The Nine-eyes Heavenly Lord’s expression changed drastically, as a shadow hung over his heart.

Immediately, he deployed the Supreme Sacred Artifact-level ancient mirror out, as he fully roused the supreme power inside the mirror.

Crack.

The Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram formed by the Blood Dropper and Ancient Abyssal Blade revealed its lethal edge as sword Qi ran rampant, easily cutting the Saintkiller Warship in half as they fell like two massive mountains of steel.

In an instant, a large number of Immortal Vampire cultivators were struck by the sword Qi, and their bodies and spirit were all annihilated.

Boom!!!

Two loud bangs rang out.

Both parts of the severed Saintkiller Warship fell onto the ground, creating two massive craters upon their impact while shaking the earth.

Whoosh!!

The ancient mirror let out a dazzling light as countless inscriptions interweaved with one another. The supreme power condensed into a sparkling divine sea that blocked the Blood Dropper and Ancient Abyssal Blade’s path, wanting to shackle them.

However, the Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram spun along, and as it flew past, it tore through the supreme power with an annihilative force, ripping the divine sea apart.

The top of the Blood Dripper hit the center of the ancient mirror, sending it crashing backward.

Crack!

There were several clear cracks that appeared on the ancient mirror, and it was quite badly damaged.

However, taking advantage of this opportunity, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord escaped far enough and avoided the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation's attack.

Just when the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was about to retrieve the ancient mirror, Zhang Ruochen used the power of space and stuck his palm out to grab the mirror.

Immediately after, a palm spanning dozens of meters long appeared above the ancient mirror, and a spatial vortex emerged from the palm as it grasped the darkening ancient mirror. Then, it forcefully suppressed it with the power of space.

Although the ancient mirror was a Supreme Sacred Artifact, it was quite seriously damaged, and without a vessel spirit, suppressing it was not difficult.

Seeing the ancient mirror being snatched away, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's eyes were about to pop out of his eye sockets as he roared, "Give me back my Zangshan Demonic Mirror!"

His White Bone Mountain was already half-destroyed; if he lost the Zangshan Demonic Mirror as well, his losses this time would be too great. How would he compete with the other Immortal Vampire elites and other clans in the Infernal Court next time?

"Fine, I'll give it back."

The spiritual Qi of heaven and earth all gathered toward Zhang Ruochen and rushed into the Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

A large number of inscription patterns appeared on the mirror surface, each was extremely clear as the terrifying supreme power surged and roiled, far stronger than it was in the hands of the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord.

"Sh*t!"

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's pupils shrank, his heart seething with fear.

He had sensed that the link between him and the ancient mirror had been severed, and in a blink of an eye, the ancient mirror had changed masters.

“Fall back!”

Xia Wenxin too also noticed things had taken a turn for the worse, and went all out to spur the Saintkiller Warship. Spots of lights appeared on the surface of the warship's hull as they spread out, forming a formation array mark like the stars.

Countless of thunder and lightning shot out from formation marks, causing the sky to brighten and darken at intervals.

Zhang Ruochen had expected Xia Wenxin to interfere, so he recalled both the Blood Dripper and the Ancient Abyssal Blade. He quickly drew a circle with his left hand, controlling both of the swords as he blocked the attack that was launched by Xia Wenxin's warship.

With his right hand, he shot out the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and struck the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord.

At the same time, the Azuresky Pagoda also flew out and attacked Xuetu Shenzi.

It was extremely extraordinary for him to strike at three different Shenzis at the same time.

The Infernal Purgatory Tower was knocked away twice, and its power was completely exhausted, no longer able to stimulate a powerful force within a short period of time. Thus, the Azuresky Pagoda was more than enough to deal with it.

“Damn it.”

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord clenched his fists in fury.

Seeing that he had no one to rely on and that he was desperate, he took out half of the White Bone Mountain that contained the divine bones and propped it up.

The aura radiating from the Zangshan Demonic Mirror was too terrifying and made him feel an enormous threat. Even if

he did not die taking the blow, he would probably be badly mutilated by it.

On the other side, Xia Wenxin wore a grim expression as he shot out the Godslayer Cross Shield.

He could already see that the Blood Dripper and Ancient Abyssal Blade's Sword Formation was all-destroying. Even the Saintkiller Warships could not block their slashes.

The two previously destroyed Saintkiller Warships were the best examples.

Boom!!

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror unleashed its supreme power, and White Bone Mountain was instantly submerged.

Crack.

The sounds of shattering and disintegrating came from White Bone Mountain as many Saint Bones instantly shattered and were reduced to powder.

After that blow, White Bone Mountain was basically destroyed, and the cost to repair it was no less than refining a new one.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord was bleeding in his heart and his entire person was about to grow crazy, wishing he could rip Zhang Ruochen into pieces.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror had originally been his own weapon, but it was now controlled by Zhang Ruochen and used against him, rubbing salt on his wounds.

The only thing to be thankful for was that White Bone Mountain had helped him block that supreme power blast and allowed him to temporarily escape danger.

At the first opportunity, the Nine-eye Heavenly King swiftly flew to the warship Xia Wenxin was on.

At that moment, he could not be alone, otherwise, he would undoubtedly perish.

With the power of the Saintkiller Warship and the Godslayer Cross Shield, confronting the Blood Dripper and the Ancient

Abyssal Blade on equal footing for a short period of time was possible.

Whoosh!

With the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord commanding the Saintkiller Warship, thousands of Immortal Vampire cultivators mobilized their saint Qi. Immediately after, a hundred and eighty beams of light flew out from the top of the warship, forming into a battle formation

At the center of the battle formation, a giant ax was formed, and it slashed down in a brutal arc.

At the same time, three other battle formations also condensed three different weapons, each exuding majestic strength.

“Break!”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold. He held his hands together, forming a Sword Path Finger Seal as the Blood Dropper and the Ancient Abyssal Blade revolved faster and faster as the power of the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation was further enhanced.

The world was transformed into one part Yin and part Yang, with two different colors.

Within the sword formation, four Sword Force flew out.

The four Sword Forces were like a rainbow cutting into the heavens, easily smashed the four giant weapons created on the Saintkiller Warship.

Whoosh!

On the surface, tens of thousands of Immortal Vampire cultivators lined up into a square formation, and blasted out tens of thousands of saint light, as they ripped through the air like meteors and bombarded Zhang Ruochen.

Each saint light was a saint artifact.

Tens of thousands of saint light meant tens of thousands of saint artifacts.

With so many saint artifacts blasted out at the same time, unleashing their full power, was enough to sink a continent

and destroy all life on it.

Zhang Ruochen was unfazed. With a flick of his sleeve, he summoned the Ancient Abyssal Blade and Blood Dripper back as they spun before him, producing swishing and rattling sword sounds.

Tens of thousands of saint artifacts blasted over with a mighty force. Yet, when they came into contact with the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation, all of them were swept in.

The Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation rotated, and like a Doomsday Millstone, stirred the yin and yang of the universe, and crushing everything within the world.

Bam bam bam!!

Within the Sword Formation, all of the sacred artifacts exploded into pieces and were turned into broken metal.

“Goodness! Is Zhang Ruochen possessed by a True God? All of the ten thousand saint artifacts were destroyed.”

“My Flamewrack Blade... was destroyed just like that...”

...

“Raaawr!” Bao Lie roared furiously.

His body swelled up and transformed into his true form as he charged into the battle formation where the tens of thousands of sacred artifacts were launched out from.

The sacred artifacts of the Immortal Vampires inside the formation had been destroyed and they were in disarray. They were instantly crushed by Bao Lie and half their number were dead in a blink of an eye.

On the other side, Ji Fanxin also attacked. Her jade fingers flicked gently, and the air quivered as thousands of petals fell as its fragrance filled the battlefield, engulfing one of the ten-thousand-men-strong battle formations.

The petals might have seemed beautiful, but like carved ice jade, hidden within them was a murderous intent, and each piece could put a person to death.

In the blink of an eye, there were many petals stained with blood, revealing a bizarre feeling.

At some point in time, Luo Yi had appeared with the team, helping Xiang Chunan, Murong Yue, and the rest to fight the Immortal Vampire army.

His intervention was timely as he killed an Immortal Vampire Saint King who had sneaked up on Xiang Chunan. Then, he helped Murong Yue block the attack of another Nine-step Saint King elite.

“Good brother, thank you!”

Xiang Chunan stared at Luo Yi with grateful eyes.

On the other end, Shi Qiankun took out the Sword Tomb Palace and cooperated with Xiang Chunan, as well as the rest, while he attacked one of the remaining battle formations.

The Sword Tomb Palace was not just a palace, but also a powerful sacred artifact. With Shi Qiankun and the Zhenyu Clansmen spurring it together, it immediately transformed into a pyramid-like palace tens of miles long.

Thanks to Zhang Ruochen fighting tooth and nail, they had gradually gained the upper hand. As the masters of the Sword Vault, could the cultivators of the Zhenyu Clan just stand by and watch?

They wanted to fight too.

“Kill them!”

Shi Qiankun released the Sword Tomb Palace, all the while throwing out hundreds of Blood Suppressant Talismans.

The Immortal Vampire battle formation was extremely sturdy without any openings, but under the attack of both the Blood Suppressant Talismans and the Sword Tomb Palace, it immediately fell apart.

The fiercest combat was still over on Zhang Ruochen’s side.

Zhang Ruochen used the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation and battered the Saintkiller Warship as it kept falling back.

If not for the Godslayer Cross Shield, it would have been battered into oblivion now.

On Xuetu Shenzi's end, his situation was grim as well. The continuous bombardment from the Azuresky Pagoda made him unable to stimulate the power of the Infernal Purgatory Tower, and he could only resist passively.

Ever since he embarked on the road of cultivation, he had never experienced such a vexed battle before.

“It's over!”

After the previous fierce exchange, Zhang Ruochen had gotten close to the Saintkiller Warship and the time was now ripe. So he took out a Dimensional Scroll and shot it out.

Booom!!!

As the space collapsed, the formation on the periphery of the warship shattered one after another.

Taking this opportunity, the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation attacked the Saintkiller Warship, easily splitting the warship apart.

The next moment, the woman in red rushed out of the sword formation with Blood Dripper in hand as she directly attacked Xia Wenxin.

“The Orbital Sword Technique.”

Simultaneously, Zhang Ruochen grabbed the hilt of the Ancient Abyssal Blade and abruptly appeared before the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord. Then, a cut from the sword happened in a flash.

“To... think I'd die he...”

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's eyes were full of resentment, and before he could finish his words, his head fell off.

In the end, he had still failed to escape the disaster.

Baaaam!!

Zhang Ruochen swung out the two swords again, and two Sword Force blasted out, smashing the body and head of the

Nine-eye Heavenly Lord into a fog of blood.

No matter how strong the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord's vitality was, he was most certainly dead.

The Blood Dripper locked onto Xia Wenxin's heartbeat, as she slashed out a blood light.

Even when he was on the run, Xia Wenxin's form was still graceful and his temperament outstanding. Only when he knew that he could not escape did he open up the bamboo slips in his hand, and thousands of words blasted out to block the attack for him.

It was just that his saint arts could not even stop Blood Dripper, and it was broken in an instant.

Seeing the sword light closing in on him. Xia Wenxin gently flicked his finger and pointed at his heart. Thirty-three divine marks emerged from his body, centering on his heart.

It was still impossible to stop the attack.

Dush!

The thirty-three divine marks shattered as a hideous wound appeared on Xia Wenxin's chest and blood poured out.

Fortunately, the divine marks had already exhausted much of the Blood Dripper's power, or else the strike would have been fatal.

Whoosh!

Xia Wenxin fell back quickly, as he recalled the Godslayer Cross Shield.

At this moment, the woman in red slashed again.

Baaam!!!

The Godslayer Cross Shield released a monstrous blood Qi and tried to obliterate Blood Dripper's attack force.

"To think that Xia Wenxin's strength is that powerful."

Zhang Ruochen shot the Ancient Abyssal Blade out and it transformed into a black light as it flew toward the woman in red.

The next moment, the Blood Dropper and the Ancient Abyssal Blade was once again together, unleashing the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation, and creating the Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram.

Even with the Godslayer Cross Shield blocking the attack, Xia Wenxin was still sent flying.

Several new wounds appeared on his chest, and one of them pierced his body clean as he suffered unimaginable injuries.

Any ordinary Path's Anterior powerhouse would have dropped dead after suffering such a grievous injury.

Xia Wenxin fled back to the camp of the Immortal Vampire army and looked at the Yin-Yang Liangyi Sword Formation that was closing in. "Cultivators of the Immortal Vampires, strike with me," he said.

Both of Xia Wenxin's hands grabbed the Godslayer Cross Shield, as he made a worshipping gesture.

Behind him, stood three battle formations formed out of ten thousand Immortal Vampire cultivators. Their powers combined with each other, and with The Godslayer Cross Shield as an anchor, formed a cross shield that was tens of thousands of feet tall.

Booom.

The Yin-Yang Taiji Diagram continuously crashed against the shield mark, grinding away its power.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes as a powerful Sword Will spread out, and his entire person merged a little with the Sword Vault.

Hummmmm...

Inside the Sword Vault, countless swords trembled as if they had been summoned in some way.

The next moment, over a hundred thousand swords flew out from the ground in the Sword Vault and appeared around Zhang Ruochen as they formed a torrent of swords.

As time passed, more and more swords converged.

“Is this... the Convergence of Swords?”

The Immortal Vampire cultivators were all shocked by this scene as they felt breathless.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was like a peerless sword god, the incarnate of the Lord of the Sword Vault, and all swords were at his command.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen suddenly opened his eyes and unleashed his Sword Will.

The torrent of swords then immediately swept out as he willed it.

Boom!!

The ten-thousand-foot-high cross shield mark shattered and was reduced into a shower of light.

Facing the incoming sword light, Xia Wenxin planted the Godslayer Cross Shield into the ground as the torrent of swords slammed against the shield, pushing Xia Wenxin and the shield back for a thousand miles, and leaving a thousand-mile long chasm on the ground.

However, Xia Wenxin used the opportunity to retreat beyond the Sword Vault.

As for the three battle formations that were aiding him, the thirty thousand Immortal Vampire cultivators were not as lucky and were engulfed by the torrent of swords whole. Their screams rang endlessly as they were reduced into clouds of blood.

“Gasp...”

Seeing this, everyone could not help but gasp. The morale of the Immortal Vampire cultivators completely shattered as they all wanted to flee right then.

Chapter 1912 - Annihilation

Chapter 1912: Annihilation

After Wangqiu Shenzi and the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord had been killed one after another, even Xia Wenxin had been severely wounded, and he had withdrawn from the Sword Vault as a result. How could the Immortal Vampire cultivators still be bold enough to fight?

However, the Immortal Vampire cultivators understood that it was only because Zhang Ruochen was inside the Sword Vault that he had such power.

So, all of them exited the Sword Vault as quickly as possible.

“Don’t even think of leaving.”

Zhang Ruochen did not pay any heed to the Immortal Vampire army. Instead, he locked his eyes on Xuetu Shenzi.

With the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper as the core, the torrent, made out of countless converging swords swept toward Xuetu Shenzi.

“Must not fight head-on.”

Xuetu Shenzi drove the Infernal Purgatory Tower and rushed out of the Sword Vault.

His speed was fast, but under the power of time and space, the torrent of swords was even faster, and a moment later, it caught up to him.

“Zhang Ruochen.”

Xuetu Shenzi gritted his teeth as he roared those two words.

His eyes were burning with fury, almost on the verge of going insane.

It was because of the Sword Vault, it was because of the aid of the ghosts, and it was because of the Blood Dripper’s arrival, that time and time again his plans were disrupted, forcing him to retreat.

If the news of the battle were to go out, all of the Infernal Court's cultivators would laugh at him.

Unfortunately, it was too late to say anything else.

Anyone could tell that the tide had turned.

Biting his teeth, Xuetu Shenzi cut his wrist, allowing plenty of blood essence to flow out and fuse into the Infernal Purgatory Tower.

The Infernal Purgatory Tower immediately activated and spat out a large amount of Purgatory Flames.

In the process, it continued to fall back.

Baaaam!!

The Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Blood Dripper moved in tandem as they slashed out a cross sword light. The strike penetrating the Infernal Purgatory Tower's defenses and landed straight onto Xuetu Shenzi.

The sacred garb on Xuetu Shenzi's body immediately ruptured as his physical defenses disintegrated. A cross-shaped sword wound appeared on his chest, and his entire body was almost cut into several pieces.

Blood gushed out of his chest wound, and his aura weakened.

While he may have survived, but he was very badly wounded, and was no longer able to continue fighting.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to land the coup de grace, the Infernal Purgatory Tower unleashed a terrifying divine aura and blasted the torrent of swords away.

Whoosh!

The Infernal Purgatory Tower took Xuetu Shenzi and instantly broke out from the Sword Vault.

Immediately after, a powerful divine power ripped the space apart, and the Infernal Purgatory Tower charged into it before disappeared without a trace.

“There is a god's remnant soul inside the Infernal Purgatory Tower. Using a blood sacrifice, Xuetu Shenzi has roused the

soul and used it to rip the dimension apart to escape,” Blood Dripper explained in a cold voice.

“That’s unfortunate!”

Hearing that, Zhang Ruochen frowned and sighed. “Xuetu’s strength is almost invincible for someone beneath a Supreme Saint. Even eight hundred years ago, the Tenth Emperor, Yan Liren might not necessarily be his match. To let such a powerful foe escape, there will be no end of trouble.”

“When the remnant soul of the god is awakened, even I cannot hold him back. However, he has been seriously injured, and the injury was to the core of his being. Therefore, he won’t be able to recover in a short time,” Blood Dripper’s Sword Spirit said.

Without the remnant soul of the god, even if Xuetu Shenzi were to flee the Sword Vault she was confident that she could keep him from fleeing.

“I’ll just kill him next time.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and was not too fussed about it.

Zhang Ruochen believed that with the aid of the Sundial, he would be able to increase his cultivation base quickly. By then, even without the terrain advantage of the Sword Vault, and the power of the sixteen ancestral masters, he may be able to fight Xuetu Shenzi on an equal footing.

On the other side, while Zhang Ruochen was dealing with Xuetu Shenzi, the cultivators of the Immortal Vampires all retreated out of the Sword Vault as they fled out of the Zhenyu Clan grounds.

“Thank you, ancestral masters.”

After thanking the Dreadblades’ masters, Zhang Ruochen flew out of the Supreme Saint shadow formed by the sixteen ancestral masters.

Once out of the Sword Vault, he could no longer continue to borrow the power of the masters and had to rely on himself.

Fortunately, the Immortal Vampire army was in shambles and no longer a threat.

With Xia Wenxin in the lead, the Immortal Vampire army quickly approached the torn entrance that Immortal Ming had created earlier. They could only leave the Zhenyu Clan grounds through that path.

“Awesome, awesome! There’s no path ahead, so where do you think you’re running to?” Awesome, the Little Taoist appeared with a gleeful look on its face.

Prior to the appearance of the Ancient Abyssal Blade and Blood Dripper, it had followed Zhang Ruochen’s orders and came to seal the Immortal Vampire’s path of retreat.

As an array master, while it could not fully control the ancient wards, he could still control them in part, and that was enough to deal with the Immortal Vampires.

It had collected the thirty-six flag poles used by Immortal Ming to tear apart the ancient wards and had rearranged them to temporarily seal the torn wards together.

The thirty-six flag poles could be used to deploy a Ninth-rank Formation Array and could be considered a treasure. Now the flag poles belonged to it.

“Breach it!”

An Immortal Vampire elite roared as he launched an attack at Awesome, the Little Taoist without any hesitation.

With a pursuing foe approaching from behind, if he did not carve a path out, they could forget about fleeing.

“You think I’m here to be bullied? You want to breach it? Give it a try then.” Awesome, the Little Taoist put its hands over its chest with a scornful look on its face.

Before him, the seven Divine Planets had been lined up, forming a powerful Ninth-Rank Formation Array.

Boom!!

Various weapons and Saint Arts were blasted out, unleashing a dazzling radiance.

Awesome, the Little Taoist sniggered and looked very relaxed. It did not believe that this bunch could break his Ninth-Rank

Formation Array.

So what if they had the numbers?

The seven Divine Planets had already combined with the ancient wards and were extremely powerful.

Xuetu Shenzi could escape because he had the help of the god's remnant soul. The use of divine power to tear open the dimension was something the incomplete wards was unable to stop.

As for these remaining Immortal Vampires, what could they do to tear the ancient wards?

Awesome, the Little Taoist already knew that Immortal Ming was dead, so it was completely confident.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen caught up with Bao Lie, Murong Yue, Xiang Chunan, and the rest, surrounding the remnants of the Immortal Vampires from all sides.

“Xia Wenxin, you are doomed to not escape today!”

Zhang Ruochen held the Ancient Abyssal Blade as he walked forward, step by step, as his eyes locked onto Xia Wenxin.

Xuetu Shenzi had escaped, and he could not allow Xia Wenxin to do the same as well.

Xia Wenxin looked at Zhang Ruochen with a smile. “Zhang Ruochen, to be honest, I've overly underestimated you in the past, and I really shouldn't have. Perhaps I should have thought of a way to get rid of you when you were back in the Eastern Region. This time, you have indeed won, beautifully I might add. I look forward to fighting with you again.”

“Do you think you can get away?”

Zhang Ruochen grew cautious as he unfolded his arm. The Azuresky Pagoda and the Zangshan Demonic Mirror flew above his head, unleashing a tyrannical supreme force. The woman in red was even more direct, as she struck with the Blood Dropper in hand, slashing at Xia Wenxin.

“I never thought that the final chance to use the Worldskipper Talisman would be here.” Xia Wenxin shook his head and

said.

Baaaam!!!

The moment Blood Dripper's sword light struck, it was blocked by a divine light that flew out from between Xia Wenxin's brows.

Zhang Ruochen unleashed the Azuresky Pagoda and the Zangshan Demonic Mirror, but the results were the same. They could not even get close to Xia Wenxin's body.

A strange glint flashed past the woman in red's eyes as she stared at Xia Wenxin, but she did not continue her attacks since she knew that it would be futile.

The next moment, the dimension shook as a divine light engulfed Xia Wenxin, and he disappeared without a trace.

"What's going on? Why did you let that bastard run away?" Xiang Chunan spat.

Just now he could only watch as Xuetu Shenzi fled, and now he again could only watch as Xia Wenxin escaped, and that pissed Xiang Chunan off.

Ji Fanxin seemed to have some knowledge about the Worldskipper Talisman, and she said, "What Xia Wenxin has looks like an ancient talisman, and even a Supreme Saint won't be able to keep him from leaving."

All of the Shenzi of the Immortal Vampires each had their own means to save their lives.

The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord and Wangqiu Shenzi too had means to escape, but theirs were not as powerful as Xuetu or Xia Wenxin's, so they were still slain.

"Although the two have escaped, we can wipe out all of these Immortal Vampire cultivators at once. Only by killing them to the point of them fearing us will they know that the Kunlun Realm has people whom they cannot afford to provoke."

Zhang Ruochen raised his hand, and a Dimensional Collapse Scroll flew out.

Boom!!

The space within a large area immediately collapsed and dragged many Immortal Vampire warriors into it.

Against the power of space, the Immortal Vampires did not have any means to resist, and even a Saint King could only watch as they were crushed by it.

“Hmph.”

With a cold snort, Zhang Ruochen struck again.

The space was forcibly torn apart, as many giant rifts appearing and like a ravenous beast, they greedily devoured the Immortal Vampires.

“Kill them! Leave no one alive!”

Bao Lie roared and rushed into the fray.

The others did not hesitate and immediately followed the charge.

With Bao Lie, Murong Yue, and the others in the fray, the Saint Kings among the Immortal Vampires quickly fell one by one, and the rest were no longer a threat.

The Immortal Vampires were already terrified by the slaughter, and could not even form up into a formation. They only wanted to escape, but there was nowhere to run.

Their fate was already sealed, and there would be no more miracles.

After a fierce battle, the cultivators of the Zhenyu Clan annihilated all of the Immortal Vampires.

Against the Immortal Vampires, there was no need for mercy.

“We won! We actually won!”

Many people muttered to themselves as if they were dreaming.

In the face of the Immortal Vampire’s frenzied offensive, they had despaired again and again, and no one had thought that they would have a chance to turn things around.

“Junior sister, did you see it? I’ve avenged you!”

“Grandpa, we’ve held the Sword Vault, please rest in peace!”

“Father, don’t you worry, I will shoulder the responsibility of guarding the Sword Vault from now on.”

Many of the Zhenyu Clansmen were crying, remembering their fallen relatives and friends.

While they have won, no one could smile. Too many clansmen had died in this battle, and their homes had been ruined, so their hearts were filled with grief.

“Won? This is only just the beginning!”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head as he sighed within.

The Kunlun Realm was a mess, and there were incursions of powerhouses from the Infernal Court at every moment. The war had only just begun, and the future was destined to be even crueler.

Perhaps one day, the entire Kunlun Realm would be destroyed, and by then, who knew how many would survive.

Chapter 1913 - Bountiful Haul

Chapter 1913: Bountiful Haul

The battle had ended, and the Zhenyu Clan grounds were completely ruined. Many of the clansmen were dead or wounded, and they were on the precipice of being destroyed.

Of course, the Immortal Vampires suffered even worse. Their army had been a hundred thousand strong, and in the end, only Xuetu Shenzi, as well as Xia Wenxin, had escaped. They had pretty much been annihilated.

Once the news spreads, no one knew what kind of commotion it would cause.

First things first, many people got up and started to sweep the battlefield.

For their fallen allies, as long as their bodies were still around, they needed to be found and given a proper burial, and not left to exposed the elements.

They were all heroes, and the Zhenyu Clan would never forget them.

“Senior brother, let’s chant the sutras and ease the passing of the dead,” Sikong the Younger said.

Sikong the Elder’s eyes gleamed as he swept his gaze across the area and happily said, “We can recite that later. There are so many dead Immortal Vampires here on the battlefield; how many treasures must have been left behind. Shouldn’t we collect them first?”

Hundreds of thousands of Immortal Vampires were dead there, including a few Shenzi, princes, and princesses. The treasure they left behind would be amazing if one thought about it.

Sikong the Elder was already gearing up for the moment and was actually worried that his Dimensional Bracelet would not

fit all of the loot.

However, Zhang Ruochen had not said anything, so he did not dare to do as he liked. As such, he looked at Zhang Ruochen expectantly.

Zhang Ruochen exhaled deeply and calmly said, “Just do whatever you want.”

Hearing that, Sikong the Elder said, “Senior uncle, leave this to me. I’ll definitely pick up all of the treasures left behind by the Immortal Vampires.”

As he said that, he immediately set off. Although he was fat, his movements were extremely agile.

While Sikong the Elder put the treasures into his Dimensional Bracelet, his fat face brimmed with joy.

“Saint bones of a Seven-step Saint King, the saint source of an Eight-step Saint King, a sacred artifact of the Fifth Radiance... all good stuff.” Sikong the Elder’s smile was blindingly brilliant.

There were treasures all around, even if it was another person they would be smiling from end to end.

Unlike Sikong the Elder, Sikong the Younger sat down on the spot, silently reciting the Buddhist sutra to ease the passing of the dead.

Xiang Chunan collapsed onto the ground and did not want to move anymore.

“Brother Xiang, let’s go to the Sword Tomb Palace to rest,” Luo Yi said.

“Sure.”

As soon as the battle ended, Shi Qiankun placed the Sword Tomb Palace aside so that those who had been seriously wounded could enter it for recuperation.

Zhang Ruochen turned his gaze to Luo Yi and looked at his back. A strange light flashed in his eye, and he was now even more suspicious of Luo Yi’s identity.

“Junior brother, want to capture him?” Bao Lie came to Zhang Ruochen’s side and whispered.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said in a whisper, “Don’t act rashly for the time being. The battle has just ended. I don’t want to cause any trouble for now. Just monitor him in secret.”

“All right. Oh yeah, I will take this weapon for myself.”

Bao Lie nodded and reached out to take a silver spear in the distance.

The silver spear belonged to Wangqiu Shenzi and was a sacred artifact of the Ninth Radiance, a very rare object.

A smile appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s face. “This spear suits you well. With it, your strength will also improve.”

Even if Bao Lie did not mention it, he would have chosen a better weapon to give to Bao Lie himself.

The strong should be equipped with a powerful weapon.

With a toss, Bao Lie threw the golden spear and said with a smile, “Xinghun, I’ll return the spear to you. Use it well, don’t dishonor your father.”

Bao Xinghun stretched his hand out and caught the golden spear. He was stunned at first, but then a look of elation appeared on his face. “Father, don’t you worry, I will definitely not bring shame to you.”

How could he not be excited about regaining his golden spear?

With this Seventh Radiance sacred artifact, his strength would undoubtedly improve greatly. He was now a Six-step Saint King, and with the golden spear, he would be able to defeat or even kill a Seven-step Saint King.

“Your Highness, I will help Sikong the Elder,” Murong Yue said.

Zhang Ruochen nodded slightly and said, “Okay, go.”

Since she was granted permission, Murong Yue immediately went about it.

Unlike Sikong the Elder, she did not collect every treasure but went specifically for those truly precious ones.

The battlefield was too big, and there were too many dead. It would obviously take some time to sweep the battlefield.

A thought appeared in his mind and Zhang Ruochen took out the Zangshan Demonic Mirror as he prepared to study it.

The mirror was a Supreme Sacred Artifact, and while it was damaged, its power should still not be underestimated.

After some observation, Zhang Ruochen noticed something.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror was not only missing its vessel spirits but also several other extremely important parts.

Otherwise, its power would have been far stronger than it was now.

The Blood Dripper's Sword Spirit appeared, and her gaze was set upon the Zangshan Demonic Mirror as she said, "I once heard a rumor that the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and the Bloodsea Demonic Mirror are a pair of Supreme Sacred Artifacts refined by the same master. One mountain and one sea; the inside of the mirrors consist of a world that can suppress the balance and kill a god."

"Hmmm? The Zangshan Demonic Mirror is related to the Blood Sea Demonic Mirror?"

Zhang Ruochen's face stiffened as he asked.

The woman in red neither confirmed nor denied and faintly said, "It's just a rumor. After such a long time, many things are beyond anyone's ability to explain."

"However, there is something that is certain. This mirror is very unusual. If it was complete, it should be a top-level Supreme Sacred Artifact.

"Also, I need to remind you that I can faintly sense that the Zangshan Demonic Mirror's vessel spirit is not destroyed. If it appears, you may not be able to deal with it."

Hearing that, Zhang Ruochen could not help but frown slightly as thoughts ran quickly in his mind.

Soon, however, he relaxed his scrunched up brows. There was a saying, “just deal with it when the time comes”, so he did not need to think about it too much.

Moreover, it was impossible for him to discard the Zangshan Demonic Mirror just because its vessel spirit was still around, and it was even more impossible to destroy it.

The woman in red turned and looked at the Ancient Abyssal Blade, her eyes filled with longing and reluctance. “Abyss, I came to the Sword Vault because I sensed that you needed me. Now, I must go. The Kunlun Realm is in peril, and I need to take command of the Central Imperial City, as well as deal with the powerhouses from the Celestial Court’s realms,” she said.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade was reluctant to see her go too. He could not help but step forward and held the woman in red tightly in his arms.

They had just met, and now, they needed to part again.

Before the currents of fate, all longing and emotion needed to be let go.

“Blood Dripper, I will make myself stronger and stronger, and one day, I will become stronger than you. When that time comes, I will protect you instead.”

Abyss let go of the woman in red and spoke with grim determination.

The woman in red stretched her hands out and stroked Abyss’ cheek as she broke into a beautiful smile. “I believe that day will come,” she said softly.

Nex to them, Zhang Ruochen felt a little uncomfortable. The two swords were actually being all lovey-dovey while he, as a human, was like a lone wolf.

“Sigh...”

Hearing Zhang Ruochen’s long sigh, the two swords quickly separated, and Blood Dripper turned into a blood-colored rainbow as she flew away in an instant.

The ancient wards before her were completely ineffective as if they were never there, to begin with.

Seeing the Blood Dripper leave, Zhang Ruochen could not help but pat Abyss' shoulder as he said, "You will meet again, and this time, it won't take another eight hundred years."

Abyss' Sword Spirit nodded and said, "Yeah, but before I become strong enough, I will not meet Blood Dripper."

"There are sacred artifacts all over the battlefield. You can just absorb and refine them as you wish. You have culminated your body successfully, and your efficiency in refining sacred artifacts should be much higher," Zhang Ruochen said.

Hearing that, the Ancient Abyssal Blade did not hesitate as it immediately flew out and got ready to feast as he absorbed and refined the sacred artifacts as he pleased.

Before it had consolidated its body, the Ancient Abyssal Blade had absorbed a large amount of Sword Qi and Sword Path Precepts, so its quality had improved significantly. As long as it absorbed and refined a few more sacred artifacts, it would not have any problems upgrading itself to an Eighth Radiance sacred artifact.

After seeing the Blood Dripper, he was undoubtedly even more eager to become stronger.

Some time later, the sweep of the battlefield was completed.

"Senior uncle, what a bountiful haul. I have never seen so many treasures before in my life."

Sikong the Elder ran back with a look of excitement.

With a wave of his hand, a large number of treasures flew out of his Dimensional Bracelet and piled up into a mountain.

He had to admit that Sikong the Elder was very thorough with his looting; even a weapon shard was not missed.

Zhang Ruochen glanced through the mountain of treasures. It was mainly made out of Saint Sources, Saint Bones, and Saint Artifacts. Most of the Saint Bones and Saint Artifacts were broken or incomplete, due to the brutal battle earlier.

Of the mobilized Immortal Vampire hundred-thousand-strong army the Immortal Vampires mobilized, the lowest cultivation level was also a Demi-Saint, so there were many treasures left behind, and all of them valuable.

“Pick a few that you like. I’ll use the others to strengthen the Ming Sect.”

Zhang Ruochen spoke after some thought.

“Hehe, I won’t hold back then.” Elder Sikong sniggered.

Immediately after, he selected a few treasures from the treasure mountain and put them back into his Dimensional Bracelet.

Zhang Ruochen did not care what treasures he chose. He later stored all of the remaining treasures in the Qiankun Realm.

The Saint Sources were very important, and they could allow the Ming Sect to cultivate a large number of elites within a short period of time.

As for those broken sacred artifacts, they could be used as Abyss’ food, so he would not complain about having too much of them.

“Your Highness, the treasures of the elites are all inside here.”

Murong Yue appeared in the flash and handed Zhang Ruochen a Dimensional Ring.

Zhang Ruochen released his spiritual power and searched the Dimensional Ring.

He was particularly excited to see the treasure that Murong Yue had brought back.

In terms of numbers, the amount that Murong Yue brought back was a lot lesser than Sikong the Elder’s, but they were all exceptional items. Every single one of them was of great value.

For example, the Nine-eye Heavenly Lord’s White Bone Mountain, while severely damaged, still had some precious Saint Bones and a large Divine Bone inside it. All of these

were excellent materials to refine Blood Suppressant Talismans.

There were also the three destroyed Saintkiller Warships; two were half-destroyed, and one was more-or-less intact. If repaired, they would be formidable weapons.

“I never thought that there would be six Godstones embedded in the divine bone. That can spur the sundial for six days, and my cultivation base will improve significantly. The Nine-eye Heavenly Lord sure had lots of good stuff on him.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled, and he was in an excellent mood.

Chapter 1914 - Meeting Shang Ziyang Again

Chapter 1914: Meeting Shang Ziyang Again

Inside the Sword Tomb Palace, Zhang Ruochen, Ji Fanxin, Bao Lie, and the rest gathered around as they helped Shi Mingyuan to get rid of Lord Ming's venomous blood.

It was mainly because Shi Mingyuan's state back then made it unsuitable for him to enter the area covered by the sundial. Hence, the detoxification process had been delayed until now.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen had asked the Divine Sky-connecting Tree for help and had purified the evil consciousness in his body. Coupled with Bao Lie's will detoxifying him every day, his condition was improving.

After some point, no more venomous blood could be forced out of Shi Mingyuan's body, so Zhang Ruochen and the others had to stop.

It was not that Shi Mingyuan's body no longer had Lord Ming's venom inside him, but rather, with their current strength, they were unable to do anything to the remnants of the venom blood.

When Shi Qiankun had Lord Ming's venomous blood in his body, they had to seek the Martial Exemplar's help to completely exorcise it.

"After this, it will depend on the old patriarch's will," Zhang Ruochen said to Shi Qiankun and Shi Ren.

"Brother Zhang, words aren't enough to express our gratitude. From now on, if there is anything you require, I, Shi Ren, will answer the call no matter the cost." Shi Ren was very serious as he spoke with reddened eyes.

Zhang Ruochen extended his hand and patted Shi Ren on the shoulder as he smiled. "If you take me for a brother, you don't

have to say something like this. Take care of the old patriarch and remember to contact me if there's anything."

Shi Ren nodded and said, "All right, I will stand guard here."

Shi Qiankun's eyes were also filled with gratitude. Zhang Ruochen was a savior to his family, and it was also Zhang Ruochen who had protected the entire Zhenyu Clan. Such kindness could never be fully repaid.

In the future, as long as Zhang Ruochen had any needs, the Zhenyu Clan would never say no to it.

After walking out of the place where Shi Mingyuan was recuperating, Zhang Ruochen looked for Lu Huaiyu.

"Master Uncle, what would you have me do?" Lu Huaiyu asked respectfully.

Zhang Ruochen was his grandfather's junior brother, and Zhang Ruochen was a benefactor of the Sword Sanctum, so calling him "Master Uncle" was something he was all too willing to do.

Besides, calling him "Master Uncle" denoted a closer relationship to Zhang Ruochen, rather than calling him His Highness.

"I've recently obtained some high-quality materials, and would like to ask the Sword Sanctum's help to refine the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and the Nine-Dragon Carriage."

Zhang Ruochen said with a smile.

As he said that, he took out all of the material he had collected.

Some of these materials had been obtained from Luoshui, while some had been from the bodies of the Immortal Vampire Shenzis, princes, and princesses. Each of them was precious and would be difficult to buy with Saint Stones.

Like the Divine Blood Crystal, it was a treasure so rare that it was more than enough to refine a sacred artifact of the Tenth Radiance.

Lu Huaiyu's eyes brightened as he carefully examined the various precious materials and said excitedly, "Leave this to

me. I will ensure that the quality level of the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and the Nine-Dragon Carriage is improved.”

He had read the Record of Heavenly Works, and his ability in refining artifacts was top-notch in the Kunlun Realm.

As long as there were good materials, creating top-level weapons was not a problem at all.

In the past, Zhang Ruochen’s strength was weaker so the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and the Nine-Dragon Carriage were still usable, but as his strength increased, they were clearly much weaker now.

If their quality level could not be increased, they would have to be discarded.

However, the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and the Nine-Dragon Carriage were objects used by the past Emperor Mings. As such, Zhang Ruochen had deep nostalgia for them and was unwilling to get rid of them.

After two days later, Shi Ren came back with the good news that Shi Mingyuan had woken up.

Zhang Ruochen immediately rushed over.

“This old one thanks the Swordbearer for the rescue.”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen’s arrival, Shi Mingyuan could not help but get up as he bowed and saluted Zhang Ruochen in gratitude.

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly stepped forward to hold Shi Mingyuan up. “Old Patriarch, there is no need for that. Shi Ren and I are brothers, and all of this is the right thing to do.”

Shi Ren also stepped forward, and together with Zhang Ruochen helped Shi Mingyuan to sit down again.

Shi Mingyuan sighed. “I never thought that when I went into the Nether Dungeon for seclusion that so many things would have happened to the Zhenyu Clan. This old one is really unworthy of my clansmen and the Kunlun Realm.”

“Old Patriarch, you don’t have to blame yourself. This was out of your control, and it’s all due to Lord Ming’s extremely

cunning nature.” Zhang Ruochen spoke to comfort him.

Shi Mingyuan nodded lightly and said, “Lord Ming is indeed cunning. Just as this old one’s cultivation reached its critical moment, he infected me with his evil consciousness, causing me to lose myself and become a monster. If you had not rescued me, this old one would have probably continued to devolve into a monster.”

Recalling the years he had experienced inside the Nether Dungeon, Shi Mingyuan felt his scalp turn numb and his heart beat fast.

If he had accidentally released Lord Ming, then he would become a great sinner amongst the Zhenyu Clansmen.

“Old Patriarch, I have something that requires your help,” Zhang Ruochen said solemnly.

A smile appeared on Shi Mingyuan’s face. “Shi Ren has already told this old one. While I dare not say that I will be able to successfully refine a Supreme Saint Blood Suppressant Talisman, this old one will give it a try.”

“Then I shall leave it to you.” Zhang Ruochen nodded.

As he said that, he took out the divine bone of the White Bone Mountain and handed it over to Shi Mingyuan.

A Supreme Saint-level Blood Suppressant Talisman would require a divine bone as its main material.

Of course, most importantly, was a Supreme Saint-level Talisman Master’s help.

While Shi Mingyuan’s spiritual power had not yet reached the Sixtieth-Order, it was definitely very close to it and was stronger than Immortal Ming’s.

If he wanted to, he could easily break through to the next level.

However, if that happened, he needed to leave the Kunlun Realm.

They were at a very critical juncture, and the Zhenyu Clan needed him to hold the fort, so he could not break through for

the time being.

With his close proximity to the Sixtieth-Order spiritual power, in addition to his depth in the Path of Talisman, there was still a chance to refine the Supreme Saint-level Blood Suppressant Talisman.

If even he could not succeed then Zhang Ruochen really had no idea who else to look for.

As soon as he came out, Zhang Ruochen ran into Ji Fanxin.

“Zhang Ruochen, when do we head to the Northern Region?” Ji Fanxin asked.

She had wanted to go to the Northern Region long ago, and after multiple delays, she no longer wanted to postpone it.

One needed to know that the Kunlun Realm was akin to a gathering of clouds now. Too many people came and went all the time, and the situation was complex as well as ever-changing.

If someone were to take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree’s trunk away first, she would really cry tears of blood.

Zhang Ruochen of course understood what Ji Fanxin was thinking and could not help but smile. “Fairy, don’t worry. Wait for me to go to the Main Terminal of Merits first, and exchange my merits, then we will immediately set off to the Northern Region.

This time, they had killed hundreds of thousands of Immortal Vampires and could exchange a large number of merits, so there was no reason to waste them.

Without any delay, Zhang Ruochen left the Zhenyu Clan grounds alone and headed to the nearest Terminal of Merit.

Inside the entirety of Kunlun, there was a total of 72 sub-terminals, and all had a teleportation array that could teleport people directly to the main terminal, the Canis Star.

Of course, the cultivators of the Celestial Court could go through the Main Terminal of Merit to arrive in the Kunlun Realm in a constant stream.

On the other side, the cultivators of the Infernal Court were also desperately pouring into the Kunlun Realm, and they were unstoppable.

As a result, the situation in the Kunlun Realm became increasingly complicated, and there were no longer any peaceful grounds.

The nearest merit sub-terminal from the Sword Vault was the 25th Merit Sub-Terminal.

Going through the teleportation array, Zhang Ruochen quickly rushed from the 25th Merit Sub-Terminal to the Main Terminal of Merits.

Just like when he first traveled to the Kunlun Realm from there, the place was still as lively as ever. It could be said that it was even livelier now.

Some people wanted to head to the Kunlun Realm from the Main Terminal of Merit, while some were like Zhang Ruochen, just there to exchange their merit points or return to the Celestial Court.

This time, the Fane of Merit had made a change, whereby cultivators who obtained merit points in the Kunlun Realm could directly exchange them for merit treasures. It was one of the main reasons why so many people had flocked to the Kunlun Realm.

In the past, even when the Fane of Merit deliberately withheld merit treasures on many occasions, there was nothing anyone could do.

For example, in the Merit War of the Zuling Realm, the Guanghan Realm had gotten the most merit points, but since Zhang Ruochen had crossed Yanshen, it resulted in the Guanghan Realm not getting a single merit treasure.

Otherwise, the merit points that the Guanghan Realm had gotten that time would definitely be enough to redeem many merit treasures, and the leading figures would all have a share.

After stepping out of the teleportation array, Zhang Ruochen went straight toward the Merit Exchange Hall.

There, one could exchange merit points and also redeem merit points for merit treasures.

“That seems to be Zhang Ruochen.”

“Hmm, it is him. Weird, why did he suddenly come to the Main Terminal of Merit? Is he planning to leave the Kunlun Realm?”

“As far as I know, after entering the Kunlun Realm, he has never been to the Battlefield of Merits, and he was fighting tooth and nail with Mr. Godcliff.”

“If he did not kill any Infernal Court cultivators, what is he doing in the Merit Exchange Hall then?”

“Come, let’s go and have a look.”

...

Instantly, many people recognized Zhang Ruochen and could not help to talk about him.

The comments all clearly entered Zhang Ruochen’s ears, but he did not care.

The Merit Exchange Hall was extremely magnificent and majestic, inspiring awe in anyone.

Since its establishment, many cultivators would come here every day, be it Saints of Saint Kings, and a number of famous talents.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to enter the Merit Exchange Hall, a commotion suddenly broke out in a corner.

A group surrounding several people walked over in a swagger.

Looking at the faces of the surrounded folks, Zhang Ruochen’s face froze as a cold light faintly flashed across his eyes.

He did not expect to run into several old acquaintances during this trip to the Main Terminal of Merit.

“Shang Ziyang, Si Han, King Daxi, Phantom Princess, long time no see.” Zhang Ruochen’s cold gaze landed on the surrounded few.

“Hmm?”

Shang Ziyan noticed something and could not help but cast his gaze over.

The moment he saw Zhang Ruochen, Shang Ziyan's gaze became icy cold.

For a long time, he had been a proud scion of heaven, and whatever he wanted, he would get. That lasted until he met Zhang Ruochen, and he had lost twice in a row. His hatred for Zhang Ruochen was something even the waters of the Celestial River could not cleanse.

Thinking of his experience during the Trial of Purgation in the Purgatory Furnace of Life and Death, and the fact that he had nearly died before he came to the Kunlun Realm, no matter how gentle and elegant Shang Ziyan was, he still wished that Zhang Ruochen was ripped into pieces deep down.

“Zhang Ruochen.”

King Daxi's gaze was complicated as her eyes dodged around, dared not look at Zhang Ruochen in the eyes.

To her, Zhang Ruochen was a literal nightmare. Her weakness and treasures were all in Zhang Ruochen's hands, and there was not a moment she did not want them back.

Meeting Zhang Ruochen here made her really uncomfortable, and she wanted to leave immediately.

Chapter 1915 - : Saint King Merit List

Chapter 1915: Saint King Merit List

There was an adage that said, “when enemies meet, blood boils”, and that sentence was very true during this instance.

Shang Ziyan’s gaze changed and quickly returned to normal. He could not take any action against Zhang Ruochen in the Main Terminal of Merits. There were some rules that he could not override, otherwise, even his master, Yanshen, could not protect him from the repercussions.

“Zhang Ruochen, what are you doing at the Canis Star? Escaping from the Kunlun Realm?” Si Han sneered.

The last time he joined forces with Mr. Godcliff to take over the Eastern Region, the plan had been ruined by Zhang Ruochen, and he had always wanted to settle the score with the latter, especially recently.

He had made huge gains in the Kunlun Realm, and his strength had greatly improved. So, his confidence was naturally stronger, and he did not believe that he could not deal with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Si Han indifferently and sneered, “What right does a loser have to start pointing fingers at me?”

“Who are you calling a loser? If it weren’t for the ancient wards, killing you would be as easy as killing a mosquito,” Si Han said.

Zhang Ruochen was extremely calm, and he lightly said, “The world doesn’t have so many ifs. When you can actually pull that off, it won’t be too late for you to come back and repeat those words to me.”

“Zhang Ruochen.”

Si Han clenched his fists, his eyes almost bursting into flames.

That damned cur dared to taunt him before so many people.

If Zhang Ruochen really fell into his hands, he would definitely extract Zhang Ruochen's Saint Soul and torture it for a thousand years to quench the hatred in his heart.

"Ignore him, let's exchange our merit points," Shang Ziyan said softly, preventing Si Han from continuing to confront Zhang Ruochen.

Such a confrontation in the Main Terminal of Merits was meaningless, and would only make them the butt of the joke.

Of course, if it had been some other place, then there was no need for such nonsense, and they could fight straightaway.

When he came to the Kunlun Realm, he had an extremely important task, which was to kill Zhang Ruochen.

In his eyes, Zhang Ruochen was like a grasshopper after autumn, and he did not have long to live.

Si Han snorted heavily and looked away as he followed Shang Ziyan and the rest into the Merit Exchange Hall.

King Daxi did not say a word, her eyes dodging him as she followed the rest closely behind.

Looking at King Daxi, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to raise the edge of his mouth slightly, revealing a unique smile.

He could perceive that the Flaming Insects still existed inside King Daxi's body and had not been refined away. He could still use them to control King Daxi.

"Interesting, really interesting."

Zhang Ruochen smiled as he stepped into the Merit Exchange Hall.

"Zhang Ruochen's crazy enough to provoke even Shang Ziyan."

"Oh didn't you know, Zhang Ruochen and Shang Ziyan have been like this for a long time now. There will definitely be a battle between them sooner or later."

“Shang Ziyang is the leader of the Fane of Merit, a personal disciple of Yanshen. He has the Heavenly Realm behind him as well, so Zhang Ruochen may not be his match.”

“Don’t you go looking down on Zhang Ruochen. He is the Scion of Time and Space, the Divine Envoy of Yueshen, the fiance of Empress Chi Yao. His identities are no lesser than Shang Ziyang’s. As far as I know, Zhang Ruochen has survived countless dangers since his rise, and nothing seems to be able to take him down.”

Watching Zhang Ruochen confront the people of the Heavenly Realm faction, many could not help but gossip. After all, they were just watching for fun and did not mind if things escalated.

After entering the Merit Exchange Hall, two lists appeared clearly before Zhang Ruochen’s eyes, they were the Saint Merit List and the Saint King Merit List.

One time, Zhang Ruochen had relied on the battlefield in the Zuling Realm and surpassed the Thousand Star Fairy, becoming the top person on the Saint Merit List.

Of course, now that he was a Nine-step Saint King, his concern was naturally with the Saint King Merit List.

It was not an easy task to get onto the Saint King Merit List. One would need to accumulate at least a billion merit points at the very least. That meant it was necessary to kill many elites of the Infernal Court.

This time, many powerful Saint Kings from the Celestial Court had poured into the Kunlun Realm for the purpose of getting onto the Saint King Merit List and becoming famous.

“Shang Ziyang has already been on the Saint King Merit List. It looks like he has killed many Infernal Court elites in the Battlefield of Merits.

“Even King Daxi, Phantom Princess, and Si Han are on the list. Hmm, capable at the very least.”

As he looked at the Saint King Merit List, a bizarre look appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

According to the rules set by the Fane of Merit, killing a Demi Saint was worth ten to one thousand merit points. Killing a Saint was worth a thousand to a hundred thousand points while a Saint King was worth one hundred thousand points to ten million points. The value of the merit points was determined by the strength of the slain foe.

Getting onto the Celestial Court's Saint King Merit List was equivalent to killing a hundred top-level Saint Kings.

It was because of the difficulty that almost all of those whose names were on the list were veteran top-level Saint Kings that had cultivated for hundreds or even thousands of years.

Shang Ziyan's merit points had exceeded 1.8 billion, which was not a small number.

At this moment, he was exchanging merit points and could see that his merit point total was constantly changing.

In the end, the merit point exceeded two billion points, and his ranking increased significantly.

Zhang Ruochen stepped forward, also prepared to exchange merit points.

The exchange of merit points was very simple. He only needed a drop of blood or a wisp of Saint Soul from an Infernal Court cultivator.

Zhang Ruochen took out a jade bottle and poured out drops of blood as he started the exchange.

"How many Infernal Court cultivators can he kill without even stepping into the Battlefield of Merit?" Si Han sneered.

"Don't say that. After all, there are many Infernal Court cultivators who have infiltrated the Kunlun Realm. Perhaps he ran into a squad of them."

Everyone could hear the ridicule in their words.

Si Han laughed and added, "You're right, perhaps he can even get onto the Saint King Merit List with those merit points."

"Who's going onto the Celestial Court's Saint King Merit List again?"

“You gotta be joking. Zhang Ruochen has never stepped foot on a Battlefield of Merits. Where could he have collected a billion merit points?”

“There are indeed many Infernal Court cultivators who have infiltrated the Kunlun Realm, but they are scattered all over the world. Do you think they’re that easy to kill?”

“I have not heard of any large-scale battles lately, so it’s impossible for Zhang Ruochen to get that many merit points.”

“Who is Zhang Ruochen? A coward, a coward who dares not step foot on the Battlefield of Merits.”

“For someone to call a person like this the Kunlun Realm’s God of War, what a goddamn joke.”

For a moment, various voices rang out, mostly looking down on Zhang Ruochen.

Among them, many people were ridiculing him, as they looked down upon Zhang Ruochen.

Without a doubt, the people who were mocking Zhang Ruochen were mostly from the factions that were hostile to him.

“Hahaha, well said, some people are indeed downright cowards.”

Si Han laughed even more brazenly.

Now he was in a very good mood, and that swept away the previous gloominess he had.

For Zhang Ruochen to dare come to the Merit Exchange Hall, it was himself looking to put his shame up on for display.

Zhang Ruochen appeared very calm and was completely deaf to the various discussions, as well as gossip, in the hall.

As he continued to pour out the blood, his merit points were also rapidly increasing.

In the beginning, many were laughing and wanting to see the commotion.

Gradually, however, the smiles on many of their faces disappeared, and the changes in their expressions were a sight to behold.

After pouring a bottle of blood, Zhang Ruochen's merit points increased to six hundred million points, which was not a small amount.

Such a number undoubtedly shocked many.

They themselves did not have that many merit points, so what right did they have to laugh at Zhang Ruochen?

So for many, they chose to remain silent and stopped making any more comments.

Si Han's expression changed a little, but he still sneered, "It's just a mere six hundred million points, so what then? He has a long way to go before getting onto the Celestial Court's Saint King Merit List."

No matter what, it was impossible for him to recognize Zhang Ruochen.

Fortunately, his own merit points far exceeded Zhang Ruochen's, so he could still run his mouth.

King Daxi frowned slightly, her eyes locked onto Zhang Ruochen. She always felt that things were not that simple.

The main reason was that Zhang Ruochen was acting too calm, so calm he was that it made her a little scared.

Sure enough, under the gaze of many, Zhang Ruochen took out the second jade bottle and poured out a lot of blood again.

"Seven hundred million."

"Eight hundred million."

"Nine hundred million."

Seeing the continuously increasing number of merit points, many were stunned.

"Gulp... One billion."

The moment the merit points reached one billion, some could not help but swallow their saliva, clearly frightened.

Yet, the merit points did not stop at one billion and continued to climb.

“How can that be?”

Si Han’s eyes widened and could not believe that he saw.

King Daxi shook her head slightly. As she expected, Zhang Ruochen really liked to surprise everyone.

At that moment, even Shang Ziyan’s expression changed, and he could no longer remain calm and indifferent.

“Two billion, and it’s still increasing.”

Someone’s voice trembled.

Shang Ziyan’s expression turned a little gloomy, he had fought tooth and nail in the Battlefield of Merit to only earn two billion merit points. Yet, in a blink of an eye, he was surpassed by someone who had never stepped foot onto the battlefield.

A moment ago, he was still mocking Zhang Ruochen, and he did not expect to receive a slap in the face that quickly. Who was the real joke now?

“Gasp, 3.5 billion merit points...”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen’s merit points, the hall immediately resounded with a large number of gasps.

Having that many merit points was not something anyone dared to even dream of.

Also, someone noticed that the amount of blood that Zhang Ruochen had poured out was about a hundred thousand drops. It was an astonishing number.

“Aside from the Battlefield of Merits, where else can one kill so many Infernal Court cultivators? And these blood seemed to all belong to the Immortal Vampires.

In this regard, everyone had questions.

“Immortal Vampires.”

A bizarre glint flashed past Shang Ziyan’s eyes.

“Zhang Ruochen, the Immortal Vampires that besieged the Sword Vault should have been wiped out right? Good showing

for actually annihilating a hundred-thousand-strong Immortal Vampire army without a sound.”

Shang Ziyun murmured.

“Impossible. The one-hundred-thousand Immortal Vampire army was led by several Shenjis, so how can they be completely annihilated?” someone immediately objected.

It was no secret that the Immortal Vampire army had besieged and assaulted the Sword Vault, and many knew about it.

It was just that things were very complicated there, so no one wanted to get involved.

So it stood to reason that this situation should not have occurred.

However, if it was true, it would be terrifying enough to shock the entire Kunlun Realm.

For a moment, everyone turned their eyes to Zhang Ruochen as they waited for him to answer.

Chapter 1916 - Grim Situation

Chapter 1916: Grim Situation

The Merit Exchange Hall became extremely quiet, so much so that even a needle drop was audible as everyone focused their eyes on Zhang Ruochen. Time and space seemed to stand still during this moment.

“Only 3.5 billion merit points. Compared to those in the front, the gap is really big.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed and shook his head, not satisfied with the current merit points he had.

The Celestial Court’s Saint King Merit List had a total of 183,673 people on the list. The four dominant worlds alongside the top hundred worlds accounted for most of the names on the list, with few people from other worlds.

For example, before Zhang Ruochen, there was only a single person from the Guanghan Realm on the list. Also, that person’s ranking had not been that high, and the Guanghan Realm’s power had already been exhausted.

With Zhang Ruochen’s current merit points, he was only ranked beyond the ten-thousands, and he was very, very far away from the top spot of the merit list.

Getting into the top ten thousand on the Saint King Merit List was itself a bumpy road that was not easy to get past because the merit points required were in the 4 to 5 billion mark.

In accordance with the rules of the Fane of Merit, anyone who entered the top ten thousand on the Saint King Merit List would receive great benefits and obtain a large amount of Merit Qi to lustrate his or her body and soul.

If one could get into the top one thousand, top one hundred, or even top ten, the benefits would be even greater, and no one could resist it.

In fact, many of those who were ranked high on the merit list could have broken into the realm of a Supreme Saint long ago, but they had been suppressing their cultivation base.

There were three reasons for this; firstly, they wanted to cross the tenth region in the Sea of Truth and obtain a supreme opportunity. Secondly, they were going to play a big role in the Battlefield of Merits since they were the most crucial trump cards for the Celestial Court to dominate the Battlefield of Merits. Thirdly, the benefits given by the Fane of Merit were simply unimaginable to an ordinary person.

Unfortunately, it was just too difficult to get into the top rankings of the Saint King Merit List.

Zhang Ruochen recognized one of the ten Divine Disciples of the Fane of Truth, Nie Xiangzi. The latter was already a top-tier elite beneath a Supreme Saint rank and had accumulated a great amount of merit. Yet, he was only ranked 93 on the list, barely squeezing into the top 100.

Most of those at the top were being propped up by those powerful forces with all their might.

It was almost futile for someone to rush to the top alone.

Just like how Zhang Ruochen had gotten 3.5 billion merit points, it was also the result of the joint efforts of many, and many of the Immortal Vampires were not actually slain by him.

“Zhang Ruochen, did you really annihilate the Immortal Vampire army that besieged the Sword Vault?” a female cultivator asked.

Hearing that voice, Zhang Ruochen snapped back to his senses as he turned around and said, “Shouldn’t I do that? All of you went to the Battlefield of Merits; don’t you need someone to protect the Kunlun Realm? I’m a coward, and I dare not go to the Battlefield of Merits, so I can only stand guard in Kunlun and wait for the Infernal Court cultivators to show up.”

In response, many could not help but wear humiliated expressions, wishing that they could hide their heads somewhere.

They had been mocking Zhang Ruochen as a coward earlier for not daring to go to the Battlefield of Merits.

And now, Zhang Ruochen's words were undoubtedly in response to them.

If wiping out a hundred thousand strong Immortal Vampire army was considered a coward, then what were they?

"It's said that the Immortal Vampires not only deployed five Shenzi, as well as seven princes and princesses, but they also invited Immortal Ming to help. Did you really wipe them all out?" the female cultivator who asked the earlier question asked again.

Clearly, she knew plenty of inside information, especially about Immortal Ming and Xuetu Shenzi.

That was why she found it unbelievable.

How could Zhang Ruochen and the Zhenyu Clan alone deal with so many top-tier powerhouses?

Forget the rest, Xuetu Shenzi alone was probably enough to take down the Sword Vault.

Also, that Immortal Ming's attainments in both formation arrays and curses were terrifying, hence he had the ability to destroy the Sword Vault too.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "Since you are so well-versed with your information, why do you need to ask me about this?"

As he turned his gaze, Zhang Ruochen looked at King Daxi and smiled. "Fairy Lianxi, long time no see. Your beauty is still something I miss a lot. You left in a hurry the last time and left this Shadowless Heavenly Robe behind. I'll return it to you now."

Between words, a shining transparent robe appeared in his hand before it flew slowly over to King Daxi.

King Daxi reached for the Shadowless Heavenly Robe and was stunned, clearly did not expect Zhang Ruochen to pull such a stunt.

On one side, a cold glint flashed in Shang Ziyan's eyes as he could not help but tightly clench his fist behind him.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen looked over, and a provocative glint filled his eyes.

The next moment, he smiled again and said, "Fairy Lianxi, you're welcome to visit the Eastern Region anytime. Let me do my best as the master of the land and take you to see the various sights in the Eastern Region. I have something else to attend to now, so please pardon my leave."

As he said that, Zhang Ruochen smiled deeply at King Daxi before he turned around to leave.

Whoosh.

Many stared at King Daxi with a bizarre look in their eyes.

As far as they knew, Zhang Ruochen and Shang Ziyan were nemeses, and King Daxi should also be hostile toward Zhang Ruochen.

However, after listening to what Zhang Ruochen said, it was clear that his relationship with King Daxi was not ordinary, and this was undoubtedly very strange.

"Your Highness, you and Zhang Ruochen..." Si Han revealed a look of doubt on his face.

King Daxi reacted and stared coldly at Si Han as she hissed. "I have nothing with Zhang Ruochen. Can't you see that he is provoking us?"

Si Han immediately shut up and dared not say anything more.

Actually, he already had doubts in his heart. The last time he easily rescued King Daxi from Zhang Ruochen, the latter did not even intervene. Also, he found that King Daxi was not under any seals, and at the very least, her spiritual powers could still be used.

With his understanding of Zhang Ruochen, the latter was decisive on the kill, and he would never spare someone just because the foe was a female. So, why was King Daxi treated differently?

Was there really something between King Daxi and Zhang Ruochen?

“Ziyan, I don’t suppose you believe Zhang Ruochen’s words, right?” King Daxi looked at Shang Ziyan.

Shang Ziyan smiled. “Of course not, how could I not see through Zhang Ruochen’s little trick?”

It was just when he said those words, a glint appeared in his eyes, and no one knew what he was thinking deep down.

“Brother Ziyan, how about taking this opportunity to kill Zhang Ruochen?” Si Han whispered to Shang Ziyan with a gloomy face.

Before Shang Ziyan even spoke, King Daxi interjected to stop them. “It’s better not to act rashly. For Zhang Ruochen to be able to destroy an Immortal Vampire army with a hundred thousand members, he certainly has some powerful cards at play. If we rush headlong, we might suffer another setback.”

“He has trump cards and we don’t? Now that he’s alone, it’s the best time to strike. Once he leaves the Main Terminal of Merit, we can pull off a lightning strike and kill him,” Si Han said without much concern.

Even after knowing that Zhang Ruochen might have annihilated a hundred thousand Immortal Vampires, he still looked down on Zhang Ruochen and felt that he could deal with him.

“You underestimate Zhang Ruochen too much. He is far more difficult to deal with than you think,” King Daxi said as she shook her head.

Si Han frowned as he mused. “Your Highness, you keep speaking up for Zhang Ruochen... Do you really have nothing to do with him?”

“Insolence! You dare to doubt me. Zhang Ruochen is Ziyan’s enemy, which means he is also my enemy. That will never change,” King Daxi rebuked him in a chilly tone.

Had it not been for the fact that Si Han was a top elite of the Soul Realm and had a profound background, she would have

made it so that he would never be able to speak again.

Shang Ziyang interjected at the right time. "All right, there's no need for flaring tempers. Si Han just does not want to waste a great opportunity. However, there is no need to worry about Zhang Ruochen. He and I will have a battle sooner or later, and I'll make sure he will never get another chance to turn things around."

Anyone could feel that he had an unparalleled aura about him, and was extremely confident of his own strength.

After he stared deeply at Zhang Ruochen's disappearing silhouette, Shang Ziyang turned around toward the Merit Exchange Hall's exit.

He wanted to go to the Battlefield of Merits to continue killing Infernal Court cultivators, accumulate merit points, and surpass Zhang Ruochen.

No matter what, he must not fall behind Zhang Ruochen.

King Daxi also stared at Zhang Ruochen's back, her gaze was complicated. This feeling of being controlled did not feel good at all.

She needed to find a way to get a few important things back from Zhang Ruochen, especially the Mystic Soul Jade for her subsequent cultivation. If she did not take it back, she would not be able to break into the realm of Supreme Sainthood.

If not for that, how could she be controlled by Zhang Ruochen?

Seeing Shang Ziyang and the rest left, the people who had gathered around also slowly dispersed.

They had seen some fun this time around, but it was different from what they had expected.

After he vanished from the presence of Shang Ziyang and the others, Zhang Ruochen arrived at the Merit Treasure Exchange.

There were no workers there, and the exchange needed to be done by himself.

The Merit Treasures were extremely precious, and each would require a great number of merit points to redeem.

“The Gold Pill of Merit, Weapon of Merit, Artifacts of Merit... There are so many types, and all of them are good.” Studying the various introductory information on the Merit Treasures, Zhang Ruochen could not help but feel a little emotional.

The Gold Pills of Merit were pills refined by Merit Qi, and there were many types with different effects. Some could increase one’s cultivation base, some could increase one’s physical attributes, while some could increase lifespans. Each of them was priceless and could not be bought elsewhere.

The Weapons of Merit were weapons forged using Merit Qi and were extraordinarily powerful. The Divine Seal of Merit that Shang Ziyang had once used was itself a powerful Weapon of Merit.

As for the Artifacts of Merit, they were supporting items. The Merit Sword-cleansing Marrow, which Ling Feiyu had obtained, belonged to that category, and it could be used to cleanse, as well as refine one’s Sword Soul. It was extraordinary.

“A small bottle of a Merit Sword-cleansing Marrow requires 10 million merit points for the exchange. Damn, it’s expensive.” Looking at the merit points that corresponded to the merit treasures, Zhang Ruochen could not help but feel astonished.

The Merit Sword-cleansing Marrow was a consumable, and a sword cultivator needed to consume no small amount if he wanted to refine his Sword Soul to a very strong state.

Merit points did not come easy, so he could not just spend it willy nilly.

After some consideration, Zhang Ruochen exchanged some merit treasures, not just for himself but also for the people around him.

Everyone had worked hard to guard the Sword Vault, and naturally, he would not monopolize the merit treasures he had

exchanged with the merit points.

“Have you heard? The seal in Xianji Mountain in the Northern Region was further broken, and a large number of Deathkins poured into the Kunlun Realm. Wherever they passed through, all life perished, and many cities there have been reduced to dead cities.”

“Your news is too out of date. Just three days ago, the Constellation Sect was besieged by the Deathkins, and it suffered heavy casualties. However, the Constellation Sect was also ruthless enough to use the Star Manipulation Technique to annihilate a large number of Deathkins and force them to retreat. This battle alone has greatly wounded the Constellation Sect, and it has announced that it is closing its gates.”

“The Constellation Sect is one of Kunlun’s seven ancient sects, and it has a profound background. For them to be so easily maimed by the attack, the Deathkins are really terrifying.”

“I’ve also heard a piece of news that yesterday, Pei Yutian smashed into a city occupied by the Deathkins, and sank the entire city in the process. No one knows how many Deathkins were slaughtered but someone saw Pei Yutian bloodied before falling down a cliff. Whether he is dead or alive is anyone’s guess.”

“The Ashuran appeared in the Southern Region, and a fierce battle broke out with the Kunlun Realm’s First Central Empire army. Heaven King Douzhan fell in battle, and Prince Shajin was grievously wounded. The Huo clan was breached, and it nearly suffered total annihilation.”

“The situation in the Eastern Region is even worse. The Corpse Clan and the Ghost Clan are on a vicious offensive, and the Battle of Merits there has long been reduced to hell. Many powerful people have lost their lives there, and many top-tier Sixth-Tribulations Ghost Kings, as well as Corpse Kings, have entered the Kunlun Realm, setting up strongholds while advancing step by step. It looks like they want to turn the Eastern Region into a land of death.”

“However, two days ago Empress Chi Yao’s weapon, the Blood Dripper appeared. The cold light from her sword lit up all nine regions as she killed two Ashuran Shenzi’s and caused the Ashuran to fall back, allowing the imperial army to stabilize its position.”

“The situation in the Kunlun Realm is getting more and more complicated. Many powerful characters from both the Celestial and Infernal Court are here. I feel that Kunlun Realm is really doomed.”

...

As Zhang Ruochen was exchanging merit treasures, a series of comments suddenly came to his ears.

Upon hearing these pieces of news, Zhang Ruochen’s expression could not help but turn grim.

The situation in the Kunlun Realm was terrible, and both the Infernal and Celestial Court wanted to carve the place up. Surviving the catastrophe in itself was extremely difficult.

If Kunlun had more time to prepare, when it was fully recovered, and a large number of powerful elites born, it would not be in such a difficult situation.

“It looks like I need to rush to Xianji Mountain as soon as possible. The situation in the Northern Region is just too complicated. If I’m too late, then the Divine Sky-connecting Tree’s trunk may fall into someone else’s hand.” Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

Putting away all of the merit treasures, Zhang Ruochen did not continue to dally in the Main Terminal of Merit and immediately headed back.

As he expected, someone followed him, but it was not Shang Ziyang and his clique, and that disappointed him somewhat.

If Shang Ziyang and his clique dared to follow him, he would make it a one-way trip for them.

As for others tailing him, it was mostly just to scout the situation.

As long as these people did not provoke him, he could not be bothered with them.

Inside the Sword Tomb Palace, Zhang Ruochen summoned everyone and distributed the various merit treasures that he had exchanged.

He did not favor one over the other; Bao Lie, Ji Fanxin, Xiang Chunan, and Murong Yue all had their share, even Luo Yi too. Each treasure had been chosen specifically for them.

In addition, the Zhenyu Clansmen too got a share of the merit treasures, but there were too many of them and he was unable to ensure everyone got a share so he left it to Shi Qiankun to distribute them.

“Master Uncle, we cannot follow you to the Northern Region. Master has asked us to go to the Fane of the Earth. There are some important things to attend to,” Sikong the Elder said.

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Lord of the Fane of the Earth was a Living Bodhisattva, and probably have something to do with the Buddhist Sect, so for Master Indra to ask Sikong the Elder and Sikong the Younger to go to the Fane of the Earth meant that there was something to it.

“Your Highness, I want to go back to the Murong household and help my ancestors out,” Murong Yue also said.

Bao Lie spoke at the same time too. “Little Junior Brother, I plan to visit the Central Region to investigate the situation of our brothers. If you need me, just send me a message and I’ll rush over as quickly as possible.”

“Zhang Ruochen, I have nothing else to do, I can follow you to the Northern Region.” Awesome, the Little Taoist sniggered.

However, Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “No, you have to stay back here. While the Immortal Vampires are beaten back temporarily, I don’t think they will give up that easily. So I hope you can stay here to help the Zhenyu Clan repair the ancient wards, and guard against another Immortal Vampire attack.”

“You guys run around and leave all the hard work to me.”
Awesome, the Little Taoist curled its lips, clearly a little unhappy.

Shen Jia, the head of the Shen Family stood up and said with a smile, “I also would like to ask for your help to stay and help the Zhenyu Clan. I am willing to hand over the Big Dipper Portrait for your enlightenment.”

“The Big Dipper Portrait, good stuff, okay, since you are so sincere, I’ll stay behind for a while to help you out.”

Awesome, the Little Taoist’s eyes lit up, and it immediately changed its mind.

Chapter 1917 - Fairy Coming Out of Seclusion

Chapter 1917: Fairy Coming Out of Seclusion

So, the people heading to the Northern Region were determined: Zhang Ruochen, Ji Fanxin, Xiang Chunan, and Luo Yi.

“Too many people have their eyes on me. I cannot go through the dimensional wormhole to the Northern Region. It’s just too obvious.”

Zhang Ruochen demurred.

“Then how are you planning to go to the Northern Region?” Xiang Chunan asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I plan to deploy a teleportation array. That will save us a lot of trouble and also leave us a way out in case of emergencies.”

In the past, his spiritual power had not been sufficiently strong, and his understanding of the Path of Space was not deep enough. Hence, he could only deploy basic teleportation arrays, which only covered 300,000 miles at most.

This time, he wanted to try deploying a trans-domain teleportation array. If it was a success, it would be much more convenient for him to go anywhere in the future.

The teleportation arrays were divided into four major levels: basic, trans-domain, trans-realm, and trans-stellar.

A basic teleportation array was only a type of small-area teleportation.

A trans-domain teleportation array could almost cover an entire region.

Meanwhile, a trans-realm teleportation array could easily cover a macroworld and even allow teleportation to the regions outside of it.

As for trans-stellar teleportation arrays, teleportation across the boundless void would be possible, and they could reach other macroworlds instantly.

Of course, the more advanced the teleportation array, the more difficult it was to deploy. For instance, there was barely anyone who could deploy a trans-stellar teleportation array in the entirety of the Celestial Court.

“How long do you need to deploy that teleportation array?” Ji Fanxin asked.

She was quite anxious to go to the Northern Region and was unwilling to delay it too much.

Zhang Ruochen pondered for a moment and said, “Three days, three days at most. If I fail, we will rush to the Northern Region through other means.”

Ji Fanxin nodded. “All right, I’ll wait three days.”

In fact, she also wanted to see if Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation strength was enough for him to deploy a trans-domain teleportation array.

As far as she knew, the difficulty of deploying a trans-domain teleportation array while at the Saint King rank was akin to trying to be an Array Master while still a Saint King.

A cultivator of space who could deploy a trans-domain teleportation array was definitely a talent that even the gods from various realms would compete for. It was because such talents could save the lives of countless cultivators on the Battlefield of Merits and even change the final results of the battle.

Zhang Ruochen did not immediately start to deploy the array. Instead, he took out the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

and studied repeatedly.

He had already researched how to deploy trans-domain teleportation arrays, and he was now confirming certain details.

Only with sufficient and thorough research that no mistakes would be committed during deployment.

At the same time, in the skies above the Nine Carols Star and the third divine river, an ethereal light shone radiantly as a golden rain fell. It created an ancient and melodious divine sound.

All of the cultivators of the Tianchu Civilization were startled as all of them looked up in the divine gate's direction.

A slender, graceful, and beautiful figure stepped out through the divine gate, while a golden mist formed beneath her feet as a divine river flowed out of it. The flowing water sounded like it came from ancient times.

“Luoshen... It's Luoshen. I've seen her portrait in the Luoshen Temple before. It was of her stepping upon a golden mist and being surrounded by divine rivers,” a Saint cultivator with a beautiful face exclaimed before she got down on both knees to kowtow.

An old man with a rickety figure trembled. “Luoshen? Is it really Luoshen?”

The Fool looked at that figure on the golden mist that looked like Luoshen. He narrowed his eyes and smiled. “It's Her Highness! Her Highness has come out of seclusion!”

“Master, congratulations on leaving seclusion and making great progress in your cultivation.”

Li Miaohan greeted her with a surprised look.

After her seclusion inside the divine gate, Fairy Tianchu had undergone massive changes. Li Miaohan was completely unable to see through her cultivation base, and she had no idea how strong she had become.

Compared with the time before she entered through the divine gate, Fairy Tianchu looked even holier and more beautiful now, resembling a fairy who had descended upon mortal realms. Her beauty was unparalleled, and she radiated an aura that was extremely similar to Luoshen's, causing people to have sacrilegious thoughts.

“Master, what did Luoshen leave beyond the gate?” Li Miaohan asked curiously.

Fairy Tianchu said, “Luoshen has indeed left some important things beyond the divine gate, and it involves the secret from five hundred years ago. It’s better for you to not know about it, and don’t mention it to anyone else.”

Upon hearing this, Li Miaohan immediately realized the seriousness of the issue and solemnly said, “Master, rest assured, I will never reveal anything to anyone else.”

“What major events have happened recently?” Fairy Tianchu asked.

Li Miaohan smiled again and answered, “Many major events have happened recently, and Master, I’m sure you will definitely be interested in one of them.”

“What is it?”

“I have just heard about this. The Immortal Vampires mobilized an army of a hundred thousand to attack the Sword Vault to rescue Lord Ming but were instead annihilated by Zhang Ruochen. I’ve heard that even a few Shenzi perished. Zhang Ruochen has become famous after that battle and gotten on the Saint King Merit List,” Li Miaohan said.

Zhang Ruochen had rescued her before, and he also had a good relationship with Fairy Tianchu, so Li Miaohan had a good impression of Zhang Ruochen. As such, she was very concerned about his situation too.

“He really likes to make astonishing moves, and come to think of it, Ji Fanxin must have helped him a lot.” Fairy Tianchu smiled faintly.

“Fairy Baihua is powerful, and perhaps even an Immortal Vampire Shenzi may have perished in her hands. However, she sure is generous, not taking any of the merit points and giving them all to Zhang Ruochen.”

A look of admiration appeared in Li Miaohan’s eyes, as fellow female cultivators, The Hundred Flower Fairy was one of the few whom she admired.

Hearing that, Fairy Tianchu's expression changed a little, and she felt rather uncomfortable in her heart.

Noticing that Fairy Tianchu's expression was a little off, Li Miaohan felt puzzled and asked, "Master, what's wrong?"

Fairy Tianchu loosened her closed fingers and shook her head slightly before she said, "Nothing, my cultivation base took a big leap forward after I entered through the divine gate. Despite that, the state of my emotions has still fallen a bit short. Once that settles down, it'll be fine."

"That's good then." Li Miaohan could not help but let out a long sigh of relief.

Suddenly, Fairy Tianchu raised her head and looked toward the eastern sky as if she could see thousands of miles away.

"He actually dares to remain in Luoshui."

"Who?" Li Miaohan asked curiously.

"Chang ."

Fairy Tianchu rode upon the sea which the golden mist had consolidated upon as she soared and rushed out of the atmosphere of the Nine Carols Star.

"Chang?" Li Miaohan said.

Luoshui, its clear waters were boundless and endless.

Fairy Tianchu stood above the water, staring at one of the regions. Her slender finger pointed to that direction, and a beam of light shot out as it crashed against the void.

Boom!!

As if an invisible barrier had been ripped open, a monstrous ghost Qi rushed out, forming a hundred-meter-long green-colored ghost claw lined with dense scales.

The ghost claw crumbled instantly.

A dull grunt rang out from the ghost Qi.

A cloud of ghost mist rushed out from the secret realm very quickly, revealing a green ghost carriage covered with inscriptions as it tried to rush out of Luoshui.

“Chang, do you actually think you can still escape?” Fairy Tianchu said coldly as she gently struck her fist out.

A sparking heavenly river, like a dragon hundreds of miles long wrapped around the shadow of the fist as it rushed out.

Numerous inscriptions appeared on the surface of the ghost carriage as they tried to block the heavenly river.

Baaaam!!

The heavenly river quaked, and the green ghost carriage instantly exploded.

Luoshui contained Luoshen’s divine power and carried the Heaven Stream Fist’s divine melody within it. Fairy Tianchu had inherited Luoshen’s teachings, and when she performed the Heaven Stream Fist in Luoshui, its power was unmatched.

A thin figure escaped the Green Ghost Carriage, and the scent of the Demonic Tulip wrapped around its arms.

This was the Ghost Lord’s ninth son, Chang the Infernal Court cultivator who had escaped the clutches of Crone Qushan in the battle on the Warsoul Star.

With a turn of his hand, Chang pulled out a magic flute.

The sound of the melodious flute reverberated, and the soundwaves formed vortexes as they rushed toward Fairy Tianchu.

At the same time, the hundred-thousand-year-old Demonic Tulip released a powerful spiritual power and wanted to interfere with Fairy Tianchu.

Baaaam!

Fairy Tianchu’s eyes were indifferent, and she was unaffected. Her slender figure danced upon the golden mist as she performed the Heaven Stream Fist.

Hundreds of thousands of fist precepts surrounded her as the Saint Qi in the region all converged violently toward her.

With a punch, the entire Luoshui shuddered and then roared.

As the second punch struck, the space above Chang's head compressed, forming a convexed fist mark.

The third punch was launched, and as if a meteorite had fallen, the water surface sank, forming a basin hundreds of miles wide as it got deeper and deeper, until finally reaching the bottom.

With just three fists, all of the ghost Qi disappeared.

“I am the son of the Ghost Lord. How dare you kill me...
Arghhhhh...”

The ghost body of the Ghost Lord's ninth son shattered like ceramic, and even his ghost Qi completely disappeared as if he was nothing.

With that, the Demonic Tulip was suppressed. It was still a hundred-thousand-year-old sacred medicine after all, and it would be a shame to destroy it.

Such a big commotion shocked everyone who was looking for opportunities in Luoshui.

“Chang was actually killed by Fairy Tianchu with only a few punches. What strength.”

“I never thought that Chang would still be lurking inside Luoshui. Thank goodness I did not run into him or else I'd be dead!”

...

After seeing Fairy Tianchu killed Chang with their own eyes, many could not help but gasp.

Chang's ability to escape from Crone Qushan meant that his strength was not inconsiderable. For Fairy Tianchu to kill him that easily, how powerful was she?

All of the cultivators now realized that Fairy Tianchu must have obtained a great opportunity in Luoshui and had truly risen to become a top-level powerhouse.

The news spread extremely quickly, and within a day, it was all over the five regions and even back to the Celestial Court.

“The fairies in the Portrait of the Nine Beauties are truly extraordinary. Not only do they have absolutely beautiful appearances, but their strength is also unmatched.”

“I’m more curious, which fairy is the strongest?”

“Fairy Cihang is one of the leaders of the Buddhist Sect, and the Buddhist Dharma is boundless and ranked first. It should be her without question.”

“No, Fairy Guna was born with three pairs of angel wings, and the blood flowing within her body is one of the oldest deific blood of the angels. Having such a bloodline means that she will definitely become a god.”

“Fairy Tianchu has obtained Luoshen’s inheritance, and her strength has soared. Who can be her match?”

“Fairy Lianxi has ten spirits and ten souls, while a normal person only has three spirits and seven souls. Those additional seven spirits and three souls were something she obtained from the Soul Realm. Aside from that, it’s said that she will be the lord of the Soul Realm.”

...

For a time, many more people paid attention to the nine fairies of the Portrait of the Nine Beauties, and even starting bickering.

It could not be helped. All nine fairies had countless admirers, and once they were compared with each other, bickering and fisticuffs were inevitable.

Central Region, the Sword Vault.

Zhang Ruochen was studying the teleportation array as he fiddled with various materials and experimented over and over again.

Ji Fanxin appeared next to Zhang Ruochen and said with a smile, “I just heard some news that you may be interested in.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and asked curiously, “Oh? What is it?”

“Fairy Tianchu has come out of seclusion and killed Chang with overwhelming force. This news has spread across the Kunlun Realm.” Ji Fanxin smiled and answered.

Hearing that, Zhang Ruochen could not help but reveal a strange look as he said, “Chang was actually killed by Fairy Tianchu... It looks like she has gained a lot from this seclusion.”

“Regretting it now? If you want to be the prince consort of the Tianchu Civilization, you still have time,” Ji Fanxin said.

Zhang Ruochen could not help but shake his head as he said with a wry smile, “Fairy, you must be joking. Fairy Tianchu is a proud lady; how can I even win her heart?”

“My study of the trans-domain teleportation array is almost done. I can start the deployment now, and hope everything goes well.”

Ji Fanxin did not continue to tease him and nodded. “Let’s begin then. The situation in the Northern Region is chaotic. The longer we delay, the more disadvantageous it is for us to collect the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk.”

Zhang Ruochen did not tarry and immediately went to work.

Just like deploying the basic teleportation array, the materials for the inter-domain teleportation array’s deployment were still the four types of Saint Jades and seven types of Saint Stones. Only the dimensional engravings were different and much more complex.

Back then at the Qinglong Ruins, he had already collected all of the materials to deploy a teleportation array by the numbers, so deploying ten teleportation arrays was not a problem at all.

In a sense, this was the biggest gain he got from the Qinglong Ruins.

The deployment of a teleportation array required four types of Dimensional Saint Jades as a basis. That was supplemented by Saint Stones with the power of gold, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, and light.

Among them, the Dimensional Saint Jades were the rarest as they could only be found in a chaotic zone, where its dimensions were extremely unstable.

After spending two whole days, and many changes later, he had finally managed to successfully deploy the inter-domain teleportation array.

Even with Zhang Ruochen's powerful 59th-order spiritual strength, he was almost unable to support it.

“If my spiritual powers can reach the level of Ji Fanxin, it should be much easier. But thankfully, it's done.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and could not hide the elation in his heart.

The ability to deploy a trans-domain teleportation array meant that his attainment in the Path of Dimensions had greatly improved. It was far better than the space cultivators who were cultivating in the Fane of Time and Space

However, in terms of appearance, the trans-domain teleportation array was similar to the basic one he had once deployed.

Following Saint Monk Xumi, perhaps only Zhang Ruochen was capable to deploy a trans-domain teleportation array in the Kunlun Realm.

The teleportation distance of a trans-domain teleportation array was dozens or even hundreds of times more than a basic teleportation array.

If one were to deploy a trans-domain teleportation array in the heart of a region, one could basically teleport to the various commanderies with ease.

“We are at least three hundred million miles away from Xianji Mountain. There is a vast wilderness separating the Central and Northern Region.

“Three hundred million miles?”

“The Kunlun Realm is an ancient world, and its vastness is not comparable to any ordinary macroworld. Otherwise, it would

have been destroyed by the War of the Gods during the Middle Ages.”

The situation in the Northern Region was complex. Both Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin did not want to delay any longer, and they headed there as soon as possible.

Due to the vast distance, even with the trans-domain teleportation array, it could not send them directly to the Northern Region in a single attempt. Multiple teleportations were needed.

To save time, Zhang Ruochen entered the cold volcano and activated the sundial as he deployed the teleportation array.

With the experience of successful deployments, the following ones were no doubt easier.

Only an hour later, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the cold volcano and had managed to successfully create ten teleportation arrays. He kept them all in the Qiankun Realm, ready to be taken out for use at any moment.

For safety reasons, Zhang Ruochen moved the teleportation array outside the area covered by the ancient wards, to avoid any potential complications.

“Brother Zhang, Fairy Baihua, Brother Xiang, Brother Luo Yi, the journey to the north is perilous, please be careful. If you need anything, you can always come to the Zhenyu Clan.”

Shi Ren stood outside the teleportation array as he bade them goodbye with a smile.

In reality, he would have liked to follow Zhang Ruochen to the Northern Region, but he knew very well in his heart that he was too weak. Not only was he of no help, but he would become a burden instead.

Now that his grandfather had regained consciousness, he was ready to follow Shi Mingyuan to study the art of talisman and strive to improve his own strength.

“Take care.”

After saying goodbye, Zhang Ruochen activated the teleportation array under his feet.

Within the array, the Dimensional Jade exuded a bright purple light.

Whoosh!!

The light flickered, and the figure of Zhang Ruochen and the other three immediately disappeared.

The light on the teleportation array gradually dimmed.

“I hope everything goes well for Brother Zhang.”

Shi Ren prayed silently in his heart.

Immediately after, he put some cover over the teleportation array to prevent it from being discovered.

Speaking of which, with such a cross-dimensional teleportation array, it would be far easier for the Zhenyu Clan to go anywhere in the future.

Chapter 1918 - Arriving in the Northern Region

Chapter 1918: Arriving in the Northern Region

An unknown location in the Northern Region.

A layer of violent ripples formed in the void before it broke up to form a gigantic dimensional vortex, readying to swallow things in it.

As Zhang Ruochen, Ji Fanxin, and Xiang Chunan emerged, the dimensional vortex caught them.

“No good!”

Xiang Chunan was shocked.

In that split second, Zhang Ruochen grabbed Ji Fanxin in one hand and Xiang Chunan in the other.

Only a Scion of Time and Space like him could perform a countermove inside a dimensional vortex.

He stabilized his posture and immediately performed a Dimensional Shift.

Just at that moment, a dimensional blade struck at where the three of them were.

If Zhang Ruochen were a second slower, they would have been killed instantly.

They re-emerged out of thin air ten yards away from the dimensional vortex.

A ten-yard shift was the limit considering the suction force of the dimensional vortex.

They did not stop there but moved at high speed, trying to pull further away from the dimensional vortex. They did not want to be sucked into it again.

“Where is Brother Luo Yi?”

Xiang Chunan looked worried.

The four of them were performing teleportation at the same time. But why Luo Yi was not with them?

Just then, Luo Yi emerged.

Like the three of them, Luo Yi was trapped inside the dimensional vortex.

“Brother, help Brother Luo Yi!” Xiang Chunan called out anxiously.

At that time, Zhang Ruochen had lunged into the dimensional vortex.

He appeared before Luo Yi and grabbed him.

The force of the dimensional vortex was stronger before. It was not easy to perform another Dimension Shift to get out.

Zhang Ruochen quickly took out the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

to freeze the dimension. Using the power of the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

, he brought Luo Yi out before the dimensional vortex collapsed.

“Phew!”

Xiang Chunan let out a sigh of relief as Zhang Ruochen and Luo Yi descended from the air.

It was a close call. All of them nearly could not get away.

“Previous teleportations have been very stable, so why is it so perilous this time?” asked Ji Fanxin with a frown.

Starting from the Sword Vault Palace, they had performed six teleportations, and this was the last one. At first, they thought that they could reach the vicinity of Xianji Mountain. They did not expect to encounter such serious trouble and be almost wiped out.

“I have no idea. Probably there is some problem in this area. I have checked; this dimension is chaotic, extremely unstable.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

“No matter what the cause is, it is good enough that we are still alive. It scared the hell out of me.”

Xiang Chunan patted his chest, still looking in nervous apprehension.

“Fear not. I have this handled. Let me check to see where we are now.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Ji Fanxin faded into a beam of white light as she flew into the air above the clouds. She quickly found out the exact direction as she probed with her spiritual power.

“Follow me,” she said.

“Let’s go. Fairy has probably found something with her powerful spiritual power.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a black altar and fired it up.

The three of them drove the altar to catch up with Ji Fanxin.

“Brother Zhang, thank you for saving my life.” On the altar, Luo Yi cupped his hands with a smile.

“Think nothing of it,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Luo Yi did not feel awkward when Zhang Ruochen did not want to talk. She took out a dark-green gourd bottle. “I have some wonderful wine that I took from a Nine-Step Saint King of the Infernal Court. Would you like to have some, Brother Zhang?”

While speaking, he pulled out the stopper and gulped a mouthful.

He did not care if Zhang Ruochen would drink; he just threw the gourd bottle to him.

Zhang Ruochen caught the gourd bottle in his hand and gave Luo Yi a long, hard look. Luo Yi just returned a smile and a nod.

“Well, since Brother Luo Yi has got a wine, I will give it a shot.”

Zhang Ruochen was wary of Luo Yi. But he was not worried that the wine was spiked. So he took a mouthful.

“It is an excellent wine indeed,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Luo Yi suddenly reached to wrap his arm around Zhang Ruochen’s shoulder. “Where are we heading on this Northern Region trip, Brother Zhang? Tell me so I know what to expect.”

“Xianji Mountain.”

Zhang Ruochen was a little uncomfortable. He shot a glare at Luo Yi, telling him to take off his hand.

Instead of letting off, Luo Yi curled his arm around Zhang Ruochen’s neck, manly, as if they were brothers-in-arms.

“Xianji Mountain? What are we going to do there? Join the War of Merit?”

The Kunlun Realm, an eternal macroworld with a vast territory, had many world’s fissures in existence after the late ancient divine war.

Each world’s fissure was a passage from where the Infernal Court could invade the Kunlun Realm.

There was a large world fissure in Xianji Mountain too. At one end of the fissure was the territory of the Infernal Court’s Deathkin. Facing the onslaught of the Deathkin army, the Battlefield of Merits had become extremely brutal.

The territory had become a dead place in just a short time. Death engulfed the land; all lives were extinct.

“I want to get something in Xianji Mountain. You will know when we get there.” Zhang Ruochen did not want to reveal too much.

Luo Yi and Zhang Ruochen were in close proximity. Their noses almost touched each other when Zhang Ruochen turned his head around.

Luo Yi’s face looked feminine and comely, with no hint of masculinity.

More importantly, Zhang Ruochen had smelled what might seem to be the faint fragrance of a female on Luo Yi's body.

Besides, he also noticed the strange expression in Luo Yi's eyes; the way Luo Yi looked at him was different from how he looked at others.

They were inches apart.

When their eyes met, time seemed to especially come to a standstill.

Next second, a sense of disgust rose within Zhang Ruochen. How he wished he could smack Luo Yi away.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen and Luo Yi holding each other intimately, Xiang Chunan could not help but nod. "Good brothers. We are all good brothers.

"Take your hand off me, and keep away from me," said Zhang Ruochen.

"Why?"

"Take your hand off me."

Zhang Ruochen had clenched his hands into fists with his eyes closed.

"Not fun."

Luo Yi pulled back his hand, shaking his head as he walked to the other side of the altar.

They finally stopped after two hours of flight.

It was nightfall.

A city appeared in sight up ahead. The towering city wall went on for hundreds of miles, but most of it had collapsed. It was almost a ruin.

The air of death filled the place; there was not a hint of life.

"Linyang City."

Zhang Ruochen gazed at the plaque above the city gate.

When he saw the words on the plaque, he finally knew their locations.

Linyang City was a county city in Linyang County. It used to be a bustling metropolis with thousands of citizens, and it was 60,000 miles from Xianji Mountain, not that far.

It was because of this reason that when the seal at Xianji Mountain broke, an army of Deathkin invaded the Kunlun Realm. Linyang City suffered terribly and became what it was today.

Zhang Ruochen had a deep impression of this city. He received news at the Main Courier Station of Merit a few days ago that Pei Yutian had attacked Linyang City and single-handedly taken down the entire city.

However, the Deathkin were too strong for him. Pei Yutian was badly wounded when he fled. Pursued by the Deathkin, he fell down the Cliff of Doom.

Zhang Ruochen could sense powerful energy still lingering in the city. The evil air of death was too strong to ignore.

“I will pick up what Pei Yutian has not finished.” Zhang Ruochen had a murderous look in his eyes.

Anger rose within him when the image of thousands of Linyang City’s residents being killed by the Deathkin came to mind.

Zhang Ruochen rose to the air above Linyang City.

He performed a Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike. A red dragon flew out with an ear-shattering roar. It broke up the evil air of death surrounding the city before flying into the city.

Boom!

The earth shook, and the half-sunken Linyang City collapsed completely before sinking into the ground. Around the sinkhole were cracks of hundreds of miles long in the earth. It was a shocking sight.

Roar!

Amid an angry roar, five evil air of death lunged out of the ground.

There was a vast number of Deathkin cultivators in Linyang City at first, but when Zhang Ruochen struck with his palm, only a few survived.

The surviving five Deathkin elites were of the powerful Precept Domain. One of them was in the Heaven's Reach realm.

“It seems that the Celestial Court cultivators have no fear of death. Since all of you have come, I will make sure that no one will get to leave,” said the Heaven's Reach elite.

He was the one commanding the Deathkin army in the city.

When Pei Yutian attacked the city a few days ago, his army suffered a heavy loss.

He did not expect that someone else would come today. This someone, more brutal than Pei Yutian, had just performed a move and wiped out his entire army.

“Because I am here to kill all of you,” said Zhang Ruochen bitterly.

“You have got a death wish!”

The Heaven's Reach elite roared in anger as he struck out a skeleton hand.

The skeleton hand soared against the headwind, and his evil air of death formed gaseous skeleton dragons. The sky turned dark as horrifying energy crashed down from above.

Zhang Ruochen struck his palm out with a hiss.

He had summoned the Precepts of Truth, and his palm was eight times more powerful.

The evil air of death broke up, and the skeleton hand was sent flying backward.

The skeleton hand shattered into pieces of Saint Bones and flew across the air in all directions.

“What the hell? My Six-Radiance Thousand-Inscription sacred artifact could not even withstand his palm!”

Shocked, the Heaven's Reach elite retreated.

Following immediately, he felt a mighty spiritual power engulf him as if there were a thousand shackles locking him up. He found himself immobilized.

The spiritual power came from clouds as a beautiful lady was standing on above with a sea of petals falling from the sky.

“Another elite fighter!”

The Heaven’s Reach elite took a deep breath and broke away from the spiritual power suppression. “Let’s go up together and kill them all!” he roared.

Four Precept Domain elites made their moves at once when the Heaven’s Reach elite gave his command. They cast out their evil weapons charged with evil air death at Zhang Ruochen in a saturated attack.

However, that Heaven’s Reach elite decided to flee.

Chapter 1919 - The Sword of Time's Fifth Realm

Chapter 1919: The Sword of Time's Fifth Realm

As Zhang Ruochen gathered his strength in his arms, overpowering 13 dragon souls and 13 elephant souls appeared to block the attack.

With the flip of his hand, he took out the Ancient Abyssal Blade and struck at the leftmost Precept Domain elite.

This move was simple but impossible to dodge.

The red-haired Precept Domain elite was panicking. He quickly raised his Seven-Radiance Thousand-Inscription sacred artifact-class saber, trying to ward off the sword.

His saber broke at contact with the Ancient Abyssal Blade. There was resistance.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade had not lost its momentum. It kept coming down and struck the red-haired Precept Domain elite.

There was no inscription on the surface of the Ancient Abyssal Blade. Only the purple Godstone embedded in the hilt was emitting a faint glow, weighing thousands of pounds, almost as heavy as a star.

The purple Godstone was in fact formed by the star nearby a black hole.

The Deathkin elite fall like a meteorite.

As he hit the ground, the impact left behind a deep crater, an enormous amount of dust and smoke rose into the air, and a vast piece of land subsided.

The Deathkin elite was gone, leaving behind a pile of broken bones in the crater.

“Scary! He killed Precept Domain King Wusui in just a move.”

“He was using only his physical strength.”

“His physical strength was power. That sword of his is heavier than ten mountains.”

...

Knowing how formidable this human was, the three remaining Deathkin cultivators of the Precept Domain realm clapped their hands and performed a Mystic Technique of Death.

“Telekinesis!”

The earth under their feet cracked and turned into an island while the soil around the island rose into the air.

The earth in several hundred miles radius flew up and crashed at Zhang Ruochen.

He spun around at once, and the Ancient Abyssal Blade vibrated for a second.

Countless Marks of Time appeared between heaven and earth, starry like the scene in the universe, and engulfed the three Precept Domain elites.

Time seemed to have come to a standstill at this moment.

A shadow flashed in the air as Zhang Ruochen and the Ancient Abyssal Blade flew several thousand miles across the earth like a beam of light and appeared behind the three Precept Domain elites of the Deathkin.

Three of the Deathkin froze as their heads were severed from their bodies, and they plunged down from the air.

It was one sword against three Precept Domain elites.

Stunning...

The fleeing Heaven's Reach Deathkin elite looked back and witnessed everything. “How is this possible?” he was shocked.

“Nothing is impossible!”

Zhang Ruochen pursued him with the sword in his hand and a murderous look in his eyes.

“I am the Backbone General under the command of Chixing Shenzi. His Highness Shenzi will not let you slide if you kill

me!” The Heaven’s Reach Deathkin elite roared at seeing Zhang Ruochen coming after him.

“Chixing Shenzi? Never heard of it. But don’t you worry. I will send Chixing Shenzi to reunite with you in the underworld soon,” said Zhang Ruochen coldly.

It was naïve to threaten him with a Deathkin shenzi.

Zhang Ruochen performed a Dimensional Shift and instantaneously appeared behind the Blackbone General.

Countless Marks of Time appeared and engulfed the Blackbone General.

The dimension’s flow of time changed as if time was standing still.

“Moonlight Melody!”

Zhang Ruochen aimed his sword at the Blackbone General’s forehead.

“That’s a quick move!”

That was the Blackbone General’s final thought before the sword penetrated his forehead, shattering his skull and annihilating his Saint Soul.

The next moment, his body formed by the evil air of death crumpled, leaving behind a skeleton with the skull.

The skeleton looked like a glistening jade with many mysterious pattern inscriptions. It would make a powerful weapon if given more alchemical work.

The Deathkin were one of the three upper races in the Infernal Court, a result of evolution from the Corpusian and Bone Clan of the three middle races. It was also a new life form.

The legion of Deathkin entrenched in Linyang City had evolved from the Bone Clan, and the Blackbone General’s skeleton was extremely valuable.

Zhang Ruochen did not want to let this go to waste. He collected the skeletons of the Blackbone General and four other Precept Domain elites of the Deathkin with a wave of his hand. The few evil weapons had also gone into his collection.

He could let the Ancient Abyssal Blade absorb and refine them as long as he first got rid of the evil air of death.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade was now an Eighth Radiance Thousand-Inscription sacred artifact. With the help of the purple Godstone, its power could even challenge a Ninth Radiance Thousand-Inscription sacred artifact.

Yet, that was not good enough. The Ancient Abyssal Blade needed to absorb and refine more weapons to become even stronger.

Right now, the Abyssal sword spirit had formed a body, which was of the finest one. It was going to grow at an accelerated pace.

“I haven’t really mastered the essence of Moonlight Melody. Had the Blackbone General been more vigilant, this move would not have worked.”

Zhang Ruochen was not too happy with his earlier move.

Moonlight Melody was the fifth level of Sword of Time. It could be called Moon Sword, more mysterious than Wheel of the Law’s Rebirth. He had just started practicing it and barely touched the surface.

After his cultivation base reached the Lesser Precept World, it was impossible to gain any more meaningful improvement in the short term.

He needed to let things sit for a period. After his mind and his cultivation base completed a run-in process, he could consider working on another cultivation breakthrough.

The higher level he went, the more patience he needed. Each step he took had to be nice and steady.

So Zhang Ruochen maintained at the Lesser Precept World. If he wanted a major strength improvement, the only way he could go was martial arts and theurgy.

Zhang Ruochen specialized in the Path of Time, Path of Dimension, Path of Sword, Path of Palm, and Path of Fist. A breakthrough in any of these would give him a tremendous increase in strength.

Sword of Time, a combination of Path of Time, as well as Path of Sword, was unfathomably mysterious and powerful. It had always been Zhang Ruochen's important trump card, on which he would spend more time and effort to comprehend.

There was no way to improve his Path of Palm for the moment. His cultivation had hit the ceiling in skills like Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike or Seven-Orifice Netherblood Palm. Before he became a Supreme Saint, it was hard to gain any meaningful improvement.

Unless he could find the Supreme Saint dragon soul and elephant soul.

It was his Path of Palm that he needed to spend time comprehending. If he could successfully master the 11th realm of the Luoshui Fist Technique, it would become a higher-order Saint Technique. By then, he would be unbeatable below the realm of Supreme Sainthood.

However, if he wanted to attain the 11th realm, he needed to go to the Nine Carols Star.

The Luoshui Fist Technique and Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike were soft and hard respectively, akin to the concept of yin and yang. If he cultivated them at the same time, it would have a remarkably synergic effect.

Zhang Ruochen had wanted to comprehend Sword Ten, but he did not get tips from those who came before him. So he did not know where to start.

Sword Ten had always existed in the legends. Throughout history, there had rarely been anyone who had mastered it successfully.

For the past thousand years, Xue Hongchen, the Sword Emperor, was the only person who had successfully mastered it.

Wanxiang City should still keep Sword Emperor Xue Hongchen's secret comprehension of Sword Ten. However, it was not expected to be revealed to outsiders.

For the moment, Zhang Ruochen would focus on cultivating Sword of Time and Path of Dimension.

“Fairy, Xianji Mountain is only sixty thousand miles away. We can make it there in no time, but before that, I have to find someone else,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“You want to find Pei Yutian?” said Ji Fanxin.

She had heard the news of Pei Yutian attacking Linyang City before.

So, she had guessed what was in Zhang Ruochen’s mind.

“That’s right. I don’t think Pei Yutian will die so easily. Nevertheless, I guess his situation is not looking good either, so I must find him.” Zhang Ruochen nodded.

He owed Pei Yutian a favor, and so he had to return his, no matter what.

He would go looking for him no matter how far it was. More so, when the cliff where Pei Yutian fell was nearby.

If Pei Yutian was still alive, he would save him.

But if Pei Yutian was dead. He wanted to find his body and bury him.

“Why not? Since we have come so far here in the Northern Region,” said Ji Fanxin.

“Thanks, Fairy,” said Zhang Ruochen with a smile.

Without wasting more time, Zhang Ruochen tucked the altar away and led the way.

The Cliff of Doom was a special place, even creepy. Anything that flew over it would inexplicably fall.

There used to be many elite fighters trying to find out what caused the phenomenon, but none of them had been successful.

Pei Yutian must have jumped off the cliff in desperation when he was backed into a corner by the Deathkin.

He still had a hope of survival if he had jumped, but he would surely be dead if he had gone elsewhere.

The Cliff of Doom had been a lively place for the past two days. Not only were the Deathkin lingering around there, but

there were also many Celestial Court cultivators. There was a mélange of people there.

At first, there were only some sporadic clashes between the two sides.

Now, however, both sides had formed a tacit understanding; no one wanted to waste time and energy fighting each other before Pei Yutian was found.

In just a matter of the time for a stick of incense to burn, Zhang Ruochen and the three of them had arrived at the Cliff of Doom.

It was a sea of red at the Cliff of Doom. Divine blood used to have rained down here, causing the land barren and spiritual power suppressed.

As the Kunlun Realm was revived, this place became even more creepy.

As a group of shadows suddenly descended in front of them, these people were alarmed.

When they saw that it was Zhang Ruochen and his company, not the Infernal Court cultivators, they were relieved. “Are all of you here for the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb too? I heard that Pei Yutian’s hiding place has been found. We have to descend to the bottom now. Otherwise, the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb will fall into the hands of the Infernal Court cultivators.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes landed on a skinny young man.

“The Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

“Don’t you all know about it? The Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb is the reason for Pei Yutian’s visit to Linyang City earlier. That thing belongs to Chixing Shenzi. If not, why do you the Deathkin are fussing over it?” said the skinny young with a strange expression.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. He did not expect Pei Yutian to be so daring as to take Chixing Shenzi’s Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb.

The Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb was the finest sacred herb after going through a Yuanhui Tribulation. Going further, it would change into a demi-divine herb.

Those sacred herbs that did not make it through a Yuanhui Tribulation could only be deemed as Hundred-Thousand-Year sacred herbs.

One Yuanhui Tribulation was 129,600 years, incredibly long—so long that many deities had failed to live through it.

A Precept Domain elite would go crazy for a Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb.

“Did you just say that the hiding place of Pei Yutian was found?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

“Yeah, just recently. Someone found him hiding inside a hidden cave at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom. But the cave is strange; no one has successfully entered yet.

“Now, all elites are heading to the cave, all trying to get a piece of the action.

“Rumor has it that Pei Yutian is a true master, and he is incredibly lucky with many valuable things with him. Even if we can’t get the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb, getting other treasures is just as good.”

Zhang Ruochen quietly breathed a sigh of relief; so long as Pei Yutian was still alive.

Following immediately, a sense of disgust rose within him. It was expected that the Deathkin wanted Pei Yutian’s death. But it was simply outrageous when the Celestial Court cultivators were also thinking about robbing Pei Yutian of his treasure.

Instead of fighting off the Infernal Court’s invasion, these Celestial Court cultivators were thinking of taking advantage of the Kunlun Realm cultivators. They deserved death for this alone.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen knew from the beginning that many Celestial Court cultivators were not there to help the Kunlun Realm but to exploit the opportunities there, wanting to loot

the available resources. These people were fundamentally no different from the Infernal Court cultivators.

As these thoughts flashed through his mind, Zhang Ruochen smiled. "Then we better hurry. Otherwise, we would have come all the way for nothing."

"Right, right, right!"

The skinny young man looked as if he could not wait.

He moved in a flash and lunged down the Cliff of Doom.

Seeing that, Zhang Ruochen and his company followed suit.

Thick clouds of fog mixed with obnoxious gases and evil energy shrouded the Cliff of Doom all year long. No ordinary living things dared to come to the vicinity.

They followed the skinny young man and flew down the 30,000-yard cliff before arriving at the bottom.

The bottom of the cliff was very spacious. It was a frightening sight here as white bones filled the place. It was a burial site of countless living beings.

"The air feels chilly here. This place is creepy."

Xiang Chunan shivered involuntarily.

"Be careful. Something is not right here," warned Ji Fanxin.

"What have you found, Fairy?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Fanxin sensed the surroundings with her powerful spiritual power. "Something is suppressing my spiritual power. I can really tell what, but I have a bad feeling about it."

"Let's first get Pei Yutian. Just be more careful," said Zhang Ruochen.

Since they had arrived at the bottom of the cliff, they could not leave simply because something was wrong with the place.

"Over there!"

Ji Fanxin pointed in a direction.

Chapter 1920 - Pei Yutian's Saber

Chapter 1920: Pei Yutian's Saber

There were many caves at the bottom of the cliff. Negative, evil energy was pervading out of these caves as if the place was connected to the underworld.

In between two strange rocks, outside a cave, many cultivators had gathered, their eyes on Pei Yutian, who was sitting cross-legged, recessing inside the cave opening.

This cave was so unusual that it had always been hidden. It was not only recently that it was exposed.

Looking from the outside, the cave appeared like a snake with its mouth wide open, baring its venomous fangs with extremely heinous looks.

The cave was dark and spooky. There were vague flickers of light and ghostly shadows. No one knew how deep the cave was and where it led to.

Pei Yutian sat cross-legged inside the cave with a rock laid horizontally across his legs. As he exhaled and inhaled, his powerful saint Qi formed an illusory, bubble-like Qi shield to engulf him within.

The strange energy field outside the cave was preventing those elites from storming into the cave.

A gray-robed Taoist suddenly moved across the strange energy field and appeared in front of Pei Yutian.

“I am right in here, Pei Yutian. You had better hand over the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb so I don't have to do it myself.” The gray-robed Taoist guffawed.

Pei Yutian looked indifferent. He reached to hold his rock saber and casually performed a slash.

The gray-robed Taoist was shocked, his pupils contracted and immediately gathered his powerful saint Qi. But the saint Qi shield broke apart like a thin piece of paper in front of the saber.

The saber slashed him in half at the waist. He dropped dead to the ground, drenched in his own blood.

There were still many people who feared no death.

Just then, another man lunged into the cave and cast out a brand at Pei Yutian.

The brand was bursting with golden light as inscriptions appeared to release the full strength of the Fifth Radiance.

Pei Yutian appeared composed as he thrust the saber into the ground.

Boom!

Thousands of sharp saber Qi bust out of the ground and formed a terrifying saber force field.

Hit by the saber Qi, the brand lost its power and plunged from the air.

Meanwhile, the saber Qi penetrated the elite fighter who cast out the brand and shattered his body. All that was left behind was a pile of shattered bones on the ground.

The gray-robed Taoist and the old monk using the brand had high attainment in their respective self-cultivation. but none of them could withstand Pei Yutian's saber attack.

Finally, some elite fighters could no longer hold back and made their moves.

Sensing the danger, Pei Yutian looked up and saw variegated tiger claws emerging ten yards away. With all the ghostly images surrounding it, it was hard to tell which was real.

The tiger claws looked menacing and extremely intimidating.

A grave look flashed in Pei Yutian's eyes. He quickly raised his rock saber to meet the variegated tiger claws.

Bang!

The variegated tiger claws hit the rock saber and a terrifying force traveled up the rock saber.

Pei Yutian bounced to his feet. The saint-Qi shield around him shattered as he was forced to take three steps backward.

“Nine-Step Saint King. Lesser Precept World!”

Seeing the strong man walking toward him, Pei Yutian’s heart skipped a beat.

There was a strong evil energy coming from the man, who never bothered to conceal his powerful air. There seemed to be a vague shadow of a fearsome, vicious tiger behind the man

“Hand over the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb and I will grant you a dignified death.” The man’s voice was grim.

Pei Yutian said nothing, just held up his rock saber as he infused his saint Qi into it.

Clear streaks of pattern appeared on the rock saber as a strange power was triggered.

“Kill!”

Pei Yutian shouted quietly as he lunged forward, waving his rock saber in his hand.

A bright light burst out of the saber as he struck at the strong man.

“Moribund!” The strong man hissed.

He struck out a hand, and it turned into variegated tiger claws.

The variegated tiger claws ballooned as large as ten-yard across as it went against the headwind.

At that moment, streaks of black lightning emerged and wrapped around the variegated tiger claws.

The saber light shattered at once as the variegated tiger paw grabbed it.

At the same time, nearly a hundred black lightnings that looked like venomous snakes shot out.

Pei Yutian tried his best to block them. Even so, three black lightning slipped through and hit him, leaving behind three

charred bloody wounds in his body.

As they engaged again, Pei Yutian was outmatched. All he could do was to parry and had no means of fighting back.

“How dare a Seven-Step Saint King try to resist me!”

The strong man snickered, his eyes filled with scorn.

Variegated tiger claws got even larger as it reached to grab Pei Yutian.

As the strange energy field of the cave continued to weaken, the other people could barge in soon. So before that happened, he had to kill Pei Yutian and take all the treasure for himself.

At least, he was determined to get that Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb.

If push comes to shove, he would take the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb, leave the Kunlun Realm, and find a place to refine it. By then, when he would achieve a quantum leap in his cultivation base, and no one could do anything about it.

Bang!

Pei Yutian was forced back with blood oozing out from the corner of his mouth.

The difference between a Seven-Step and Nine-Step Saint King was simply too huge. Pei Yutian was still punching above his weight, no matter how talented he was.

After all, he did not have the supreme, perfect physique of Zhang Ruochen. It was fantastic of him to fight someone whose cultivation base was two-realm higher than he was. He was just a Saint King, and his opponent was apparently no slouch.

The strong man came with more attacks, not giving Pei Yutian the chance to catch his breath.

Bang!

The variegated tiger claws hit Pei Yutian, sending him flying backward deeper into the cave before crashing into a rock.

Pei Yutian puked a mouthful of blood that mixed with bits and pieces of his broken organs.

It was freezing deeper inside the cave, and his blood was frozen into red ice crystals instantly.

The rock that he had crashed into and broke apart just now was emitting a divine light.

An incredibly strange scene appeared as rocks fell from the cave ceiling with loud rumbles.

Evil air dissipated as a divine energy spread along the divine light.

The brilliant light shone from the cave dome looked as if they were stars, pearls, and gemstones.

In fact, those were the Godstones.

A pond appeared in sight under the illumination of the divine light. The pond was glowing in red as a divine energy outspread. That was a pond of divine blood, apparently.

“Godstones! divine blood!”

The strong man was wide-eyed, extremely excited.

For a second, his attention was drawn to the Godstones and divine blood. He lunged toward them with no regard for how dangerous it was.

“Die!”

Taking this opportunity, Pei Yutian lunged out, striking at the strong man’s waist.

The strong man came to his senses and quickly blocked the attack with both hands as variegated tiger claws.

The rock saber had a dull edge, yet it was incredibly sharp—so sharp that it cut through the variegated tiger claws completely.

“Already attained Eight-Step Saint Kinghood?”

The strong man looked in shock and was in disbelief.

From what he had learned earlier, Pei Yutian was supposed to have only attained Seven-Step Saint Kinghood recently. How could he make another breakthrough so quick?

“Could it be because of the... Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb?”

The penny dropped as the thought came to mind.

How could Pei Yutian have not used the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb when he had risked his life to get it?

After hiding for four to five days at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom, Pei Yutian had enough time to refine part of the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb and achieve another self-cultivation breakthrough.

After attaining Eight-Step Saint Kinghood, Pei Yutian had gotten a substantial increase in strength. His attack was incomparably better than last time.

The strong man was too careless and found himself in trouble. He quickly retreated, trying to get himself out of trouble.

But Pei Yutian would not want to let go of this opportunity. He kept pursued and gathered more saint Qi, and essence and blood in his rock saber.

He was badly wounded. He knew that if he did not get rid of this strong man, he would be done for.

The rock saber absorbed his essence and blood, and the blade turned blood-red, as if blood was flowing in the veins.

For a time, the rock saber seemed to have come to life, its Rhythm was completely in sync with that of Pei Yutian.

Pei Yutian and his rock saber became one in spirit. He performed a strike that looked absolutely mundane, yet there were several hundred beams of blood-red saber Qi burst out of the move, striking at the strong man.

The strong man froze, his eyes filled with disbelief.

Flashes of blood burst out of the strong man's body and cut him into pieces.

Pei Yutian was staggering and almost fell to the ground.

He had exhausted much of his energy in this move. If not for his powerful will holding him up, he would have collapsed to

the ground.

But the battle had not ended yet.

...

Fifteen shadows swooshed across the strange energy field into the cave in tandem.

Frenzied expression was in their eyes. They drooled as they stared at the vast field of starry scene and the divine blood pond behind Pei Yutian.

They were coming for the treasure of Pei Yutian and did not expect to find such surprises at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom.

Both the Godstones and divine blood were incredibly valuable. No one would say no to these things.

The only thing was, they were wary of Pei Yutian. For a moment, no one dared to go any further.

They couldn't help it; Pei Yutian had just killed a Nine-Step Saint King. Who would not be cautious?

“Fret not! He is wounded and on his last legs!”

“He must have refined the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb to achieve an Eight-Step Saint Kingdom breakthrough. I will throw him into the sacred furnace to extract the essence of the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb from him!”

...

The group of elite eyeing Pei Yutian greedily.

Pei Yutian stood erect with the rock saber in his hand. “Even if I am wounded, you all a den of thieves couldn't do much harm to me. Who wants to die first can come over.”

“Pei Yutian, things have come to such a pass and you still want to call us bluffs? Let us kill him and his treasure is free for us to grab!” said an Eight-Step Saint King.

The rest looked at each other, all having the same intention.

Their cultivation base varied between Six-Step and Eight-Step Saint Kingdoms, none of them a Nine-Step Saint King. If

fighting one-on-one, no one was confident of taking down Pei Yutian. So their best bet was to join hands.

“Now!”

Fifteen Saint Kings made their moves at once.

But they still appeared extremely cautious. No one dared to go near Pei Yutian. They just cast out their weapons or performed their saint techniques to attack Pei Yutian from afar.

Pei Yutian suddenly appeared more intimidating as he struck his saber horizontally.

Saber Qi burst out of the rock saber in a tidal wavelike saber Qi storm.

Boom!

The Saber Qi storm pulled those weapons into itself and shredded them into pieces.

Meanwhile, those saint techniques crumpled in front of the saber Qi storm, too.

“How could it be possible? Did he not just attain Eight-Step Saint Kinghood?”

“I am sure he is wounded. Or is he feigning it?”

“It is the rock saber that triggered the energy of heaven and earth.”

“This guy is too crazy. Run!”

...

It shocked the fifteen saint kings to see how overpowering Pei Yutian's strength was. They beat a hasty retreat, not wanting to go head-to-head with him.

But it was not up to them. The saber Qi storm moved so quickly and was all-engulfing.

Following a series of screams and cries, six Six-Step Saint Kings were shredded by the saber Qi storm.

One more person, a Seven-Step Saint King, screamed before ending up with the same fate.

At last, the saber Qi storm subsided and the other eight elites had retreated far enough.

They might have survived but been badly wounded. Among them, two Seven-Step Saint Kings almost lost their lives as half of their bodies were shredded by the saber Qi storm.

Damaged by the saber Qi storm, rocks in many parts of the cave broke apart and exposed the glistening divine bones.

Pei Yutian suddenly looked up and out at the outside.

Four horrifying evil air of death that looked like four black suns were flying rapidly over. Their aggressiveness was causing the souls of the eight Saint Kings to shiver in fear.

“It’s the Deathkin! Run!”

Chapter 1921 - The Blackflame General

Chapter 1921: The Blackflame General

Many cultivators had gathered outside the cave. Sensing the arrival of the Deathkins, all of them except those top dogs gave way.

Four figures of evil air of death landed as if meteorites hit the ground outside the cave. The powerful impact created powerful air blasts, sending dust into the air.

A massive amount of evil air of death spread, causing living things to wither and turning the territory into a dead land.

Four Deathkin elites emerged from the evil air of death. They appeared aggressive and behaved condescendingly.

The leading Deathkin elite, a gray-haired elderly, had a pair of unfathomable eyes. They were as dark as black holes, at which no one dared to look.

Black flames were burning on his body. But strangely, the flames did not feel hot at all. Instead, it was unusually cold—so cold that it was freezing heaven and earth over.

“It is the Blackflame General, an apex Heaven’s Reach existence, the third most powerful being under the command of Chixing Shenzi.”

“Those three elites behind him are Precept Domain-realm The Doomlords.”

“Pei Yutian is doomed with the arrival of the Blackflame General.”

“I don’t give a damn about Pei Yutian. I am more worried about whether I could make it out of here alive.”

“We have Heaven’s Reach elite here, too. I guess the Blackflame General would not dare to do any stupid.”

...

Celestial Court cultivators retreated again. They closed rank to avoid getting implicated.

They were here to take advantage of the situation, not putting their lives on the line.

Had they known earlier there were four Deathkin elites coming so quickly, they would have stayed out of this by going away a long time ago.

“Get the hell out of here if you all don’t want to die!” The Blackflame General hissed as he swept his eyes around.

Those Celestial Court cultivators, feeling as if they had been pardoned, quickly went away as quickly as they could, lest the Blackflame General would suddenly change his mind.

Face-saving was worth nothing when it was about life or death.

The eight Saint Kings coming out of the cave and wanting nothing now, were the ones fleeing the quickest.

But there were still some Celestial Court cultivators who chose to stay. Few of them, whose cultivation base was higher than Precept Domain, obviously not afraid of the Blackflame General.

“Are you all having a death wish by staying here?”

As black flame rose from the Blackflame General’s body, an aggressive energy hit those Celestial Court cultivators that were still at the scene.

His strength was at the apex of Heaven’s Reach realm. If not, he would not have become the third general under Chixing Shenzi’s command.

He used to have a short battle with a Path’s Anterior elite from the Celestial Court in the Battlefield of Merit in Xianji Mountain. Although he was outmatched, he still managed to walk away unscathed.

Bang!

Bang!

...

Following a few loud bangs, nine Celestial Court cultivators were sent flying out backward as they could not withstand the Blackflame General's aggressive energy.

Only two Heaven's Reach elite appeared composed as they resisted the Blackflame General's energy with their own.

The Blackflame General spared the lives of these Celestial Court only because there were two Heaven's Reach elites here. He just wanted to take back the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb and reported back to Chixing Shenzi. The rest did not matter.

The nine Celestial Court elites were shocked as they truly sensed the strength of the Blackflame General. They immediately left, not wanting to stay anymore.

They knew they were not supposed to mess with the Blackflame General even though they were Precept Domain elites.

In the blink of an eye, other than the four Deathkin elites, there were only two Heaven's Reach elites from the Celestial Court left.

Apparently, they were not intimidated easily.

After a moment of standoff, the Blackflame General withdrew his energy. "I just want the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb, the rest are yours."

"I want the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb, too," said a purple-haired Saint King from the Celestial Court.

The Blackflame General frowned upon hearing that reply. His expression did not look too good.

He would have killed him had he not known this purple-haired Saint King was a tough cookie.

"Do you really want to go against me, Ziyang Saint King?" The Blackflame General looked unusually bitter.

"So what if I do? If that's what you want, that's what you will get." Ziyang Saint King kept his hands behind him and

appeared calm.

The Blackflame General gazed at Ziyang Saint King with a murderous look in his eyes. It seemed that a brutal battle was imminent.

But the Blackflame General suddenly toned down. “If this is the case, suit your needs.”

It was more important to take back the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb. Killing Ziyang Saint King would be for another time.

Right now, the strange energy field shielding the cave was about to disappear. It could no longer hold back anyone.

The three Heaven’s Reach elites, and three Deathkin Doomlords stepped forward and entered the cave. They overlooked Pei Yutian condescendingly.

But Pei Yutian was not afraid. Instead, he guffawed. “I didn’t know I could attract the attention of so many elites. The Deathkins want me dead. So too the Celestial Court elites. It looks like I am going to die this time!”

“Hand over the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb and I will spare your life,” said Ziyang Saint King.

The Blackflame Generals stepped out. “Death is the only punishment for those who loot His Highness Shenzi’s Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb. No one could save his life,” he shouted.

The sound wave of his voice turned into blasts of air and hit Pei Yutian.

Bang!

Pei Yutian felt as if a hammer was pounding his chest as he was sent flying backward.

He plunged into the pond of the divine blood and submerged.

Just when the Blackflame General wanted to grab Pei Yutian out of the pond, his heart skipped a beat.

Translucent purple petals flew inside, and a strange, enchanting scent pervaded the cave.

Purple petals flew like butterflies, and they split into thousands in just a shudder, becoming a magnificent sigh of petal rain.

As beautiful as the petal rain was, it was extremely dangerous. It was a type of spiritual power attack.

An unsuspecting Precept-Domain Doomlord cried out in agony after being hit by a few petals.

“The spiritual power is scary. Who the hell is it?”

“The spiritual power of this person, I am afraid, is close to 60-order. We can’t fight it. Fall back now!”

The three Doomlords beat a hasty retreat when they sensed the terrifying power of the petal rain.

At the cave opening, a graceful figure walked in slowly, surrounded by countless petals. Her beauty was beyond compare.

Seeing the graceful figure, Ziyang Saint King’s heart missed a beat as he recognized her. “Fairy of a Hundred Flowers!”

He did not expect to see the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers to appear here.

For all he knew, the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers should still be at the Sword Vault Place in Central Region. How did she suddenly appear in Northern Region?

Especially when the dimensional wormhole in Northern Region was experiencing a problem now. The Deathkin had control over it. It was difficult for her to come to Northern Region from Central Region.

“How did the spiritual power of the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers become so powerful? Could it be that she was concealing her true strength in the Celestial Domain of Truth?”

Ziyang Saint King had many questions on his mind.

The appearance of the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers here was not a good thing. There was no doubt about it. She must be coming for the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb, too.

“The Deathkin has brought calamity to and caused endless bloodshed in Northern Region. Fairy, let us join hands to kill Blackflame General and his men.”

His tub-thumping and forceful rhetoric sounded as if his purpose of coming here was to fight the Deathkin elites.

Another Saint King elite from the Celestial Court came to his senses and echoed what Ziyang Saint King said. They quickly surrounded the four Deadkins, including the Blackflame Generals.

They couldn't help it. The spiritual power of the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers intimidated them, and they were too afraid to go against her.

A thought came to the Blackflame General's mind. “Kill our way out with the Will of Death!” he said.

Following immediately, he clapped his hands together. As he chanted some esoteric incantation, a gigantic shadow, as tall as a hundred yards, flew out of his body and filled the entire cave.

The shadow, looking like a death god, exuded a powerful air of death.

The other three Doomlords also clapped their hands together to perform a Mystic Technique of Death, respectively.

Obviously, their Will of Death was not as powerful as the Blackflame General. There was no shadow of the death god formed.

The Will of Death was a power unique to the Deathkins. It was unfathomably mysterious. Once performed, it could increase the strength of the Deathkins tremendously.

The Will of Death of the four Deathkin elites came together and turned into a telekinetic storm, sucking all the petals into it.

Next, the Shadow of Death behind the Blackflame General swung a Scythe of Death at the Fairy of a Hundred Flowers.

Using the Shadow of Death, the Blackflame General could be as powerful as a Path's Anterior elite.

“The suppression of my spiritual power here is indeed giving me a problem.” Ji Fanxin shook her head slightly.

Noticing the coming Scythe of Death, Ji Fanxin reached out a finger and tapped forward lightly.

A purple divine glow flew out of her fingertip instantly, hitting the Scythe of Death head-on.

Boom!

The Scythe of Death vibrated, then shattered.

But the purple divine glow did not dissipate. Instead, it aimed straight at the Shadow of Death.

The Blackflame General focused his mind and gathered more Will of Death. “Break!”

A telekinetic energy burst out, rocking the entire dimension, as if it was going to puncture it.

Boom!

The purple divine glow disappeared along with the telekinetic energy waves.

Seeing this outcome, Ji Fanxin frowned. The place was suppressing her spiritual power so much that she could not perform at her best.

Meanwhile, the Blackflame General was just as stunned. The four of them had joined hands to perform a Mystic Technique of Death, yet they still could not defeat Ji Fanxin. Not only that, they found themselves completely outmatched.

Just then, Zhang Ruochen, Xiang Chunan, and Luo Yi had arrived and entered the cave to stand alongside Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen summoned the Azuresky Pagoda in his hand. “How dare you Deathkins intrude into the Kunlun Realm! You all must have a death wish!”

He cast out the Azuresky Pagoda as he finished talking.

Beams of green lights radiated from the Azuresky Pagoda. Countless inscriptions had appeared, and the surging Supreme Power caused the entire cave to shake.

“A Supreme Artifact!”

The Blackflame General’s face collapsed as he sensed a real threat.

“Death Sacrifice!”

Without any hesitation, the Blackflame General offered his own vitality and infused it with the Shadow of Death.

Chapter 1922 - The Dark Manifestation of the Divine Will

Chapter 1922: The Dark Manifestation of the Divine Will

The evil air of death poured out of the Blackflame General's body into the Shadow of Death, which became more and more solidified as if the actual god of death was coming to this cave.

The Shadow of Death reached out a hand, triggering a massive Will of Death to clash with the Azuresky Pagoda head-on.

The Azuresky Pagoda rapidly spun to release beams of Supreme Power. There were vague signs of the dimension being ripped open.

However, it did not annihilate the Shadow of Death's hand, just blocked its advancement.

The Shadow of Death reached out another hand, and a bracelet glowing in a mysterious light flew out.

This bracelet had twelve beads on it. Each bead was engraved in complex patterns as if it possessed some mysterious power.

However, only three beads were solid while the others were in an insubstantial state as if they had not formed completely.

The three solid beads were giving out a mysterious glow, and the complex pattern of engravings had appeared.

“Halt!”

The Blackflame General shouted and propelled the bracelet to come above the Azuresky Pagoda.

The mighty mystic power of the bracelet seemed to lock everyone in place.

The Azuresky Pagoda stopped spinning and had a hard time releasing its Supreme Power. Apparently, it had been

suppressed completely.

A surprised look flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

The Will of Death is extraordinary indeed. With the implement spirit's consciousness still in a dormant state, the Azure Sky Pagoda couldn't do anything about the Blackflame General.

Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

The strength of a Heaven's Reach elite must not be underestimated.

After the Sword Vault Palace battle, the Azure Sky Pagoda had exhausted too much of its original power. As the implement spirit's consciousness was still in hibernation, it was not expected to recover any time soon.

Without the help of the implement spirit's consciousness, the power of the Azure Sky Pagoda was much lower than what it was supposed to be.

As the Azure Sky Pagoda was suppressed by the bracelet, the Shadow of Death bent over and reached out a hand to grab Zhang Ruochen and three others.

Jin Fanxin raised a hand and the petal surrounding her flew out and formed into a stream of flowers, blocking the hand of the Shadow of Death.

"Go to hell, you Deathkin! Eat this!" Xiang Chunan roared as he stepped out.

While speaking, he took out a Metal Demonic Crown and infused a massive amount of demonic Qi into it. Hundreds of thousands of inscriptions appeared and intertwined to produce potent Supreme Power.

"Yet another Supreme Artifact?" The Blackflame General's heart missed a beat.

Who are these people? Supreme artifacts seem to be common among them!

With no time to think, the Blackflame General offered more vitality so the Shadow of Death could become more solid in form.

Countless Precepts of Death appeared with the Shadow of Death at the center. The Precepts of Death formed a massive Precept Domain, attracting the free Precepts in heaven and earth to circle around it.

Bang!

The Metal Demonic Crown hit the Precept Domain. A violent energy surged, but it did not destroy the Precept Domain. Instead, the Precept Domain was pulling it over as if it had fallen into a quagmire.

“You three, go finish off Pei Yutian and take back the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb.”

The Blackflame General told the three Doomlords through telepathy.

“Aye!”

The three Doomlords immediately made their moves.

With the Blackflame General bogging down Zhang Ruochen and three others while Ziyang Saint King and another Saint King from the Celestial Court had stood aside, it was the best time to take back the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb.

So as soon as they had the things in their hands, they could leave immediately, no need to mess with Zhang Ruochen and others anymore. Even if Pei Yutian had swallowed the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb, they had a way to extract the essence from him.

Meanwhile, Ziyang Saint King and another Saint King from the Celestial Court were standing on the side, becoming spectators.

At first, they said they wanted to help the Fairy of a Thousand Flowers. But when Zhang Ruochen cast out his Azure Pagoda, they quickly stepped aside lest they got implicated.

The eyes of the Celestial Court Heaven’s Reach Saint King lit up. “Two Supreme artifacts! Ziyang Saint King, these things are more precious than the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb!” he whispered.

Ziyang Saint King could not take his eyes off the Azuresky Pagoda and the Metal Demonic Crown. The greedy look in his eyes was plain to see.

With his cultivation base and strength, he could challenge a Path's Anterior elite and become invincible below the realm of Supreme Saint if he could get his hand on any of these Supreme artifacts.

"Treasure should belong to the elites." Ziyang Saint King whispered.

A beam of purple Qi flew out of Ziyang Saint King's body. It turned into a bolt of silk and swept toward the Azuresky Pagoda.

At the same time, another Celestial Court Saint King elite was also making his move. He struck out his red dragon claws to grab the Metal Demonic Crown.

Their moves were carefully calculated. While Zhang Ruochen and three others were tied up with the Blackflame General, they could snatch away the two Supreme Artifacts.

Despite knowing how dangerous it was to mess with Zhang Ruochen and three others, the two Supreme Artifacts were worth the risk. As the saying goes, nothing ventured, nothing gained.

"How dare you!" Zhang Ruochen shouted with a bitter expression in his eyes.

With the flip of his hand, the Ancient Abyssal Blade appeared together with countless Marks of Time. It was as if the scene of countless stars, beautiful and mysterious.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade came so quickly that it struck out two beams of sword Qi of Time at once.

The purple silk and the red dragon claws, appearing fragile, were cut off instantly.

Just then, Ziyang Saint King and another Saint King from the Celestial Court shuddered. They sensed their strength leaving their bodies.

"What is going on?"

The two elites were shocked, not knowing what was happening.

Zhang Ruochen performed a Dimensional Shift and appeared beside the two elites instantaneously.

A sword was swung horizontally, cutting the two elites in half at their waists with purple and red bloods splattering instantly.

As apex Heaven's Reach elites, the two were tough enough that the sword did not kill them instantly.

Zhang Ruochen lunged up at once and aimed the Ancient Abyssal Blade at the forehead of a Heaven's Reach Saint King elite.

This elite had been wounded badly before. With two hundred years of his lifespan cut by the Mark of Time, and his body severed, he was too powerless to fight back now.

As the Ancient Abyssal Blade penetrated his forehead, the sword Qi shredded his saint soul instantly.

Zhang Ruochen pulled out the Ancient Abyssal blade, his expression grim as he turned to Ziyang Saint King.

"You must not kill me! I am from the Fane of Purple Sky. You will be in great trouble if you kill me!" Ziyang Saint King was in fear.

"I see. You are from the school of Heavenly Realm," said Zhang Ruochen.

Ziyang Saint King thought he now had a chance. "That's right. The Fane of Purple Sky is the most influential force in Hongyang Macroworld, a direct lineage of the Heavenly Realm. There is nothing but only a misunderstanding between us. We don't have to kill each other. I guess you don't want to mess with the Heavenly Realm, do you?"

"Are you trying to intimidate me with the Heavenly Realm? I guess you don't know who I am." Zhang Ruochen sneered.

Ziyang Saint King had a bad feeling upon hearing that. "Who are you?"

"Zhang Ruochen."

Ziyang Saint King's heart skipped a beat, fear overwhelming him.

He had never met Zhang Ruochen before, but he had heard about him and knew his long-standing animosities with the different schools in Heavenly Realm.

By using Heavenly Realm to threaten Zhang Ruochen, he was shooting himself in the foot.

“I—”

Just when Ziyang Saint King wanted to say something, Zhang Ruochen had raised his Ancient Abyssal Blade and thrust it into his forehead.

Zhang Ruochen would never think twice about killing those from the schools of the Heavenly Realms. More so, these people were the sneaky backstabbers while he was fighting the Deathkin elites.

They deserved to die.

From the moment Yanshen wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen, or rather, when Zhang Ruochen became the Scion of Time and Space, his conflict with the Heavenly Realm had become unamendable.

Ziyang Saint King looked at him with his eyes wide open. Indignation filled his eyes until he collapsed in his own pool of blood.

Just then, in the pond of divine blood's direction, a terrifying energy burst out with a blood-red saber light shot up into the air.

The three Doomlords, who had come to the edge of the divine blood pond, stopped dead in their tracks. Their expression collapsed. They quickly summoned their Will of Death to form a shield around them.

The protective shield formed by the Will of Death shook violently before it shattered at once.

The blood-red saber light penetrated the protective shield. With its momentum unaffected, the saber light struck the three Doomlords.

They were sent flying out backward, each puking a mouthful of blood. They were badly wounded.

Pei Yutian emerged from the pond of divine blood. The rock saber had become blood-red in his hand.

When he first plunged into the pond, the divine blood almost devoured him. It was a dangerous situation.

Lucky for him; the rock saber resisted the power of the divine blood, protecting him from harm. Not only that, the rock saber had given him a strange power that had healed half of his injury in just a moment.

The rock saber seemed to be a living thing. It had absorbed a vast amount of divine blood and its blade had turned blood-red.

As Zhang Ruochen appeared behind the three Doomlords, he performed a Moonlight Melody and decapitated them effortlessly.

Next, using his fist, he crushed the skulls of the three Doomlords, so they would have no chance of survival.

The three dead Doomlords were not princes or shenzis but ordinary Precept Domain cultivators. They could not fight a cross-border battle. With Zhang Ruochen's cultivation base now, coupled with the wonder of the Path of the Ancients, killing them was a piece of cake.

The Path of the Ancients was the ultimate way.

"Are you all right?" Zhang Ruochen looked at Pei Yutian.

"I am all right. I will live. I am surprised you come. I appreciate it," said Pei Yutian.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. "Think nothing of it. Let's leave this for another time. We have got to finish off the Blackflame General."

A stern look flashed in Pei Yutian's eyes as he clenched his rock saber in his right hand. "Okay."

He waved the rock saber and struck out a flash of blood-red saber light with all his strength.

Perhaps the rock saber had absorbed the divine blood in the pond; it became a little different, and the energy it emitted was ten times more powerful than Pei Yutian's.

The patterns on the blood-red blade were perfectly aligned with the terrains of Northern Region. The energy between heaven and earth converged and became one with the saber.

It was as if all the energy in Northern Region had gathered in Pei Yutian.

When he struck out the saber, thunder and lightning rumbled in the entire Northern Region. There was a great change in the sky and the stars shivered.

Just then, a vague shadow lunged out of Zhang Ruochen's body. With the Ancient Abyssal Blade in hands, the shadow charged at the Shadow of Death at incredible speed.

It was the sword soul.

With a sword in hands, the sword soul could perform any sword technique with the most incredible power.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade cut the Shadow of Death in half, and a massive amount of Will of Death pouring out of it.

Without protecting the Shadow of Death, the blood-red saber of Pei Yutian hit the Blackflame General directly on his body.

The Blackflame General puked a mouthful of blood as he was sent flying out backward.

“Suppress!”

As Zhang Ruochen shouted quietly, the Azure Sky Pagoda spun and came above the Blackflame General.

“No!”

The Blackflame General roared, not wanting to admit defeat. But he was powerless to stop the Azure Sky Pagoda.

Amid a flash of green light, the Azure Sky Pagoda caught the Blackflame General within itself and confined it inside. There was no more resistance.

With the wave of a hand, the Azuresky Pagoda rapidly shrank and flew into Zhang Ruochen's hand.

Silence returned to the cave at once as the battle ended—for now.

“Since Ziyang Saint King has come to Northern Region, his senior brother Zifeng Saint King should have been here!” Ji Fanxin warned.

“Are Zifeng Saint King and Ziyang Saint King close?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

“They are twin brothers, well-known across Hongyang Macroworld. Zifeng Saint King far surpasses Ziyang Saint King in terms of cultivation base. He is the most powerful person below the Supreme Saint realm in Hongyang Macroworld.”

“Then we will be in trouble!”

Although Zifeng Saint King did not see who killed Ziyang Saint King, since they were twins, they surely had some psychic connection. So it was not so difficult at all for Zifeng Saint King to know who was the killer.

Besides, an elite like Zifeng Saint King must have mastered some inference secret technique. So they couldn't be more careful.

“Ziyang Saint King deserved it. Even if Zifeng Saint King were here, he still had to die,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“Ji Fanxin said nothing more upon hearing that. She just wanted to warn him. She believed that even when Zifeng Saint King arrived, Zhang Ruochen could handle him.

No ordinary cultivators could fathom the power of Time and Space.

“Maybe we should collect the Godstones and divine blood first.” Luo Yi chimed in.

Involuntarily, Zhang Ruochen and three others looked up at the strange ‘starry sky’ above the divine blood pond, their eyes brightening up.

The ‘stars’ in the ‘starry sky’ were the Godstones. There were twelve of them in total.

Zhang Ruochen looked excited. The Godstones were important to him because he could use them to activate the Sundial and rapidly increase his strength.

With the flick of his hand, he cast out the Ancient Abyssal Blade toward the cave dome.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade pried a Godstone out from the dome. There was no resistance.

As Zhang Ruochen reached to grab with his hand, the Godstone flew toward him.

Boom!

Just then, a horrible air emerged from the deeper part of the cave.

Zhang Ruochen caught the Godstone while his eyes staring into the deeper part of the cave.

He could vaguely see the shadow of a snake, the mouth of which was wide open, looking extremely hideous.

Not only that, the snake exuded a terrifyingly suffocating energy. He felt he could not breathe.

He had never felt such an oppressive energy since he last attained Nine-Step Saint Kinghood. Even Xuetu did not give him such great pressure.

Not only him, but others had also sensed what he sensed. They were almost on their knees.

“We need to get out of here!”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed. He took out a Dimensional Scroll at once.

A strange dimensional power emerged to engulf the five of them and teleported them out of the cave instantaneously.

The shadow of a snake came at speed and almost got them all.

The snake’s shadow roared. As the cave trembled, rocks fell from the dome and revealed the glistening divine bones.

The situation in the cave had changed in a split second. The massive white skull of a snake was gleaming with divine light and expelled the evil energy from the cave.

As if it had lost its target, the snake shadow retreated into the deep part of the cave. Silence returned as if nothing had ever happened before.

Zhang Ruochen and four others appeared out of thin air on the Cliff of Doom.

As soon as they emerged from the teleportation, fear rose within them as they heard the angry roar at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom.

“What is that thing? It was freaking scary!” Xiang Chunan couldn’t hide his frightful expression.

They would have died if they fled a second later.

“If I am not mistaken, that should be the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will. It is formed by the undying divine will of gods. This type of power isn’t something we could handle with our levels of cultivation.”

“The Dark Manifestation of Divine Will? How did it come about?” Xiang Chunan was none the wiser.

“Didn’t you see the divine bones with the rocks fell off? Not forgetting the Godstones and the divine blood. My guess is that during the ancient times, there used to be a god buried at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom. The god must have been dead, but the divine will it left behind is unannihilable. The body of the god must not be violated.,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Back then, he used to have an encounter with Blackheart Demonlord’s divine will at Mount Yueshen. So he knew about the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will.

“With the presence of the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will, how could we collect the Godstones and the divine blood?” Xiang Chunan looked worried.

After tasting the goodness brought about by the Sundial, he was eager to get his hands on the Godstones.

Now that he had found the Godstones, but there was no way to get them. How could he not be anxious?

“The Dark Manifestation of Divine Will isn’t entirely undefeatable,” said Ji Fanxin.

“You have an idea, Fairy?” Zhang Ruochen looked at Ji Fanxin.

“For far as I know, a treasure could counterbalance the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will. It is called the Five-Element Soil, and it is extremely rare,” said Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart missed a beat upon hearing that. He recalled the time in Divinity Bestowment Altar, he and Awesome, the Little Taoist, accidentally entered an old manor, the Garden of Tao, which was a Taoist sacred land of a civilization in Celestial Court.

There was a vast amount of Five-Element Soil in the Garden of Tao.

Those vicious evil beings outside the Garden of Tao had never dared to enter. So at the time, they had speculated that some forces inside the garden could counter those vicious evil beings.

Now when he heard what Ji Fanxin said, it all came back to him. Those vicious evil beings were afraid of the Five-Element Soil.

Speaking of the sacred land of the Garden of Tao, Zhang Ruochen could not help but think of Zheng Yuan, the leader of a school of Taoism.

Perhaps the new sacred land of Taoism, the Five-Element Temple, had Five-Element Soil, too.

No matter what, he had to get his hands on some Five-Element Soil to defeat the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will. He was determined to get the remaining eleven Godstones inside the cave.

It was said that Cheng Yuan was in Northern Region.

Chapter 1923 - The Northern Region Basecamp

Chapter 1923: The Northern Region Basecamp

Zhang Ruochen shot out a Communication talisman to ask Zhen Yuan about the Five-element soil.

The Godstone was of great importance, and he needed to get them as soon as possible to avoid any complications later.

After all, when the Godstone appears, there will be many cultivators who will see it. So the news cannot be concealed and will soon spread.

Fortunately, there was a Dark Manifestation of Divine Will protecting the Godstone, without the Five-element soil, rushing in meant courting certain death.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said. “Brother Pei, you sure are bold enough, for you to even snatch the Yuanhui Sacred Medicine from Chixing Shenzi.”

“The Yuanhui Sacred Medicine originally belonged to Kunlun Realm, how can it fall into the hands of the Deathkins? That Chixing Shenzi is already a top-level elite beneath a Supreme Saint, and could even exchange several blows with one. With his already powerful strength, allowing him to refine the sacred medicine means that he will have few opponents if at all beneath a Supreme Saint.” Pei Yutian said solemnly.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said. “Indeed, none of those Infernal princes, Shenzi are slouches. To let them get a great opportunity in Kunlun means they will be even more difficult to deal with.”

“After refining the Yuanhui Sacred Medicine, I think Brother Pei, your cultivation base will soon reach the realm of a Nine-step Saint King, that’s something worth congratulating.”

With the powerful medicinal power of the Yuanhui Sacred Medicine, in addition to Pei Yutian’s outstanding talents, it is

very easy for him to increase his cultivation base by several small realms.

Also, the Yuanhui Sacred Medicine has a unique effect, and will have far-reaching impact on Pei Yutian's future cultivations.

For a Sacred Medicine that could survive the Yuanhui Tribulation, how can it not have something special about it?

Fortunately, this Yuanhui Sacred Medicine did not practice any exercises or saint arts, or else, beneath a Supreme Saint, there were few that could be its match.

“Kunlun Realm is now is a perilous state, and does not have much strength. Forget protecting Kunlun, whether we can survive or not is a question in itself.” Pei Yutian sighed.

Once he was one of the five greatest heroic talents, with a bright future and many saying that he would become the Prince of the Northern Region.

However, reality was too cruel. Long before he could fully develop, the Infernal Court had launched a fierce assault on Kunlun Realm. The Celestial Court, while nominally saying they were aiding Kunlun Realm, most of them were actually gunning for Kunlun's treasures and opportunities. Against the top-level elites of both the Celestial and the Infernal Court, his strength was a little too weak.

This was why he desperately tried to get stronger, and even if it meant taking inordinate amount of risks for it.

For example, this raid into Linyang City, and snatching the Yuanhui Sacred Medicine from Chixing Shenzi's underlings was one of such venture.

Although he had managed to seize the Yuanhui Sacred Medicine, however if Zhang Ruochen and his group had not arrived in time, he would probably not survive that.

Each person have their own opportunities, and for Pei Yutian to be able to reach such a cultivation base in such a short period of time, almost catching up to Zhang Ruochen, who had the Sundial, that itself was remarkable.

However, Zhang Ruochen's foundation was much more solid, and the saint path cultivated was much deeper, profound and numerous. Unlike Pei Yutian who only focused on the path of the sabre, and was a pure sabre-user.

One was multi-disciplined, one was specialized.

Every path that Zhang Ruochen had studied was much stronger than Pei Yutian's path of the sabre.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was speaking to Pei Yutian, a saint light flew in from the sky, and Zhang Ruochen reached out to catch it.

A look of joy appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face as he looked forward to good news from Zhen Yuan.

There were only a few words on the Communication talisman, "Come to the Northern Region Basecamp."

Zhen Yuan was indeed in the north.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Pei Yutian, asking. "Where is the Northern Region Basecamp located?"

"The Northern Region Basecamp is established by the Celestial Court, and gathered countless Celestial Court cultivators. It's on the outer area of Xianji Mountain. I will take you there." Pei Yutian said.

Ever since Kunlun Realm was attacked by the Infernal Court, and after his return from the Celestial Domain of Truth, he had been training in the Northern Region, so he was acutely aware of the ongoing situation in the north.

"Then, I'll trouble you, Brother Pei!"

Zhang Ruochen nodded, and took out the Black Altar with a wave of his hand.

This place was about 120 thousand miles away from Xianji Mountain, so using the Black Altar to travel would undoubtedly be much faster.

Their figures flickered and the five of them appeared on top of the Black Altar.

The Black Altar shuddered and then transformed into a stream of light as it disappeared from the Cliff of Doom.

After a long while, only then someone climbed out of the Cliff of Doom, each looking a little panicked.

There was a earthshaking roar inside the cave that was so terrifying it shook their souls, and all thought that they would have perished there.

Fortunately for them, they had fled long ago, otherwise the consequences would have been unthinkable.

“Why hasn’t Saint King Ziyang, the Blackflame General and the rest not come up yet?”

“There was an extremely violent power fluctuation inside the cavern, were they fighting in there? I wonder what’s the outcome.”

“It’s really likely that their fight had disturbed some terrifying existence laying dormant inside the cave, and perhaps they were unable to escape. ”

“Sigh, it’s a real pity for that Yuanhui Sacred Medicine.”

“Aside from the Yuanhui Sacred Medicine, there’s also Godstone and Divine Blood inside the cavern.”

...

Many of the escaped cultivators eyes glinted, be it the Yuanhui Sacred Medicine, the Godstones or the Divine Blood, all of them were priceless, and even a Supreme Saint would be tempted.

What they did not know was Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin had also went to the Cliff of Doom.

Some could not hold themselves back as they turned around and wanted to explore the situation.

However, none of those who went in came out again, and that caused the heart of many to sink like rocks.

In the face of this situation, no one else dared to take any more risks. Some chose to stay and guard the Cliff of Doom while

others quietly retreated, and did not want to get involve in this any longer.

A series of communication talisman flew out of the Cliff of Doom, and it won't take too long for the news here to spread.

On the other side, Zhang Ruochen and the other four travelled on the Black Altar as they rushed through the clouds, and soon arrived at the Northern Region Basecamp.

The Northern Region Basecamp was build just outside Xianji Mountain, and was extremely large. It was a veritable impregnable war fortress, and from afar, it looked like tens of thousands of iron beasts were entrenched in the vast land.

It was precisely because of the existence of the war fortress that most of the Deathkin army were blocked inside Xianji Mountain, otherwise the situation in the Northern Region would be far worse.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen and his group arrived at the basecamp, a person came to gree them. It was Zhang Ruochen's second sworn brother, Feng Yan.

"Big brother, third brother, long time no see." Feng Yan smiled.

Xiang Chunan walked forward quickly, and gave Feng Yan a big bear hug. "HAHAHAHA!, Second brother, I missed you to death!"

Zhang Ruochen also smiled, he totally did not expect to meet Feng Yan in the basecamp.

After their farewells at the Celestial Domain of Truth, they had not seen each other for a long time.

"It's rare for the three of us to gather together, we must have a few drinks." Feng Yan's face was brimming with smiles.

Xiang Chunan guffawed. "That's a must, second brother. You must not be stingy, and take out a few more casks of fine wines from your collection."

Hearing this, Feng Yan said with gusto. "Sure, you can drink as much as you want. I have enough."

“Second brother, take me to see Senior Brother Zhen Yuan first.” Zhang Ruochen said.

Feng Yan nodded and said. “Yes, Senior Brother Zhen Yuan is already waiting inside.”

Immediately, Zhang Ruochen and the four others followed Feng Yan as they entered the Northern Region Basecamp.

With Feng Yan leading the way, the journey was exceptionally smooth, and proceeded without any hindrances.

There were countless buildings in the Northern Region Basecamp of various shapes, and gathered in them were countless cultivators of the Celestial Court. The weakest cultivation level was also Yulong level, forming a massive army.

Kunlun Realm was still in the early stages of the war, and the Yulong-realm cultivators and Demi-Saints could still play some roles.

And once it was necessary to evacuate all cultivators below a Saint level, that mean that the war had reached its most brutal stages, and Kunlun Realm marched towards destruction.

This was something no cultivators of Kunlun Realm would like to see.

With Feng Yan leading the way, Zhang Ruochen and his party entered a manor.

This manor was elegantly decorated with many flowers planted in the garden. The air was filled with the faint floral fragrance.

“I’m afraid only Senior Brother Zhen Yuan would have such a leisurely and elegant manner. He actually brought a manor along with him and placed it within the camp.”

“Is he here for combat or for cultivation?” Xiang Chunan curled his lips.

Upon stepping into the manor, Zhang Ruochen’s gaze was fixed on Zhen Yuan.

Zhen Yuan was trimming his plants at that moment, and that leisurely atmosphere was as if he had completely blended himself into the environment.

Zhang Ruochen stepped forward, saluted and said. "Greetings, Senior Brother Zhen Yuan."

Zhen Yuan turned around, and said with a smile. "No need for pleasantries, I've just heard that you've only just annihilated a hundred thousand strong Immortal Vampire army in the Central Region Sword Vault, I never thought that you'd appear in the Northern Region that quickly."

"It seems like my trip to the Main Terminal of Merit had made this matter known to everyone!" Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhen Yuan made an inviting gesture and said. "Everyone, please have a sit."

Zhang Ruochen and the others forgo the formalities, and each saty on the stone bench one after another.

As if knowing that Zhang Ruochen was in a hurry, Zhen Yuan could not help but to speak as he made tea. "The Five-Elements Temple does have Five-element soil, but it's not a lot. Plus the soil is very important to the Watch, so it's not easily accessible."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen immediately said. "I only need to borrow a small amount of Five-element soil. I will immediately return them once I'm done. If you have any needs, Senior Brother Zhen Yuan, please just say it."

As long as he can borrow the Five-element soil, and get the eleven Godstones in the Cliff of Doom, paying some price for it was totally worth it.

Zhen Yuan smiled slightly and said. "Don't worry, with my standing, I could still procure a small amount of Five-element soil, however, the Five-Element Temple is currently in the Five-Element Celestial Domain, and is rather far from away from Kunlun Realm, so delivering the soil over here will take some time."

"As long as I can borrow the Five-element soil, it won't hurt to wait a while longer." Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhen Yuan nodded. "Before you came, I've already sent word back to the temple, so we need at most seven days for the soil to be sent over."

"Thank you, Senior Brother Zhen Yuan." A look of joy appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

It was just seven days, and he did not think anyone would take the Godstones away during that time.

That Dark Manifestation of Divine Will was extremely terrifying, and even ordinary Supreme Saints were no match for it. Without the Five-Element Soil in hand, anyone who rushes in there is tantamount to suicide.

For the time being, Zhang Ruochen and the rest settled in this mayor as he waited for the Five-Element Temple to send the soil over.

In the evening, Zhang Ruochen left the camp alone, retracted his aura as he snuck quietly into Xianji Mountain.

He needed to seize the Godstones, but he had not forgotten the main purpose of coming to the Northern Region.

From Pei Yutian's mouth, Zhang Ruochen already knew that Xianji Mountain was almost completely occupied by the Deathkins, and it was difficult to break into it.

He needed to scout the place out, and get a hold of the specific situation before decide whether to collect the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk with Ji Fanxin.

"Xianji Mountain is really different now!"

Looking at the towering mountains ahead, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to frown slightly.

Compared to the past, the Xianji Mountain was ten times larger now, and the shape of the mountain has changed dramatically.

More importantly, the blue palace on the top on the mountain has disappeared.

The Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk existed within a special dimension inside the blue palace grounds. Now that the blue

palace was gone, does it mean that the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk had been taken by the Deathkin?

Chapter 1924 - The Altar of Evil

Chapter 1924: The Altar of Evil

In the past, Xianji Mountain only had a single main peak, and the blue palace was built upon that peak.

Now, however, Xianji Mountain had five peaks about the same height, and the Saint Qi of heaven and earth were abundant. The divinity on its grounds had clearly been awakened.

“The Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk should not have been taken away that easily.” Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

Immediately, he used his spiritual power and entered the Qiankun realm as he said. “Senior Tree, can you perceive where the tree trunk is at?”

The Divine Sky-connecting Tree’s branches gently shook as it released a strange energy out of the Qiankun Realm.

This energy was so subtle than even a Supreme Saint may not be able to detect it.

A moment a later, that power returned to the Qiankun Realm and the Divine Sky-connecting Tree spoke. “The tree trunk is underground and there is a power that is isolating it, so much so that I can only vaguely perceive it.”

“Underground?”

A surprised look appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s face.

However, he was relieved that the trunk had not been taken away by the Deathkin.

Legend has it that there is a treasure being bred inside the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk, which may involve the mystery of godhood, thus it must no be allowed to fall into the hands of the Deathkin.

Using the Dimensional Shift, Zhang Ruochen quietly dove underground.

The underground of Xianji Mountain was vast, empty space. Inside it was filled with an incomparably potent evil Qi of death, and was very suffocating.

Guided by the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, Zhang Ruochen very quickly locked onto the tree trunk's location.

An altar entered Zhang Ruochen's sight. It was massive with its diameter spanning more than three hundred feet. The altar was engraved with countless of arcane runes, unleashing a mysterious power as it absorb the Qi of the land.

There was a five hundred-foot-tall Shadow of Death that could be clearly seen at the center of the altar. It held a death scythe, with a shiny bracelet on its wrist. All twelve beads were as solid as it could be.

As more and more Qi of the land was absorbed, the Shadow of Death became more and more solid, and there was still signs of it growing.

In contrast, the Shadow of Death the Blackflame General had conjured was too weak, and was less than a percent of its strength.

“This altar is really unusual. What is draws is not Qi of the land, but the power of Kunlun Realm's recovery.” Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed slightly.

He had entered more than one awakened land, and he was very familiar with this power and was confident that his perception was not faulty.

It was not a small matter that the Deathkin had laid out an altar to absorb the recovery power of the Northern Region.

Even if it was only a part that was absorbed, the impact would be enormous.

Above the altar sat three figures in a three-person formation. They were made out of two men and one woman, all dressed in white robes as their aura was completely fused with the altar.

They were the White Robed Priests of the Fane of Death, holding a lofty status and was powerful. Even a Deathkin General needed to be respectful when one sees them.

Whoosh!

A white-robed priest with a vertical eye on his forehead suddenly opened his eyes, and looked at the direction of Zhang Ruochen's hiding place.

"Someone dared to break in. Death Knights, take care of the intruder." The white robe priest with vertical eye on his forehead said coldly.

Whoosh!

Whoosh!

...

Following several rips of air, six Death Knights in armor of death rushed out.

The Death Knights were carefully cultivated by the Fane of Death, like the Angels Encarmine of the Fane of Bloody War. Each of them was extremely powerful, comparable to a prince of the Precept Dominion realm.

The Death Knights of the Fane of Immortality were imitations of the Death Knights of the Fane of Death, and the two had a distinct difference.

The six Death Knights all held death scythes, like a death god walking upon mortal realms, harvesting the souls of all living beings.

Seeing the six Death Knights rushing forward, a strange glint flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. "They discovered me."

He thought that he had concealed himself well enough, and had retracted all of his aura so the possibility of him being exposed was low. So, he never thought that he would be discovered in an instant, and that surprised him.

If that was the case, all he could do was fight then.

A surge of saint Qi and blood Qi rushed out from the seven orifice points of his palm, forming a massive shadow of Lord

Ming.

“The Seven-Orifices Netherblood Palm.”

Zhang Ruochen growled, and blasted out a palm strike with all his might.

The palm of the Lord Ming’s phantom stretched out as a boundless blood Qi surged, forming a vast sea of blood to drown out everything.

The six Death Knights struck at the same time, waving their death scythes as they combined their strength, and slashed out a black scythe beam.

“All life shall die.”

Obviously, they have sensed the terror of Zhang Ruochen, and had to choose to fight together.

The black scythe beam was extremely sharp, seemingly able to cut through everything.

Whoosh!!

The sea of blood was cut apart by the beam, and was quickly annihilated.

By the time the sea of blood had completely disappeared, the scythe beam too dissipated as its power was exhausted.

Whoosh!

The Ancient Abyssal Blade appeared in his hand and shook slightly as countless Marks of Time appeared.

As his combat experience increased, Zhang Ruochen’s understanding of the Moonlight Song technique was undoubtedly getting deeper and deeper, and the power unleashed naturally became stronger as well.

VOOOSH!

A sword shadow flashed past, and the heads of all six Death Knights were separated from their bodies.

BAAAMMM!!

BAAAMMM!!

...

Zhang Ruochen struck like lightning, and destroyed the heads of all six of the Death Knights, completely killing them.

Even if the Deathkin was a special race, once their heads destroyed and their saint soul annihilated, they will still die.

Seeing this, the white-robed priest with vertical eye on his forehead was furious. "Hmm? You dare to kill the Death Knights? Death awaits you!"

As he spoke, he stretched out his finger and moved forward slightly.

BOOM!!

Countless death beams shot out and transformed into a stallion as it charged at Zhang Ruochen.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen also stretched out a finger, and struck forward.

"Dimensional Rift."

The dimension instantly tore open, forming a rift several meters long.

The stallion formed by the death beams were swallowed by the rift, and none of the attack hit Zhang Ruochen.

"So you're a cultivator of space. No wonder you can sneak in without a trace. But no matter, since you've arrived, don't even think about leaving again." The only priestess said coldly.

She slowly put out a hand, as a majestic power of death surged, forming a giant black hand hundreds of meters wide as it grabbed at Zhang Ruochen.

The giant black hand contains extremely terrifying power and almost suppressed the entire underground space.

"Amazing, none of these three are beneath me in strength."

Zhang Ruochen did not choose to fight, but instead held the Secret Tome of Time and Space and broke through the giant

hand's suppression of the space as he performed the Dimensional Shift.

The giant black hand grabbed at his position, but only caught an afterimage. Zhang Ruochen's real body had already left the underground cavern.

Without any stops, Zhang Ruochen used the Great Dimensional Shift and appeared nine hundred miles away.

After using more than ten consecutive Great Dimensional Shifts, Zhang Ruochen escaped Xianji Mountain and appeared outside the Northern Region Basecamp.

His retreat was extremely abrupt in order not to arouse the suspicion of the Deathkin, and to not expose the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk.

After a short investigation, Zhang Ruochen had determined that the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk was beneath that evil altar, and should have not been discovered by the Deathkins for the time being.

"I have to tell Senior Brother Zhen Yuan about that altar." Zhang Ruochen's expression was somewhat serious.

Immediately, he entered the camp and went straight to look for Zhen Yuan.

At the same time, in the underground space beneath Xianji Mountain, the face of the white-robed priestess was bitter. She had personally intervened and Zhang Ruochen still escaped.

"This person's path of dimension is so strong that he could break the dimensional lock here, who is he?" The white-robed priestess frowned.

The white-robed priest with a vertical eye on his forehead said with fury in his eyes. "For him to kill six Death Knights with a single slash, damn him."

The final green-haired white-robed elder said with a deep voice. "What I'm worried about is, had that person discovered the secrets of this place? Yuanmo Shenzi had bade us to stand guard here, and if anything happens, our fates will not be kind."

Hearing that, solemn expressions appeared on the faces of both the white-robed priest with a vertical eye and the white-robed priestess as they fell into silence.

All of them shuddered when they recalled how terrifying Yuanmo Shenzi was.

Unlike other Shenzis, Yuanmo Shenzi was a child of one of the gods of the Fane of Death. His position was extremely venerated and his strength unparalleled. No one dared to cross him.

“I’m not too worried about Yuanmo Shenzi’s side, but we should deal carefully with the one from the Fane of Destiny.” The white-robed priestess said.

Just as her voice trailed off, the ripples appeared in the underground space as three dim brilliance descended, revealing three figures.

Leading the trio was a graceful woman with a tall figure. Her legs were long and slender as she wore a veil on her face, only her two bright, onyx-like eyes were revealed.

There was a temperament beyond words that exuded from her body, making people could not resist but to worship her.

Behind the graceful woman stood a man and a woman, both were young-looking but the aura exuding from their bodies were extremely powerful, not in the least beneath the three white-robed priests, but instead even exceed them a little.

Seeing the graceful woman, the expressions of the three white-robed priests all changed drastically.

The white-robed priestess trembled a little, this was what she was afraid of.

The graceful woman had an indifferent look, as her eyes locked onto the white-robed priestess, saying. “How are you planning to deal with me?”

The white-robed priestess trembled even more visibly, saying. “Please forgive me. I did not have any intention of offending you. It shall never happen again in the future.”

The graceful woman slowly stretched out her hand, and pointed a finger at the white-robed priestess.

Suddenly, a Light of Destiny flew out from her finger, and entered the white-robed priestess' body.

“Ah, my lady, please forgive me!” The white-robed priestess let out a painful scream as she fell onto the ground and struggled violently.

The Light of Destiny directly acted on the soul, and that sort of pain was beyond words and was unbearable to anyone.

The white-robed priests with vertical eye and the green-haired priest stood aside silently, not daring to say a word.

This was one of the three candidates who had the most hope to become the Lady of the Fane of Destiny, and she was also the object of Yuanmo Shenzi's affections, and was someone they could not afford to offend.

Seeing the white-robed priestess was about to totally collapse, the graceful woman retracted the Light of Destiny, and said lightly. “If there's another time, do not expect mercy.”

The white-robed priestess took a sigh of relief as she stood up and said. “Thank you, my lady, I will never dare to repeat this.”

“Who can tell me what had happened here?” the graceful woman asked.

The green-haired white-robed priest hurriedly replied. “My lady, a mysterious cultivator of space broke in just now and killed six Death Knights before escaping.”

Hearing that, the graceful woman waved her hand and an orb of Light of Destiny flew out and transformed into a mirror, revealing the images of Zhang Ruochen being in the underground space.

“Why is it him?”

A strange look flashed in the graceful woman's eyes, saying. “It's the Scion of Time and Space, Zhang Ruochen. The two of you, take him back. Remember, I want him alive.”

“Yes, my lady.”

The man and woman standing behind the graceful lady responded.

Immediately, the two left only afterimages as they rushed out of the underground space at extreme speed.

Chapter 1925 - Pan Ruo

Chapter 1925: Pan Ruo

The graceful woman walked forward toward the altar.

A nether river appeared under her feet and started to flow slowly. Without anyone realizing it, the river ran through the entire place.

The nether river shone with divine light as countless precepts flowed within it. The graceful woman looked like a supreme goddess as she stepped upon all of the precepts of heaven and earth.

Seeing this, the three white-robed priests were shocked and nearly could not help but to kneel and worship the graceful woman.

In a blink of an eye, the woman had ascended the altar as a series of precepts of destiny appeared and formed a series of chains, as if capable of capturing the fate of all living beings.

The chains extended towards the Shadow of Death and could actually draw both the Will of Death and the restorative power of the Northern Region.

The Path of Destiny was mystical as such, that it seemingly could absorb any force in the world.

Hummmmm

The space shook slightly, countless of Precepts of Destiny intertwined, forming a bizarre gate of light. And that gate of light behind the graceful woman, it was the Gate of Destiny.

It was the same Gate of Destiny, yet the one formed by the graceful woman was far larger and more solid than Prince Wujie. The attainments of the two in the Path of Destiny were on completely different levels.

The three white-robed priests were all envious. Aside from Yuanmo Shenzi, only this candidate for the Lady of the Fane of Destiny could obtain the power gathered by the altar at will.

The three of them held high positions in the Fane of Death, and were responsible for guarding the altar, so they could obtain a lot of power from it, yet they were completely incomparable to Yuanmo Shenzi nor the graceful woman.

BOOM!

A tyrannical aura suddenly descended upon the underground space, as a huge amount of evil death Qi surged, faintly forming a piece of nether realm.

Within the nether realm, stood a heroic-looking man in pitch-black armor with a demonic spear in hand. The aura exuded from his body was extremely domineering, not unlike a demon king who had just walked out of hell.

The three white-robed priests hurriedly bowed and saluted, saying. "Greetings, Lord Shenzi."

Yuanmo Shenzi's return at this moment surprised them, but soon they understood why. Yuanmo Shenzi had been pursuing this candidate as the Lady of the Fane of Destiny, and since she had appeared here, how could Yuanmo Shenzi not rush over?

Yuanmo Shenzi ignored the three white-robed priests, and focusing entirely on the graceful woman. "Lady Pan Ruo's coming made this Shenzi extremely happy. Why didn't you inform me in advance? I could personally come to receive you."

"I only came here to have a look on a whim, so why should I bother you, Lord Shenzi. Also, I am just a candidate, not a Lady of the Fane of Destiny." Pan Ruo said indifferently.

Yuanmo Shenzi had long been accustomed to Pan Ruo's attitude, and he did not care at all as he laughed and said. "With my help, you will soon become the Lady of the Fane of Destiny."

"If I want to become the Lady of the Fane of Destiny, why would I need help from others?" Pan Ruo said coldly.

Yuanmo Shenzi replied. "You're right. With your strength, Pan Ruo, you don't need anyone's aid to become the Lady of the Fane of Destiny, but I still hope to be of help to you."

Hearing the words of Yuanmo Shenzi, the three white-robed priests were dumbstruck.

In their memory, Yuanmo Shenzi was extremely domineering, no one can go against his will, and he was never a person whom you could reason to begin with.

Pan Ruo was an exception. Ever since she appeared in the Fane of Destiny a few years ago, Yuanmo Shenzi seemed to be enchanted, and everything he did seemed to follow Pan Ruo's whim, as if he had totally changed.

However, Pan Ruo seemed to have no feelings for Yuanmo Shenzi, and no matter how Yuanmo Shenzi pursued her, she was always like an iceberg, and never shown Yuanmo Shenzi a single smile.

Even so, Yuanmo Shenzi did not give up, and on the contrary, seemed to be more proactive, as if he vowed not to stop until he gets Pan Ruo in his arms.

Speaking of which, Pan Ruo was not any ordinary character. She had appeared in the Nether Purgatory as a ghost a few years ago, and had withstood the tribulations of the Nether Flames and the Nether Thunder again and again. Her mind and will was extremely tough.

Because of this, Pan Ruo was favored by an influential figure in the Fane of Destiny, and was brought back to the Fane of Destiny to be cultivated. Soon, she had become one of the three most promising candidates to become the Lady of the Fane of Destiny.

With the great figures of the Fane of Destiny backing her, and Pan Ruo's own talents, she had cultivated the Path of Destiny to an astonishing level in just a few years. It was indeed true that she had promising hopes to become the Lady, even without anyone's aid.

It was only a mysterious and powerful woman like Pan Ruo that could interest Yuanmo Shenzi. Even if he ran into a wall time and time again, he refused to give up, and was instead more and more determined.

Pan Ruo then ignored Yuanmo Shenzi as she refocused her attention on drawing the power of the altar.

Upon seeing this, Yuanmo Shenzi was not angry, but instead also appeared on the altar as he drew its power using mysterious means.

A massive Gate of Destiny appeared behind Yuanmo Shenzi, and was not much smaller than that of Pan Ruo's

Yuanmo Shenzi was also a disciple of the Fane of Destiny, and was a disciple of the gods. His held a very high status himself, or else he would not have dared to say that he could help Pan Ruo become the Lady of the Fane of Destiny.

Seeing both Pan Ruo and Yuanmo Shenzi cultivating on the altar, the three white-robed priests could only stand quietly aside, and dare not say anything to interrupt them.

Northern Region Basecamp.

Inside Zhen Yuan's manor, Zhang Ruochen told him all of what he witnessed inside Xianji Mountain.

"For the Deathkin to deploy such an evil altar inside Xianji Mountain. It seems like they have planned something big. This is not a trivial matter, we need to summon the leaders of all major realms to discuss this." Zhen Yuan said in deep thought.

The message Zhang Ruochen had brought back was undoubtedly very important, and must be taken seriously.

As one of the leaders of the Taoist Clans, Zhen Yuan's influence could be described as massive.

Upon hearing Zhen Yuan's summons, many leaders of various major realms rushed over.

Many great cultivators of the major realms gathered at the Northern Region Basecamp, and many of them were extremely powerful. Otherwise, how could they have checked the Deathkin's invasion?

In a short period of them, over a dozen top powerhouses had gathered, and each one basically had a huge background behind them.

Just as many of the powerhouses were discussing with one another, a beautiful figure with the aura of an immortal descended from the sky as ray of blessed light fell, and instantly catching everyone's attention.

Zhen Yuan immediately greeted her, and introduced. "Junior Brother Zhang, this is Fairy Yuan of the Shangyuan Sect, you should have heard of her name before."

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said. "I've heard Fairy Yuan's name a long time ago, and I finally have the opportunity to meet you today. Speaking of which, I too have some friendship with the Shangyuan Sect. My comrade on the path, Luo Yi, is from the Shangyuan Sect."

Zhang Ruochen deliberately used Fairy Yuan to test Luo Yi's background.

Hearing this, Fairy Yuan immediately turned her gaze to Luo Yi, and showed a curious look on her face. "You're from Shangyuan Sect? Why I don't recognize you?"

"There are countless disciples of the Shangyuan Sect, it would be normal for Senior Sister to not recognize me." Luo Yi said.

Fairy Yuan shook her head slightly and said. "While Shangyuan Sect does have many disciples, those who have cultivated to your level are all very famous, it is impossible that I don't recognize one of them."

"Senior Sister, you may be overgeneralizing a little. I am indeed a disciple of Shangyuan Sect, but I rarely make contact with my fellow disciples as I'm one of the secret disciples of Supreme Saint Xuanmeng.

Luo Yi smiled, and looked extremely calm and collected.

Fairy Yuan said. "As far as I know, Supreme Saint Xuanmeng does indeed have a few secret disciples, but I never thought that Junior Brother Luo Yi would be one of them. Your future is limitless."

"Compared to Senior Sister, my cultivation level is insignificant." Luo Yi smiled.

Listening to the conversation between the two, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to have many thoughts flashing past his mind, as he faintly figured out some things.

Zhen Yuan stretched his hand out and said. “Fairy, please.”

Fairy Yuan nodded slightly, and then walked into the hall.

“Brother Zhen Yuan, I don’t like this sort of occasions, so I won’t go in. I’ll leave everything to you to decide.” Zhang Ruochen said.

At this moment, a sneer rang out from the hall. “You at least have some self-awareness, a minute character like you is indeed not qualified to participate in this meeting. Get lost!”

It was a blatant provocation.

All of the cultivators present were very savvy, and knew that there was good drama coming up.

The person who spoke had ten-eyes on its face, and looked rather revolting.

It was one of the Six Elites of the Fane of Youshen, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect. Its body was a relic of ancient times, and had terrifying potential and talents, and was not one to be underestimated.

Zhang Ruochen and the Fane of Youshen had a blood feud as deep as the ocean. The deaths of two sons of Youshen were both related to Zhang Ruochen, and the deaths of the Drifter and the Wayfarer in the Eastern Region too was greatly related to him.

It would have been strange if the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect did not target Zhang Ruochen.

If it weren’t for the fact that this place was the Northern Region Basecamp, it would have already struck at Zhang Ruochen.

As long as one captures or kill Zhang Ruochen, it was a great deed, and Youshen would reward the person generously.

One of the main purpose for the Fane of Youshen to send so many elites into Kunlun Realm, was to deal with Zhang

Ruochen.

Sitting with the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect was a handsome young man with a folding fan in his hand. The aura on his body was changing all the time, making him unpredictable.

He was also one of the Six Elites of the Fane of Youshen, named Baibian Xiaoxiaosheng, the changes of his appearance was endless, and rumor has it that no one had seen his true face before.

Different from the Four-Nine Mystic Arts inherited by the Chen Clan of the Eastern Region, the changing ability that Baibian Xiaoxiaosheng had mastered was a natural ability that was extremely mysterious, and it was for anyone to distinguish the real from the fake.

Baibian Xiaoxiaosheng's specialty was assassination. He could transform into anyone, making it impossible for anyone to guard against.

“It's said that you have killed a hundred thousand Immortal Vampires in the Sword Vault, but I don't believe it. With just your Lesser Precept-World realm, how can you kill those Immortal Vampire Shenzi? That Xuetu Shenzi had even defeated a Neverwithier Supreme Saint, how could you even defeat him?”

Another powerhouse spoke, his eyes full of contempt.

The person was tall, with fierce eyes as a powerful demonic Qi radiated from his body. At first glance, one could tell that he was a demonic cultivator.

“Blackdemon Realm, Shi Lingkun.”

Zhang Ruochen eyes lit up and he recognized the speaker.

Shi Lingkun was an elite raised by the Blackdemon Realm, and he cultivated the ‘Demonic Blade-draw Tapestry’, and his skill with the saber was exquisite, and the strength of his cultivated was above Xie Canghai.

Several people sitting next to Shi Lingkun were also elites of the Blackdemon Realm, each had thick demonic Qi about them, and did not look like pushovers.

The main purpose for Blackdemon Realm had sent their elites into Kunlun Realm, was to find the true carvings of the Demonstone Engraving, and to sever Kunlun Realm's heritage of it, their motives could be said to be extremely insidious.

Seeing both the Ten-Eye Qiankun Insect and Shi Lingkun antagonizing Zhang Ruochen, most of the other elites in the hall mostlike took on a look-and-see attitude, wanting to see how would Zhang Ruochen react.

Zhang Ruochen appeared very calm, without any trace of anger as he faintly glanced at the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect and Shi Lingkun.

As soon as he stretched his hand out, the Azuresky Pagoda appeared.

“What are you doing?”

The Ten-Eye Qiankun Insect showed a wary look.

Zhang Ruochen smiled coldly, and the Azuresky Pagoda in his hand shook. A blue light shone as the Blackflame General was released.

Of course, the Blackflame General had been completely shackled, and was unable to use any of his powers.

“It's the number three general under the command of Chixing Shenzi, The Blackflame General. For him to be suppressed by Zhang Ruochen.”

Someone instantly recognized the Blackflame General, and could not help but to be surprised.

Some of them had fought against the Blackflame General on the Battlefield of Merit, and knew very well how powerful the Blackflame General was.

For a time, everyone looked at Zhang Ruochen with different eyes.

Chapter 1926 - Slaying the General

Chapter 1926: Slaying the General

When Zhang Ruochen released the Blackflame General, it had indeed surprised a large group of people.

Even Fairy Yuan was surprised, and she gave him a curious look.

Only Zhen Yuan was calm. He had already known everything beforehand. After all, Zhang Ruochen wanted to borrow the Five-Element Soil from him, so how could he not explain the situation to him?

Of course, even if Zhang Ruochen did not tell him, he could just find out through other channels since the news of what happened at the Cliff of Doom had already spread.

The Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect and Shi Lingkun had an uncomfortable look on their faces. Zhang Ruochen's release of the Blackflame General had clearly been an attempt to embarrass them.

Both of them also received news that the Blackflame General, Saint King Ziyang, and the others had surrounded Pei Yutian at the Cliff of Doom. Something major happened after that, neither the Blackflame General nor Saint King Ziyang had emerged from the Cliff of Doom, and many guessed that both of them had perished.

Unexpectedly, the Blackflame General actually fell into Zhang Ruochen's hands.

This way, this served to show that there were hidden secrets as to what happened at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom.

Some beamed with joy and said, "The Blackflame General enjoys a very high status among the Deathkin. He would definitely know some secrets surrounding the Altar of Evil."

“Yes, as the number three general of Chixing Shenzi, he is sure to have access to many Deathkin secrets. We need to interrogate him thoroughly.”

For a time, the eyes of the many powerhouses lit up as they closely watched the Blackflame General.

Zhang Ruochen had already been to Xianji Mountain and been discovered by the Deathkin’s elites. It could be said that he had already alerted the enemy, and the Deathkin would have heightened their guard at this point, so trying to scout again was impossible.

It was because of this that the Blackflame General’s value became so great.

Perhaps only by starting from him will they be able to figure out some of the key secrets of the Altar of Evil.

However, Zhang Ruochen suddenly activated the Azuresky Pagoda, and once again sealed the Blackflame General inside it before turning around and walked out.

“Zhang Ruochen, what do you mean by this?” one of the powerhouses asked.

Zhang Ruochen stopped and faintly said, “Someone mentioned that I’m not qualified to participate in this meeting, so it’s only natural that I leave, lest someone thinks I don’t have any self-awareness.”

Zhen Yuan smiled slightly as he did not expect Zhang Ruochen to have such a proud side.

Hearing this, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect’s expression became extremely uncomfortable, Zhang Ruochen’s words were clearly pitting daggers at it.

At this moment, many turned their eyes onto the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect, wanting to see how it would react.

The Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect said coldly. “Zhang Ruochen, you can leave but the Blackflame General stays.”

“The Blackflame General is my prisoner. How I want to deal with him is my business. Since when you have the right to interfere?” Zhang Ruochen spat.

A powerful aura was unleashed from the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect, and it surged toward Zhang Ruochen like a stormy sea.

“Is that so? But I insist on you leaving the Blackflame General behind.”

Zhang Ruochen looked calm as he put his hands behind his back, and stood proudly as he said. “You can try.”

Before him, the space became distorted, and there were faint dimensional rifts appearing, exuding a terrifying aura.

Baibian Xiaoxiaosheng put away his folding fan as the smile on his face gradually faded away, obviously ready to strike at any moment.

Even a few people from the Blackdemon Realm seemed ready to make a move. As long as the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect struck, they would definitely join in without hesitation. It would be great if they could take Zhang Ruochen out here and then.

For a time, the atmosphere in the hall became very tense as two sides were on the verge of coming to blows.

Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan immediately walked to Zhang Ruochen’s side and released their powerful auras.

Especially Xiang Chunan, who was already holding his Metal Demonic Crown in hand as he continuously infused demonic energies into it. As long as anyone on the opposite side dared to do anything, he will immediately blast the crown out.

At that moment, both of them obviously wanted to stand by Zhang Ruochen. Otherwise, how could they call themselves brothers?

A glint appeared in Zhen Yuan’s eyes but he did not reveal himself. He knew what Zhang Ruochen’s character was, so he was not worried about Zhang Ruochen suffering any losses.

Fairy Yuan opened her mouth and wanted to stop them, but in the end, she held back. The conflict between the two parties was too great, and it was not appropriate for her to intervene now.

“Zhang Ruochen, you are just too insolent, and you dare to provoke me. You are signing your own death warrant!”

An intense murderous intent burst out of the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect, and blood light gathered within its ten eyes.

Baaaam!!!

Just as the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect was about to strike, a slam on the table rang out.

Whoosh!

In an instant, everyone in the hall turned their eyes to the main seat.

Sitting on the main seat was a heroic-looking man in crimson armor. He was tall and burly, his face tough and dignified with a natural domineering aura of king, like an invincible God of War.

Earlier on, the heroic man kept his eyes closed, seemingly trying to rest his mind, yet at this moment he opened his eyes. Scarce few present dared to meet his fierce and domineering gaze.

“Wanxu Realm, Xuanyuan Liekong”

Zhang Ruochen perked up, but he still look calmly at the heroic-looking man.

Before entering the hall, Zhen Yuan had mentioned to him that there was one main leader in the Northern Region Basecamp, named Xuanyuan Liekong, hailing from the Wanxu Realm of the Four Dominant Worlds.

Xuanyuan Liekon was a legend who had experienced countless battles, and had never been defeated, thus he was hailed as a God of War.

Regardless of the fact that all present were leaders from great realms, but in the face of Xuanyuan Liekong, there were few that did not fear him.

At this moment, Xuanyuan Liekong slammed the table, and that terrified many.

The mighty Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect also quickly kept his murderous intent, for fear that it would make Xuanyuan Liekong unhappy.

Xuanyuan Liekong cast his gaze on the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect, and said coldly. “Get out!”

Hearing that, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect could not help but to be a little confused, as it quickly said. “Brother Xuanyuan, I...”

“Did I not make myself clear just now?” Xuanyuan Liekong’s gaze became even colder.

The Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect shuddered, and felt that its soul was about to explode.

Not daring to hesitate any longer, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect stood up and exited the meeting hall in a hurry.

No matter how bold it was, it would not dare to make an enemy out of Xuanyuan Liekong.

It did not doubt at all that if it dared to say anything else, Xuanyuan Liekong would have definitely dealt with him without any mercy.

Being expelled from the meeting hall before so many powerhouses, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect’s honor was literally being dragged through the mud, and it was extremely furious.

“Zhang Ruochen, I will definitely rip you to shreds!”

The Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect was afraid to seek revenge against Xuanyuan Liekong, so he could only place all of his hatred on Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Inside the hall, many found it difficult to calm their hearts. Unexpectedly, Xuanyuan Liekong intervened at a critical moment, and even expelled the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect, giving a little too much face to Zhang Ruochen.

Xuanyuan Liekong turned his head and looked at Zhang Ruochen, saying. “Zhang Ruochen, let the Blackflame General out!”

For him to choose to expel the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect and let Zhang Ruochen stay was because he felt that Zhang Ruochen staying behind was much more valuable.

In his eyes, people were divided into two types, one is valuable, and the other without any value.

Zhang Ruochen did not know what Xuanyuan Liekong's thoughts were, but since the latter expelled the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect, it could be considered an olive branch to him.

So, he simply took out the Azuresky Pagoda, and released the Blackflame General again.

Speaking of which, while he had indeed captured the Blackflame General alive, he really did not had the time to interrogate the latter.

“The Blackflame General's cultivation had reached the pinnacle of the Heaven's Reach realm. He is extremely powerful, so trying to get information out of him won't be easy.”

“It won't be easy indeed, and ordinary means are useless against him. Only if a very powerful spiritual power Saint King acts, that we have hope to forcibly get some valuable information from his soul.”

Some of the powerhouses frowned as they thought about how to interrogate the Blackflame General.

They did not think that the Blackflame General will cooperatively reveal the secrets of the Altar of Evil, it was almost impossible.

Zhang Ruochen smiled lightly, and said. “That won't be too difficult. We can just ask Fairy Baihua's aid.”

“Fairy Baihua had also came to the Northern Region Basecamp?”

“For two fairies of the Nine Immortal Beauties to come to the Northern Region, this trip sure is worthwhile.”

“Where is Fairy Baihua? Invite her out, quickly!”

...

Many powerhouses present became excited as they looked around, looking for the figure of Fairy Baihua, Ji Fanxin.

Ji Fanxin did not come to the meeting hall, and like Zhang Ruochen, she also did not like this sort of occasion, let alone letting too many people know that she had come to the Northern Region.”

Immediately, Zhang Ruochen sent her a telepathic message, and aksed her to rush to the meeting hall.

Not long after, a refreshing floral fragrance appeared and filled the entire manor.

Ji Fanxin walked slowly towards the meeting hall, with many butterflies flying around her, creating a beautiful picture as she went.

“It really is Fairy Baihua.”

Inside the meeting hall, many of the elites were excited.

It was nature to love beauty.

Although they were all leaders of great realms and were extremely powerful, they would still also admire beautiful women, especially when it was a famous fairy like Fairy Baihua, how could anyone not love her?

A strange look appeared in Fairy Yuan’s eyes as her gasze was also cast upon Ji Fanxin. Even she did not expect that the latter would appear in the Northern Territory Basecamp.

Under the gaze of a group of elites, Ji Fanxin stepped into the meeting hall.

“Fairy, if you would.” Zhang Ruochen said.

Ji Fanxin nodded, and said. “I’ll give it a try.”

At this moment, many showed a weird look on their faces as they looked at Zhang Ruochen and then at Ji Fanxin. Anyone could have guessed that Ji Fanxin probably came to the Northern Region with Zhang Ruochen. Moreover, they also knew that Ji Fanxin had also appeared with Zhang Ruochen at Luoshui, and the two seemed inseparable.

Could it be that there was an relationship beyond the ordinary between Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin?

Thinking of this, some could not help but to feel heartbroken. She was a perfect fairy in their hearts, and was not to be defiled.

Since there were admirers of Fairy Baihua, there were naturally also admirers of Fairy Yuan.

Seeing so many were paying their attention to Fairy Baihua, Fairy Yuan's admirers could no longer sit still.

One of Fairy Yuan's admirers stood up and said. "Fairy Yuan had also mastered a secret technique, no matter how great the Blackflame General's cultivation base is, he will not be able to resist it."

"Oh? If that is the case, how about both fairies act together, and use their own techniques." Zhen Yuan smiled and said.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head lightly, and said to himself. "Zhen Yuan... the bigger the better when it comes to watching a drama, huh."

It was undoubtedly very interesting to see the two fairies doing the same thing.

"You lot have naught but wishful thinking if you want to get the secrets of the altar out of me." The Blackflame General said coldly.

He was now shackled, and killing him was easy, but it was impossible for them to dig the secrets out of his mouth.

"Blackflame General, you are underestimating the two fairies, just wait and you'll be crying soon!" Someone sneered.

A cold light flickered in the Blackflame General's eyes, and he did not say anything else.

Ji Fanxin and Fairy Yuan walked to the side of the Blackflame General, the two looked at each other, and a smile appeared on each of their faces as they made their moves.

Fairy Yuan did not want to intervene at this moment, but since someone had already revealed that she had a secret technique,

and that Zhen Yuan had also spoken, she could only choose to act.

Ji Fanxin unleashed an incomparably powerful spiritual power, transforming into countless petals that enveloped the Blackflame General, penetrating him little by little.

It was just that the Blackflame General's will was extremely strong, and it was difficult for external forces to penetrate into his mind.

Fairy Yuan did not make any movements, only strands of mystical light appeared in her eyes, it was deep and starry, like two pieces of starry skies.

Others may not have noticed anything, but a curious look appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face as he was secretly surprised. "I never thought that aside from The Thousand Star Maiden, there is another person who cultivates the Path of Origins."

Of course, there was a big difference between the Thousand Star Maiden and Fairy Yuan. The Thousand Star Maiden was the master of the Origin, while Fairy Yuan was a cultivator of the Origin.

As far as Zhang Ruochen knew, there were fanes for each of the Nine Great Eternal Paths, some were located in the Celestial Court, some in the Infernal Court, some were beyond material realms.

It was precisely because of the existence of the nine fanes that some talents had the opportunity to cultivate the Nine Great Eternal Paths.

The Fane of Origins only appeared during the time of the world's creation, and had disappeared without a trace since. Even the Path of Origin cultivators all disappeared, much less the Master of Origin.

Before the Thousand Star Maiden, there had been a long period of time where a Master of Origin was not born.

Now that the Master of the Origin, and the cultivators of Origin had appeared, does it mean that the Fane of Origins will once again reappear?

Obviously, Fairy Yuan had cultivated the Divine Eyes of Origin, and could see through the origin of all things, perhaps even the soul of the Blackflame General.

The Blackflame General was really calm at first, but slowly, his expression gradually became menacing as he was obviously enduring some great pain.

“Ahhh!!!”

The Blackflame General let out a painful roar.

Upon seeing this, Shi Lingkun could not help but to sneer. “So it turns out that the so-called number three general is just hogwash. He’s so weak, no wonder he fell into Zhang Ruochen’s hands. I’ve heard that the Blackflame General and Saint King Ziyang were both at the Cliff of Doom, and the two had fought each other until they were so badly wounded that you picked up an easy win eh?”

“That’s for sure, no matter how weak the Blackflame General is, he is still a Heaven’s Reach realm powerhouse. How can he be defeated by the likes of Zhang Ruochen?”

“Zhang Ruochen, you sure are lucky, with spoils to pick everywhere you go. I’m jealous.”

Several other powerhouses of the Blackdemon Realm were also sneering, and did not believe that Zhang Ruochen had used his own strength to capture the Blackflame General.

Zhang Ruochen had not even reacted when Xiang Chunan blew his top as he stepped forward and shouted. “Shut up! Who do you think you are? The lot like you are not even fit to be my Big Bro’s sandal bearers! If you are that capable, go capture a general yourself!”

“Do you want to die?”

A murderous intent appeared in Shi Lingkun’s eyes as a monstrous demonic Qi emerged from his body.

Xiang Chunan was not afraid, as a majestic demonic Qi emerged from his body, and a menacing demonic shadow faintly appeared. “Come if you dare, see if Lord Xiang here pummels you to death or not!”

He had always been hot-tempered, and did not care about the identity of who he was yelling at.

If one were to anger him, even if it was a Supreme Saint, he would still dare to fight.

Zhen Yuan came forward, and stood between the two, saying. "We're here to fight the Deathkin, not against each other."

Shi Lingkun glanced at Zhen Yuan, and felt some fear in his heart, and could not help but say. "I'll give face to my fellow brethren of the path, Zhen Yuan. I won't be calculative against this black fool."

As he said that, Shi Lingkun retreated his aura, and returned to his seat.

Feng Yan placed a hand on Xiang Chunan's shoulder and said. "Alright, Third brother, forget it, don't get worked up."

"Okay, I'll let them go this time. I just really hate empty vessels like them." Xiang Chunan snorted.

Hearing that, Feng Yan could not help but to shake his head with a wry smile. Xiang Chunan had always acted very impulsively and recklessly. He was really worried that the latter would cause some serious trouble in the future.

Inside the hall, Ji Fanxin and Fairy Yuan were still performing their secret techniques, and were not affected in any way.

Ji Fanxin stretched her hand out and tapped as a ray of divine light entered the brow of the Blackflame General.

The ray of divine light may seem very weak, but it was extremely tough and possessed mystical powers as it actually penetrated into the soul of the Blackflame General bit by bit.

At the same time, tiny spots of light that were almost invisible to the naked eye flew out of Fairy Yuan's eyes.

These light spots also penetrated the Blackflame General's defenses, and fused with his soul, as if it was no different than the original, seemingly a part of the general's soul.

"Hmm?"

A curious look appeared on Ji Fanxin's face, with her unparalleled spiritual power, she had felt something strange.

Especially after those light spots merged into the soul of the Blackflame General that she felt it much more clearly.

To think that Fairy Yuan, who was as famous as her, was actually a cultivator of the Path of Origin, and that really surprised her.

In the same way, Fairy Yuan also keenly felt the spiritual powers of Ji Fanxin at this moment, and how powerful it was. It was not only massive, but also its essence. She had never seen the essence of a spiritual power Saint King being so powerful before.

From her point of view, it was not out of the realm of impossibility that the essence of spiritual power of some Supreme Saints were inferior to Ji Fanxin's.

With that tacit understanding, the two choose to cooperate, and combine each other's technique together in order to more completely draw out the secrets contained in the soul of the Blackflame General.

After all, if they did not cooperate, their methods will conflict and if they accidentally killed the Blackflame general, it would have been a total waste.

At this moment, many powerhouses were paying close attention to the two fairies interrogating the Blackflame General as they looked forward for the fairies they had admired could pull information out of the Blackflame General.

The Blackflame General kept on roaring in pain as his soul was eroded. It was a sort of pain that no ordinary persons could comprehend.

Especially, the means available to the two fairies were extraordinary, and no matter how tenacious his will was, it was still difficult to resist.

“Raaawr!”

Suddenly, the Blackflame let out a terrifying roar.

A powerful Will of Death suddenly erupted from his body, and actually shattering the shackles that bound him.

Whoosh!

The Blackflame General transformed into a stream of evil death Qi and rushed out of the meeting hall.

After breaking through the shackles using his secret technique, he naturally wanted to escape the Northern Region Basecamp. He did not want to stay to wait for his death.

Everyone inside the hall were no pushovers, if they were to strike at him as a group, even if his cultivation base had broken through the Precept Dominion realm, he may not be able to fight back.

“Want to run? No you won’t.”

Shi Lingkun barked coldly, and immediately acted.

A monstrous demonic Qi rushed out of his body, forming a massive demonic phantom with a demonic blade its hand as the phantom slashed at the Blackflame General.

The Blackflame General turned around and a cold light shone in his eyes. “You mean to stop me?”

A massive surge of Will of Death emerged from his body, and formed the Shadow of Death.

Baaaam!!

The Shadow of Death reached a hand out, and crushed the sword light flying over with a powerful grip.

Immediately after, the bracelet on the hand of the Shadow of Death shot out, as they started spinning rapidly. A black hole then appeared, unleashing a terrifying suction power to suck Shi Lingkun into it.

Shi Lingkun’s pupils shrank, as a Blooddrinker Demonic Blade appeared in his hand, and overlapping with the demonic blade in the phantom’s hand, he shot out three slashes in extreme speed.

Boom!!

The black hole formed by the bracelet collapsed and swallowed all three of the sword lights.

The three solidified beads bloomed with a bizarre light, and the mystic runes engraved in it appeared, locking a small piece of dimension in place.

For a moment, Shi Lingkun was imprisoned and was somewhat unable to move.

Vooosh!

The Shadow of Death swung its Death Scythe and struck at Shi Lingkun.

Seeing the Death Scythe rapidly closing in on him, Shi Lingkun became extremely anxious, as he tried his darrest to break the imprisonment.

At the last moment, Shi Lingkun finally broke free as he raised his demonic blade to block in front of him.

Baaaam!!!

Although Shi Lingkun used his demonic blade to block the Death Scythe, it could not withstand the terrifying power of the attack, and his entire person was sent crashing into the ground at high speed, just like a falling meteor.

Dush!

Blood spurted out of Shi Lingkun's mouth. With just this single blow, he was already severely wounded.

The difference in strength was clear as day.

The Blackflame General did not continue his assault, but chose to immediately retreat instead.

He did not want to put himself in danger just to kill Shi Lingkun.

At this moment, a blurry figure rushed out of Zhang Ruo Chen's body with the Ancient Abyssal Blade in its hand as it set off in pursuit.

A look of surprise appeared in the eyes of one of the powerhouses. "A Sword Soul."

There were countless of sword cultivators in the realm, but those who can cultivate a Sword Soul were few and far between, and that represented a great achievement on the path of the sword.

In an instant, the Sword Soul reappeared behind the Blackflame General.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade trembles lightly as countless of Mark of Time appeared and imprinted themselves around the space, enveloping the Blackflame General.

Suddenly, the Blackflame General felt that time seemed to have stopped at this instant, finding even thinking difficult.

Whoosh!!

The Ancient Abyssal Blade easily slashed the Shadow of Death in half, and the Blackflame General who was wrapped inside the shadow was also cut into two.

Before everyone could react, the Sword Soul held the Ancient Abyssal Blade and re-entered Zhang Ruochen's body.

Baaaaam!!!

The two halves of the Blackflame General fell from mid-air, a massive amount of evil death Qi escaped from the two halves of his corpse.

Hearing this, everyone snapped back, and they looked at the Blackflame General who had been cut in half with an incredulous look.

This was the number three general under Chixing Shenzi, and he could not even resist a single slash from Zhang Ruochen. Many felt like they were dreaming.

“He's that powerful?”

Shi Lingkun's face was pale, and he was completely stunned. Thinking of what he had said before, he wished he had a hole to throw himself into.

Chapter 1927 - A Sword Hilt

Chapter 1927: A Sword Hilt

No one knew how much more powerful the Blackflame General was than Shi Lingkun. How could he have been so miserably defeated?

However, he could not have imagined that Zhang Ruochen only needed a single slash to kill the Blackflame General. What kind of monstrous power did one need to pull that off?

At this moment, everyone inside the hall had a really different view of Zhang Ruochen.

Earlier on, they probably felt that Zhang Ruochen might have been lucky and captured the Blackflame General by chance.

But now, no one doubted him any longer.

If he could slay the Blackflame General with a single slash, then capturing him would undoubtedly be easy.

It was no surprise that some now looked at Zhang Ruochen with a trace of awe in their eyes.

Clap clap clap...

Xuanyuan Liekong stood up and applauded Zhang Ruochen.

“Your sword technique is most excellent. The Scion of Time and Space sure lives up to his name.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled faintly. “Brother Xuanyuan, you flatter me. My technique is not really worth mentioning when compared to you.”

“You don’t need to put yourself down. If you were to cultivate a little longer, how many here can actually be your match? Zhang Ruochen, I think highly of you, so if you need anything in the future, you can come to look for me.” Xuanyuan Liekong laughed.

Hearing this, many could not help but appear to be taken aback. All of them knew what kind of temperament Xuanyuan

Liekong had, and they never thought that he would take the initiative to be friendly with Zhang Ruochen.

For a time, many re-evaluated Zhang Ruochen in their eyes. Even if they cannot be friends with him, they must avoid becoming his enemy.

The Smiling Faceshifter and the other Blackdemon Realm cultivators had extremely uncomfortable looks on their faces. At that moment, they were completely turned into the butt of the joke here.

“Fairies, what was the outcome of the interrogation? Did the both of you managed to gain some important information?” Xuanyuan Liekong looked at Ji Fanxin and Fairy Yuan.

Ji Fanxin nodded slightly at Fairy Yuan before walking to Zhang Ruochen’s side.

Fairy Yuan said, “I joined forces with Fairy Baihua earlier, and there was some gain. As Zhen Yuan mentioned, the Deathkin have created an extremely evil Altar of Death inside Xianji Mountain, and they were drawing the Northern Region’s recovery power.

“Over time, the Altar of Death will become stronger and stronger. By then, the Northern Region’s recovery power will be drawn clean, and the Northern Region will be dead land.

“Besides, the Deathkin can absorb the recovery power absorbed by the Altar of Death to enhance their strength and create a new trump card at the same time, completely clearing the channels between the stars, where the Deathkin are located, and the Kunlun Realm. By then, the Deathkin army will commence their ceaseless advancement and destroy the Kunlun Realm.

“The masterminds behind this are Yuanmo Shenzi and the Fane of Destiny’s shadowy hands.”

Hearing this, many looked solemn. To them, it was not good news.

If the channel between the Deathkin’s star and the Kunlun Realm was fully opened up, who could stop the Deathkin army’s invasion?

Now that it involved the Fane of Destiny, things had definitely become a lot more troublesome.

“Zhen Yuan, what do you think we should do?” Xuanyuan Liekong looked at Zhen Yuan.

Although Zhen Yuan was much younger than Xuanyuan Liekong, he was naturally not any ordinary person since he was one of the Tao sect’s leaders. So, Xuanyuan Liekong had never underestimated him, and at that moment, he was eager to hear his opinions.

Zhen Yuan pondered slightly and said, “Since we now know of the Deathkin’s plot, we cannot just wait for our doom. It is best for us to launch a decapitating strike and destroy the Altar of Death. We will take back Xianji Mountain to regain control of the Battlefield of Merits.”

“Yes, I have similar thoughts too. However, the situation in Xianji Mountain is very complicated, and there are many Deathkin powerhouses hidden there. We need to be fully prepared if we want to attack, and it must not be rushed,” Xuanyuan Liekong said.

Needless to say, as the helmsman of the Northern Region Basecamp, he would not allow the Deathkin’s plot to succeed. Otherwise, where would he put his face?

In any case, the Northern Region must not be lost, he did not want his foes to laugh at him.

Very soon, most dispersed, leaving only Zhen Yuan, Xuanyuan Liekong, and several other leaders to continue their discussion.

Attacking Xianji Mountain was not a trivial matter, and needed detailed planning.

The leaders of the great realms had returned as they sought to mobilize their armies, and prepare for the offensive against Xianji Mountain.

Even those of the Fane of Youshen and Blackdemon Realm must be involved. At this moment, it was impossible for them to extricate themselves.

And when everyone was busy preparing, Luo Yi quietly left the Northern Region Basecamp.

On a mountain 30,000 miles away from the basecamp, Luo Yi reappeared as he landed on it.

Whoosh!

A rakshasa powerhouse appeared.

“Greetings, Your Royal Highness.”

The rakshasa powerhouse bowed and saluted Luo Yi.

Luo Yi glanced past him and softly said, “Go and get rid of that mouse at the back.”

“Yes, Your Royal Highness.”

The rakshasa powerhouse immediately darted away.

On the other side of the mountain, Fairy Yuan stood on a branch of a giant tree as she observed from afar.

When she first met Luo Yi, she had felt that something was off about the latter. It did not seem likely that he was Supreme Saint Xuanmeng’s disciple, so she had secretly observed him.

Noticing that Luo Yi had left the Northern Region Basecamp alone, Fairy Yuan immediately followed him quietly, and sure enough, she discovered Luo Yi’s secret.

Although she did not hear what Luo Yi said to the rakshasa powerhouse, the fact that Luo Yi sneaked out and met a rakshasa powerhouse was already a problem in itself. At that moment, the rakshasa powerhouse was charging at her. This meant that Luo Yi’s identity was even more suspicious and he was possibly a rakshasa cultivator.

Fairy Yuan did not know what Luo Yi was capable of, so she chose to withdraw without any hesitation.

In the blink of an eye, both Fairy Yuan and the rakshasa powerhouse had disappeared into the horizon, no one knew where they went to.

Luo Yi turned around and looked toward a spot as he faintly said, “Zhang Ruochen, I know you’re here. Show yourself!”

The space rippled as Zhang Ruochen appeared out of thin air and stood only three feet away from Luo Yi.

Looking at Luo Yi, Zhang Ruochen shook his head slightly. “Luo Sha the Rakshasa Princess, you really are a haunting specter.”

“Hehehe, you are my destined one. I will, of course, look for you.”

Luo Yi burst into bell-like laughter, and he was not surprised that Zhang Ruochen had guessed his true identity.

The next moment, Luo Yi’s body changed rapidly.

In a blink of an eye, Luo Yi transformed from a feminine-looking man into a tall beauty in light green sacred robes. There was a silver crystal crown on her head, and she exuded an extremely noble temperament.

The tall beauty that Luo Yi had transformed into was very familiar to Zhang Ruochen. She was the Rakshasa Princess whom he had encountered many times before, Luo Sha.

A long time ago, he had already doubted Luo Yi’s identity, and after some probing, he had vaguely guessed Luo Yi’s true identity. Now, everything was confirmed.

“Tell me, what do you actually want? Why are you deliberately lurking around me like this?” Zhang Ruochen asked in a cold voice.

Luo Sha rolled her eyes and said with some slight resentment, “What do you mean by I’m ‘deliberately lurking around you’? It’s only a coincidence.”

“What do you mean?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“That day, I led an army of rakshasa cultivators, and the Celestial Court army ambushed us. My army was almost completely destroyed, and even I was seriously injured. Back then, that black fool brother of yours appeared, and left with no choice, I could only transform myself into a Celestial Court cultivator. I didn’t expect it to actually fool him.”

“Sadly, that black fool made himself all too familiar. I simply could not shrug him off, and I was instead brought back to the

Celestial Court camp, unable to find a way out.”

“Fortunately, at the same time, he heard the news of your return to the Kunlun Realm, so I went to the Eastern Region with him. Tell me, was I wrong?” Luo Sha spread out her fair white arms and wore a helpless but slothful look.

Zhang Ruochen would never believe a tall tale such as bringing an enemy princess back to one’s own base if it had been someone else. Xiang Chunan however...

Zhang Ruochen said, “Your meeting with the rakshasa elite earlier, what was it about?”

Luo Sha smiled and said, “Give me the sundial, and I’ll tell you.”

“It looks like I need to capture you before you will tell the truth.”

“Another way then, you return with me to the Infernal Court and become the Prince-Consort of the Rakshasas, and I will tell you all of my secrets.” Luo Sha smiled enchantingly.

That smile was charming and beguiling, and even a Saint cultivator would have fallen for it, unable to extricate oneself.

Zhang Ruochen was unmoved, and with a wave of his hand, the Ancient Abyssal Blade appeared. With a slash, countless dazzling rays of the Sword Force ripped through the air and flew out.

Upon seeing this, Luo Sha could not help but shake her head and say, “You really are heartless. It just so happened that I found a treasure in the Sword Vault, and I can give its power a try.”

“The Sword Vault?” Zhang Ruochen was perplexed.

Luo Sha took out an object that looked very quaint, it was a sword hilt.

The sword hilt instantly attracted Zhang Ruochen’s attention. It might have looked ordinary, but the Precepts of Heaven and Earth were already quivering.

A special aura radiated from the sword hilt, just like the Sword Vault.

There were countless swords inside the Sword Vault, but Luo Sha only took out one. There must be a special reason for that.

Vooosh!

Luo Sha waved the sword hilt, and suddenly a divine light flew out from the hilt, and instantly transformed into a long sword blade. Countless sword precepts were interwoven within it as a potent divine power radiated out.

For a time, the Precepts of Heaven and Earth spun around the sword of light.

What's even more amazing was, within a thousand miles, all of the trees and plants revealed sharp edges, seemingly being transformed into sharp blades.

The sharp blades made out of trees and glass all pointed at the sword of light in Luo Sha's hand as if they were in an imperial audience. That was the true Convergence of Swords.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade shook involuntarily, as though it was facing the King of Swords. It was the kind of pressure that was difficult to resist.

Vooosh!

The Dreadblade abruptly flew out of the Qiankun Realm.

The Dreadblade trembled endlessly, and it was completely out of Zhang Ruochen's control as it flew straight toward the sword of light in Luo Sha's hand.

“What's going on?”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. He had never encountered such a situation before.

A mere sword hilt was enough to cause the Ancient Abyssal Blade to tremble, and the Dreadblade to lose control, that it defied comprehension!

Amid his shock, Zhang Ruochen immediately reached out and grabbed the Dreadblade, not allowing it to fly toward Luo Sha.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen used his spiritual power to communicate with the sword spirits of the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Dreadblade as he thought that they should have a better understanding of the reason for all of this.

What surprised him was the completely unconscious state of the Dreadblade's sword spirit, leaving only a type of instinct left. It wanted to fly toward the mysterious sword of light in Luo Sha's hand.

The sword spirit of the Ancient Abyssal Blade too was greatly affected, but it still managed to maintain its consciousness.

“The sword in Luo Sha's hand contains the original power of the Sword Vault, and the formation of the Sword Vault is heavily linked to that sword. When I culminated my form, I also absorbed some of the Sword Vault's original power, but it is far less powerful than the one in Luo Sha's hand.

“There is an orb of divine light inside the body of the Dreadblade that is wrapped in other materials. I suspect that this orb of divine light was a fragment of the sword of light in Luo Sha's hand, so that's why the Dreadblade went out of control.”

“Quickly, suppress the Dreadblade, you cannot let that orb of divine light to be taken away. Otherwise the Dreadblade will be lost!” The sword spirit of the Ancient Abyssal Blade said anxiously.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen dared not tarry as he took out the Secret Tome of Time and Space

and kept the Dreadblade within the multi-dimension, suppressing it with all of his might.

Right then, he discovered that there was indeed a small orb of divine light manifesting inside the Dreadblade, and it was extremely unstable as if it would fly out of the sword at any time.

Whoosh!!

Luo Sha waved the sword of light and slashed at Zhang Ruochen with immeasurable Sword Qi.

At the same time, the trees and grass within a thousand miles also shot out a series of Sword Qi that locked onto Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze sharpened as he once again deployed the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

, forming a multi-dimensional space that covered himself.

Boom!!

Tens of thousands of Sword Qi rays came slashing from all sides, and they all crashed upon the multi-dimension formed by the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

.

With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation strength, the multi-dimension formed by the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

was pretty much extremely sturdy and difficult to destroy.

Despite that, against the impact of the Sword Qi torrent, the multi-dimension still fragmented layer by layer as it was completely engulfed by the Sword Qi.

Luo Sha did not press the advantage. That strike had taken a lot out of her qi, and her pretty face became quite pale.

Although she held the upper hand with the hilt she had gotten from the Sword Vault, she would definitely lose if she continued to fight.

The Zhang Ruochen of today was not comparable to that of the past.

“Zhang Ruochen, there will be one day where you will beg for me! Hehe!”

As she said this, Luo Sha cackled as she flew up and instantly disappeared into the horizon.

Chapter 1928 - Supreme Saint-level Elephant Soul

Chapter 1928: Supreme Saint-level Elephant Soul

Translator:

EndlessFantasy Translation

Editor:

EndlessFantasy Translation

After a long while, all of the Sword Qi was annihilated. In the end, the Sword Qi failed to destroy the multi-dimension and obviously failed to cause any damage to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen closed the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

, and the multi-dimension disappeared as everything returned to normal. The atmosphere was calm again.

It was just that Luo Ji had already left, and she was nowhere to be found.

Luo Ji herself was a master of time and space, if she wanted to escape, there were scarce few that could hold her back.

From their encounter on the Zuling Battlefield of Merits, Zhang Ruochen had dealt with Luo Ji a total of three times now. He had gotten the upper hand the first two times, but this time, Luo Ji had seized the initiative instead.

“The hilt that Luo Ji got is not trivial. If she breaks into the Nether Dungeon, she might be able to release Lord Ming. I need to warn Awesome, as well as the Elder Patriarch, and let them take up precautions.”

Zhang Ruochen was a little worried. He immediately wrote and sent out one communication talisman.

Luo Ji had been to the Sword Vault, and it was very possible that she had a clear grasp of the vault. That came as a huge threat, and they had to guard against it.

Thankfully, Awesome, the Little Taoist and Shi Mingyuan were standing guard in the Sword Vault. It would not be easy for anyone to break into the Sword Vault now.

As long as they were prepared, Luo Ji would not be able to enter the Sword Vault to cause trouble even if she wanted to.

“I wonder how Fairy Yuan is faring. I better have a look!”

Zhang Ruochen recomposed himself and flew in the direction of Fairy Yuan’s retreat.

The rakshasa powerhouse sent to deal with Fairy Yuan was not any ordinary one, and his strength was probably not much weaker than the Blackflame General.

Not long after, Zhang Ruochen appeared above a large river as Fairy Yuan and that rakshasa powerhouse fought each other.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen arrived, he happened to see Fairy Yuan activate an exquisite Jasper Blade and cut off one of the rakshasa powerhouse’s arm.

“It looks like I’ve been worried for nothing. Fairy Yuan’s strength is far stronger than I expected. Sure enough, all nine fairies of the Nine Immortal Beauties are no pushovers. Not only do they have absolute beauty, but their strength is also top-tier,” Zhang Ruochen said in admiration.

The rakshasa powerhouse retreated quickly, and the arm that had been cut off had already disappeared into nothingness.

No, to be precise, it had been reduced into millions of particles of origin that were invisible to the naked eye. The Path of Origins was truly terrifying.

“That blade is unusual, and it has a powerful aura of origin. Was this a treasure of origin?” A curious look appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes as his gaze was fixed on the jasper blade in Fairy Yuan’s hand.

With the exception of the Nine Great Eternal Paths master, anyone else who wanted to cultivate the Nine Great Eternal

Paths needed external objects to do so.

For example, to cultivate the Path of Truth, one needed to go to the Celestial Domain of Truth, and use the Engravings of Truth to comprehend it.

The Fane of Origin had long since disappeared, and aside from being born as a Master of Origin, someone could only learn the Precepts of Origins by obtaining the Path of Origins' treasures.

Dushh!

The powerful rakshasa used his hand as a blade and cut off half of his arm.

He was forced to because the wound on his arm contained some remaining Power of Origin, and it was slowly disintegrating his body. If he did not cut it off, his entire person would soon be disintegrated into billions of origin particles.

Turning his gaze, the powerful rakshasa looked at Zhang Ruochen, who was standing three hundred meters away, and he suddenly furrowed his brows.

Fairy Yuan was already very difficult to deal with, and had already caused him to suffer grievous wounds.

Now Zhang Ruochen had arrived, it meant that things had just gone from bad to worse.

Unexpectedly, the desire to take flight appeared in the rakshasa powerhouse's heart. If he were to continue fighting, he would very well perish there.

Baaaaam!!

The rakshasa powerhouse suddenly jumped down from the air and fled directly into the river.

“Don't you think it's a little too late to try and escape now?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Using his dimensional technique, a massive dimensional rift appeared and cut the river off.

While the rakshasa powerhouse reacted quickly, there was still an extremely deep wound on his waist. It almost bisected him in two, and blood gushed out of the wound.

Just as he was about to change direction, Fairy Yuan flashed over while the Jasper Blade transformed into countless origin particles that were invisible to the naked eye. They then entered his body through the wound on his waist.

“Ahhhh!!”

The rakshasa powerhouse screamed.

The next moment, his body disintegrated as if it had evaporated.

Immediately after, Fairy Yuan used a secret origin technique and actually restored the rakshasa powerhouse’s body. However, the body was without any vitality since the soul had been annihilated, leaving only an empty shell.

“Thank you Master Zhang for helping me.” Fairy Yuan smiled.

Zhang Ruochen said, “With your strength, even if I didn’t act, that rakshasa powerhouse would never have escaped, Fairy. Your Path of Origins is really powerful, and that opened my eyes to its strength.”

A strange look appeared in Fairy Yuan’s eyes, and she said, “I did not think that you would be able to tell that I was using the Path of Origins, Master Zhang, but I am only a cultivator, and I am not very powerful”

“It so happens that I have some understanding of the Path of Origins, and seeing the techniques you used, so I have some guesses of my own.”

Zhang Ruochen made up a reason but did not divulge the fact that the Thousand Star Maiden was the Master of Origin.

Fairy Yuan did not dwell on this question either. Instead, she asked, “Master Zhang, have you learned of Luo Yi’s true identity?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Luo Yi is the Rakshasa Princess, Luo Ji, but unfortunately, I was unable to restrain her.”

“So it turned out to be her... Luo Ji has many tricks up her sleeves, and dealing with her is really a difficult thing to do.” Fairy Yuan had a look of realization.

In the past, Luo Ji’s danger index in

The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans

had been seven, which was already not low. Now her danger index was probably even higher.

“Hmm?”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen went on guard.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen’s figure suddenly moved one foot to the side.

Whoosh!

A halberd ripped through the air and stabbed through the afterimage that Zhang Ruochen left behind.

Zhang Ruochen instantly turned around, and his eyes were affixed on two figures slowly walking down the river.

It was a man and a woman, both with extraordinary temperaments, and the aura exuding from their bodies was even more powerful.

The man stretched out his hand and grabbed the void, and the halberd that he had tossed earlier flew back into his hands.

“A Deathkin evolved from the Corpsewights.”

Zhang Ruochen used the Eye of Divine Seal and saw through their identities.

He could tell that the male and female had powerful bodies that were no weaker than his own. Plus, the two were at the pinnacle of the Heaven’s Reach realm, which was higher than that of the rakshasa powerhouse. He knew that they were no pushovers at first glance.

From the moment they appeared, the two had locked their eyes on Zhang Ruochen, and that caused Zhang Ruochen’s heart to sink slightly. Their appearance there was probably no coincidence, and they were after him.

Was he currently targeted by the Deathkin because he had broken into the underground space beneath Xianji Mountain?

“Zhang Ruochen, come with us!” the male Deathkin said coldly.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “Why should I go with you? Where are you taking me?”

“Cease your prattling. Our lord wants to see you. If you refuse to come obediently, we can only use force.” The male Deathkin waved his halberd, looking extremely domineering.

Zhang Ruochen continued to ask, “Who is your lord? Yuanmo Shenzi?”

He was really curious about who wanted to see him, so much so that the person sent two elites over.

The person had to be a great figure among the Deathkin to be using such force, and he even guessed that the person might be related to the Fane of Destiny.

“Zhang Ruochen, you ask too many questions. Are you coming with us or not?” the female Deathkin said impatiently.

As she spoke, a small pitch-black bell materialized in her hand. The bell was covered with arcane patterns and exuded a very bizarre aura. One could tell it was no ordinary object at first glance.

Zhang Ruochen extended his hand, and the Ancient Abyssal Blade appeared in his hand as he faintly said, “I don’t like being threatened by others, especially when it is an Infernal Court cultivator.”

“It looks like we need to teach you what pain is first.” A fierce look filled the male Deathkin’s eyes, and he instantly charged forth.

As soon as he moved, a giant elephantine phantom appeared behind him. It was massive, and its aura even more terrifying, clearly had surpassed the realm of a Saint King.

A light flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes, and he said to himself, “This person actually refined a Supreme Saint-level elephant soul in his body. I cannot allow him to escape.”

If he wanted to cultivate the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike's twelve technique to full completion, he needed to refine Supreme Saint dragon soul and elephant soul into both of his arms.

However, the Supreme Saint dragon soul and elephant soul were too precious. Even if he had enough Saint Stones, he had no way to purchase them.

Seeing the male Deathkin before him actually possess a Supreme Saint elephant soul was literally a gift from the heavens. How could Zhang Ruochen let it go?

Sword Force blasted out as the Ancient Abyssal Blade was slashed at the Deathkin.

The male Deathkin waved his halberd, and with the aid of the Supreme Saint-level elephant soul, the power unleashed was beyond imagination. With a strike, the entire space felt like it was about to rend open.

All of the Sword Force was warded off, and he struck back as surges of overwhelmingly evil Death Qi rained upon Zhang Ruochen.

“Raaaawr!”

The Supreme Saint elephant soul let out a roar, and the sound wave formed into terrifying ripples as it struck out in all directions.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed as he became serious and dared not be careless.

A Heaven's Reach-realm powerhouse with a Supreme Saint elephant soul... The strength of his foe was not to be underestimated.

“Sword Nine.”

Zhang Ruochen swung the Ancient Abyssal Blade, and unleashed the arcane sword techniques he had learned from the

Wordless Sword Tome

.

Boom!!

The sword force collided with the evil Death Qi and the sound waves, creating a devastating shock wave that caused the river to instantly dry up. The ground split and sank simultaneously as well.

The male Deathkin suddenly rushed before Zhang Ruochen and swung his halberd in a deadly downward stroke.

Using his powerful body and strength, he favored close combat the most. Only through this way he could fully utilise all of his advantages.

Zhang Ruochen raised his left hand, and the acupuncture points on his arm opened as a torrent of majestic Saint Qi was continuously infused into the Fire God's Bracers. It caused the bracers to instantly light up in flames and clash with the halberd.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen picked up the Ancient Abyssal Blade with his right hand and focused all of his physical might into a slash.

The purple godstone inlaid within the sword hilt glowed faintly, causing the Ancient Abyssal Blade to be extremely heavy.

Baaaaam!!!

The Ancient Abyssal Blade smashed dead onto the Deathkin's body, and the strength was like a meteor falling from the sky.

The male Deathkin did not care at first and felt that Zhang Ruochen's slash would pose no threat to him.

However, when the Ancient Abyssal Blade really made contact with his body, his expression changed drastically.

The terrifying force brought upon by the Ancient Abyssal Blade was beyond the male Deathkin's ability to resist, and his entire person fell into the ground at extreme speed.

Boom!

The earth shuddered, as though a massive earthquake had struck, and the ground shattered while a massive crater, which

was thousands of feet deep, appeared right in the middle. Dust flew all over, and nothing was visible at all.

Chapter 1929 - A Foot on the Azure Dragon

Chapter 1929: A Foot on the Azure Dragon

“Raaaawr!”

A roar that shook the heavens came from the ground.

The male Deathkin rushed to the sky, at this moment his hair was messy, his face menacing, looking like a crazed demon.

For him to actually lose in that head-on exchange, that was unacceptable to him.

The Supreme Saint elephant soul appeared behind him as it radiated with black light as its form became more and more solid and fused with the body of the male Deathkin. They then roared and charged at Zhang Ruochen.

At that moment, he had completely transformed into a black elephant as it trampled the land, trying to stomp Zhang Ruochen beneath its feet.

The black elephant’s aura was extremely monstrous, as if it was trying to be one with the heaven and earth, and filled the entire area with its aura.

For a moment, the sky darkened and light was completely swallowed up by it.

Zhang Ruochen wore a solemn look, and with a thought, he pulled out the Zangshan Demonic Mirror out from Qiankun Realm, and continuously infused saint Qi into the mirror.

Countless of runes and sigils appeared on the surface of the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and bloomed in bright demonic light. A series of massive demonic mountain shadows appeared, and crushed at the black elephant.

In contrast, the power unleashed by the Zangshan Demonic Mirror in Zhang Ruochen’s hands was far stronger than the Nine-eyes Heavenly Lord.

A series of supreme power blasted out from the Zangshan Demonic Mirror, and caused the demonic mountain shadow to become even more and more solid, as if the mirror had many demonic mountains within it and all were being manifested.

The shadows of the demonic mountains were even bigger and heavier than the black elephant, and all of a sudden, the black elephant was crushed into the ground.

The black elephant struggled desperately, but it could not shake off the shadow of the demonic mountains. The more it struggled, the more it sank into the ground, and was completely countered by the Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

Zhang Ruochen opened up all of his acupuncture points, and allowed his saint Qi to be infused into the Zangshan Demonic Mirror without any limitations, rousing the mirror's strongest power, and not allowing the male Deathkin any chance to turn things around.

Fairy Yuan stood aside, and at this moment, a glint flashed past her eyes, and her heart was rumbled.

She remembered that small pagoda that Zhang Ruochen had previously used to suppress the Blackflame General, and that should have been a Supreme Sacred Artifact, and now he had pulled out another one.

While the Zangshan Demonic Mirror was incomplete, it was still a Supreme Sacred Artifact, and was not compared to any normal sacred artifacts.

Since when did Supreme Sacred Artifacts become so commonplace? At least, even with her status, she still had not had the opportunity to come into contact with a Supreme Sacred Artifact.

The reason Fairy Yuan stayed behind was first, Zhang Ruochen had come to help her, and she acknowledged the act, and secondly, she also wanted to see how strong Zhang Ruochen was, and what sort of tricks he had under his sleeves.

And now, he had indeed did not let her down. Other things aside, she at least learnt of a big trump card Zhang Ruochen had in his hand.

In addition, Fairy Yuan was also very curious, which Deathkin wanted to meet Zhang Ruochen, and why did that person wanted to meet Zhang Ruochen?

There must be something else behind all this!

“Hmm?”

Fairy Yuan suddenly turned her head, and set her sights on the female Deathkin.

Earlier on, the female Deathkin was very calm, and was watching the battle from the sidelines. Her presence itself was some sort of restraint.

But now that the male Deathkin was in a precarious situation, the female Deathkin can no longer continue to stand and watch.

The female Deathkin held the dark bell in her hand, and a surge of evil death Qi within her body flowed into it, as they infused the dark bell.

Suddenly, countless arcane runes appeared on the surface of the bell, and exuded an extremely bizarre and suppressive aura.

Clang!

The dark bell vibrated, letting out a dull sound, the bell waves then suddenly took form and swept towards Zhang Ruochen like a black tide.

The bell waves were extremely bizaare, and between shocks, it could harm the soul and one's spiritual consciousness, scattering one's consciousness away.

Anyone struck by the waves would find their souls scattered, as their consciousness fades, and gradually lose the ability to fight.

Fairy Yuan moved, and blocked in front of the dark bell's wave. With her finger pointing out, an incomparably bizarre power gathered at her fingertips as it met the dark bell wave.

Baaaaam!!

The dark bell sound wave disintegrated immediately, before disappearing altogether.

The female Deathkin's face was gloomy as she said. "Do you have a death wish?"

"If you can do it, feel free to give it a try then." Fairy Yuan said indifferently.

Hearing that, the murderous intent in the eyes of the female Deathkin skyrocketed, as she said extremely coldly. "Then I shall fulfill your wish."

"Raaaawrrr!"

A thunderous dragon's roar rang out.

An azure dragon flew out from the body of the female Deathkin, and hovered outside her body, guarding her within it.

If one looked closely, they would see that while the azure dragon looked very real, it was actually ethereal, and was a dragon soul.

The aura unleashed by the dragon soul was very powerful, and was no weaker than the Supreme Saint elephant soul.

"A Supreme Saint dragon soul."

Seeing the azure dragon coiling outside the female Deathkin's body, Zhang Ruochen's eyes suddenly lit up.

Did the two come here to gift him the Supreme Saint-level dragon soul and elephant soul? They sure knew what his thoughts were too well.

Since both Supreme Saint dragon soul and elephant soul appeared at the same time, then, he would not let these two people leave under any circumstances.

It would be really difficult to get a Supreme Saint dragon soul and elephant soul if he missed this chance.

"Evil Spirit, deal with him."

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen summoned Evil Spirit out from the Qiankun Realm.

After the battle of the Sword Vault, the Evil Spirit was greatly wounded by Xia Wenxin, and had nearly wounded his base. Only after resting and recuperating for a while did it finally recovered.

“Hehehe.”

Evil Spirit let out a menacing laugh as the two ghost fire in his eyes flashed, looking particularly terrifying.

“Zhang Ruochen, his saint soul is mine!”

Evil Spirit opened his mouth, and seemed very excited.

The soul of a Heaven’s Reach powerhouse was absolutely a great elixer for him.

Between words, Evil Spirit had already lifted the war blade of the tenth radiance saint artifact, and slashed at the male Deathkin.

Zhang Ruochen dashed, and used the Dimensional Shift as he instantly appeared near the female Deathkin, and stabbed with his sword.

The azure dragon had fused with the female Deathkin, allowing her to have powerful strength, and also defensive powers. Pieces of azure dragon scales appeared as if they were real.

Clang!

The Ancient Abyssal Blade stabbed at the female Deathkin, but was blocked by the power of the azure dragon soul, and could not find its mark.

The female Deathkin’s long hair fluttered, as an arcane sigil appeared on her forehead, as the Will of Death surged in a frenzy, forming a Shadow of Death.

The Shadow of Death was almost real, and the beads on its wrist had four beads taking form, far stronger than the Blackflame General’s.

Whoosh!

The Death Scythe was swung, cutting through a bizarre trajectory, wanting to harvest Zhang Ruochen’s life.

Zhang Ruochen seemingly unable to react, and his body was easily cut into two by the Death Scythe. Seeing that, the female Deathkin did not show any joy, but instead frowned deeply.

Zhang Ruochen's severed body dissipated, and left nothing behind.

It was just an afterimage, Zhang Ruochen's real body had already withdrew far away, and the Death Scythe did not harm him at all.

“Die!”

A powerful killing intent exuded from the female Deathkin as she expanded her Precept Dominion and tens of millions of precepts surrounded her.

What was more frightening was that the precepts of the heaven and earth were also mobilized and converging from all sides, as if she was coming the master of this world.

This was the terrifying attribute of a Heaven's Reach powerhouse, and they could almost draw upon the power of the heaven and earth, mastering the world. Trying to fight against an Heaven's Reach elite is beyond difficult.

A massive surge of Will of Death rushed out from the female Deathkin's body, and surged into the Shadow of Death. The Shadow of Death became more and more corporeal as it got taller and taller, as if it wanted to fill the entire space.

Boom!!

The ground shook violently as it started cracking and shattering.

Man large earth plates rose into the air and were stitched against one another as they were constantly compressed, forming a huge sphere with a diameter of thousand of miles. It was like a small star, and hidden within it was a power extremely terrifying.

A solemn look appeared in Fairy Yuan's eyes, as her Jasper Blade circled around her, ready to strike at any moment.

Zhang Ruochen also wore a grimn expression, as he mobilized the saint Qi in his body, and focused all of them towards his left leg.

Whoosh...

In an instant, a scorching aura exuded from Zhang Ruochen's left leg, and like a burning iron pillar, it turned crimson red as more then fifty thousand precept sigils emerging.

The scorching heat wave gushed from the bottom of Zhang Ruochen's foot, and spread in all directions, and the entire dimension even rippled because of it.

"This power..."

Fairy Yuan's face changed slightly, as her eyes suddenly turned towards Zhang Ruochen.

It was very clear that she felt a massive divine aura from Zhang Ruochen, as if she was facing a true god.

"The Divine Treads Upon the Nine Heavens!"

Zhang Ruochen lifted his left leg, and not only he activated the power of Yanshen's leg, but also activated a intermediate-level foot technique.

Boooom!!!

Just as his feet fell, a devastating divine power emerged, and poured all over the small star.

Now with half of the hundred thousand precepts inside Yanshen's leg had been refined by Zhang Ruochen, paired with the vast improvement of his own cultivation, the power unleashed, was unlike before.

The power contained inside the small star was indeed very powerful, but it could not stand against the vast divine power unleashed by Yanshen's leg.

In an instant, the small star burst apart.

The remaining divine power struck the Shadow of Death, and sent it tumbling upside down.

For a moment, the power flow of the female Deathkin was disrupted, and the Shadow of Death stalled.

Zhang Ruochen naturally will not let go of this great opportunity, his sword soul left his body, and held the Ancient Abyssal Blade in his head, as countless of Marks of Time enveloped the Shadow of Death, and the Moonlight Song was unleashed.

After dealing with Deathkin powerhouses in succession, Zhang Ruochen had realized that the sword soul seemed to be able to counter the Deathkin. As long as he uses his sword soul, there was almost no disadvantage.

The Shadow of Death summoned by the female Deathkin was very strong, however it still could not resist the sword soul, and was slashed apart. A large amount of Will Death seeped out as it fell.

Whoosh!!

The Ancient Abyssal Blade broke through the azure dragon soul's defenses, and left a long gashing wound on the female Deathkin's body.

In an instant, the female Deathkin was greatly wounded, and had almost all ability to resist.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, Zhang Ruochen took out the Secret Tome of Time and Space and between flips, a series of silver light flew out, forming a bizarre dimension one after another as they layered upon each other and shrouded the female Deathkin.

Before she could even react, Zhang Ruochen quickly closed the Secret Tome of Time and Space, and then infused a large amount of saint Qi into the tome to completely suppress the female Deathkin.

The Secret Tome of Time and Space shuddered slightly, and appeared to be somewhat unstable.

A moment later, however, the tome calmed down, and the silver light was retracted.

A smile appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face. After using so many trump cards, he finally managed to successfully suppress the female Deathkin, and the Supreme Saint dragon soul would soon be his.

Moreover, this female Deathkin is very powerful, and once killed, he could exchange three million merit points, and that was also a great boon.

Chapter 1930 - : The Last Leaf

Chapter 1930: The Last Leaf

Seeing Zhang Ruochen instantly suppress the female Deathkin, a look of shock appeared in Fairy Yuan's eyes.

Although she knew that Zhang Ruochen was no simple character, she never thought that he would hold so many powerful trump cards. Each of them was mysterious, and there was almost no way to defeat them.

Zhang Ruochen did not tarry and kept the Secret Tome of Time and Space

before he turned his attention to the male Deathkin instead.

Right then, the male Deathkin was also completely suppressed. After taking several dozen strikes from the Evil Spirit, he had lost the ability to fight back.

Once again, Zhang Ruochen used Yanshen's leg and activated the ten-thousand-odd precepts in it as he brutally stomped on the black elephant's back.

Using the Yanshen's leg was very draining on his Saint Qi. Mobilizing lesser precepts was much easier on him.

Boooom!!!

A large area of earth sank as the black elephant was stomped deep into the ground.

The Supreme Saint elephant soul's defense was eventually broken, and the male Deathkin was severely injured. As Zhang Ruochen stomped on him, he spat blood from his mouth.

Without giving his quarry another chance to resist, Zhang Ruochen activated the Zangshan Demonic Mirror to instantly seal the male Deathkin within it and suppress him using the demonic mountains inside the mirror.

At this point, both powerhouses sent by Pan Ruo had been captured, and their life and death were just between Zhang Ruochen's thoughts.

It was not that they were not strong enough, but all of their cards at play were restrained by Zhang Ruochen, and they barely even managed to use half of their full combat potential.

Of course, it was also due to their carelessness for not joining forces in the first place.

Otherwise, even if they could not do anything to Zhang Ruochen, they still would not end up like that.

“Huh...”

Zhang Ruochen exhaled a deep breath, although he was a little worn out, he still wore a smile, and could not hide the joy in his heart.

Suppressing both Deathkin elites meant that he had obtained both the Supreme Saint-level dragon soul and elephant soul. There was now hope for him to completely cultivate the twelfth palm strike of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike. Once that was achieved, the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike would evolve into a high-level Saint Art.

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen sent both the Zangshan Demonic Mirror and Evil Spirit back into the Qiankun Realm.

Once entering the Qiankun Realm, no one would be able to do anything at all.

“Master Zhang, what exquisite technique. You easily suppressed two powerful Deathkin elites. Yuan Yi has nothing but admiration.” Fairy Yuan smiled.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Fairy, you flatter me. If you hadn't held the fort for me by the side, I'm not really sure if I would have been able to keep them from escaping.”

“Master Zhang, you are too humble. Even if both of them were to join forces, they would not be a match for you. However, Yuan Yi is a little curious. Who actually wants to meet you?” An inquisitive look appeared on Fairy Yuan's face.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head slightly. "I have no idea either, but finding out will be easy. Once we are back at the basecamp, I'll have you and Fairy Baihua to help out. Everything will then come to light. Perhaps we may even get more information about the Deathkin."

"It is not good to linger here any longer. Let's head back to the Northern Region Basecamp first," Fairy Yuan said.

No one knew if there were any Deathkin or rakshasa powerhouses hiding in the dark. If more emerged, the situation would undoubtedly become very troublesome.

The two did not tarry and immediately rushed back to the Northern Region Basecamp.

As soon as he entered Zhen Yuan's manor, Xiang Chunan rushed over and said, "Big brother, Brother Luo Yi is gone, and I can't find him anywhere. Where did he go?"

Thinking of what Luo Sha had said, Zhang Ruochen was at a loss on whether to laugh or cry as he patted Xiang Chunan on the shoulder and said, "Third Brother, next time, don't just casually rescue anyone on the battlefield, much less casually treat someone as a brother."

Xiang Chunan scratched his head and looked confused as he said, "Big Brother, what do you mean by this? Is it related to Brother Luo Yi?"

"Stop calling him Brother Luo Yi. Luo Yi is not a disciple of the Shangyuan Sect. She is the Rakshasa Princess, Luo Sha. You rescued her in a daze from the battlefield, and I really don't know what else to say to you." Zhang Ruochen appeared helpless.

Hearing this, Xiang Chunan's eyes suddenly widened with a look of disbelief on his face. "What? The Rakshasa Princess? Big Brother, are you sure you're not wrong?"

"How could I lie to you about matters like this? Fairy Yuan can testify for me on this matter," Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen knew too well what kind of character Xiang Chunan was. He was a very straightforward person, and once

he acknowledged something, it was very difficult to change his mind.

Fairy Yuan nodded and said, “Luo Yi is indeed the Rakshasa Princess. When Luo Yi left the Northern Region Basecamp alone earlier, both Master Zhang and I secretly followed him. After that, we discovered her true identity.”

Receiving this information, Xiang Chunan finally believed them, and he could not help but say in fury, “She dared to lie to me! Damn it, I’ll never forgive her!”

“Third Brother, calm down. Consider it a lesson learned. Do not trust others so easily next time.” Zhang Ruochen comforted him.

Xiang Chunan nodded heavily and said, “All right, I’ll listen to you from now on, big brother.”

“Luo Sha should have escaped, right?” Ji Fanxin appeared all of a sudden and interjected to ask.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “Yes, she is very cunning and tricky to deal with. However, I’ve suppressed two Deathkin elites, and I would like to request that you, as well as Fairy Yuan, aid in interrogating them.”

“You can leave this matter to Fairy Baihua. In terms of interrogation, she is better than me. Plus, I need to head back to make some preparations. If something comes up from the interrogation, I hope you will inform me, Master Ruochen. Pardon my leave,” Fairy Yuan said.

Without waiting for Zhang Ruochen and the others to say anything, Fairy Yuan had already left the manor, seemingly carefree.

Since Fairy Yuan was no longer around, Zhang Ruochen did not need to take out the Zangshan Demonic Mirror or the Secret Tome of Time and Space

. Instead, he let Ji Fanxin enter the Qiankun Realm for the interrogation. It was undoubtedly safer that way.

In fact, even if he trusted Fairy Yuan, she might not dare to enter the Qiankun Realm. After all, there was no deep bond

between the two of them.

It did not take long for the interrogation to bear fruit.

However, for some reason, during the interrogation process, both Deathkin elites suddenly died.

“Both of them are from the Infernal Court’s most mysterious Fane of Destiny. They are not cultivators of destiny, though, but Deathsworn Guards raised by the Fane of Destiny. They are now following one of the three candidates in the running for Lady of the Fane of Destiny, Pan Ruo. It was Pan Ruo who gave them the order to retrieve you,” Ji Fanxin said.

Zhang Ruochen was puzzled. “A candidate for the Lady of the Fane of Destiny, Pan Ruo? Why did she send someone after me?”

“I don’t know. Just as I was about to pry into Pan Ruo and the Fane of Destiny’s secrets, both of their souls were instantly annihilated. As a result, no more information could be obtained.” Ji Fanxin shook her head.

It was clear that some secret techniques had been applied to both of their souls. Once something sensitive was touched upon, there would be a trigger that caused the soul to be annihilated, preventing any leakage of secrets.

It was undoubtedly terrifying to use such means to guard secrets.

For a moment, Zhang Ruochen fell into deep thought, as he tried to piece everything together.

He believed that there must be a reason for Pan Ruo to send someone to capture him.

In addition, the two individuals Pan Ruo had sent happened to possess a Supreme Saint-level dragon soul and elephant soul. Was that not a little too coincidental? It was as if those things had been specially prepared for him.

No matter how he thought about it, he just could not come to a proper conclusion. Perhaps he would only be able to figure out the reason after he met Pan Ruo.

Ji Fanxin spoke again. “Oh right, there is one more thing. Pan Ruo went to the Altar of Death and used some means to enhance its strength, creating a large number of powerful Deathkin elites in the process.”

When Zhang Ruochen heard this, he could not help but frown slightly. “In that case, it is even more imperative for us to destroy the Altar of Death. The longer we delay, the more harmful it is to the Kunlun Realm.”

“Before that, I must also find a way to improve my strength. This is not the Sword Vault, and I have no external force to borrow from. With my current strength, it is not enough for me to fight against the true elites of the Deathkin.”

If the Deathkin had powerhouses like Xuetu Shenzi, it would definitely be very difficult for him to fight them without aid from external forces. So, he needed to improve his strength.

Immediately, Zhang Ruochen decided to activate the sundial again, and first using the Godstones on him.

He dared not hope to break through to the realm of the Greater Precept World. As long as he was able to cultivate the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike’s twelfth palm to full completion, his strength would greatly improve.

Also, there was the fifth level of the Swordsmanship of Time. If he could have a breakthrough there, it would also improve his strength.

By the time he was done with seclusion, the Five-Element Soil would probably be sent over from the Five-Element Celestial Domain. By then, he could go back to the Cliff of Doom to collect the remaining eleven Godstones.

Beneath the sundial, Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged while the Ancient Abyssal Blade stood aside, absorbing and refining the weapons of various grades.

Next to Zhang Ruochen were Ji Fanxin, Xiang Chunan, Feng Yan, Pei Yutian, and even the various powerhouses of the Sword Sanctum and Ming Sect.

Only by having more people around could he maximize the value of the Godstone.

As before, Zhang Ruochen released all six Saint Souls and tried to comprehend the Path of the Palm, the Path of Sword, the Path of Time and Space, or the Saint Path Precepts. The multiple use of one mind was a benefit of cultivating several Saint Souls.

“The Supreme Saint dragon soul and elephant soul are both extremely powerful. As strong as my body is now, trying to refine them into my arms won’t be easy. Before that, I need to increase my body’s strength even more, and the last leaf of the Seven-star Divine Lingzhi should come in handy,” Zhang Ruochen said in a whisper.

The Seven-star Divine Lingzhi had seven leaves in total, each with extraordinary effects, and even the gods yearned to get their hands on it.

When he had gotten the Seven-star Divine Lingzhi back then, Zhang Ruochen had given the phoenix-shaped leaf to Elder Xuanji to bring him back to life.

He then gave the Qilin Leaf to Hanxue as a protective talisman.

During the birth of the Qiankun Realm, Princess Bai Li, the Mastadon-Devouring Rabbit, and Demon Ape had eaten the Azure Dragon Leaf, the White Tiger Leaf, as well as the Xuanwu Turtle Leaf.

Later on, Yueshen took the Moonleaf to restore her divine power.

So now, the Seven-star Divine Lingzhi only had one final leaf left, the Sunleaf. It was like a scorching sun that hung above the sky.

The Sunleaf contained tremendous power, and it was full of Yang Qi. If he could refine it, it would help greatly in cultivating the twelfth palm of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike.

At the same time, the Sunleaf’s power could also refine his flesh and blood, allowing him an amazing recovery ability, which was equivalent to having an immortal body.

Zhang Ruochen unleashed his abilities and plucked the Sunleaf.

Within the Qiankun Realm, he was almost invincible, and no matter how powerful the Seven-star Divine Lingzhi was, it could not resist him.

After losing the Sunleaf, the entire Qiankun Realm became a little dimmer, while the Seven-star Divine Lingzhi became bald. Who knew how long it would take for a new set of seven divine leaves to grow again.

Chapter 1931 - Beneath a Supreme Saint

Chapter 1931: Beneath a Supreme Saint

Without hesitation, Zhang Ruochen swallowed the Sunleaf directly and activated the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Empyrean, attempting to refine it with all his might.

In fact, if the White Tiger Leaf had been around, it would have been better. With his current physical strength, upon refining the White Tiger Leaf, it would be possible for him to refine his body to the Supreme Saint-level. By then, refining the Supreme Saint dragon soul and elephant soul would be much easier.

However, thinking of the Sunleaf's powers, he knew that it would not let him down after he refined it.

The Sunleaf contained an extremely majestic amount of Solar Qi, and it was scorching hot. The moment he swallowed it, Zhang Ruochen felt his body transform into a divine furnace. His whole body turned red as if he was about to melt away.

Even a body as strong as his could bear the strain entirely. Numerous cracks appeared on the surface of his skin, and they were all on the verge of ripping apart. Drops of bright red blood seeped through his skin and instantly evaporated due to the sun's essence.

For a moment, Zhang Ruochen's body was shriveling up at a speed that was visible to the naked eye. It looked as if the Sunleaf was about to turn all of the water in his body into steam.

The Sunleaf, unlike other leaves, contained more ferocious divine powers, and the danger of consuming it was even greater, reminiscent of someone swallowing a sun.

"As expected of divine medicine. It is so powerful that my body is about to collapse. I need to hold on." Zhang Ruochen

gritted his teeth in silence.

In order to become stronger, enduring some hardship was nothing.

Of course, he was not a fool, and he would never choose to take things head-on unnecessarily.

Feeling that his body's resistance was almost at its limits, Zhang Ruochen quickly took out some Springwater of Life to drink.

Suddenly, a refreshing sensation flowed all over his body and greatly eased the pain, allowing the cracks on his body to heal slowly.

The Springwater of Life had been harvested from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, and it was so arcane that it could almost resurrect the dead.

When his body stabilized, Zhang Ruochen stood up and started practicing the Luoshui Fist to smooth out the raging sun's essence inside his body.

A river appeared around him, filled with a cooling aura as it suppressed the scorching power coming out from his body.

It was a shame that he was not on the Nine Carols Star, or else the effect of the Luoshui Fist would be even better. Plus, with the Luoshui's help, the trouble he was facing now would be easily resolved.

The Luoshui Fist Technique could not completely smoothen the sun's essence, and every once in a while, Zhang Ruochen's body would be on the verge of collapse. He would then need to drink some Springwater of Life.

Fortunately, now that the Divine Sky-connecting Tree had created plenty of the Springwater of Life, there was no need to worry about it.

Zhang Ruochen's body was scorching hot at times while icy cold at other times. It felt like he was inside a forge. It was the type of pain that no ordinary person could bear.

After going through this over and over till the point he lost count of the times, Zhang Ruochen had finally completely

controlled the power of the Sunleaf.

During this period, his physical strength had greatly increased and reached the extreme of a Saint King. His body was just a step away from becoming a Supreme Saint.

With such physical strength, there was a specific realm for it, called “Beneath a Supreme Saint”, which was the physical limit before one’s body attained Supreme Sainthood.

Even after refining his physical body at such an intensity, he had not consumed too much of the Sunleaf’s essence.

The Sunleaf’s power died down and transformed into a scorching sun as it floated upon the Sea of Qi’s divine light, turning the divine light extremely dazzling and bright.

If it had not been for that, even if Zhang Ruochen were to struggle ten times or a hundred times more, he would never be free from the pain.

With his current cultivation strength, it was not enough to completely refine the Sunleaf.

One needed to know that even a powerful ancient god like Yueshen could recover a few percent of her divine power after she refined the Moonleaf.

The Sunleaf and the Moonleaf were of the same level, so one could imagine how powerful the power is contained inside the Sunleaf, so much so that a Supreme Saint might not be able to contain all of it.

Come to think of it, even Princess Bai Li and the others had not fully refined the leaves of the Seven-star Divine Lingzhi. Most of its essence was still stored in their bodies, and as their cultivation level improved, the essence was continuously released. That was perhaps why they were able to improve their cultivation strength so quickly.

“As expected of the Sunleaf, and even only refining a small portion my body had been refined to the point of Beneath a Supreme Saint. Every inch of my flesh and blood is filled with surging life essence, even if I’m severely injured, I should be able to recover quickly. With my current state, refining the

Supreme Saint-level dragon soul and elephant soul should not be a problem.”

Zhang Ruochen could sense his flesh evolve, and he could not help but feel excited.

With this body reaching such a powerful state, even if he was to continue refining it intensely, it would be difficult to achieve any greater results. While his flesh was only a step away from attaining Supreme Sainthood, but crossing that step was as difficult as scaling the heavens.

Zhang Ruochen was not in a hurry as his cultivation base had not even reached the peak of the Saint King realm. Thus, it was a little too early for his flesh to attain Supreme Sainthood.

After he stopped refining his body, Zhang Ruochen took out the Supreme Saint dragon soul and started refining it.

He wanted to refine this Supreme Saint dragon soul into his left arm and blend it together with his skin, flesh, blood, bones, and meridians. That way, his arm would become the Supreme Saint dragon soul’s body.

Although the Supreme Saint dragon soul had his consciousness erased, it still had the instinct to resist, and it struggled extremely hard.

Zhang Ruochen activated the Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Empyrean and infused all of his Saint Qi into his left arm, suppressing the Supreme Saint dragon soul.

However, just as he got started, he felt a stinging pain on his left arm like countless steel needles were being pierced into it. His skin cracked open, and blood flowed out of the wounds.

It was important to note that his physical body had reached the realm of “Beneath a Supreme Saint”, yet a situation like this still occurred. If he had refined the Supreme Saint dragon soul earlier, his arm would have probably burst into pieces instantly.

Due to that, Zhang Ruochen felt a little fortunate, fortunate that he was thoughtful enough and did not act with haste.

With his arms straightened, Zhang Ruochen gritted his teeth as he practiced the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike to speed up the refining process.

During this process, the blazing sun in his Sea of Qi's divine light activated and unleashed scorching Yang Qi as it infused into his arm. Not only was it assisting in refining the dragon soul, but it was also healing his injured arm at the same time.

After he expended a lot of effort and his left arm shattered several times, he managed to successfully refine the dragon soul.

Relying on the mystical power released by the blazing sun, his left arm quickly healed. Barely a moment later, it returned to its original state, with no trace of injuries at all.

With the experience of refining the dragon soul, refining the elephant soul was undoubtedly much easier.

It took only half the time it took to refine the dragon soul for the elephant soul to be successfully refined into his right arm, with it merely shattering a few times.

The thirteen original Saint King dragon souls and elephant souls were all fused into the Supreme Saint king-level dragon soul and elephant soul, which made them even stronger.

Zhang Ruochen shook his arms, and the Supreme Saint dragon soul and elephant soul immediately appeared, their Beast Emperor auras radiating as if one had entered a bestial wilderness.

“Elephantine Rampage.

“Dragon in the Sky.

“Dragon-Elephant's Return.”

...

“Scaleborn Dragonform.

“Dragon Upon the Nine Heavens.

“Sky Soaring Dragon-Elephant.

“Dragon-Elephant Across the Heavens.”

Zhang Ruochen struck both palms out in succession, going from the first palm of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike all the way to the twelfth. The power of the subsequent palm strike was stronger than the one before it as the scorching Yang Qi gushed out of his body.

By the time he struck out the twelfth palm, his body was completely golden red, his eyes burning like a torch, and his body was burning in flames.

“The twelfth Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike’s technique is finally completed! I finally cultivated a High-level Saint Art!”

Zhang Ruochen laughed out loud, finding it difficult to hide the joy in his heart.

There were few that could be found across the Celestial Court who had cultivated a high-level Saint Art while still a Saint King. It was a skill that belonged to a Supreme Saint, also known as the Great Arts of Heaven and Earth, and it could move the Heavens and Earth, and destroy stars.

Cultivating a high-level Saint Art could greatly increase a Saint King’s capabilities.

Some powerhouses who had reached the realm of Path’s Anterior could even rely on the high-level Saint Art to fight toe to toe with a Neverwither Supreme Saint. After all, a high-level Saint Art was difficult to cultivate, and even some Neverwither Supreme Saints may not be able to successfully cultivate them.

After the excitement, Zhang Ruochen sat down cross-legged again as he activated his exercises so that the raging Yang Qi in his body would gradually calm down. With the scorching Yang Qi subsiding, his skin color returned to normal.

Once he successfully cultivated the twelfth palm of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike, the Yang Qi inside Zhang Ruochen’s body became hundreds of thousands of times stronger than that in an ordinary person’s body. He was a veritable Saint furnace, and could directly melt down top end weapons.

Fortunately, a steady stream of Yang Qi had been supplied by the Sunleaf, or else he might not have been able to successfully cultivate the Dragon-Elephant Across the Heavens palm strike.

For the remaining time, Zhang Ruochen shifted his mind to comprehending the Path of Dimensions and the Swordsmanship of Time, trying to improve his strength by another step further.

He had another tough battle ahead of him, and if he was not strong enough, it would be difficult to take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk.

Six days later, all six Godstones were exhausted, and Zhang Ruochen walked out of seclusion.

As for that remaining Godstone, it was unable to spur the Sundial by its own, so he could only keep it first.

In six years' time, Zhang Ruochen had made great gains, his body had reached the "Beneath a Supreme Saint" realm, his twelfth palm of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike had now been fully completed, his Sword of Time technique had reached minor success on the fifth level, his Path of Dimension had greatly improved, and he had also refined two-thirds of the precepts inside Yanshen's leg. He now possessed more than 9.12 million Saint Path Precepts in his body and was not too far away from breaking through into the realm of the Greater Precept World.

Another joyous moment for Zhang Ruochen was that Lu Huaiyu had successfully used the Divine Blood Crystal and the other precious materials to upgrade the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and the Nine-Dragon Carriage.

After reforging, the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and the Nine-Dragon Carriage's item level had surpassed the Sacred artifact of Tenth Radiance, with their internal inscriptions numbering more than hundred and twenty thousand, almost reaching the realm of a King's Weapon.

The so-called King's Weapon refers to any powerful sacred artifacts which their internal inscriptions had exceeded

129,600 inscriptions.

The number 129,600 was the number of a Yuanhui, and was also the extreme number of the heaven and earth.

However, it is extremely difficult for a sacred artifact to become a King's Weapon, and needed to meet some special conditions.

For example: if a King's Weapon is to be fully completed, it needed to overcome a tribulation.

The number of top-tier sacred artifacts destroyed in the heavenly tribulations was uncountable. Only a very small number had successfully passed through it and became the king of weapons.

At the same time, for a sacred artifact to becoming a King's Weapon, the vessel spirit must also culminate a top-tier body.

For those vessel spirits who had only culminated with an ordinary body, no matter how much precious materials were used to refine them, there was no hope of them becoming a King's Weapon.

Just like a Supreme Sacred Artifact, the full potential of a King's Weapon could only be unleashed in the hands of a Supreme Saint.

A King's Weapon's power, while not as great as a Supreme Sacred Artifact, was much easier to spur, and if the vessel spirit was willing to cooperate, the power unleashed was not necessarily weaker than a Supreme Sacred Artifact without a vessel spirit.

The Azure Sky Bow and Whitesun Arrow Zhang Ruochen had seized from Qi Sheng's hands were King's Weapons, and were extremely powerful. However, as Zhang Ruochen was not an Immortal Vampire, he could not get the recognition of the vessel spirits, otherwise the Azure Sky Bow and the Whitesun Arrow would have been a killer weapon in his hands.

Although the Eight-Dragon Umbrella and the Nine-Dragon Carriage had not been King's Weapons, but Zhang Ruochen was very satisfied, with their current level, they were enough to greatly enhance his strength.

Chapter 1932 - Cooperating Once Again

Chapter 1932: Cooperating Once Again

Immediately after Zhang Ruochen's exit, Ji Fanxin, Xiang Chunan, Feng Yan, and Pei Yutian came out one after another. All four of them had undergone apparent changes.

Zhang Ruochen cast his gaze on Pei Yutian and smiled. "Congratulating, Brother Pei, your cultivation base had made great progress, the Yuanhui sacred medicine sure is extraordinary."

In just six short years, Pei Yutian's cultivation had reached the realm of a Nine-step Saint King's Lesser Precept-World. Such a cultivation speed could be said to be extremely terrifying.

Before his seclusion, Pei Yutian had just reached the realm of an Eight-step Saint King, and the Saint Path Precepts in his body were no more than two million.

Now, he had attained another breakthrough in his cultivation, and the Saint Path Precepts in his body were currently more than six million.

To cultivate four million saint path precepts in just six years, it was impossible even if he had the Canon of Truth.

Without a question, this was all due to the Yuanhui sacred medicine.

Pei Yutian said. "If I cannot greatly improve my cultivation after refining a Yuanhui sacred medicine, then I'm just too useless."

"The Yuanhui sacred medicine is extremely magical, and I believe Brother Pei's cultivation speed from now on will not be slow. You are well on your way to reach Greater Precept-World and even Precept Dominion." Zhang Ruochen said.

Pei Yutian carried with him the Qi of the Northern Region, and his achievements was bound to be limitless, and had more of a chance than others to become a Supreme Saint.

The Sunleaf was naturally even more magical than the Yuanhui sacred medicine, however, its medicine powers were mainly in refining one's body, and helped Zhang Ruochen's body to reach the realm of 'Beneath A Supreme Saint', its effect on increasing the saint path precepts were however not obvious.

"Junior Brother Zhang, please come to the hall quickly."

At this moment, Zhen Yuan's voice suddenly rang in Zhang Ruochen's ears.

Zhang Ruochen said. "Let's go, let's meet Senior Brother Zhen Yuan first."

Without delay, the five of them rushed to the council hall.

"Brother Zhen Yuan, has the Five-Element Soil been sent over?" The moment Zhang Ruochen saw Zhen Yuan, he immediately asked him about it.

Zhen Yuan nodded, and took out a one-foot-square box as he said. "The Five-Element Soil is inside this box. The amount is small, and it must not be lost, or else even I would be hardpressed to explain it."

"Thank you Brother Zhen Yuan, please rest assured nothing will happen to the Five-Element Soil." Zhang Ruochen took the box and solemnly promised.

With the Five-Element Soil, the eleven Godstones at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom was as good as his.

Putting away the box containing the Five-Element Soil, Zhang Ruochen said. "Brother Zhen Yuan, when will the attack on Xianji Mountain will commence?"

Before his seclusion, Zhen Yuan, Xuanyuan Liekong and the rest were already planning the attack on Xianji Mountain, and they should already came up with a plan.

Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin wanted to go to the Xianji Mountain to collect the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk. No

matter what, they cannot be absent from this battle.

“The plan is already set, and the attack will commence in five days time.” Zhen Yuan said.

A look of confusion appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s face as he said. “Why do we need to wait until five days later?”

“There is a person who had not rushed over yet, and he will be of great help for the assault on Xianji Mountain.” Zhen Yuan said.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen had a thought appearing in his mind. For someone who could make Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong wait, that means it was no ordinary person, and he wondered who that person was.

However, he did not enquire further. If Zhen Yuan was willing to disclose it, he would have stated it just now.

That is today, that the person’s identity needed to be kept secret for the time being to avoid it being leaked out, thus allowing the Deathkin to prepare.

After chatting a few words with Zhen Yuan, Zhang Ruochen and the others left the Northern Region Basecamp, and rushed to the Cliff of Doom.

With the great battle upon them, if they could get the Godstones earlier, then they could seclude themselves for refining for a while.

Since the incident at the Cliff of Doom, the number of powerhouses had rushing over to the Cliff of Doom had increased as they were all eager to obtain the opportunity in the cave at the bottom of the cliff.

However, in the past two days, the bottom of the Cliff of Doom had suddenly became quiet again.

The reason was that a Rakshasha army appeared and had locked down the Cliff of Doom.

Inevitably, a bloody battle broke out at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom, and many cultivators on the Celestial Court side lost their lives, and their blood staining the Cliff of Doom.

The Northern Region Basecamp was now busy preparing for the assault on Xianji Mountain, so they were naturally unable to take care of the matter of the Cliff of Doom, and that caused the Rakshasha clan to be even more bold.

“No wonder Luo Sha contacted the Rakshasha powerhouse. It turned out that she was scheming to get the opportunity in the Cliff of Doom.” Zhang Ruochen said suddenly.

The Northern Region is the battlefield of the Deathkin, unless it was for a special reason, the Rakshasha army would not come here.

Feng Yan rushed over, saying. “Big Brother, I’ve just asked, there’s a total of 500 Rakshasha Dukes and 36 Rakshasha Princes at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom, and had sealed the cave with the Godstone. It won’t be easy to fight our way in.”

“Five hundred Rakshasha Dukes, and 36 Rakshasha Princes, Luo Sha really went all in.” A strange look appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

The Rakshashas has a nobility system, and a saint can be regarded as a Marquise, a Saint King Dukes, or even a Prince.

The Dukedom and Marquissates are both divided into ten classes, a One-step Saint King is a Tenth-Class Duke, so on and so forth, and reaching a Greater Precept-World means reaching First-Class Duke.

And once someone cultivates their Precept Dominion, and having the potential to become a Supreme Saint, they could be raised to the rank of a Prince.

Princes are divided into five classes, Precept Dominion realm is Fifth-Class Prince, Heaven’s Reach is a Fourth-Class Prince, a regular Path’s Anterior’s Saint King would be a Third-Class Prince. An elite at the peak of Path’s Anterior would be a Second-Class Prince, and while a First-Class Prince, their strength would need to approach the level of a Neverwith Supreme Saint, and would normally be able to exchange blows with a Neverwith Supreme Saint.

The five hundred dukes that Luo Sha had mobilized meant that there were five hundred Saint King powerhouses.

And the 36 princes meant that there were 36 elites above the realm of Precept Dominion.

He had to say that the forces behind Luo Sha is very powerful, and could mobilize an amazing amount of forces.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said. “The more Rakshashas the better, we can get more merit points this way.”

Seeing that the Rakshashas destroying Zuling Realm with his own eyes, Zhang Ruochen naturally had no good impressions of the Rakshasha tribe.

Even if it was Luo Sha, despite what she said about him being her destiny, he would never believe it, and if he had the opportunity, he would find a way to get rid of her.

In short, he could not be tempted by the women of the Rakshasha tribe, Zhang Ruochen had already suffered too much due to women.

Immediately, Zhang Ruochen took out the upgrade Nine-Dragon Carriage, and got everyone to enter it.

“RAAWRRRR.”

A series of earthshaking dragon roars thundered as nine dragon souls rushed out of the Nine-Dragon Carriage, unleashing a terrifying dragonic aura.

After the Nine-Dragon Carriage was upgraded onto a Sacred Artifact of the Twelfth Radiance, the nine dragon souls too undergone evolution and became extremely corporeal, as if they were nine golden dragons with bodies.

BOOOMM!

The nine dragons souls pulled the Nine-Dragon Carriage, and like an invincible chariot, charged towards the bottom of the Cliff of Doom.

“Who is that? For that person to dare go to the Cliff of Doom with such fanfare.”

The Nine-Dragon Carriage’s movements were so loud that it alarmed many cultivators.

“Let’s go and have a look, might have a good show there.”

With the mentality of watching dramas, some cultivators followed the Nine-Dragon Carriage.

Not long after, the Nine-Dragon Carriage appeared near the cave.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’re finally here!”

As the sound rang out, Luo Sha’s figure slowly walked out of the fog.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the Nine-Dragon Carriage, with his hands on his back as he looked at Luo Sha, saying. “Luo Sha, you still dare to show your face before me, are you not afraid that I’ll kill you?”

“Are you actually willing to kill me? Anyway, I am all too reluctant to kill you.” Luo Sha chuckled, appearing confident and without fear.

Zhang Ruochen felt a slight headache, and his gaze sudden became sharp, saying. “I have no time for nonsensical prattle with you, get out of the way, or else don’t blame me for being unkind.”

“Insolence, you dare to be rude to the Princess, you deserve nothing but death!”

A Rakshasha prince behind Luo Sha stood out, and unleashed a terrifying killing intent.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the Rakshasha Prince and a strange look flashed in his eyes. Through the mark on the latter’s clothings, he could tell that this was a Third-Class Prince, that meant the Prince was an average Path’s Anterior elite.

However, no matter how ordinary he was, he was still a powerhouse of the Path’s Anterior realm. If he was willing, he can easily cast an immortal saint body, and become a Neverwithers Supreme Saint.

For Luo Sha to be able to mobilize a Path’s Anterior elite, that really surprised Zhang Ruochen, and it showed that Luo Sha was really loved by her divine father.

One needed to know that when Xia Wenxin led his army of hundreds of thousands to attack the Sword Vault, there were

no Path's Anterior elites among them.

To be able to cultivate till the point of Path's Anterior meant that a person's status will be very high, even a Shenzi or an Imperial Prince would not be able to dispatch them at will.

Luo Sha gently waved her hand, and the Third-Class Rakshasha Prince immediately backed away.

"Zhang Ruochen, let's discuss a business proposition." Luo Sha said.

Zhang Ruochen said faintly. "What business proposition is there between us?"

"This place is completely blocked off by my army. I know all of you are pretty strong, and have many tricks up your sleeves, but trying to kill your way through won't be easy."

"How about we work together. The Godstones inside the cave is yours, and the divine corpse is mine. We'll take what we need." Luo Sha suggested with a smile.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen did not immediately respond, but instead silently pondered in his heart.

Based on his understanding of Luo Sha, this woman was very cunning, and working with her is like playing with fire. If he was not careful, he may be straight up picked until his bones are clean.

However, the Rakshashas had indeed blocked off the cave, and that was indeed a problem. He was not afraid of going head-to-head with Luo Sha, but he feared the fight will cause grievous losses on both sides, and then someone else would simply just pick up the spoils.

His thoughts ran quickly through his mind, and Zhang Ruochen said. "Be it collecting the Godstone or the divine corpse, we still need to deal with the body of the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will. I have the Five-Element Soil, what do you have?"

"I have five hundred dukes and thirty-six princes. Do you think that's enough?" Luo Sha said.

Although she was smiling, the threat in her words was made very obvious.

If not for the fact she had known that Zhang Ruochen could obtain the Five-Element Soil, she would never had any ideas about the divine corpse, nor would she reveal her identity.

“Sod off, Luo Sha! You dare to deceive Lord Xiang here, and I’ll rip you into pieces.”

When Zhang Ruochen was still contemplating, Xiang Chunan charged out of the Nine-Dragon Carriage, and his emotions were particularly agitated.

Feng Yan followed out with an apologetic look on his face. He had wanted to hold Xiang Chunan back, but unfortunately he was not able to do it.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Xiang and said. “Chunan, don’t be rash, collecting the Godstones is of utmost importance.”

Immediately after, he looked at Luo Sha, saying. “Okay, I’ll agree to cooperate with you, but you better not play any tricks, otherwise, you can forget about leaving the Northern Region alive.”

Hearing that, the smile on Luo Sha’s face got even brighter, saying. “Zhang Ruochen, you’re a smart person, and I love working with smart people the most. Our previous two cooperations were very pleasant, and I believe this time will be no exception. Be my guest.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped talking, and led Xiang Chunan and Feng Yan back into the carriage.

BOOOMM!

The nine dragon souls pulled the carriage and went straight into the encirclement of the Rakshasha army with absolute boldness.

Chapter 1933 - Everyone Has an Ax to Grind

Chapter 1933: Everyone Has an Ax to Grind

“Do you really want to cooperate with Luo Ji, Big Brother? She is a craft person; it’s too risky to cooperate with her.”

Inside the Nine-Dragon Carriage, Feng Yan looked worried.

“She cheated me, Big Brother. We must not trust her. To eliminate the Rakshasas, I think we had better do it ourselves,” said Xiang Chunan.

He had been holding grudges ever since Luo Ji deceived him. Seeing Luo Ji would make his hackles rise.

“I know what I’m doing. The Dark Manifestation of Divine Will is nasty, and we don’t know if there are more. We need to use Luo Ji to clear the obstacles for us,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“Besides, the Rakshasas are well-prepared; it is not easy to push our way in. It could be mutually destructive for us and the Rakshasas, and that will only benefit a third party.”

News of gems at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom had long spread. They and the Rakshasas were not the only ones coming for it. They had to be prepared.

It was unwise to fight with the Rakshasas before they got their hands on the Godstones and the divine body.

Yan Feng nodded his agreement.

Xiang Chunan was the only person who remained sullen. But since Zhang Ruochen and Feng Yan would not let him, he had no choice but to be patient.

Outside the Nine-Dragon Carriage, that Path’s Anterior elite fighter spoke through telepathy.

“Princess, we don’t need to cooperate with Zhang Ruochen. Even without the Five-Element Soil, and with only the

Empyrean Extinction Array, we could deal with the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will.

“Or we might as well kill Zhang Ruochen and his mates and take the Five-Element Soil.”

That Path’s Anterior elite fighter was confident of their strength, and that they could deal with Zhang Ruochen and his people.

Luo Ji kept silent for a moment.

“Don’t underestimate Zhang Ruochen and his mates. He is not as easy to deal with as you imagine. I cooperated with him for some reasons.

“First, they possess several Supreme Artifacts and the Five-Element Soil, which will be extremely useful; and second, I am sure Zhang Ruochen is not the only one trying to get hands on the Godstones and the divine body. I’m afraid the Deathkins and others are just waiting for us to get into a fight with Zhang Ruochen and benefit from it. How could I let them have their way?

“So be patient. Wait until we have dealt with the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will, only then we make our move to suppress them. By then, the Godstones and the divine body will be ours.

“You will have a lot of work to do from now on, Spear Fiend.”

There was a light in Spear Fiend’s eyes.

“Don’t worry, Princess. I will do everything possible to take them all down.”

It thrilled him when he was given the job to take out Zhang Ruochen, the Scion of Time and Space. He would be famous if he succeeded.

After all, Zhang Ruochen had been on the rise recently and that got people’s attention.

Not long after, the Nine-Dragon Carriage appeared outside that special cave.

Now, everyone could see that the cave was in fact a snake's mouth that led to the inside of the body of a giant's snake.

A divine snake was buried at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom. Its divine body had started petrifying after so many years, and the divine essence had formed Godstones.

Given more time, the divine snake might completely combine with the earth's rock and transform in between heavens and earth.

"Move your move, Zhang Ruochen," said Luo Ji.

After being disturbed, the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will had been staking out in the blood pond since a few days ago, attacking anyone who went in and tried to take the Godstones and divine blood.

At first, some greedy fellows pushed their luck and got in. But none of them could make it back out as they all had died inside the cave.

Zhang Ruochen alighted from the Nine-Dragon Carriage with Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Pei Yutian followed closely from behind, leaving only Ji Fanxin still in the carriage.

Xiang Chunan glared at Luo Ji with the Metal Demonic Crown in hand. How he wished he could give Luo Ji a good beating right now.

But Feng Yan pressed his hand on Xiang Chunan's shoulder, for fear that he might lose control and ruin Zhang Ruochen's plan.

Meanwhile, Pei Yutian remained silent. With the stone saber in hand, he would not hesitate to go on a killing spree as soon as the time was ripe. He was eager to see how many Rakshasan cultivators could withstand his saber attack.

After consuming the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb, his physique had improved tremendously, rivaling the second-best perfection physique. With the rock saber and his level of self-cultivation, he would not necessarily lose to a Precept Domain elite fighter.

Of course, he could summon even more strength if he could connect with the Origin of Heaven and Earth of Northern Region through his rock saber. But Pei Yutian's current level of cultivation base was not powerful enough. He had to pay a high price for each summoning.

If not absolutely necessary, such as during a life-or-death situation, he would not want to connect with the Origin of Heaven and Earth.

Standing in front of the blood pond, Zhang Ruochen first took out the Azure Pagoda and let it float around him, only then he took out the box containing the Five-Element Soil.

He had to be very careful as those Rakshasas were not trustable.

Something happened in the blood pond. The snake-formed Dark Manifestation of Divine Will lunged out of the pond with an evilly horrible air.

Formed by the Divine Will, it could live through ages and never die. It devoured flesh and blood of the living, and was most sensitive to the breath of the living.

"I didn't bring much Five-Element Soil and am afraid that it could not make a good-enough deterrence. Please ask your men to hold off the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will so I can use the Five-Element Soil to subdue it," said Zhang Ruochen.

Hearing that, Luo Ji turned toward Spear Fiend beside her. "Now, go."

Spear Fiend did not feel like helping Zhang Ruochen, but he could not defy Luo Ji's will either. "Formation!" he shouted.

The other 35 princes made their move immediately, releasing powerful evil energy to send it all into Spear Fiend's body.

Spear Fiend's energy spiked. Even his body was ballooning.

A beam of red light shot out from his forehead and turned into a red spear that looked like a red dragon burning with fire.

"Regal weapon."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes flashed with a hint of surprise.

Was Spear Fiend only a third-class prince? He had got a regal weapon.

Unless this regal weapon did not belong to him, and he was having it temporarily.

But it did not matter. Spear Fiend had the regal weapon and the aid of a combat array. His strength would increase multiple folds.

The snake-formed Dark Manifestation of Divine Will roared and took Spear Fiend as its target.

The more powerful a living being gets, the more attractive said living being is to the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will.

The snake-formed Dark Manifestation of Divine Will swayed its tail and struck it at Spear Fiend with a brutal force.

Spear Fiend roared quietly as he struck out his red spear at an incredible speed in the faint shadow of a dragon.

The impact sent Spear Fiend to stumble backward. His arms felt numb, and he nearly lost grip of his red spear.

“He could even withstand the attack of the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will. Incredible!” Feng Yan looked at him in surprise.

There were few Path’s Anterior elite fighters that could clash head-on with the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will like that.

That worried Feng Yan a little, as a too-strong Rakshasa was not a good thing for them.

There was a murderous look in Spear Fiend’s eyes. He was fearless when he attacked the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will.

But the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will was no slouch either, as shown by how it warded off Spear Fiend’s attack each time and nearly gave him a deadly blow.

“Aren’t you making your move yet, Zhang Ruochen?”

Luo Ji looked at him coldly.

As soon as she spoke, Zhang Ruochen performed a Dimensional Shift and reappeared above the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will in the blink of an eye.

The Dark Manifestation of Divine Will was engrossed in attacking Spear Fiend and had not noticed Zhang Ruochen.

As the box opened, a dollop of Five-Element Soil flew out. Its amount was so little that it was just slightly larger than a fist in size.

As little as the amount of Five-Element Soil was, the sacred energy it released was extremely concentrated and a counterbalance to the evil energy.

The Five-Element Soil landed on the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will's head and engulfed it with a colorful, faint divine light.

The Dark Manifestation of Divine Will suddenly froze, its strength stopped working.

“Retrieve!”

With no hesitation, Zhang Ruochen summoned the Qiankun Realm.

A powerful suction force pulled the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will into the Qiankun Realm before it could fight back.

No way the little dollop of Five-Element Soil could hold up the Dark Manifestation for long.

If there was no other means of suppression to work hand-in-hand, the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will would break free in no time.

If he could not suppress the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will, he could probably take the Godstones but not the divine body.

As soon as the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will was sucked into the Qiankun Realm, the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree quickly tied it up with its divine power.

“Leave this Dark Manifestation of Divine Will to me. This is good stuff. It would be a waste to purify it just like this.” The

evil spirit was excited inside the Qiankun Realm.

Since the evil spirit said so, there was no reason for Zhang Ruochen to say no.

Instead of purifying, it was better to let the evil spirit devour the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will.

With the Sky-Connecting Tree's help, the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will could no longer pose a threat. It would be devoured by the evil spirit soon.

As soon as the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will was contained, Luo Ji made her move to seize the Godstones.

As she performed a dimensional technique, the rocky ceiling broke apart and the eleven Godstones broke free and flew toward her.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen hissed and performed his dimensional technique.

The two dimensional forces collided and kept the eleven Godstones still in midair.

"I knew the Rakshasa could not be trusted. Luo Ji, you deserve this!"

Xiang Chunan roared as he cast out his Metal Demonic Crown.

This was the moment he had been waiting for. The first thing he wanted to do was to even the score with Luo Ji.

"How dare you!"

Spear Fiend hissed and turned his red spear to pick on the Metal Demonic Crown.

The Metal Demonic Crown, carrying the might of the Supreme Power, was deflected by Spear Fiend and failed to get near to Luo Ji even.

Without an implement spirit, the power of the Metal Demonic Crown was limited.

In contrast, the red spear was complete; the combination of an implement spirit and Spear Fiend made a perfect match, not to

mention the kind of power he could use from his high level of cultivation. The Metal Demonic Crown was no match for the spear.

“Kill!”

Pei Yutian’s eyes flashed with murderous intent as he struck with his saber.

Streaks of strange patterns appeared on the rock saber. They looked the same as the terrain of Northern Region. The energy of heaven and earth was invoked as the saber struck at Spear Fiend.

Nine dragon souls were pulling the Golden Dragon Carriage, charging at Spear Fiend like a combat chariot with loud rumbles.

With Ji Fanxin’s level of cultivation, she could spur the power of the Golden Dragon Carriage to its limit.

After the last session of closed-door self-cultivation, Ji Fanxin’s martial art had attained the realm of Precept Domain. With her true form of ancient Lotus of Divine Reflection and the unfathomably high attainment of the Path of Truth, few people below the Supreme Sainthood could pose a threat to her. That did not even take her spiritual power into account.

It is safe to say that Ji Fanxin was one of the few non-Supreme Saint cultivators whom Zhang Ruochen still could not see through.

Chapter 1934 - The Empyrean Extinction Array

Chapter 1934: The Empyrean Extinction Array

“What makes all of you feel so confident?”

There was contempt in Spear Fiend’s eyes, and he struck his spear horizontally.

A red dragon emerged. It was a hundred yards long and burning with a raging fire, looking all-powerful.

The energy beam of Pei Yutian’s saber shattered at once. It was no match for the red dragon.

The nine dragon souls shattered after being blocked by the red dragon, forcing the Golden Dragon Carriage to beat a hasty retreat.

If not for the upgrading, the impact would have damaged the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Jin Fanxin was sitting securely inside the carriage. As she injected her spiritual Qi into the nine dragon heads, the nine dragon souls appeared again and this time, they were even tougher than before.

Countless purple petals flew out of the Golden Dragon Carriage. They looked like thousands of fluttering butterflies.

These petals looked beautiful to the eyes but were extremely dangerous, which could be seen from the cut marks in the dimensions.

The red dragon, overpowered by the purple petals, disappeared in the blink of an eye. Apparently it had been sliced apart by the petals and dissipated.

After dealing with the red dragon, the purple petals swept toward Spear Fiend.

Meanwhile, Ji Fanxin had freed her spiritual power from suppression after restraining the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will. She could now use her magic as much as she wanted.

Her spiritual power was near 60-order, her magic incredibly powerful. Few non-Supreme Saint cultivators were not wary of her.

“Break!”

Spear Fiend shouted as he struck down with his red spear.

Regal inscriptions appeared on the red spear and cut the sea of petals in half as a mighty evil energy rushed into it.

Spear Fiend was not fighting alone but with the backup of 35 Rakshasan princes, whose cultivation base was at Precept Domain and above. They gave Spear Fiend their strength through the combat array.

With the help of this sophisticated combat array and the 35 Rakshasan princes, Spear Fiend’s combat strength increased exponentially instead of linearly.

“How much more powerful Class-One and -Two princess is when a Class-Three prince is already this terrific?” Xiang Chunan looked shocked.

In his thinking, Class-3 princes were the least powerful Path’s Anterior fighter. Their strength was more or less about the level of the Blackflame General. It should not be difficult to deal with.

“This man is no ordinary Class-Three prince. The way I see it, he should be qualified to be called a Class-Two prince, considering his strength. Just that he hasn’t gotten the ordination.” Feng Yan looked grave while he spoke.

“There are many opportunities in the Kunlun Realm, where top-tier fighters could be nurtured in a short time. The information in

The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court’s Ten Clans is no longer accurate. Many Infernal Court cultivators are more powerful than recorded in

The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans

.”

What he said was not without merits. Take Prince Wujie, who was killed by Zhang Ruochen, for example; before he came to the Kunlun Realm, his cultivation base was just in Eight-Step Saint Kinghood. But after he came and took the divine blood, his cultivation base rapidly climbed to the Precept Domain realm, which was multiple times better than previously.

The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans was just a manual to identify which powerful Infernal Court figures had entered the Kunlun Realm and provided a summary of their strength.

But this information was not definite. For example, it did not contain records of Xia Wenxin's mastery of Godslayer Cross-Shield, and Nine-Eye Heavenly Lord in possession of the incomplete Zangshan Demonic Mirror.

“Class-Two prince—that is at the pinnacle of Path's Anterior already. Besides, he also has the regal weapon, and the help of the combat array. He is a nasty opponent. It is a shame that my cultivation base is not up to snuff. Without forming any Precept Domain, I can do anything about him even with a Supreme Artifact.” Xiang Chunan was a little discouraged.

The difference in cultivation base was not something that external forces could remedy.

If he could master the complete Supreme Artifact, he would be invincible below the realm of Supreme Saint.

“Fairy of a Hundred Flowers will hold him off. Let's give Big Brother a hand and secure the Godstones,” said Feng Yan.

The three of them were hardly a threat to Spear Fiend, considering their levels of strength. Tangling on was just a waste of energy.

So they changed their target by performing saint techniques and casting out sacred artifacts at Luo Ji.

“How dare you all!”

Spear Fiend was enraged. He performed a palm strike by gathering a vast amount of evil energy to form a giant hand that was tens of yards across.

Boom!

Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Pei Yutian's attacks were deflected before hitting Luo Ji.

Bang!

The rock on the ground broke apart as thick vines burst out like lightning, entwining toward Spear Fiend.

One particular vine was quicker than the others. It wrapped around the red spear in Spear Fiend's hand. The spear would have been snatched away had Spear Fiend did not clench it hard enough.

By the time Spear Fiend knew what happened, the vines had twined around both of his hands, legs, waist, and neck, immobilizing him instantly.

Just then, Zhang Ruochen activated the Azure Sky Pagoda. Beams of greenish light radiated as it released a mighty Supreme Power.

Bang!

The Azure Sky Pagoda shot out at great speed toward Luo Ji.

But Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brow when the Azure Sky Pagoda hit Luo Ji.

With his understanding of Luo Ji, who was crafty with endless tricks up her sleeve, no way the Azure Sky Pagoda could strike her so easily.

Her body shattered upon impact.

But something was strange; there was no bloody scene. Her body had turned into pieces of lifeless, broken rock.

"This is not Luo Ji's true form!"

Zhang Ruochen came to his senses at once.

Luo Ji was the offspring of a powerful Rakshasa deity. It made little sense for her body comprising rocks.

This came as a shock to Zhang Ruochen. Before this, he could not make out that this was only a rock puppet of Luo Ji.

He was not the only one, though. Xiang Chunan, with his clairvoyance, had also been kept in the dark.

By the looks of things, Luo Ji must have mastered some mysterious arts that could avoid detections.

At the Divinity Bestowment Altar, Luo Ji had disguised herself as a little demonic mushroom and evaded the detection of the Maiden of a Thousand Stars's Divine Eye of Origin, which she claimed could see through all disguises.

So it was not so unusual when Luo Ji could deceive Xiang Chunan on the Battlefield of Merits.

“Why did Luo Ji want to use a puppet to hold me off? Where has her true form gone?” Zhang Ruochen had many questions on his mind.

He became a little worried when he could not make head or tail of it.

Without Luo Ji's interference, Zhang Ruochen kept the eleven Godstones in his pocket without a hitch—one mission was accomplished.

“How dare you destroy Her Highness Princess's puppet, Zhang Ruochen? You all are not going to get out of here alive today! The Empyrean Extinction Array!” Spear Fiend roared in anger.

The other 35 Rakshasa princes moved in a flash, encircling Zhang Ruochen and his mates in the center.

Since their evil energy was united as a whole, the combat array could form in the blink of an eye.

A terrifyingly destructive energy spread as soon as the combat array took shape.

Boom!

A bolt of black lightning, as thick as a water bucket, struck out toward Zhang Ruochen at a hundred times the speed of sound.

The black lightning produced a horrible energy, like a tribulation thunder that could destroy everything.

Just then, the Eight-Dragon Umbrella popped out with strange sacred light and clear inscriptions on the surface. And then, eight dragon souls lunged out of the umbrella and circled around Zhang Ruochen.

Bang!

The Eight-Dragon Umbrella spun, blocking the black lightning, which dissipated as quick as it came.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen appeared beside Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Pei Yutian, protecting them with the umbrella.

The last thing anyone wanted was to get hit by the attack from the powerful combat array.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to get the three out of the combat array, but he just could not do that.

There was more to the combat array than met the eyes. It could not only seal the dimensions but also restrain his dimensional ability, as if this was an array specially designed to clip his wings.

Bang!

There was a constant forming of black lightning in the combat array, but the Eight-Dragon Umbrella blocked it all.

Under the protection of the Eight-Dragon Umbrella, the four of them quickly retreated to the Nine-Dragon Carriage to meet up with Ji Fanxin.

“We seem to have fallen into the trap Luo Ji has laid for us. It is a terrible combat array formed by 36 Rakshasa princes, and we don’t know where Luo Ji’s true form has gone,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Feng Yan creased his brow slightly. “There is no way to attack those Rakshasa princes within the combat array. We need to kill our way out!”

“No matter how strong a combat array is, there must be loopholes lying somewhere. If we could find these loopholes, exploiting them isn’t going to be difficult,” said Ji Fanxin.

While speaking, she had already released her spiritual power to cover every corner of the combat array. To her, there was no one combat array that was perfect.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s hand as he continuously injected his saint Qi into it to prepare to attack.

The whereabouts of Luo Ji continued to bother him. If not absolutely important, she would not have used a decoy to hold him off. She must be planning something big.

Just then, someone tried to intrude into the cave. They were the Deathkin fighters. But the combat array formed by the 500 Rakshasa lords held them off on the outside.

Bang!

A thousand miles from the Cliff of Doom, the body of a Deathkin general broke apart into several pieces and plunged from the sky.

On a white cloud, Zheng Yuan was sitting leg-crossed in front of a jade-stone table enjoying his tea.

He was the one who killed that Deathkin general, breaking him into pieces with just a palm strike. The poor Deathkin general could not even put up a fight.

“Those who killed my general must die.”

A furious voice came as an atrocious evil energy of death loomed like a tidal wave in the horizon toward Zheng Yuan.

Zheng Yuan let out a smile, looking cool, calm, and collected as he took another sip of tea. “I have been expecting you, Chixing Shenzi!”

The evil energy of death surged and formed into a giant hand of several hundred yards tall, blocking off the sun and looking as if it could reach to pluck the stars down from heaven.

“Boundless Heavenlord!”

Zheng Yuan chanted a title as he slowly extended his hand.

This hand of his rapidly expanded. It glowed in yellow with Precepts intertwining on the surface as the immense power of heaven and earth was mobilized.

Bang!

The two giant hands collided with Zheng Yuan's yellow hand emerging unscathed and the giant hand of the evil energy of death exploding.

The next moment, the evil energy of death receded like a tide, then disappeared completely, as if it had never been there before.

Chapter 1935 - "Walk" in the Divine Body

Chapter 1935: "Walk" in the Divine Body

"That was a quick escape. I wonder what the situation on Brother Zhang's side is."

Zheng Yuan could not help but look in the Cliff of Doom's direction.

He still needed to stand guard outside the Cliff of Doom to stop Path's Anterior fighters from entering. He had promised Zhang Ruochen this, and he was going to keep his word.

He was willing to do this, especially when after this, Zhang Ruochen would be indebted to him.

The battle at the bottom of the cliff was intense. Fighters from different forces were coveting the divine body and Godstones, but were stopped by the combat array formed by 500 Rakshasa Dukes on the outside.

After a round of fierce fighting, those forces had failed to defeat the combat array. Instead, they were suffering from great casualty with one Heaven's Reach fighter severely wounded.

The combat array of the Rakshasa, one of ten clans of the Infernal Court, was the most legendary. Anyone encountering this array was going to have a big headache.

It was especially terrifying when thousands of Rakshasa cultivators formed a massive combat array on a large battlefield.

Spear Fiend and 35 other Rakshasa princes had formed the Emyrean Extinction Array inside the mouth of the divine snake, trapped Zhang Ruochen and four others in the array.

"Found it."

Ji Fanxin's eyes flashed.

She immediately sent the loopholes she found to Zhang Ruochen through spiritual power.

The corner of Zhang Ruochen's mouth curled up as he cast out the Zangshan Demonic Mirror with the flick of his hand.

A bolt of black lightning struck the mirror just in time.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror had its strange ability by deflecting the black lightning while making it even more powerful.

Bang!

The deflected lightning struck the weakest link of the Emyrean Extinction Array, instantly leaving behind a crack.

Taking this opportunity, the nine dragon souls pulled the Golden Dragon Carriage and got out through the crack.

Spear Fiend was not panicking, though. As soon as the crack appeared in the Emyrean Extinction Array, the 36 Rakshasa princes became one body. It was a giant of a hundred yards tall, enough to block the snake's mouth.

More precisely, it was not the 36 Rakshasa princes who had become one but their energies. Their evil energies had formed a giant with the 36 princes inside and under the protection of the giant's body.

There were two strange vortexes on both sides of the giant's head. Bolts of lightning danced like dragons inside the vortexes.

Bang!

A bolt of black lightning struck out of a vortex at the Golden Dragon Carriage.

The Eight-Dragon Umbrella spun in front of the carriage, blocking the incoming black lightning.

The Eight-Dragon Umbrella undoubtedly had better defensive ability than the Golden Dragon Carriage.

“Die!”

The giant brandished the regal weapon-class spear and thrust at the Eight-Dragon Umbrella at the sound of Spear Fiend.

But Zhang Ruochen did not use the Eight-Dragon Umbrella but the Zangshan Demonic Mirror to block the spear.

The Eight-Dragon Umbrella might rank close to the regal weapon, but its internal inscriptions had not transformed into regal inscriptions and itself had not gone through the tribulation, head-on collision could damage it.

Repairing a Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact like this was too much of a trouble.

While the Zangshan Demonic Mirror blocked the spear, Zhang Ruochen cast out the Azuresky Pagoda and struck at the giant of Supreme Power.

Boom!

Another bolt of black lightning from the other vortex struck the Azuresky Pagoda and stopped it from spinning.

Right at that moment, out of nowhere, Zhang Ruochen appeared behind the giant's head. The Ancient Abyssal Blade appeared in his hand in a flash with sword force gathering at the tip of the blade. It was so sharp that it seemed it could cut through anything.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade thrust into the giant's skull. But barely two inches into the head, it was stopped.

The giant threw an arm back, trying to grab Zhang Ruochen.

He was quick to respond, pulling out the Ancient Abyssal Blade and performing a Dimensional Shift to return to the Golden Dragon Carriage. All that happened in just a split second.

“True to a combat array formed by thirty-six Rakshasa princes. Nasty and impeccable.”

Zhang Ruochen was impressed.

The way he looked at it, the strength of this combat array could rival that of Neverwith Supreme Saint. Few non-Supreme Saint fighters could defeat it by brute force.

“Let’s get out of here.”

Immediately, Zhang Ruochen drove the Golden Dragon Carriage and stormed out of the snake’s mouth.

The combat array of the 36 Rakshasa princes was nasty. But what about the 500 Rakshasa Dukes outside?

Staying inside the snake’s mouth was limiting what he could do. It was still more convenient to come outside. At least, he could easily escape if something unexpected happened.

The nine dragon souls pulled the Golden Dragon Carriage and stormed out rapidly.

Two Rakshasa Dukes, who stood in the way, were crushed, instantly turning into two groups of blood mist.

As this happened, the combat array formed by the 500 Rakshasa Dukes collapsed. The other fighters took this opportunity and stormed in.

In just a moment, a few dozen Rakshasa Dukes were attacked and killed.

The remaining Dukes responded quickly. Among them, 360 formed the Orbital Stealth Array, and 81 of them formed the Grand Re-origination Array.

While the remaining dukes took cover inside the Orbital Stealth Array.

As there were too many fighters storming in, any duke who was alone would immediately become a target of attack.

After the Rakshasas got a hold of themselves, they immediately launched a counterattack and killed nearly a hundred fighters in the blink of an eye.

“Get ready to die, Zhang Ruochen.”

Spear Fiend roared in anger as he had the combat array in control and came out of the snake mouth.

Evil energy gathered and as it formed into a war spear, he hurled it at Zhang Ruochen at 1,000 times the speed of sound.

It was impossible to dodge the spear flying at this speed, so Zhang Ruochen held the Ancient Abyssal Blade in front of him.

Clank!

As the war spear hit the Ancient Abyssal Blade, a horrible energy ran through the blade and up to his arms.

With the energy that the war spear carried, it could even destroy a higher-order Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact.

But the Ancient Abyssal Blade was undamaged, thanks to its special material.

Zhang Ruochen's arms shivered. The Supreme Saint-class dragon soul and elephant soul appeared to resist the horrible energy of the war spear.

After retreating for a dozen steps, Zhang Ruochen could finally keep his foot firmly on the ground and divert the energy of the war spear.

"He made it?" Spear Fiend was shocked.

At first, this move of his could at least wound Zhang Ruochen, if not kill him. Little did he expect that Zhang Ruochen could not only withstand it but also came out unscathed.

Zhang Ruochen stretched and moved in a flash to rejoin with others.

It was a close call. If not for his body attaining the toughness just below the Supreme Sainthood, and the gathering of the Supreme Saint-class dragon and elephant souls in his arms, he could have been hurt or even killed.

The ground suddenly cracked open as giant vines grew out of the earth. The vines twined and struck at the giant formed by the 36 Rakshasa princes.

Upon leaving the snake's mouth, Ji Fanxin could now perform her spiritual power at whims and with better strength.

Thousands of vines emerged and drowned the giant in seconds. The vines would regenerate themselves after being cut in half. They had infinite life.

But that was not all of it; the vines started to bloom, and the flowers gave out a strange scent.

It was not an ordinary scent but highly toxic substance—so toxic that it could kill a Saint King cultivator if inhaled even just a little.

The giant was perfectly formed, but not without weaknesses. The all-pervasive flower scent was a problem for it.

“I will deal with this combat array while you go to collect the divine body,” said Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and made his move.

They were here for the Godstones and divine body, no point getting too serious with the Rakshasa.

As soon as they got their hands on the Godstones and divine body, they would walk away.

Zhang Ruochen stood in front of the snake head and summoned the Qiankun Realm.

As the divine body was too large, only Qiankun Realm was large enough to accommodate it.

A powerful suction force was released and got hold of the snake’s head as it tried to pull the divine body out of the rock.

Just then, Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed.

He had used all his strength to power the Qiankun Realm, but it was useless. The body of the snake just would not budge an inch, as if it had grown together with the earth.

“You are just wasting your energy, Zhang Ruochen. You need me if you want to take the divine body.”

The voice of the evil spirit suddenly spoke from inside the Qiankun Realm.

“What do you mean?”

“I mean, I have devoured the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will and know how to control the divine body. To me, this divine body is the most perfect body.” The evil spirit laughed in a hoarse voice.

“Then what are you waiting for?” A smile broke out on Zhang Ruochen’s face.

Immediately, the evil spirit abandoned its current Supreme Saint body, came out of the Qiankun Realm, and flew into the divine body.

Why still lingered in a Supreme Saint body when there was a better one?

Zhang Ruochen let the evil spirit have the divine body while he attacked the Grand Re-origination Array.

The Empyrean Extinction Array was too nasty. So he picked a lamer one.

Boom!

The Grand Re-origination Array collapsed on impact.

The 81 Rakshasa dukes were wounded, some even puking blood.

“Where are you all going?”

Xiang Chunan was in high fighting spirit as he cast out his Metal Demonic Crown.

While he was at it, he lunged out with a massive demonic energy and struck at a Class-2 duke.

Feng Yan and Pei Yutian did not sit idle. Together with Xiang Chunan, they killed their way out. Without the aid of combat arrays, those Rakshasa dukes were no longer a threat.

Despite the speed of these Rakshasa dukes, only less than one third of them made it into the Orbital Stealth Array while the rest of them were killed.

Just when the Orbital Stealth Array started to attack, Zhang Ruochen stood in front of them, blocking all the attacks with the Eight-Dragon Umbrella in the nick of time.

“Heavenly Dragon-Elephant!”

His arms shook as he performed the twelfth move of Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike.

A powerful energy rushed out of him, ten thousand Precepts of the Palm were formed, and Precepts of Truth were summoned.

Boom!

The dragon and elephant flew out, they were so large that they could almost block the sky. One could clear the shocking scene when looking down from the Cliff of Doom.

Chapter 1936 - The Divine Python's Corpse

Chapter 1936: The Divine Python's Corpse

“What the hell is this technique, so powerful that it causes such a horrible vision?”

“It must be an advanced saint technique. Who in the Saint Kingdom could successfully master an advanced saint technique?”

“That is Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike. If I am not mistaken, it must be Zhang Ruochen.”

“I thought Zhang Ruochen had just attained Lesser Precept World? How could he possibly master an advanced saint technique?”

...

The moment Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike's vision appeared, it caused a stir among the cultivators, who were all astounded.

There was hardly anyone who was still in Path's Anterior realm could master the advanced saint technique, let alone those still in the Lesser Precept World realm.

“You are not tired of dropping a bombshell, Brother Zhang, are you? I can't believe that you have mastered the twelfth move of Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike. It is rare to see anyone with such a level of persistence.” Zheng Yuan was impressed, nodding his head.

Apparently, Zhang Ruochen had more abilities than he could ever imagine. As he had become stronger, he had a higher hope of getting the support of their school of Taoism.

At the bottom of the Cliff of Doom, the Orbital Stealth Array almost collapsed after being beaten by Zhang Ruochen.

There was no question that once the Orbital Stealth Array collapsed, those Rakshasa dukes would suffer heavy casualties, and could be wiped out entirely.

Zhang Ruochen was not disappointed with this result, however. Had he attained the Greater Precept World in his cultivation base, the palm strike earlier would have destroyed the Orbital Stealth Array at once.

Let's just say that those Rakshasa dukes had performed almost impeccably in forming such a perfect combat array. Destroying it was difficult.

A violent tremor suddenly spread throughout the Cliff of Doom, as if there was an earthquake. Cracks started to form and spread in the cliff, covering the entire area in just the blink of an eye.

The next moment, the cliff collapsed with dust and debris rising in the air.

At the same time, shadows were seen lunging out of the bottom, their faces in panic.

“What the hell is happening?”

Those who fled from the bottom of the cliff were struck dumb, not knowing what was going on.

Every one of them had just felt a burst of horrible energy just now, and their instincts told them they had better flee or die.

An earth-shattering roar was heard coming from the bottom of the cliff. Changes appeared in heaven and earth as clouds gathered and surged with thunder and lightning.

From inside the thick fog, a massive object flew into the sky with terrifying energy.

That was a Divine Python's corpse, 3,000-yard long. The flesh and blood were gone and left the skull exposed. It was an extremely hideous sight.

Looking carefully, one would discover that the divine python had been attacked, judging by the hole of several yards across on the skull.

A slim, elegant shadow was seen lunged out of the mouth of the divine python's corpse. That person was none other than Luo Ji, the Rakshasa Princess.

The evil spirit had become one with the divine python's corpse, and naturally, it would not let Luo Ji go just like that. It exhaled an air that carried divine light spots to pull her back. But that did not work.

The Rakshasa Princess was wearing a Holy Cambric Robe, radiating a thousand beams of saint light as she flew through the surging air like a mermaid but at the speed of a light stream back to the side of the Rakshasa cultivators.

"I knew there was a divine body buried at the bottom of the cliff. But who is controlling the divine body now?"

"How could any really control the divine body? Aren't they afraid of being struck by calamity?"

"Let's just hope that it is not the Rakshasas who control the divine body. We can't let them take it away."

...

Those Celestial Court cultivators stared at the corpse of the divine python and had all kinds of conjecture on their minds.

Of course, they had retreated far enough so that the corpse of the divine python could not attack them.

The last thing they wanted was to get attacked by that thing, which was the body of a divinity that they were talking about.

When Zhang Ruochen and four others appeared on the head of the corpse of the divine python, everyone cottoned on to the fact of who was controlling the corpse of the divine python.

"Zhang Ruochen snatched the divine body from the Rakshasa. How the hell did he do that?"

At the time, many cultivators were shocked.

This time, the Rakshasa had sent 36 princes and 500 dukes, which was not a small number. Snatching the divine body from under their noses was extremely tough.

Standing in the air opposite the corpse of the divine python was a giant formed by 36 Rakshasa princes with the Orbital Stealth Array behind them.

And on the head of this giant was a tall and graceful figure, Luo Ji.

“Luo Ji has taken the Divinity Source from the divine body, Zhang Ruochen. That Divinity Source contains a Stellar Soul of God,” The corpse of the divine python said.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression slightly changed as the penny dropped. No wonder Luo Ji was using a decoy to hold him off earlier. It was now apparent that she had been quietly hiding inside the divine body. She had planned to take the Divinity Source from the beginning.

Luo Ji had discovered long ago that the Divinity Source remained inside the divine body. That was the reason she had gone to great lengths to assemble an army of Rakshasa fighters.

It seemed that Luo Ji must have used the Dark Divinity Lotus to evade the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will and infiltrated into the divine body.

While they and the Dark Manifestation of Divine Will were fighting to their death, Luo Ji harvested the Divinity Source unfettered.

In the end, they had still gotten played by Luo Ji.

At least, they got the Godstones and divine body. It was not all for nothing.

In that split second, many things that seemed bizarre earlier had become clear. Zhang Ruochen had to admit that Luo Ji was incredibly crafty. He could not be too careful with her.

“You got me again this time, Luo Ji,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“Is this a compliment? I am happy I did. If not, how could I get the Divinity Source and the Stellar Soul of God?” Luo Ji put her hand to cover her mouth as she smiled. “But you have also gotten something. At least, you have the Godstones and the divine body. We both got what we wanted.”

“She is bloody arrogant, Big Brother. Kill them and take back the Divinity Source and the Stellar Soul of God. How could we let them have these two valuable things?” Xiang Chunan rolled up his sleeves. How he wished he could get the things back now.

Everyone knew how valuable the Divinity Source and the Stellar Soul of God were. It was especially true for the Stellar Soul of God that could harness the power of the Divine Planet in the sky. Legend had it that if a Supreme Saint could master a complete Stellar Soul of God, he would be deemed a pseudo god, invincible in the realm of Supreme Saint.

Of course, the Stellar Soul of God that Luo Ji got was incomplete.

This divine python had been dead for god-know-how-many years. Although the Stellar Soul of God remained, it was about to wither, and what was left of it was just a tiny residue.

Even then, it still had great value, extremely beneficial to Luo Ji’s self-cultivation.

Luo Ji was the offspring of a deity, and she surely had some way to refine the Stellar Soul of God.

Once she did that, her spiritual power would get a tremendous boost, and she could harness power of the Divine Planet that the divine python had left behind. More importantly, she could gain insight into the secret of achieving divinity, which was the dream of all cultivators.

“You had better keep your mouth shut, Boorish Xiang! I am not going to go down to your level. But that doesn’t mean I will not kill you.

“Zhang Ruochen, if you will excuse me, I will go to refine the Divinity Source and the Stellar Soul of God now. You can come to the Battlefield of Merits in Eastern Region if you miss me. I am looking forward to it!”

Luo Ji beamed, her big round eyes enchanting as she winked at Zhang Ruochen.

The next second, she and all the Rakshasa fighters disappeared from sight as she performed a Great Dimensional Shift.

“Why didn’t you do something, Big Brother?” Xiang Chunan had a puzzled look in his eyes.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head slightly. “Mind you, Luo Ji is a dimensional manipulator. Unlike what you think, she is not that easy to deal with. We can’t stop her if she wants to leave. Besides, there is an army of Rakshasa fighters with her. We may not get any advantage over her if we were to fight.”

He had a better understanding of Luo Ji after they crossed paths with one another a few times. It might seem that he could get an upper hand during a fight with her, but in reality, not by far.

Mainly because Luo Ji would overwhelm him with numbers every time. If ten cultivators are all it takes to do a task, she would send a hundred, or even a thousand. She would not give you any chance of fighting back.

As the Qiankun Realm was opened, Zhang Ruochen kept the corpse of the divine python inside it. The evil spirit had just started to control the divine body, and it would take some time for them to coalesce into one.

While he lost the Divinity Source and the Stellar Soul of God, the divine body still possessed some serious strength. Once the evil spirit and the divine body completely coalesced into one, they would wield immense combat strength, much more powerful than the earlier body of the Supreme Saint.

They moved in a flash and reappeared on the white cloud where Zheng Yuan was.

“Thank you for your help, Brother Zheng.” Zhang Ruochen cupped her fists.

Zheng Yuan held up his hand. “Think nothing of it. Only Chixing Shenzi had come. But all it took was just a blow for it to beat a hasty retreat. So I am here just as a rubbernecker. By the way, congratulations for taking the divine body, Brother Zhang!”

“I just got lucky. But Luo Ji still had us fooled, which is embarrassing,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Luo Ji might not be the best in terms of strength, but few could match her as she is incredibly smart. Besides, I have got intel that Luo Ji has mastered the legendary Transformation Technique. She is now better than the Smiling Faceshifter,” said Zheng Yuan.

“Transformation Technique?”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart missed a beat.

No wonder Luo Yi had changed into another person, evading the Divine Eye of Origin of Maiden of a Thousand Stars and Yuan Xianzi, even fooling Xiang Chunan’s Clairvoyance.

Apparently, the Transformation Technique was a seriously powerful secret technique, which involved not only impersonation but also decoy technique.

“Let’s go back now!” said Zhang Yuan.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Golden Dragon Carriage, and the six of them climbed onboard.

With nine dragon souls pulling the carriage, it faded into a beam of golden light and disappeared into the horizon.

Those cultivators gathering at the Cliff of Doom were frustrated. But there was nothing they could do but leave. Staying would only be a waste of time as there was no serendipity here.

Once back to the Northern Region base, Zhang Ruochen and his mates immediately went into a closed-door self-cultivation. They wanted to increase their strength more before the next battle broke out.

It was important for Zhang Ruochen. He wanted to attain the Greater Precept World, and only then he was confident enough to get the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree trunk.

Getting from Lesser Precept World to Greater Precept World requires one to form over 10-million Precepts, then let the Precepts to gush out of the Sea of Qi and through the body to form a big cycle.

Under normal circumstances, as long as there is enough accumulation, everyone could move from the Lesser Precept

World to the Greater Precept World. All it takes is time.

Zhang Ruochen was sitting under the Sundial. The Precepts in the Heavenly Stream was increasing. With his current cultivation base and the help of the Canon of Truth and the Imperial Artifact of Precept, his cultivation of the Precepts was extremely quick. He could at least form 300,000-400,000 of them every year.

He could have made it even quicker, but he was diverting some energy into cultivating the Paths of Time, Dimension, Sword, Palm, and Fist. So his speed became a lot slower.

He specialized in the Path of Time, the Path of Dimension, Sword Path, Palm Path, and Fist Path. By only cultivating these Paths could he achieve his maximum potential in terms of strength.

Chapter 1937 - An Array Wizard

Chapter 1937: An Array Wizard

Three years of isolation pushed the number of Precepts in Zhang Ruochen's body past the 10-million mark and stepped into the territory of the Greater Precept World.

The Greater Precept World was a complete realm formed when the precepts burst out of the Sea of Qi, flew through the meridians, blood, and Saint Veins before they spread throughout the body.

The application of the Precepts would go to the next level when it came to this stage. The speed and power of the saint technique gained a substantial increase.

Zhang Ruochen did not dive into the next realm headfirst. Instead, he really thought about how to weave the perfect Greater World and lay a solid foundation for forming the Precept Domain next.

After attaining Nine-Step Saint Kinghood, each step was meticulously calculated. Any mistake, however minute it was, could have a great impact on the next step of his self-cultivation.

After thinking long and hard, he started to break into the next realm by performing Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture.

Ten million Precepts went active instantly, pounding through to the next level.

At some point, the restraint of the Sea of Qi was broken through. Ten million Precepts rushed out of the Sea of Qi.

The Heavenly Stream flowed out of the Sea of Qi and circulated slowly through the meridians, blood and saint veins.

Zhang Ruochen was shivering slightly as a slight pain sensation hit.

The entrance of the Precept into meridians, and blood and saint veins were not an easy one. If not careful, it could hurt the meridians, and blood and saint veins, or even worse, damage the entire person.

The fortunate thing was, Zhang Ruochen's physique was extremely robust now, just below the Supreme Sainthood. His meridians and blood and saint veins were strong. He felt uncomfortable when the Precepts entered them, but they did not cause him any harm.

Unlike that of other cultivators, the structure of his meridians, and blood and saint veins were much more complex. This was because not only he had opened up 36 meridians when he was in Huangji Realm, but also his three meridians had been destroyed by King Zhongying before, almost quashing his hope of practicing self-cultivation. But with immense willpower, he developed his three meridians using the Qi of chaos all by himself.

Back then, he illuminated the universe with his body, and let his body's three meridians evolve with the Precept of heaven and earth. He changed from an Acquired Five-Element Chaotic Body to an Inborn Five-Element Chaotic Body.

The structure of his three meridians were so complex that it seemed as intricate as the galaxies in the universe.

It was extremely difficult for him to form a perfect Great Percept World.

But he had powerful spiritual power, which had attained the last stage of 59th order. He could perfectly master the three meridians of his body, and if he was thoughtful enough, forming the Greater Precept World was just a matter of time.

The Precepts finally formed in all his meridians, blood and saint veins, looking as if a complex star chart.

The Heavenly Stream sped up as it flowed along the three meridians in an endless cycle.

Countless Precepts shone out of his body, moving at an incredible speed and vigor.

Zhang Ruochen had successfully attained the Greater Precept World. Ten million Precepts in the meridians, blood and saint veins formed a perfect big cycle.

The saint Qi in his body compressed and changed, which was something that would happen every time his cultivation base broke into another realm.

Before long, the level of saint Qi had dropped in half as some impurities were rid of, helping his saint Qi achieve a higher quality.

He immediately took out the Godstones and performed an Empyrean Emperor Ming's Scripture to refine and absorb to replenish his saint Qi.

“Finally, the Great Precept World! It feels really different!”

Feeling the flowing Precepts in his body, a smile broke out on his face.

Right now, there were over 11 million Precepts, over 10,000 Precepts of Time, over 30,000 Precepts of Dimension, 480,000 Precepts of Sword, 420,000 Precepts of Palm, and 370,000 Precepts of Fist, which were impressive.

It was difficult to practice the Path of the Ancients and the Path of Supreme Saint. But it was relatively easy to achieve 3,000 Major Paths and 100,000 Minor Paths.

But if all that a person practices is minor and major Paths, that person's strength will go nowhere, no matter how many Precepts have been cultivated.

Given the same level of cultivation, the strength difference between a person who majors the Path of Supreme Saint and the Major Path is huge.

As Zhang Ruochen clenched his fists, innumerable Precepts appeared. It was so much easier to form the Greater Precept World and summon the Precepts than in the past.

Now, when he performed a punch and immediately summoned a massive number of Precepts of Fist, he could even shatter a Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact.

After some time of practicing, four Godstones had been exhausted, and the Sundial stopped running.

As the battle was imminent, he could not keep practicing behind closed-door for long. So he had used only four Godstones and kept the remaining eight for another time after the battle.

His target was only to attain the Great Precept World in the first place.

Next, attaining Precept Domain from Great Precept World would be ten, and even a hundred times, more difficult than going from Lesser Precept World to Greater Precept World. It would not do with only eight Godstones.

Of course, it was not entirely hopeless; he could fast-track the Precept Domain cultivation if he was lucky.

Legend had it that some rare substances in heaven and the earth could help cultivators form Precept Domain.

There was one more thing that Zhang Ruochen felt happy about, which was that after the Ancient Abyssal Blade refined those many weapons, its grade had improved to become a Ninth Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact. Coupled with the rise from the purple Godstones, its power rivaled that of a Tenth Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact.

The elevation of the Ancient Abyssal Blade's grade had made his Sword Path even more powerful. There was no doubt about it.

Besides, the evil spirit had completely coalesced with the corpse of the divine python. It had a perfect control of the divine python's power. This was making him more powerful than before.

“It is too difficult to form a Precept Domain. I still couldn't do it after four good years.” Xiang Chunan was frustrated.

He had long attained Great Precept World, but still could not form Precept Domain.

Xiang Chunan had been extremely lucky. During the years when he was separated from Zhang Ruochen, he had some incredible encounters, his cultivation base improving tremendously, just like Murong Yue did.

Without those encounters, he would have fallen far behind Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen patted him on the shoulder. “Be patient. I have just attained Great Precept World. Treat it as a handicap race to save myself.”

“I haven’t formed Precept Domain, too. Why so desperate? Aren’t you confident of yourself?” said Feng Yan.

His cultivation base was of Great Precept World, too. He still had a long way to go before he could form Precept Domain.

Speaking of which, Ji Fanxin was the only person among them who had formed Precept Domain. In contrast, Pei Yutian did not even attain Great Precept World.

The Precept Domain realm was a hurdle, the crossing of which meant Supreme Sainthood. Many cultivators had failed to cross this hurdle in the past.

“I might not have formed Precept Domain, but I can beat an ordinary Precept Domain fighter with only a hand.” Xiang Chunan chuckled as he quickly corrected his mindset.

He was still confident of his ability.

“I will only say you are great if you defeat those Precept-Domain shenzis and princes,” said Feng Yan.

“That will be a piece of cake. The Metal Demonic Crown alone will crush them to death.”

Feng Yan had no word for it. Xiang Chunan was probably right on this one; not everyone had a Supreme Artifact, after all.

The Five-Element Temple cultivators brought Zhang Ruochen and his mates to the manor in the base where they saw from afar Zhang Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong talking to what might look like a well-cultured, middle-aged man.

They went up to Zheng Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong, and cupped their hands in greeting. “Brother Zheng. Brother Xuanyuan.”

By addressing them as brothers, it would definitely help them build rapport and sound friendlier.

“Brother Zhang, you all had come out at the right time. Let’s meet our senior, Lu Baiming. Brother Lu is Five-Element Temple’s youngest array master.” Zheng Yuan broke out in a smile.

“Nice to meet you, Brother Lu.”

Zhang Ruochen and his mates cupped their hands at Lu Baiming as a sign of respect.

It surprised the five of them. They did not expect that the person whom Zheng Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong were waiting for was an array master.

An array master’s spiritual power was at least at the pinnacle of 59th order, an attainment in the path of array that no ordinary people could understand

Before this, the only array masters that Zhang Ruochen had encountered were Mr. Godcliff and the Nether Clan’s Immortal Ming, who was only a near-array master and had not really taken that step.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen finally understood what Zheng Yuan had meant when he said that an array master was of great help in attacking Xianji Mountain.

Xianji Mountain was where Xianji Sect, the largest sect in Northern Region previously, was based and laid with many higher-order arrays. If the Deathkin controlled Xianji Mountain, attack from the outside would be difficult.

What had really happened was that a Deathkin array master was in Xianji Mountain and controlling those arrays. If there was no array master from the Celestial Court, they could forget about entering Xianji Mountain.

Lu Baiming let out a smile. “Make yourself comfortable, Brother Zhang, Fairy of a Hundred Flowers. I was told of your

achievements. In the Sword Vault Palace in Central Region, you all wiped out the hundred-thousand-strong Immortal Vampire army, and gave the Rakshasa a hard time with incredible wits and courage at the Cliff of Doom. I am really impressed. Now we are attacking Xianji Mountain and need the help of you all.”

“I was a team effort, Brother Lu. We will do whatever we could to attack Xianji Mountain,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“Please be seated, and let us discuss the details,” said Zheng Yuan.

So Zhang Ruochen and four others sat down.

As the attack on Xianji Mountain was drawing near, they needed to know the details so they could make the preparation for it.

As soon as they sat down, Ji Fanxin talked to Zhang Ruochen through telepathy.

“Lu Baiming is no ordinary array master. While Mr. Godcliff took over a thousand years to become one, he took merely two hundred years, and he is not even five hundred years old at that. If not for his vital role on the Battlefield of Merits, he could have become a Supreme Saint of spiritual power long ago.

“In terms of the mastery of arrays, Lu Baiming was far ahead of Mr. Godcliff. Even Neverwithier Supreme Saints could not hold a candle to him. There is a rumor that he is trying to attain arch array mastership from Saint Kinghood. If successful, he will become a legend.”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat.

“From Saint Kinghood to arch-mastership? How?”

In his understanding, from Saint Kinghood to array mastership was the limit. Only spiritual-power Supreme Saint could become an arch array master.

“It is entirely possible. A wizard had once done that. But it has been a long time ago, and probably no one remembers it,”

said Ji Fanxin.

There were many talented people in the Celestial Court, and few could impress her. But Lu Baiming impressed not only her but also got her admiration. No one could tell how far things could go in the future.

Chapter 1938 - The Three Tu Brothers

Chapter 1938: The Three Tu Brothers

Zhang Ruochen's emotions fluctuated. With Ji Fanxin's excellent eye for people, a person whom she regards highly was definitely not someone mediocre.

For him to be an Array Master just only after two hundred years of cultivation was indeed terrifying.

To be able to train such a young Array Master was enough to see how amazing the foundation of the Five-Element Temple was.

"We will commence the assault tomorrow morning. Senior Brother Lu will unravel the array in Xianji Mountain first, then confront and restrain that Deathkin Array Master.

"Based on our reconnaissance, the Deathkin have set up eight barracks in Xianji Mountain, imitating the Bagua Formation, resulting in many changes. We need to attack all eight of the barracks at the same time to avoid any complications. This now involves the issue of manpower distribution."

"I had discussed this with Brother Xuanyuan, and wants Junior Brother Zhang and Fairy Baihua to be responsible attacking one of the barracks. You don't need to destroy it, but only hold them back."

Zhen Yuan spoke and roughly explained the plan.

Without a doubt, the eight Deathkin barracks were not simple outposts, and even containment would require top powerhouses to lead the attack.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin were able to destroy the hundred thousand strong Immortal Vampire army, and kill several Shenzi, and they were also able to seize the corpse of the Divine Python from the Rakshashas. That was enough to prove their strength to everyone.

Looking at Ji Fanxin, Zhang Ruochen said. “Since Brother Zhen Yuan and Brother Xuanyuan trust us, we will go all out.”

“Then that’s settled. The Northern Region Basecamp will organize an army for you to lead. I’ll take you to have a look later.” Zhen Yuan smiled.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said. “Aside from us, who else will be the commanders?”

For him to ask this question, he actually wanted to know which elites were in the Northern Region Basecamp, so he could have some foreknowledge in advance.

Before Zhen Yuan could speak, Xuanyuan Liekong laughed and said. “Before this, the other eight commanders have already been determined, namely: Fairy Yuan, Ling Kongzi, Red Fox King, Feng Wuxing, Nie Yundao, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect and You Yuexin. With the two of you, everyone is assembled.

“Brother Xuanyuan and Brother Zhen Yuan aren’t leading the troops?” A look of curiosity appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s face.

Xuanyuan Liekong shook his head and said. “Both me and Zhen Yuan, and a few others have other missions. We will oversee the overall situation, and deal with a few tricky Deathkin folks.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen suddenly understood why. A person that Xuanyuan Liekong would consider tricky to deal with should not be underestimated, and they were most likely to be Shenzi or Princes.

Clearly, for the assault on Xianji Mountain, Xuanyuan Liekong and Zhen Yuan had made ample preparations. Once the battle starts, many powerful characters will show up.

There were countless Celestial Court cultivators who had come to Kunlun Realm, and as the most brutal battlefield of the Northern Region Battlefield of Merit, how can there not be a large number of powerhouses?

After chatting for a while, Zhen Yuan personally took Zhang Ruochen and the other four to the army assembly grounds.

As the assault of Xianji Mountain was no trivial matter, they had only selected the strong whose cultivation base must be above a Saint. Anyone lower than that were not even considered to act as cannon fodder.

In order to facilitate assignment, Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong had set up a military camp in the basecamp, so all of the mobilized powerhouses had already gathered there.

Zhen Yuan led Zhang Ruochen and his group directly to the main camp, and then used telepathy to summon the other seven commanders over for everyone to familiarize themselves with each other.

Zhang Ruochen discovered that he had met most of the people present, and only a few were unfamiliar faces.

He recognized Fairy Yuan, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect and You Yuexin. The three represented Shangyuan Sect, the Fane of Youshen and the Blackdemon Realm respectively.

As fellow cultivators of the Blackdemon Realm, You Yuexin was many times stronger than Shi Lingkun. She cultivated the Demonic Nethermoon Tapestry of the 36 Demonic Engravings, which was the same as Murong Yue except for her cultivation base being a little higher.

He had also met the Red Fox King in the meeting hall but the two had never spoken before.

As for Ling Kongzi, Feng Wuxing and Nie Yundao, Zhang Ruochen had no impression of them at all. But for them to be chosen as commanders showed that they were no pushovers.

“Brother, Feng Wuxing is of the Feng clan, and is a cousin of mine. He had a very powerful Supreme Saint bloodline, and had already cultivated to the pinnacle of Heaven’s Reach realm. He’s considered one of the leadership characters of the Feng clan in the Northern Region Basecamp.” Feng Yan sent a telepathic message.

Hearing this, a thought sprang up in Zhang Ruochen’s mind. A Supreme Saint heir that is already at the pinnacle of Heaven’s Reach realm, his power should be able to match those of the

Path's Anterior realm, and was far stronger than the Blackflame General.

"I am Ling Kongzi, a disciple of The Thousand-Sword Mountain. I've long heard of your good name. And at today's meeting, I can see your extraordinary bearing." Ling Kongzi said in a salute.

Zhang Ruochen immediately returned the salute, saying. "You flatter me, Brother Ling. The Thousand-Sword Mountain is a holy land for the path of sword and I had long been admiring of that place. I hope there would be an opportunity for me to learn about the secrets of swordsmanship from Brother Ling."

The Thousand-Sword Mountain is the number one holy land for swordsmanship in the Sword-King Realm, with an extremely long history and a deep-rooted foundation.

And the Sword King Realm is one of the top 100 realms in the universe. It was extremely powerful with many gods presiding over it.

Especially when one of the ancient masters of the Thousand-Sword Mountain had already survived two Yuanhui catastrophes, and his cultivation level is unfathomable.

Zhang Ruochen could sense that Ling Kongzi had a very potent Supreme Saint blood flowing in him, and the invisible sword will exuding from his body is extremely powerful, thus his strength was not to be underestimated.

Ling Kongzi smiled and said. "I've also heard that Brother Zhang your cultivation in the path of the sword is very high. If we have the time, we should have a good exchange."

"Sure, I'll be in your care then, Brother Ling." Zhang Ruochen said.

Since the other party showed good intentions to him, Zhang Ruochen would not give him the cold shoulder. After all, having more friends is better than more enemies.

At this moment, Fairy Yuan, Feng Wuxing, and the Red Fox King all nodded slightly as a greeting.

Nie Yundao, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect, and You Yuexin were all indifferent, and obviously did not want to see Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was slightly surprised. It was normal for the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect and You Yuexin to not want to see him, but why did Nie Yundao reacted like that?

As if he knew what Zhang Ruochen was thinking, Feng Yan sent a telepathic message. “Brother, Nie Yundao is a cultivator from the Soul Realm, and belongs to the Heavenly Realm faction. You had acted against King Daxi in the past, so Nie Yundao bore a hatred against you. So you need to be on guard.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen realized what was going on. The cultivators of the Soul Realm were very close with Shang Ziyang, it would have been strange if Nie Yundao would want to see him.

Zhen Yuan said. “For the battle tomorrow, I hope all of you can cooperate well, and break through Xianji Mountain in one fell swoop. Only success is permitted for this battle, otherwise, the situation in the Northern Region will be very unfavorable to us.”

As he said that, Zhen Yuan turned and left, clearly having something else to do.

The camp became quiet, and the atmosphere appeared a little awkward.

“Zhang Ruochen, you better be careful. The battlefield is very chaotic, and you may very well lose your life if you are not careful.” The Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect sneered, breaking the silence.

Zhang Ruochen said. “You’re right. If you happen to die on the battlefield, I will definitely help you to collect your corpse. After all, the corpse of a Primordial race is very valuable.”

A cold murderous intent flashed in the eyes of the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect’s eyes. If there was no restraint, he would have wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen there and then.

“Hmph, let’s wait and see.”

Saying that, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect walked out of the camp.

You Yuexin stared at Zhang Ruochen for a moment, and left without saying a word.

Nie Yundao made no secret of his killing intent against Zhang Ruochen, and said coldly. “Zhang Ruochen, I will definitely take back what belonged to Her Highness, and kill you.”

Compared to the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect and You Yuexin, Nie Yundao was undoubtedly a lot more direct, and did not bother covering up his true intentions.

After restraining his killing intent a little, Nie Yundao walked out.

He was afraid that if he continued to stay here, he would not be able to hold back from striking Zhang Ruochen.

Seeing this situation, everyone else was no longer in the mood for anything and soon dispersed.

On the battlefield, one can only rely on oneself, and it was difficult to count upon others.

So instead of wasting time here, they might as well go back to recharge.

But Fairy Yuan was much more enthusiastic, and brought Zhang Ruochen and the other four to their camp.

This time, the Northern Region Basecamp had organized eight armies, with fifty thousand troops each. Among them were a thousand Saint King elites, while the others were all Saint-realm cultivators.

As soon as they entered the camp, about a dozen elites came to greet them. However, they did not look like a greeting party as all of them had unfriendly looks in their eyes.

Leading the ground were three handsome young men with the same appearance. The aura exuding from their bodies were extremely powerful, and had clearly reached the Heaven's Reach realm.

The other eight person behind them were also powerful elites of the Precept Dominion realm.

“Brother, they are the three Tu brothers, named Tu Tian, Tu Di, Tu Ren. They are the heirs of a supreme Saint of Wanxu Realm. Each of them alone had the ability to sweep through the Heaven’s Reach realm. When three of them were to work together, they could easily fight a Path’s Anterior elite. I never thought that they would be assigned to this army.” Feng Yan said telepathically.

He knew that sort of personalities the Tu brothers were, so the moment he saw them, he felt a slight uneasiness.

Sure enough, Tu Tian said in an unfriendly tone. “Zhang Ruochen, I heard that you are the commander of our unit?”

“Yes, indeed.” Zhang Ruochen nodded.

Tu Tian’s eyes became sharper, and he said coldly. “You want to be the commander, and did you asked us three brothers for our opinions?”

“Was there such a need?” Zhang Ruochen said lightly.

Tu Tian said. “Of course, what right do you think you have to be our commander? With your Lesser Precept-World-level cultivation?”

“Seems like you lot are unconvinced.” Zhang Ruochen said

Tu Di took a step forward, saying. “If you want to convince us, then you need to display enough strength.”

Tu Ren agreed. “Yes, if you can defeat us three, we will be willing to listen to you. Otherwise, you can forget about commanding anyone in this camp.”

With that said, the lines were drawn. The three Tu brothers came here to find trouble, and refused to accept Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong’s arrangements.

They could not directly disobey Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong’s orders, but they wanted to use their own strength to force Zhang Ruochen to give up the commander’s post.

Zhang Ruochen did not care about the title, but he had promised Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong, plus the three Tu Brothers were being very obstrusive, so he now had to take on the role of the commander now.

“Since you lot insist, then I can only fulfill your wishes.”
Zhang Ruochen said coldly.

Hearing that, the three Tu brothers could not help but smile. They were really afraid that Zhang Ruochen would not agree, and that would be troublesome instead.

Tu Di sneered. “There is a martial arts arena in the camp. Come with us.”

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything else, and stepped forward to follow naturally.

In the world of the cultivators, the strong were always respected, and truth was always established by fists.

For Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong to ask him to become a commander, they had really presented him with a tough question. Did they deliberately wanted to test his strength?

Not long after, the group arrived at the martial arts arena which was already packed full of people. The soldiers of the entire camp should have arrived.

It was obvious that this was arranged in advance by the Tu brothers so that everyone could come and witness, saving the trouble of Zhang Ruochen not admitting defeat when he loses.

The three Tu brothers stepped into the martial arts arena first, and took a triple position, ready to fight at any moment.

With a calm expression, Zhang Ruochen walked into the martial arts arena. He had just broken through to the realm of Greater Precept-World, and he could use these three brothers to test the results of his cultivation.

Chapter 1939 - Strength Begets Respect

Chapter 1939: Strength Begets Respect

Above the camp, upon a thick white cloud, Zhen Yuan, Xuanyuan Liekong, and Lu Baiming were sitting together, drinking tea, and chatting very leisurely.

Lu Baiming had deployed an extremely delicate formation array to cover up this white cloud, and no one could discover them.

“The three Tu brothers are always belligerent, and I don’t know if Zhang Ruochen could make them submit,” Xuanyuan Liekong said.

As fellow cultivators from the Wanxu Realm, it was without a doubt he knew the three Tu brothers best, including their character and strength.

“How powerful the Tu brothers are?” Zhen Yuan asked.

Xuanyuan Liekong said with a smile. “The three brothers had broken through to the Heaven’s Reach realm for not too long a time, and is miles away from reaching the pinnacle of the Heaven’s Reach realm. However, their individual strength is no lesser than the Blackflame General at his peak, perhaps stronger even. If they were to fight together, an ordinary Path’s Anterior powerhouse may not even be their match.”

Hearing that, Zhen Yuan and Lu Baiming were slightly surprised. The strength of the Tu brothers were much stronger than they had expected.

“That is to say, the three Tu brothers had reached the upper-middle level of Path’s Anterior realm. Are you two sure Zhang Ruochen can do anything to them?” Lu Baiming frowned slightly.

It was not wrong to test Zhang Ruochen’s strength, but the right opponent must be picked.

Zhen Yuan smiled and said. “Brother Lu, you don’t have to worry. Junior Brother Zhang is the Scion of Time and Space, with multiple techniques up his sleeves. Since he dared to answer the challenge, that means he must be confident. Let’s just observe it from here.”

Lu Baiming did not say anything else and cast his gaze onto the martial arts arena on the ground below. He was indeed looking forward to what sort of amazing performance Zhang Ruochen would put on display.

Zhang Ruochen walked slowly into the martial arts arena, and faced the three Tu brothers indifferently.

By now, battle was inevitable.

It was not a bad idea to get some warm up before fighting the Deathkin.

Immediately, one of the elites activated a formation array inside the arena, to avoid the spread of the combat damage.

“Zhang Ruochen, you should make the first move, lest you may not even have a chance later.” Tu Di said arrogantly.

Zhang Ruochen replied. “It’s better if you make the first move, let me see what techniques you lot have.”

“You are really arrogant. In that case, don’t blame us three for not giving you a chance. I can defeat you even without the help of my eldest and second brother. Take this! God-King Fist!” Tu Di sneered, his eyes contemptuous.

He immediately shove any pleasantries aside against Zhang Ruochen. The moment he struck, hundreds of thousands of precepts of the fist gathered upon his fist as the power of the land was mobilized. An extremely massive God King Phantom appeared behind him, it was extremely powerful as it releasing an unparalleled aura.

“The God-King’s Fist. One of Wanxu Realm’s most famous fist technique. It is said that once cultivated to its apex, it could transform into a divine power, and there is nothing it cannot defeat.

“Tu Ren’s God King’s Fist has already been cultivated to the level of Intermediate-level saint art, and its the most powerful Tongxuan level of the Intermediate-level saint arts. By truly mastering the essence of the God King’s Fist, the strength is not much different from any ordinary high-level saint arts.”

Feng Yan wore a worried look and was concerned about Zhang Ruochen.

In fact, when Tu Ren struck, Zhang Ruochen acted at the same time as a divine river appeared around him, endlessly twisting and turning.

The God King Fist was extremely powerful while the Luoshui Fist was relatively gentle instead. Zhang Ruochen intended to use gentleness to overcome brute force, and nullify Tu Ren’s attack.

Three hundred and seventy thousand precepts of the fist appeared, and a vigorous saint Qi continued to surge out of his acupoints.

By refining his physical body to the realm of Beneath a Supreme Saint, Zhang Ruochen’s 144 acupoints had been opened up large, and each of them were massive lakes of saint Qi, rendering his own power almost limitless.

While Tu Ren’s cultivation level may be two realms higher than him, but the precept of the fist he had cultivated was not much more than Zhang Ruochen’s, so he was not afraid to fight him with fist techniques.

“Nine-Fold Twist and Turns.”

The divine river surged, twisting and winding like a divine python as it coiled towards the God King Phantom.

BAAAMMM!!

The divine river swiftly collapsed, but it had also shaved away the power of the God King Fist little by little.

By the end of it, while there were still some force landing on Zhang Ruochen’s body, it was no longer capable of causing him any harm, not even able to make him take half a step back.

“Hmm?”

Seeing this, Tu Ren was obviously very surprised.

He was an elite of the Heaven's Reach realm, and was also a Prince. Even if he had not used his full strength earlier, he was still using a Tongxuan-level saint art, and under normal conditions, a normal Heaven's Reach elite would not be able to block it, but Zhang Ruochen had taken it as if it was nothing.

Above the clouds, a look of surprise appeared on Lu Baiming's face. “Junior Brother Zhen, Junior Brother Zhang's cultivation level had clearly reached the realm of Greater Precept-World, why did you say it was Lesser Precept-World?”

“A few days ago, Junior Brother Zhang's cultivation level was indeed Lesser Precept-World. It seems like he had made some breakthroughs during his seclusion in the past few days.” Zhen Yuan too was somewhat surprised.

Taking only four days to break through a cultivation realm. If word got out, barely anyone would believe it.

“When he was still in the Lesser Precept-World realm, Zhang Ruochen could kill the Blackflame General with just a slash. Now that he had broken through to the realm of Greater Precept-World, his strength will inevitably increase exponentially. I believe the coming battle will be very exciting indeed.” Xuanyuan Liekong said with a laugh.

While he was positive about Zhang Ruochen, the three Tu brothers were no pushovers. If Zhang Ruochen wanted to defeat them, he must show his true strength.

“Again.”

Tu Ren's eyes became sharper suddenly, as he punched again.

A massive surge of saint Qi and the power of the land, the God King Phantom suddenly became more corporeal, appeared even more majestic as if it was going to crush the space.

“The Passage of Divines and Revenants.”

Zhang Ruochen was calm, as he performed the eighteenth style of the Luoshui Fist.

When the fist technique was unleashed, two massive phantoms appeared, one bright one dark, appeared, stepping upon the divine river like a Divine and a Revenant walking side-by-side. The scene was strange and terrifying, and its power devastating.

BOOM!!

Both of Zhang Ruochen's iron fists struck out, and the phantom of the Divine and the Revenant collided with the God King Phantom, and the precepts of heaven and earth suddenly became chaotic.

It was just that Tu Ren's God King Fist was extremely powerful and crushed the phantoms of the Divine and the Revenant, seemingly unstoppable.

A cold light flashed past Zhang Ruochen's eyes as the divine river roiled beneath his feet. He lifted both arms as they burned in raging flames, turning into two grand clouds of fire.

“Song of Broken Souls.”

The tenth technique of the Luoshui fist was unleashed, as the divine river flew into the sky, and flowed between the two fire clouds, forming a very bizarre scenery.

In the end, the God King Fist power was fully exhausted, and was completely blocked.

“Blades of Luoshui.”

Zhang Ruochen no longer wanted to be on the defensive, and immediately launched an attack.

With the 30th style of the Luoshui Fist, the divine river transformed into a giant sword, with a terrifying indestructible sword will inside it.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen mobilized nearly 70,000 thousand Precepts of Truth in his body and infused it into the giant sword, causing it to take form and its strength multiplied as it appeared unparalleledly sharp.

“Shatter.”

Tu Ren roared violently, and blasted out a simple and crude punch.

BAAAMMM!!

The giant sword started to crack, and then burst into pieces.

Although Tu Ren had managed to defeat the Blades of Luoshui, but he also suffered some shocks as his body took two involuntary steps backwards.

This time, he was actually at a disadvantage.

“Using the Precepts of Truth, your power can actually increase by eight folds.” Tu Ren was shocked.

Almost every major realms will send genius disciples to the Celestial Domain of Truth to study the Path of Truth.

It was just that the Path of Truth was an ancient path and was extremely complex. Forget about reaching a high level, even getting started itself was exceedingly difficult.

The vast majority of cultivators could only use the Precepts of Truth to unleash two times the attack power, which was not particularly meaningful.

Using the Path of Truth to unleash seven times the attack power was already enough to be well-known across the Celestial Domain of Truth, and many of the divine disciples of the Fane of Truth could not achieve that.

As for eight times the attack power, aside from the very few divine disciples of the Fane of Truth, there was almost no hope for anyone else to achieve that.

Also, under normal circumstances, activating the Path of Truth would require some preparation time and cannot be used at will.

And Zhang Ruochen not only used the Path of Truth to unleash eight times the attack power, but he had also used it very deftly, without needing too long a time to prepare.

All of this stemmed from him possessing twelve of ten thousandths of the Canon of Truth.

As the geniuses of the Wanxu Realm, the three Tu brothers had naturally also went to the Celestial Domain of Truth. Unfortunately, they were not particularly talented in Path of Truth. To them, the Path of Truth was pretty much pointless so they did not put much effort in understanding the Path of Truth.

“Why aren’t you lot joining hands yet? I don’t have that much time to waste.” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Strike together.”

Tu Tian said coldly.

“Whoosh.”

Their figures flickered, and the three Tu brothers took different positions, surrounding Zhang Ruochen in the middle.

All of them deployed the same fist mudra as countless saint path precepts appeared, attacking the power of heaven and earth.

The three had similiar power attributes and had combined perfectly, forming a massive and corporeal God King Phantom that stood very tall, seemingly capable of breaching the heavens, and crush mountains and rivers.

The God King Phantom exuded a terrifying pressure as if a real God King had descended upon the world with overwhelming power.

A laughter appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s eyes, and his murmured. “Divine aura? No matter how you imitate it, it is still a fake.”

His saint Qi revolved as it rapidly rushed into his left leg.

In an instant, Zhang Ruochen’s left leg turned crimson as a hundred thousand dense precepts appeared as rings of scorching heat wave appeared at the sole of his foot and surged out in all directions, causing the entire arena to shake violently.

His previous refinement of the Sunleaf not only allowed Zhang Ruochen to refine his body until the realm of Beneath a Supreme Saint, all of the hundred thousand Precept of Gods in

Yanshen'shen's leg too were also fully refined. Now he could freely use Yanshen'shen's leg as he willed it. The higher his cultivation level was, the stronger the power he could unleash.

“This aura...”

Feeling the terrifying power emanating from Zhang Ruochen, the three brothers' expression changed dramatically.

Impacted by the divine aura, the God King Phantom they had created showed vague signs of disintegration.

When a false god encounters a true god, it would unravel by itself.

“The Divine Treads Upon the Nine Heavens!”

Zhang Ruochen raised his left leg and fully activated the power of Yanshen'shen's leg, and at the same time unleashing an intermediate-level leg technique.

BOOOMMM!!!

With three continuous stomps, a devastating divine power rushed out, and the dimension was immediately shattered.

In an instant, the massive God King Phantom exploded as the vast power that was crushing at Zhang Ruochen was rendered into oblivion.

BAAAMMM!!!

The three Tu brothers were all hit by the scorching heat wave and were sent flying backwards. All of them slammed heavily onto the ground, with their flow of blood and Qi severely impacted. They were unable to muster any strength and had almost vomited blood for their troubles.

With his hands on his back, Zhang Ruochen slowly landed at the center of the arena like an emperor descending upon the world with a downward gaze.

All three Tu brothers cast their gaze at Zhang Ruochen as if they were looking at a God of War. Their hearts were full of shock, and were unable to calm themselves down.

The three brothers were notoriously arrogant, and there were barely anyone in the Northern Region battlefield that would be

treated with any regard by them.

They were supremely confident of their strength, and they were not afraid even if they were to face a top-level Path's Anterior elite.

But just now, they had just experienced a terrible defeat. Their combined attack could not even withstand a single attack from Zhang Ruochen, and that undoubtedly gave them a powerful sting of defeat.

They felt like Zhang Ruochen was their nemesis. Against Zhang Ruochen, they simply cannot fully unleash their powers.

What was more unacceptable to them was during the fight, Zhang Ruochen did not even use his most vaunted Path of Time and Path of Dimensions.

Also, they knew that Zhang Ruochen's Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike had also been cultivated to a high-level saint technique, and that was not used as well.

“As expected of Big Brother, his victory was so easy!” Xiang Chunan laughed out loud.

Feng Yan also breathed a sigh of relief. He was really worried that Zhang Ruochen would be in for a tough fight.

It now appeared that his concerns were completely unnecessary.

It could only be said that he was now increasingly unable to see through his sworn brother as the trump cards the latter held was far beyond his wildest expectations.

“What did Zhang Ruochen do just now? Why was there such a powerful divine aura?” A look of surprise appeared on Xuanyuan Liekong's face.

Although he also thought that Zhang Ruochen could defeat the three Tu brothers, but he did not expect Zhang Ruochen to win so handily. The battle had just ended in a blink of an eye.

Zhen Yuan smiled. “It seems like Junior Brother Zhang still have many secrets that we do not know. With him and Fairy

Baihua working together, they will definitely give the Deathkin a very nasty surprise.”

“Let’s go. There’s nothing to see here any more. We should see to other preparations as well.” Lu Baiming took a sip of tea and then moved the white cloud beyond the camp.

Zhang Ruochen’s display of such power had undoubtedly gave him much more confidence in the assault of Xianji Mountain tomorrow morning.

At this moment, the inside and outside of the martial arts arena was extremely quiet, aside from Xiang Chunan who was cheering loudly, everyone who had witnessed the battle remained silent.

The three Tu brothers all stood up and stepped forward towards Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

All of them had a complicated look in their eyes as they looked at each other. Then, the three of them lowered their proud heads and saluted Zhang Ruochen, saying. “We admit defeat. Greetings, commander.”

“Greetings, commander.”

Seeing the three Tu Brothers had already submitted, many of the cultivators who had witnessed the battle all realized what had happened and all saluted Zhang Ruochen.

In the world of cultivators, the strong were respected, and the strength Zhang Ruochen had put on display was worthy of their respect.

Zhang Ruochen looked around and felt a lot of emotions in his heart.

If he was not strong enough, there wouldn’t be a place for him, and everyone will only treat him as a mere joke.

Only by having enough strength that others will be in awe of you.

Dignity, status, authority, and everything were all built upon strength.

Chapter 1940 - Old New Year's Eve Memories

Chapter 1940: Old New Year's Eve Memories

Turning his gaze around, Zhang Ruochen looked at the approaching three Tu brothers. The reason he had used Yanshen's leg earlier was to achieve such an effect; it was to defeat them cleanly with absolute power in order for them to willingly admit defeat.

Of course, he was not arrogant because of this. Instead, he said with a smile, "You three do not need to show me so much reservation. I do not know much about the camp, so I will need to rely on the three of you."

"Commander, you are too kind. The three of us were too full of ourselves, and we made a fool of ourselves before you," Tu Tian said in embarrassment.

They were full of confidence, so sure that they could easily crush Zhang Ruochen and take his command as a matter of course. They never thought that the results would end up like this instead.

Ever since they started their cultivation, they had never lost so thoroughly before, more so to a person who is two realms beneath them.

However, they did not feel bitter about the lost. On the contrary, they were extremely impressed with Zhang Ruochen. After all, Zhang Ruochen had not used any dirty tricks, and had beaten them fair and square.

A true powerhouse deserved their admiration and respect.

Zhang Ruochen said. "It's a very common thing to learn from one another. For the three of you to be willing to fight with me, it is also a recognition of my strength. The three of you do not need to feel bad about it."

“Commander, your generosity shames us. The three of us want to host a welcoming banquet for you, we hope that you would not decline.” Tu Tian looked directly at Zhang Ruochen, his gaze was very sincere.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said. “Since the three of you have such good intentions, I of course cannot refuse it.”

He only wanted to take control of the scene, but there was no need for him to offend the three Tu brothers. Having too many enemies was not a good thing after all.

Immediately, the formation array in the arena was dispelled as the three Tu brothers walked out of the arena escorting Zhang Ruochen.

Before long, many good food and wines were served inside the camp, all of the Nine-Step Saint Kings were all gathered inside the camp.

Since it was a banquet to welcome Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin, the more the merrier.

At the banquet, headed by the three Tu brothers, a group of elites came to toast Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin.

Xiang Chunan was originally despised the three Tu brothers, but after three rounds of drinking, he and the three Tu brothers called each other brothers, that sort of friendliness felt like they had known each other for a long time.

By the time the banquet was over, it was already dark.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the camp alone and found a place to sit down at random. He looked up to the moon as many emotions inevitably welled in his heart.

Tonight was New Year’s eve, snow was falling from the sky and it was beautiful.

For ordinary persons, today should be the day families gathering together for a reunion dinner as they talked about their daily lives.

The image of Concubine Lin appeared in his mind, he had went to the Celestial Court to try to make himself stronger for

the past years, and he had not been together with Concubine Lin for many years now.

Now that he had returned to Kunlun Realm, he still could not spend the New Year's eve with Concubine Lin.

However, with Mu Lingxi by Concubine Lin's side, he supposed that she would be very happy?

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen thought of Chi Kunlun and Chi Kongyue. After their farewells at the Celestial Domain of Truth, he had never seen time again, and did not know how they were doing now.

Whether as a son or as a father, he felt that he had been horrible at both, and had not fulfilled his responsibilities.

But he had no choice. Too many burdens had been placed upon his shoulders. If he had a choice, why would he not want to reunite with his parents, wife and children to enjoy life.

Gradually, the image of Mu Lingxi became clearer in Zhang Ruochen's mind.

Thinking of Mu Lingxi, a happy smile unconsciously appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face. For so many years, no matter what situation he was in, Mu Lingxi had always been by his side. This could be said to be God's greatest favor for him.

He then wrote a communication talisman and sent it to Mu Lingxi.

There was nothing important on it, only expressions of his longing for Mu Lingxi. After all, they had been separated for a very long time now.

Not long after, a communication light talisman flew over from the horizon and was caught by Zhang Ruochen.

The communication light talisman was naturally from Mu Lingxi. There were not many words on it, but also expressed her deep longings.

Just as an arc was about to form on Zhang Ruochen's mouth, another light talisman flew over, also from Mu Lingxi.

Seeing the content of the communication talisman, Zhang Ruochen's expression changed drastically.

"I have news that I think it is necessary to tell you. Sister Chen's parents were killed by the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord a few days ago."

Clearly, Mu Lingxi had been wondering if she should break the news to Zhang Ruochen. After some contemplating however, she decided to let Zhang Ruochen know. After all, the two of them were Zhang Ruochen's parents-in-law.

The news was so sudden that Zhang Ruochen could not respond to it for a moment.

He had met Chen Liuli during the battle for the Eastern Region Saint Kingdom's Mansion. Unexpectedly, she would encounter her end just a short period of time later.

Inevitably, Zhang Ruochen thought of Huang Yanchen as many images appeared in his mind, all of them bits and pieces of him with Huang Yanchen.

He had thought that he had forgotten everything about Huang Yanchen, and did not expect the memories to be so deeply entrenched.

After all, he was not a heartless person, and was unable to truly forget about Huang Yanchen. After all, she was the first woman he had opened her heart to after he was hurt by love.

Only after that incident, when Huang Yanchen deceived him with Chi Yao, and when Huang Yanchen stood by Chi Yao's side in the end that broke his heart completely, almost causing him to close off his heart once again.

He should have hated Huang Yanchen, but in fact, he could not hate her at all.

Back then, the Immortal Vampires had attacked the Qianshui Royal City and slaughtered Huang Yanchen's entire family in order to force him to show up. Even the king and queen of Qianshui Commandery was taken captive. He had really owed Huang Yanchen too much.

Plus, the Divine Scripture Maiden had told him before, Huang Yanchen was dead, and the dead cannot come back to life, so he could not hate Huang Yanchen at all.

However, neither he nor Huang Yanchen can go back to the past.

“The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord must die.”

A terrifying murderous intent appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

Now that Huang Yanchen was no longer around, the vengeance for her parents could only be done by him.

There was no other reason, he was just following his own will.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to go to the Eastern Region himself, and personally slay the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord, but he couldn’t. A major battle in the Northern Region was about to commence, and he could not leave at this moment regardless of the reason.

Immediately, he sent out another communication light talisman, but it was sent to Le.

The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord was a powerful Six-Tribulations Ghost Lord whose strength is comparable to those of the Precept Dominion realm. He had occupied a city in the Eastern Region, and no one knew how many humans had been slaughtered by him. Killing him was not something ordinary persons could pull off.

Although he had not seen Le for a very long while, Zhang Ruochen believed that Le would have sufficient strength to complete the matter.

Plus, Le himself was in Kunlun Realm, and was the best person to do this.

A short while later, Le sent a message back, with only a sentence. “The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord will not live to see tomorrow’s sunrise.”

As long as one was in Kunlun Realm, going anywhere was actually very convenient. One can just reach them directly through the various Merit Sub-Terminals.

Earlier on, as Zhang Ruochen did not want people to know where his whereabouts was, so he deployed his own teleportation array to obscure his movements.

And his sudden appearance in the Northern Region that had caught many off guard proved that fact.

After handing the matter to Le, Zhang Ruochen became silent, with many thoughts and emotions mixing in his heart.

“Brother, why are you here alone?”

Feng Yan appeared behind Zhang Ruochen without him noticing.

Hearing Feng Yan’s voice, Zhang Ruochen’s thoughts were instantly snapped back to reality.

Exhaling lightly, Zhang Ruochen said. “It’s nothing. I just wanted to come out to enjoy the silence, and look at the snow.”

How could Feng Yan not see there was something wrong with Zhang Ruochen’s mood, so he could not help but say.

“Brother, what’s on your mind? Why don’t you tell me.”

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything, but instead just raised his head, looking at the bright moon in the sky and the falling snowflakes. His mind could not help but to return to the New Year’s Eve ten years ago. It was then did he and Huang Yanchen went on antagonizing paths as they slowly became strangers.

If that had not happened, he and Huang Yanchen would have been living happily, and perhaps their children may have already grown up.

After a long silence, Zhang Ruochen. “Second brother, let me tell you a story.”

“Alright, Brother, please go ahead.” Feng Yan responded as he sat down beside Zhang Ruochen.

He did not know what happened to Zhang Ruochen nor did he knew how to comfort him. All he could do was to stay by Zhang Ruochen’s side, even if just as a listener.

Only at this moment their bond as brothers was best reflected.

Zhang Ruochen recomposed himself and said. “There was one a prince of a weak commandery, in order to help his land through a crisis, he followed his father to a powerful commandery to seek help. It happened that the powerful commandery was hosting a husband selection for its lady. Through his outstanding performance, the prince shocked everyone and won the martial arts competition for her hand in marriage. By twist of fate, marriage was arranged between him and the lady’s elder sister. At the same time, the prince also learned that the lady’s elder sister was a Senior Sister of the same school...”

“After going through many trials and tribulations, the prince finally walked out from the dark emotional pall, and began to open up to the Senior Sister, and finally married her...”

“When the prince found out that the Senior Sister that he had finally opened his heart to was actually deceiving him with their Master, and insisted on standing by the master’s side in the end, the prince was furious, and his heart was sealed up once again. The prince cut off all ties with the Senior Sister, and the two went on opposing paths.

“The prince thought that he would forever hate that Senior Sister, but when he found out that she had died, he realized that he had already put everything down, and his love and hatred drifted away with the wind.

At the end, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to shed a tear.

Perhaps it was because he had verbalized what he had been suppressing in his heart for too long now, Zhang Ruochen felt somewhat better now.

If everything were to happen again, perhaps he would not have been as decisive as before, and perhaps she would not have passed away in sorrow.

After listening to Zhang Ruochen’s story, Feng Yan could not help but to sigh deeply, but he did not make any comments.

If it were him, what choices would he make?

How could he not tell that the hero of this story was Zhang Ruochen himself, and the heroine was naturally Lady Yanchen.

He had actually heard about the two, but he did not expect it to be so complicated.

Raising his hand, Feng Yan took out a wine gourd and said. "Brother, let's have a few drinks together."

Zhang Ruochen did not do anything, he simply just reached out to take the wine gourd as he raised his head and took a swig.

He was not an alcoholic, but he really wanted a drink at this very moment. Perhaps he would no longer have any troubles and sorrows if he was drunk.

"Big Brother, the both of you were secretly drinking outside, and did not call me along. This will not do."

At this moment, Xiang Chunan ran out from the camp.

A faint smile appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face, and tossed the wine gourd to Xiang Chunan, saying. "You came at the right time, Second Brother had just taken out wine. It's a rare good wine, have a taste."

Xiang Chunan stretched out his hand and caught the wine gourd, as he said with a guffaw. "Then I'll not hold back."

Feng Yan rolled his eyes at Xiang Chunan, saying. "Third Brother, you have wronged Big Brother and I. Since when we have forgotten about you when we have something good? I thought that you had drunk a lot earlier, and almost floored yourself. That's why I didn't call you."

"Floored myself drinking? You gotta be kidding, with my ability to drink, who can floor me? Also, drinking a couple more is fine so Second Brother, take all of your good wines out. Before the battle, let's have a good time drinking." Xiang Chunan glared back.

When it comes to drinking, he had absolutely confidence.

Feng Yan shook his head saying. "Sure, drink as much as you wish today. I'm in the business of selling alcohol, why should

I even be afraid of you drinking?”

Hearing this, Xiang Chunan burst into laughter and said. “Still Second Brother is the best.”

Looking at Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan beside him, a genuine smile appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s face. To have two good brothers by his side, the heavens had treated him well.

Chapter 1941 - One Blade Wrecking a Ghost City

Chapter 1941: One Blade Wrecking a Ghost City

Back in Qianshui Royal City, inside the thirteenth Merit Sub-Terminal. Compared to the past, this place was many times more prosperous now, and one could see Saints and Saint Kings with frequency.

As it was New Year's Eve, the city was brightly lit with lanterns and festoons. It looked particularly festive and lively.

Carrying his iron sword, Le walked out of the sub-terminal and appeared on the streets of the royal city.

After receiving Zhang Ruochen's communication talisman, Le immediately set off and rushed over as quickly as he could.

On a three-story pavilion not too far away from the sub-terminal, one of the three candidates for the Lady of the Fane of Destiny, Pan Ruo was sitting alone by the window of a private room. Her eyes were locked onto Le as a strange glint flashed in her eyes.

"Hmm?"

Le seemed to have detected something, as he turned around and looked at the pavilion to the side.

The window was empty, and no one was there.

With nothing else to see, Le retracted his gaze. It must have just been an illusion just now. He had only just rushed over, and he shouldn't been marked by anyone.

Without stopping too long in Qianshui royal city, Le immediately headed towards the city the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord had taken hold.

Through the intelligence network of the Fane of Death, he had fully grasped the information of the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord, and he was sure that the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord was

now inside Blackslaughter Ghost City, and there was no need to look for it elsewhere.

The Blackslaughter Ghost City was not within Qianshui Commandery, and it was also not the city's original name. It was only renamed because the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord had occupied it.

Today, everyone only know of the city as Blackslaughter Ghost City. As for its former name, it had long been forgotten.

Le used a Godspeed Talisman, and broke out in a speed thousand times the speed of sound, and in less than an hour's time, he was outside the Blackslaughter Ghost City.

The city was very large, and from its center, a powerful ghost aura radiated for thousands of miles as if it was the underworld, looking extremely terrifying.

Even at a distance, one could see there were many ghostly phantoms, causing people to stay away from it.

Standing before the Blackslaughter Ghost City, Le could clearly perceive that there were many powerful auras in the city. There were many Four Tribulations and Five Tribulations Ghost Lords , and there were even several Six Tribulations Ghost Lords in there.

A Four Tribulations Ghost Lord was equivalent to a One-step to Three-step Saint King, a Five Tribulations Ghost Lord was equivalent to a Four-Step to Six-Step Saint King, while a Six-Tribulation Ghost Lord was equivalent to a Seven-step to Nine-step Saint King.

The Six-Tribulation Ghost Lord had the greatest span in terms of strength because a Nine-Steps Saint King is divided into five smaller realms, and the gap between each realm is very huge.

Dark wind bellowed as a Three Tribulations Ghost Lord appeared and pounced at Le, wanting to suck his blood.

A Ghost Lord was different from ordinary ghosts. They could suck blood of living creatures to form powerful ghost bodies. The more powerful the blood of their living prey, the more beneficial it was to them.

Le's eyes were cold, as he swung his iron sword and slashed at the Three Tribulation Ghost Lord.

The Three Tribulation Ghost Lord immediately burst into pieces, turning into a cloud of ghastly fog, its soul already annihilated.

The swordsmanship that Le cultivated was different from Zhang Ruochen. It was purely for murder, and emphasized on the first killing blow. Even a ghost cultivator would need to die.

After he killed the Three Tribulation Ghost Lord with just a single slash, Le walked towards the city. He had already locked onto the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord's aura.

“Who goes there? Who dares to break into the Blackslaughter Ghost City! Insolence!”

A Four Tribulation Ghost Lord appeared and intercepted Le.

Le did not even look at it as he lightly swung his sword. The speed of his iron sword was beyond comprehension.

BAAAMMM!!

It was just single slash, and the Four Tribulation Ghost Lord could not even react before it was completely destroyed.

Looking at the tall city gate ahead of him, Le waved iron sword in his hand, and slashed out a terrifying sword Qi.

BOOM!!

The sword Qi instantly cut through the entire Blackslaughter Ghost City in two, and many Ghost cultivators within the city perished.

Whoosh!

Whoosh!

...

A series of powerful maleficent Qi rushed into the sky, causing the already gloomy night to be even darker.

With the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord at the head, over a dozen Four Tribulation Ghost Lords gathered around as all of them

had their eyes fixed on Le.

The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord was extremely hideous-looking. He was dressed in black ghost armor, and in addition to exuding a powerful maleficent Qi, there was also a dark power that was constantly devouring the saint Qi drifting between the realm.

There was no doubt it had cultivated one of the Nine Great Eternal Paths, the Path of Darkness, and his attainment was rather high.

The Fane of Darkness existed in the Infernal Court and had always been controlled by the Ghost Clan, the Corpsewight Clan and the Bone Clan.

Han Qiu had the dark body, and if he could enter the Fane of Darkness to cultivate, he will definitely be able to cultivate his Path of Darkness to an extremely high level.

But it was extremely difficult, almost being impossible as the Infernal Court will not allow humans to enter the Fane of Darkness.

The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord had murderous intent in his eyes as he stared at Le, saying coldly. "Who are you? How dare you provoke me."

Le raised his iron sword, and his gaze was extremely cold. "The one who will kill you."

"You want to kill me? You really don't know the limits of your own strength. I am here, and I want to see how will you kill me." The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord laughed.

His cultivation level was comparable to an elite at the peak of Precept Dominion realm, and his true strength was comparable to some Heaven's Reach-realm elites.

Even if a top-tier Heaven's Reach elite were to attack, killing him was not something assured.

However, there were no saint path precepts in Le's body, that meant his cultivation base as at best Lesser Precept-World.

For someone to dare to declare that he would kill him with such a cultivation base, it was a veritable joke.

A light flashed past Le's eyes as a monstrous murderous aura gushed out from his body. Around his body, a faint vision of a mountain of corpse and a sea of blood emerged.

Whoosh!

Le raised his iron sword and suddenly charged.

The speed of this strike was so fast that it beggars belief, as if it had surpassed the barrier of time and space.

The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord's eyes sharpened, and for a moment, he felt chills all over his body.

With his cultivation base, and his vision, he could not see Le's sword strike, and only saw an afterimage.

Somehow, he actually felt a terrible threat from Le.

The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord wanted to dodge, but he found that Le's aura had locked him firmly in place, making him unable to dodge at all.

In desperation, the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord had to use all of the maleficent Qi and Power of Darkness in his body to instantly create a hundred shields around him.

BAM! BAM!!

The hundred odd shields were all instantly pierced through by the iron sword, and could not stop Le at all.

The iron sword continued to thrust forward as it aimed at the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord's forehead.

Seeing the sword point before him, the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord's eyes shrank, as a pall of death was cast on his heart.

His reaction was extremely quick as he blasted out a punch at Le's chest, trying to force Le to pull his sword back to dodge.

However, Le did not seem to see his fist at all, as the sword stabbed straight and true, with no intentions to dodge.

DUUUSHH!!

The rusty iron sword was so sharp that it pierced through the dark sigils protecting the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord's forehead.

A terrifying killing intent passed through the iron sword into the body of the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord, ripping his soul apart.

At the same time, the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord's fist also slammed onto Le's chest, knocking him over and sending him flying.

BOOOMMM!!!

Le fell from the sky and plunged into the ground.

The clothing on his chest had shattered, revealing a pitch-black fist mark as the power of darkness gathered and eroded the point with wanton abandon.

The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord's dying counterattack was undoubtedly terrifying.

"For me to die..." The Blackslaughter Ghost Lord's eyes were full of disbelief, and he exploded into pieces before he could even finish speaking.

The Sword of Slaughter, and upon the drawing blade death was assured, even if the opponent was a powerful Ghost Lord.

All of the Ghost Lords around were stunned. They had never expected the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord would be so easily killed.

"Kill him!"

One of the Ghost Lords reacted, and immediately attacked Le.

In his opinion, Le already badly wounded during the exchange with the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord, and now was the best time to kill him.

It was not to avenge the Blackslaughter Ghost Lord, but he was afraid that Le would continue to attack them.

Once Le recovers, none of them Ghost Lords will live to see another day.

Le soared into the sky, and swung the iron sword in his hand as he cut the charging Ghost Lord into two.

Without stopping at all, he continued his assault as he slashed at the other Ghost Lords.

Since he had already come to the Blackslaughter Ghost City, he might as well kill to his heart's content, and wipe out all of the ghosts inside the city.

“Run!”

Sensing the murderous intent from Le's body, none of the Ghost Lords had the heart to fight, and all immediately scattered and fled.

However, how could the speed of their flight match the speed of the iron sword in Le's hands?

It did not take long for the Blackslaughter Ghost City to be a literal ghost city as all of the spirits and ghosts were all slain, and none were spared.

“Mission complete.”

After writing the two words, Le set out the communication light talisman.

Then, dragging his wounded body, Le walked out of the Blackslaughter Ghost City with determined eyes.

Above an uncollapsed city wall, Pan Ruo's figure appeared out of thin air as she watched Le leave.

Looking at the ruined Blackslaughter Ghost City, a bizarre smile appeared in Pan Ruo's eyes.

The next moment, Pan Ruo disappeared from the wall, as if she had never appeared before.

Inside the Northern Region Basecamp, Zhang Ruochen reached out to catch the communication light talisman sent by Le. After seeing the content, he could not help but to feel a sense of relief.

“Big brother, who sent you a message? Is there anything good?” Xiang Chunan asked curiously.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head slightly, saying. “Nothing, it's just a matter in my mind. I've almost drank enough today and

need to get ready. After dawn, there is still a tough battle to be fought.”

“Even the Immortal Vampire’s hundred thousand strong army was destroyed by us, assaulting Xianji Mountain is just a trivial matter. There will be no problems at all.” Xiang Chunan said confidently.

Zhang Ruochen said solemnly. “This is different from last time. The Deathkin is stronger, and we have no external force to rely upon. Don’t be careless, aside from destroying the Altar of Death, we have other things to do.

“By the way, brother, you haven’t told us the reason why you came to Xianji Mountain?” Feng Yan asked.

He had heard Xiang Chunan mentioned about it before, that Zhang Ruochen had a special purpose in coming to the Northern Region.

As for what the purpose was, it had always been a secret, and it seemed like only Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin knew about it.

“Oh yeah, Big brother, can you tell us now?” Xiang Chunan said.

Zhang Ruochen replied. “I wanted to tell you long time ago, but you were too trusting of Luo Yi. I was afraid you would accidentally leak it out, so I had kept it from you.”

“The main reason I came here is to take back the chopped trunk of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. The Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk is very important, and must not fall into the hands of the Deathkin or cultivators of other major realms.”

Chapter 1942 - The Four-Guardians Heaven Lock Array

Chapter 1942: The Four-Guardians Heaven Lock Array

“The chopped trunk of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree?”

Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan were both surprised.

When the two came to the Kunlun Realm, they had naturally sought out some information about the Kunlun Realm in advance. They clearly knew the significance of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree to the Kunlun Realm.

The Divine Sky-connecting Tree was once the Kunlun Realm’s spiritual root, and thanks to it, so many gods had been born in the Kunlun Realm.

Later on, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was cut off, and the Kunlun realm entered a godless age as it declined.

It was not until Empress Chi Yao achieved divinity that Kunlun Realm began its revival.

If the Kunlun Realm had been given another hundred years to develop, it would have surely risen again, and the situation would have been much better than it was now.

“Brother, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk you mentioned is inside Xianji Mountain?” Feng Yan asked.

Zhang Ruochen nodded, saying. “Yes, I had discovered this secret many years ago, but I did not have the strength to collect it back then. Earlier on, I went over to the mountain to investigate, and noticed that Xianji Mountain was very different from the past now, and the location of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk had also changed, and is now beneath that evil altar.”

“That is to say, in order to take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk, we need to destroy that evil altar. However, if the Divine Sky-connecting Tree were to appear, everyone would fight for it, after all it is a powerful divine body.” Feng Yan frowned slightly.

Although both of them were divine bodies, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree’s value was far greater than that of the body of the divine python.

In particular, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree had too many legends surrounding it, and even the gods would covet it.

Zhang Ruochen continued. “The current situation is beyond our control so we can only adapt to the changes. You don’t have to worry too much. It won’t be easy for anyone to take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk.”

“Big Brother, don’t you worry, I will definitely help you grab the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk. Anyone who wants to grab it has to go through me first.” Xiang Chunan patted his chest.

Feng Yan also nodded, saying. “Third brother is right. The Divine Sky-connecting Tree is yours, Brother, and no one can steal it from you.”

Hearing that, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to smile. He was really lucky to have two brothers that were true to him.

He could only hope that the assault on Xianji Mountain tomorrow will go smoothly. If the Altar of Death was not destroyed, no amount of planning would be useful.

When the first ray of light pierced through the darkness, the quiet Northern Region Basecamp suddenly became raucous as warships took off one after another.

At the beginning of the new year, everything was renewed, and Kunlun Realm’s recovery became even more intense, and with the surging vitality, the power of death will be faintly restrained.

It was because of this reason that Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong decided to launch the assault today.

“Move out!”

Following Xuanyuan Liekong’s orders, dozens of warships pierced through the clouds like dragons rushing out of the sea as they rushed towards Xianji Mountain.

On one of the warships, Zhang Ruochen stood on the bow of the ship as he stood against the wind, with Ji Fanxin, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan and Pei Yutian all standing beside him.

Last night, he had gotten rid of a worry in his mind, and his mood had become very calm. His mind and body had been adjusted to its best state, and he could now devote himself to the coming battle.

Directly in front of the warships were towering sacred mountains. From afar, they looked illusory, as if they would disappear at any time.

BOOOOMM!

The formations surrounding Xianji Mountain had been triggered, causing the entire mountain to shake violently.

“Senior Brother Lu had made his move!”

Zhang Ruochen whispered as he stared directly in front of him.

The first phase of the assault was also the most important phase, so it was Lu Baiming who led the attack, breaking open the arcane formation covering Xianji Mountain, so that the army could enter Xianji Mountain and attack the eight barracks.

A golden thunder suddenly fell from the sky, like a bright falling star.

BOOM!!

The death Qi enveloping Xianji Mountain was forcibly imploded and scattered in all directions. Wisps of golden sunlight fell from the heavens, as if a Buddha’s light shining all over the world, exorcising all evil from the world.

“Did it work?”

Seeing this scene, many cultivators of the Celestial Court could not help but to feel excited.

If the formation array of Xianji Mountain was so easily ripped apart, it would undoubtedly greatly boost morale.

The vast death Qi was indeed washed away, however Xianji Mountain itself was not affected as a five-colored light screen appeared and covered the whole of Xianji Mountain.

“Lu Baiming, I did not expect you to come to the Northern Region, however, it doesn’t matter if you were to act as you would never be able to break this Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Array. You lot are bound to return with no success this time.”

An extremely arrogant voice came from inside the five-colored light screen.

Hearing this voice, Zhang Ruochen’s expression could not help but changed slightly, saying. “The protective formation of the Xianji Sect back in the days, the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation. So it had not been destroyed yet.”

As the number one faction of the Northern Region in the past, the Xianji Sect was extremely powerful, and even their protective formation had a great reputation.

According to rumors, as long as the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation was activated, no one could break into the place.

Zhang Ruochen thought that after the fall of the Xianji Sect, the Four-Guardians Heaven Lock Formation would also become history, so he never expected it to reappear now.

Without a doubt, there must be a Deathkin Array Master that had acted to repair the formation to ward off the Celestial Court’s assault.

But even if an Array Master were to step forward, it was never possible to completely restore the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation, otherwise, Xianji Mountain would have long become a proper iron wall, and any attacks against it would have been useless.

“Ming Gu, since you are so confident, then watch as I rip your repaired Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation apart.”

Lu Baiming appeared with both hands on his back as he stood on the head of a Primordial Demonic Serpent.

The Primordial Demonic Serpent was massive, spanning several hundred feet long as it exuded a powerful demonic Qi that was comparable to a Heaven's Reach elite.

Perhaps only a rare genius that comes once every ten thousand years like Lu Baiming, can lord over such a powerful primordial being.

Inside Xianji Mountain, an altar appeared as a black-clad Ming Gu sat on the altar, his eyes fixed on Lu Baiming with a scornful smile on his face.

They were both Array Masters but he did not think too much about Lu Baiming.

Especially this was his home court, and he had all of the geographical advantage, so Lu Baiming was even less of the threat to him.

“I want to see how you break my Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation.” Ming Gu sneered.

If he did not have this bit of confidence, how could he call himself an Array Master?

On the warship, Feng Yan took out the Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans and found Ming Gu's information on one of the pages.

“Ming Gu, danger index of nine. The fifth son of the Minghai Monarch. An Array Master, and is also a divine disciple of the Fane of Destiny.”

Looking at the information recorded in the Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans, Feng Yan's expression gradually became serious.

Without a doubt, if Ming Gu's cultivation in martial arts was also extremely high, his danger index would have reached level ten.

Of course, the information in the Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans may have long been outdated, and no one could be sure how terrifying Ming Gu is now.

Lu Baiming stood on the head of the Primordial Demonic Serpent with a calm expression, seemingly unaffected by Ming Gu's words.

With a wave of his hand, one-hundred-and-eight plain flag flew out.

A powerful spiritual power was released and the 108 flags was immediately activated as countless arcane runes appeared emerged from the array flags. They connected with one another, forming a giant net as it enveloped the five-colored light screen.

BOOM!!

A series of dazzling saint light soared into the sky, forming 108 saint swords. The swords were extremely large, reaching more than a thousand meters tall, each of them were like sword-shaped mountains pointed straight into the heavens.

The 108 saint swords were arranged in a special formation as they absorbing the power of heaven and earth in a frenzy, as if trying to absorb all of the power within the area.

As more and more power of heaven and earth was absorbed, the 108 saint swords became more and more corporeal, with deadly keen edge.

Countless sword Qi flew out from the saint swords, slashing at the five-colored light screen.

Although the five-colored light screen was extremely strong, it was still shaken by the attack, the combination of five different powers appeared a little unstable.

Ming Gu's eyes changed slightly, and he immediately acted, concentrating on manipulating the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation.

Four massive phantoms of divine beasts appeared as they stood at four points of Xianji Mountain.

The Azure Dragon was in the east, exuding a majestic power of the wood element.

The Zhuque was in the south, unleashing a powerful fire-element power.

The White Tiger was in the west, exuding a mighty metal-element power.

And the Black Tortoise was in the north, releasing a surge of water-element power.

The four divine beasts controlled the power of four-elements, combined with the power of the earth, it formed the five-elements which combined with one another and transforming endlessly.

To be able to deploy such an exquisite formation, one had to say that the ancients of the Xianji Sect were extremely powerful, and had made full use of the environment of the mountain.

There was a large virgin forest to the east of the mountain, a metal mine to the west, a extremely active volcanic belt to the south and a massive lake to the north. The power of the Five-Elements was indeed very active.

Only in such an environment can the power of the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation could reach its strongest potential.

No one knew if such an environment was formed naturally, or was modified later on.

“RAAWRRRR.”

The roar of a tiger shook the forest and the mountains.

The White Tiger swung its sharp claws, as a series of golden light cut through the void and attacked the 108 saint swords.

The Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation was not only powerful defensively, its offensive power was equally terrifying.

CLANG!

Thirteen saint sword shuddered as faint cracks appeared on the swords, but they were not destroyed.

“Hmm?”

Ming Gu frowned slightly.

Among the four Divine Beasts, the White Tiger was the master of killing and its attack power was the most terrifying. He thought he could destroy a portion of the saint swords in one strike, and never expected it to fail.

Immediately after, he manipulated the Zhuque to attack.

The Zhuque flew across the sky, and with wings like two divine blades as the space faintly looked like it was being cut apart.

Ming Gu’s target was still saint swords the White Tiger had attacked just now. He believed if he struck another blow against them, those saint swords will inevitably break.

Lu Baiming did not panic at all, and controlling the formation with assured calmness.

The 108 saint swords all gleamed in golden light at the same time, and their positions were exchanged in an astonishing speed, all the while maintaining the formation.

BAAAMMM!!!

The Zhuque’s divine wings slammed upon twelve saint swords, but could not break them before its action was cut short.

Numerous arcane patterns appeared on the surface of the twelve swords as razor sharp sword Qi rushed out, instantly cutting the Zhuque into pieces.

The fragments transformed into wisps of flames as they flew back into the five-colored light screen. They then converged together, and reformed into the Zhuque again.

As it was formed by the formation array, as long as the formation was not broken, it could reform indefinitely.

At this moment, the sword formation suddenly changed, as the swords began to merged with their adjacent counterparts.

In a blink of an eye, the number of saint sword was reduced from 108 to 54, and the formation changed accordingly.

The only thing that had not changed was the sword formation still loomed over Xianji Mountain, and the culminated power was obviously much stronger. Each saint sword appeared to be very real, like a proper saint artifact that could cut down a star.

“What kind of formation array is this?”

Ming Gu frowned, as a trace of concern faintly grew in his heart.

Chapter 1943 - The Battle of Array Masters

Chapter 1943: The Battle of Array Masters

Ming Gu thought that he could easily defeat Lu Baiming as he was in his home court. However, it did not look all that simple now.

“Dragon-Tiger’s Hegemony.”

Ming Gu growled as he controlled the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation with all his might.

“Rawrrrrr!”

The Azure Dragon and the White Tiger flew out at the same time, letting out tiger and dragon roars that shook the lands.

There was a saying, “the wind follows the tiger, and the clouds follow the dragon”.

The moment the tiger and the dragon moved, the winds and the clouds changed as a massive vortex appeared and fell from the sky, trying to take away all of the saint swords.

The vortex was formed by the condensed winds and clouds and was connected to the heavens. The Azure Dragon and the White Tiger were hidden within the vortex, with only their voices heard, but their forms were nowhere to be seen.

Hummmmm

The fifty-four saint swords all trembled and let out a series of sword hum.

The suction power of the vortex was indeed terrifying. If it weren’t for the fifty-four saint swords were deeply connected, they would have been sucked in in an instant.

The Azure Dragon and the White Tiger stuck their claws out from the vortex, and struck two of the saint swords.

CLANG!

The two saint swords suffered heavy damage as cracks appeared all over the sword and they almost came apart.

Without waiting for Lu Baiming to shift the positions of the two swords, the Azure Dragon and the White Tiger struck again with another devastating attack.

Both the Azure Dragon and the White Tiger possessed extremely terrifying powers that were comparable to elites of the Path's Anterior realm. Over on the Celestial Court's side, there were probably not many that could directly block their attacks.

CRACK!

The two saint swords could not withstand the second blow, and they immediately shattered.

Seeing this, a smile suddenly appeared on Ming Gu's face. He really didn't believe he could not do anything to Lu Baiming.

As long as there was a breach in the sword formation, unravelling it would not be too difficult, and he wanted to take the 108 flags for himself.

With Ming Gu's eyes, he naturally could see that the materials of the 108 flags were unusual, and each flag itself was invaluable.

If he could take those from himself, and then refine it again, he would be able to use it and they were enough to increase his strength.

On the head of the Primordial Demonic Serpent, Lu Baiming was still calm as ever, as if he was a complete bystander.

The two broken saint swords had completely disintegrate, and transformed into two saint lights, as they merged into the adjacent saint swords.

At the same time, the other saint swords also fused with one another.

In a blink of an eye, the number of saint swords in the formation halved again, leaving only 27 swords.

The twenty-seven saint swords shrank dramatically, and each became only a hundred feet long.

Correspondingly, the saint sword became more and more corporeal as countless of precepts of heaven and earth were contained inside the swords.

Seeing this, Ming Gu's expression could not help but change slightly. "So it could fuse again. Are these swords going to fuse into one in the end?"

He could feel that every time the saint sword merged, although their numbers were greatly reduced, but the power of the formation was constantly increasing and it was already able to shake the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation.

The most frightening thing was, the sword formation seemed to be isolating the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation, cutting off all sources of power, causing the formation to collapse upon itself.

"Cannot go on like this!"

Ming Gu's gaze sharpened as he stretched his hand out to lightly press the altar under him.

A large amount of evil death Qi was released from the altar, among them was a large number of dead spirits.

All of the dead spirits had no fixed form, all of them were all black shadows, exuding a strange and terrifying aura.

The next moment, the dead spirits gathered, and transformed into a menacing God of Death standing several hundred feet tall.

The God of Death was formed by a formation, and was very different from the God of Death formed from the Will of Death.

In order to refine this altar, and to form this formation array, Ming Gu had slaughtered many Celestial Court cultivators on the Battlefield of Merit, extracting their saint souls, and refining them into special dead spirits, storing them inside the altar.

There were originally hundreds of thousands of dead spirits in the altar. After cannibalizing one another, there were only nine-hundred and ninety-nine left. Each of them was very powerful, comparable to a Nine-step Saint King.

Ninety-nine dead spirits, under the control of the formation, took the form of a God of Death and its power was multiplied. It was now more powerful than the Four Guardian Beasts conjured from the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation.

Under Ming Gu's control, the God of Death flew out from the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation.

Whoosh!!

The God of Death swung its death scythe and actually cut through the formation formed by the twenty-seven saint swords.

The main reason was the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation had been holding the sword formation back, causing it to not have enough power to fight against the God of Death.

The God of Death rose in to the sky, waving its scythe as it charged at Lu Baiming.

Lu Baiming was indifferent, and calmly stretched his hand out, and tapped the air before him.

A series of formation sigils appeared one after another, as a total of twenty-four were layered upon one another.

Each of the formation sigils were itself a high-level formation array, with the twenty-four formation sigils layering over on another, it was a twenty-four linked formation.

BAM! BAM!!

The death scythe smashed the formations into pieces, and was seemingly unstoppable.

However, it was unable to break all of the formation sigils, and after its strength was exhausted, the remaining seven formation sigils fell upon it.

The God of Death was repeatedly pushed back as the evil death Qi outside its body was unstable and its form almost broken.

Lu Baiming stretched his hand out again, and a massive formation sigil appeared, from which a Primordial Bull rushed out, and charged straight towards the God of Death.

The Primordial Bull unleashed its terrifying brute force, seemingly being able to shatter a Primordial Divine Mountain with its charge.

BAAAMMM!!

Half of the God of Death's body shattered, and transformed into hundreds of dead spirits.

Just as these dead spirits was about to regroup, Lu Baiming deployed a very ancient formation array.

A large amount of spiritual power emerged from the center of Lu Baiming's brow, and was infused into the formation.

Suddenly, the formation came back to life as a series of arcane formation patterns emerged, culminating in a series of thunder that struck at the God of Death.

The colors of the thunders from the formation were different, and all five elements were included within them. They were the Five-Element Thunders.

The five elements reinforced and counteract one another, and the Five-Element Thunders unleashed had an arcane connection with one another, their power devastating.

BOOOMMM!!!

Dozens of consecutive strikes struck the God of Death, and the God of Death's body instantly exploded.

Not only that, the dead spirits that formed the God of Death were restrained by the Five-Element Thunder, and in an instant, dozens of the dead spirits were destroyed by the thunder.

“Return!”

Ming Gu was anxious, and desperately activated the altar to recall the remaining dead spirits.

He had expended a lot of effort to cultivate these dead spirits, and the destruction of even one caused him pain.

Naturally, Lu Baiming would not allow Ming Gu to recall the dead spirits that easily as he roused the formation array with all his might, causing more and more Five-Element Thunder to strike out, destroying the dead spirits one by one.

In the end, Ming Gu had only managed to recall half of the dead spirits, with many of them damaged by the Five-Element Thunder.

“Lu Baiming!”

A fierce look appeared in Ming Gu’s eyes as he gritted his teeth at Lu Baiming with extreme hatred.

If he had known that Lu Baiming had such a terrifying formation that could counter the dead spirits, he would not have used the God of Death formation.

He could only blame Lu Baiming had hid his trump cards too well. After all, no one had seen him use this Five-Element Formation Array before.

“Senior Brother Lu’s skills in formation is really terrifying.” A hint of surprise appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

He had fought against Mister Godcliff, and had seen the formations the latter had deployed before. He had thought them to be terrifying back then, but compared with Lu Baiming, Mister Godcliff was undoubtedly inferior.

Now he somewhat believed what Ji Fanxin had said, perhaps Lu Baiming really had the hope to be promoted to an Arch Array Master before becoming a Spiritual Power Supreme Saint.

At this moment, the formation covering Xianji Mountain had changed once again, going from twenty-seven swords to fourteen, and then from fourteen to seven swords as their strength increased exponentially.

At this moment, the seven saint swords no longer continued to merge, and had seemed to reach their limit.

Anyone could see that the seven saint swords were brimming with power, and if they continued to merge, it was likely they would self-destruct due to their powers going out of control.

Lu Baiming did not try to force them, and instead, controlled the swords with his spiritual power, arranging them into a bizarre formation before slashing them down in a deadly stroke, unleashing a devastating blow.

The seven sword light combined into one, ranging thousands of feet long, and from afar, it looked like a beautiful rainbow hanging in the sky.

BOOOMMM!!!

The Four Guardian Heaven Lock Formation was instantly crushed as the four Divine Beasts were annihilated and many of the formation inscriptions on the mountains were wiped out in an instant.

A major earthquake shook the entire Xianji Mountain, causing many peaks to collapse, as a massive ravine appeared on the ground, reaching a depth of hundreds of feet.

“Damn you.”

Ming Gu was furious, with fires almost erupting from his eyes.

Everything had happened so quickly that he had no time to stop Lu Baiming from breaking through the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation.

Now even the formation base of the formation array had been damaged, it was impossible to repair it in a short period of time.

“The Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation had been broken, it’s now your turn to strike.”

Lu Baiming turned around and said to the Celestial Court cultivators on the dozens of warships.

“Die!”

Without any hesitation, dozens of warships rushed into Xianji Mountain.

Each of their targets had already been decided beforehand.

As soon as they rushed into Xianji Mountain, the dozens of warships immediately split apart. Four ships were formed into a team for a total of eight teams as each times struck at a barracks.

This was the second line of defense within Xianji Mountain. Only by destroying them could they approach the Altar of Death.

It was because of the eight barracks that the sword light had only caused damage to Xianji Mountain's periphery, but the central area of the mountain was not affected.

"You dare step foot in Xianji Mountain. All of you will die!" Ming Gu roared.

A powerful spiritual power was unleashed, activating many of the formation patterns that had been engraved onto the ground in advance, wanting to destroy a portion of the warships.

Lu Baiming blasted out the Five-Element formation array, activating the arcane formations contained within it, and actually suppressed the formations Ming Gu had deployed, causing them to fail to function.

"Ming Gu, your opponent is me." Lu Baiming said faintly.

A cold light appeared in Ming Gu's eyes, saying. "Lu Baiming, don't ever think I'll ever be afraid of you. While you may have broken the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation, that does not mean you have defeated me. I will fight you properly after this, and lets see who is the strongest Array Master."

Before, he was thinking of relying on Xianji Sect's Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation so that he could save a little effort.

But since the Four-Guardian Heaven Lock Formation was unreliable, then he had to rely on his own ability, and he did not believe that he was unable to beat Lu Baiming with that.

Ever since he started cultivating, he had never been defeated by anyone on the matters of formation arrays.

Not in the past, and not now.

Lu Baiming smiled faintly, saying. “Then use all of your skills, don’t disappoint me.”

“You won’t.” A powerful murderous intent exuded from Ming Gu.

Now, he no longer thought of anything else, neither did he care if Xianji Mountain could withstand it or not. The only thing he wanted to do now was to defeat Lu Baiming with his formation array, and let everyone know that he was the strongest Array Master beneath a Supreme Saint.

In this battle, only victory was permitted, or else Lu Baiming will forever become a thorn in his heart that will never go away.

Chapter 1944 - Commencing the Assault

Chapter 1944: Commencing the Assault

The eight groups of warships traveled extremely quickly, and after a short while, they arrived at the Deathkin's barracks.

The eight barracks constructed by the Deathkins were very particular, and they were the eight gates guarding the core area of Xianji Mountain. They were fully integrated into the mountain's terrain and it was extremely difficult to breach them.

The reason Zhang Ruochen was able to silently sneak into the depths of Xianji Mountain earlier was his mastery of the Path of Dimensions. Additionally, the Deathkin were relatively relaxed back then and not as guarded as they were now.

It was impossible to sneak in now.

"Commander, what should we do? Do we attack directly?" Tu Tian asked.

Zhang Ruochen was the commander of their squadron, and it was up to Zhang Ruochen to decide what to do.

Standing at the bow of the ship, Zhang Ruochen stared at the Deathkin's war fortress. This war fortress was massive, like an ancient beast standing guard in the area, causing everyone to feel extremely stressed.

After a moment of contemplation, Zhang Ruochen said.

"Prepare the warships for an all-out attack. Let me see how strong this war fortress is."

Tu Tian did not hesitate at all, and immediately passed down the order.

The Northern Region Basecamp prepared these warships for them not only for the journey, but the warships themselves had

astounding offensive powers, capable of bombarding Saint King-level elites to death.

On the Battlefield of Merit, this type of warship was undoubtedly of great value. It was a literal slaughter machine as any random blow could kill a large number of Infernal Court cultivators.

It was just that refining this kind of warship was extremely prohibitive, and was not available to everyone.

Zhang Ruochen actually had a better warship on him, it was one of the spils he had obtained from the Sword Vault, called the Saintkiller Warship. If it was in the hands of a Supreme Saint, it was enough to pose a threat to a Supreme Saint.

However, it was a shame that the fighting was too fierce back then, and of the four Saintkiller Warships, one was almost completely destroyed, two were severely damaged, and only one was not seriously damaged.

As they involved Supreme Saint inscriptions, even if the people of the Sword Sanctum were to work on it, repairs will take a very long time and they may not even be able to restore it to its original state.

BOOM!!

At the same time, all four warships erupted with terrifying saint power as bursts of blazing saint light blasted out.

Many arcane patterns appeared on the surface of the war fortress, forming a powerful protective shield to ward off the warships' bombardment.

“Again!” Zhang Ruochen said.

Immediately, the four warships attacked again, and blasted out fifteen consecutive cannonades, completely ignoring the saint stone expenditure.

The number of saint stones equipped in each warship was limited, and it was impossible for it to launch too many attacks.

There was no choice, although the warship's attack was powerful, but the consumption of saint stones was very high.

As they were deploying over a dozen warships, Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong also had to consider the cost.

From the eleventh salvo onwards, the saint stones consumed were provided by Zhang Ruochen. He was filthy rich anyway, and did not care about this bit of saint stones.

After several more salvos, the Deathkin finally made their move as a gate opened in the war fortress as a team of Deathkin warriors walked out of it unhurriedly.

Seeing so, Zhang Ruochen immediately ordered the attack to stop.

The reason for the continuous bombardment was to provoke the Deathkin and draw them out of their fortress. Otherwise, how would they fight the battle?

Clearly, his goal had been achieved, and everything was as planned.

“You lot dare to enter Xianji Mountain, means all of you are looking for death. None of you will not leave this place alive.” A burly Deathkin in battle armor said coldly.

Tu Tian stepped out of the battleship, looking condescendingly at the Deathkin elite, as he spat coldly. “You sure speak loudly. We are here to take to flatten Xianji Mountain. You Deathkins will all perish.”

“Who do you think you are? Die!”

The burly Deathkin’s eyes was full of murderous intent. He then stretched his hand out and the evil death Qi transformed into a short spear as he threw it at Tu Tian.

An incomparably powerful aura radiated from the burly Deathkin, and tens of millions of precepts floating faintly outside his body as the precepts of heaven and earth were completely rotating with him as the nexus.

Seeing the short spear flying at him, Tu Tian frowned as he quickly roused the saint Qi in his body, and quickly forming dozens of layers of shielding in front of his body.

DUUUSHHH!

The short spear was incredibly powerful, and there was nothing it could not destroy, as it instantly pierced through the dozen layers of shields.

In the end, the short spear collided against Tu Tian's body, and was blocked by the armor he wore.

The short spear exploded and the devastating force sent Tu Tian flying.

“A Path's Anterior elite!”

Tu Tian stared intently at the burly Deathkin.

Before his opponent struck, he had not been able to fully see through the former's cultivation base, and thought that at most his foe was of the Heaven's Reach realm. With his strength, he could easily crush one, but he did not think that he would have struck an iron wall instead.

“Who are you?” Tu Tian asked coldly.

The burly Deathkin said proudly. “I am one of the three generals under Yuanmo Shenzi, Commander He Yun, and by the order of Yuanmo Shenzi, I guard the Xianji Mountain. Any Celestial Court cultivators who dares step into the mountain shall be killed without mercy.”

Hearing this, Tu Tian's gaze changed slightly, as a tinge of wariness appeared in his heart.

The Commander of Death was a very high status, and on the Battlefield of Merit, one could command an army of a million Deathkins.

For a person to be a commander, their cultivation need to reach the realm of Path's Anterior, and most of them were directly under the orders of a Deathkin Supreme Saint, even Shenzi would find it difficult to order them around.

Even after entering Kunlun Realm, a Deathkin Commander still had a great say and will not follow just any Shenzi's command.

Some of the weaker Shenzi's only have Death Generals and Death Shoguns under their command, and are unable to contact the Death Commanders.

For there to be three Death Commanders under Yuanmo Shenzi, it was proof enough on how powerful Yuanmo Shenzi was.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze swept through Commander He Yun, and then towards the several Deathkin elites behind the latter.

The Deathkin elites were clearly a little different as they wore standardized armor and held standardized weapons, each having similar strength.

“Death Knights.”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen realized the identities of the Deathkin elites.

Every Death Knight had cultivation levels above Precept Dominion, and were carefully raised by the Fane of Death, each possessing the potential to become a Supreme Saint.

As for the few Death Knights before him, even the lowest of their cultivation was at the pinnacle of Precept Dominion-realm, two of them had even reached the Heaven's Reach realm. Their strength was not to be underestimated.

In addition to the Death Knights, there was another team of Deathkin elites, each of them exuding equally terrifying aura, and all of their cultivation bases were above the Precept Dominion realm.

In other words, the fifty-eight Deathkin that had walked out of the war fortress were all top powerhouses with cultivation bases above the realm of Precept Dominion.

For a single camp to have so many powerhouses in it, how terrifying would it be if all eight camps were added together?

“It seems like the information is correct, the Deathkin can use the Altar of Death to train their elites, and the results is quite significant.” Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

At this moment, the faces of many cultivators on the four warships were a bit solemn.

Compared to the top powerhouses they are facing, they were obviously at a disadvantage, and the situation was quite dire.

For something like this to happen, surely even Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong did not expect it.

Looking at the group of Deathkin powerhouses, Xiang Chunan's eyes could not help but glow. "Big Brother, tonnes of merit points there!"

Hearing this, both Tu Di and Tu Ren had a stunned look on their faces, feeling that Xiang Chunan may be a bit too much of a dullard. That group of Deathkin elites were indeed worth a lot of merit points, but that was dependent on them being able to destroy all of them.

The disparity in strength was so great that they were unable to be optimistic in any way. If they were to clash head on, they will definitely suffer heavy casualties.

Unexpectedly, Zhang Ruochen actually smiled and said. "Indeed, there's much merit points to be had there. If we destroy all of them, we can change at least 180 million merit points, so what are we waiting for?"

"Hahahaha, you Deathkin oafs, Lord Xiang is here!" Xiang Chunan laughed and rushed out of the warship.

A Precept Dominion-realm Death General flew out, exuding a majestic evil death Qi as he shot out a very contemptuous punch.

With this cultivation level of Precept Dominion, there was no wrong in him treating Xiang Chunan, who had not yet culminated his own Precept Dominion, with contempt.

Xiang Chunan had no intentions to dodge at all, and instead of retreating, he met the attack head-on.

"Eat this!"

Xiang Chunan roared, as clouds of demonic Qi shot out from all of the acupoints in his body, as if he was about to become a peerless demon king.

BAAAMMM!!!

The two fists collided as demonic Qi and evil death Qi quaked.

Xiang Chunan stood firmly in the air like a sacred mountain, while the Deathkin General was sent flying backwards, crashing into the war fortress like a cannonball.

With just a single exchange, that Deathkin General was gravely wounded, and one of his arm exploded, seemingly no longer able to move.

Xiang Chunan did not stop, and wanted to follow up with another punch to ensure the kill.

“You dare!”

A Death Legate shouted, as he swung his battle axe at Xiang Chunan.

Xiang Chunan roared, “Get lost!”

Numerous demonic runes appeared on the Metan Demonic Crown, unleashing beams of Supreme Power that slammed at the Death Legate.

At the same time, Xiang Chunan blasted out a fist as his demonic Qi transformed into a Demonic Mountain, smashing upon the wounded Death Shogun.

The Thousand-Fold Demonic Mountain Fist was one of the fist arts he was most proficient in. It was a Tongxuan-level intermediate-level saint art, and it was not much weaker than some of the weaker high-level saint arts.

BAAAMMM!!

The Death General’s bod instantly shattered, and his saint soul was crushed by the demonic mountain.

Killing a Death General in just two fists was undoubtedly an amazing record.

On the other side, the Death Legate was pushed back by the Metal Demonic Crown, and could not get close to Xiang Chunan.

Seeing the elite of his own side getting killed, a Heaven’s Reach-realm Death Knight immediately swept out, swinging the Death Scythe as he wanted to harvest Xiang Chunan’s life.

The raison d'être of the Death Knights was slaughter, as they were the heralds of death.

In contrast, the Death King was much stronger than the Death General that had attacked earlier.

As he attacked, a massive Shadow of Death appeared behind him, also waving a Death Scythe. A surge of death Qi was released, locking Xiang Chunan in place.

“Sky Soaring Dragon-Elephant.”

A dragon and an elephant flew out and soared into the heavens as they shone upon the world, revealing a very extremely terrifying vision.

“Hmm?”

The Death Knight's expression changed, and he gave up on attacking Xiang Chunan as he focused on blocking the Dragon-Elephant attack.

Baaaaam!!!

The Death Knight could not withstand the blow and was sent flying as the Shadow of Death behind him immediately unraveled.

“Did you get my permission to touch my brother?”

Zhang Ruochen stood beside Xiang Chunan and said coldly.

Chapter 1945 - The Low-key Feng Yan

Chapter 1945: The Low-key Feng Yan

“The Scion of Time and Space, Zhang Ruochen, it was you who had sneaked into Xianji Mountain earlier. His Highness has ordered to take you back alive. I advise you to not make unnecessary resistance.”

Commander He Yun took two steps forward, his eyes locked on Zhang Ruochen.

For him, the order given by Yuanmo Shenzi took priority.

The others could be killed, but Zhang Ruochen must be taken alive.

Zhang Ruochen indifferently said, “You want to take me in alive? Then you should ask that Yuanmo Shenzi to do it himself because it is beyond your capabilities.”

“Insolent. Since you do not want to surrender, then I can only break you.”

Commander He Yun shuddered, unleashing an extremely powerful aura that smashed at Zhang Ruochen.

His figure flashed, Zhang Ruochen appeared before Xiang Chunan, and completely blocked the qi unleashed by Commander He Yun.

“Chunan, you go deal with the others. Leave him to me.” Zhang Ruochen said.

Xiang Chunan nodded. “Big Brother, teach this b*stard a lesson so hard that his own mother cannot recognize him!”

Having said that, he immediately darted off, and moved away from Zhang Ruochen.

With his current strength, he was indeed no match for a Path's Anterior elite, so there was no need to look for trouble there.

At this moment, Ji Fanxin, Feng Yan and Pei Yutian all had flown out of the battlefield, ready to fight with the Deathkin.

Tu Di, Tu Ren, and the eight other Precept Dominion elites in this team also flew out of the warship. The battle had already begun, so naturally they could not just stand by and watch.

It's just that the numbers on their side could not be compared to their opposition, with only a quarter of the foe's manpower.

Plus, facing them were Path's Anterior elites, and also four Heaven's Reach elites, but on their side, only the three Tu brothers had reached the Heaven's Reach realm.

At this moment, the three Tu brothers all had grim expressions. Together, the three of them could match Path's Anterior-realm elites, but after sensing the terrifying aura exuding from Commander He Yun, they had no confidence to fight against him.

"Commander, hold Commander He Yun back for a moment. Once we are done dealing with the Deathkins, we will come to help you." Tu Tian spoke to Zhang Ruochen through spiritual power.

Aside from Commander He Yun, he did not treat the other Deathkin elites with much regard at all.

As long as the three brothers worked together, beneath the Path's Anterior realm, they were invincible.

Immediately, the three Tu brothers connected their aura together, and unleashed the God King Fist together as they brazenly attacked the Death Knight that Zhang Ruochen had sent flying earlier.

Another Heaven's Reach Death Knight acted, and joined that Death Knight as they swung their Death Scythes together, perfectly combining their strengths as they slashed out a black scythe gleam hundreds of meters long. Like a dimensional rift, it threatened to swallow everything within it.

The black scythe was extremely sharp, and there was nothing it could not destroy.

"All life shall perish."

The two Heaven's Reach-realm Death Knights let out a low growl at the same time, their eyes cold and merciless.

Whoosh!!

The God King Phantom created by the three Tu brothers were ripped apart by the black scythe's gleam.

At the same time, the black scythe gleam too was crushed of the God King's Fist, and quickly dissipating away.

"What?"

The three Tu brothers all had expressions of disbelief.

They were unable to gain any advantage at all during the first exchange, and only fought on even footing.

What was most unacceptable to them was that the attack by the three brothers only needed two Death Knights to block.

Does this not mean if they were to fight one-on-one they were no match for the Death Knights at all?

Not giving them any more time to think, the two Heaven's Reach Death Knights attacked again, using another more intricate combination attack.

The Death Knights were very adept at combination attacks, and even dozens of Death Knights could cooperate perfectly, and the power unleashed was far more terrifying than the Rakshasha's battle formations.

The two Heaven's Reach Death Knights's attack was extremely violent, and pushed the three Tu brothers so hard that they could only defend, and could not take the offensive.

The three Tu brothers could never have imagined that they would be put on the backfoot by a combination attack.

Whoosh!

The six other Precept Dominion Death Knights also made their move as a chilly death aura exuded from their bodies, like a God of Death descending upon the world, preparing to harvest the lives of the Celestial Court Precept Dominion elites.

Seeing the six Precept Dominion Death Knights charging over, all eight of the Precept Dominion elites of the Celestial Court all shuddered. It was not like they had not fought against Precept Dominion-realm Deathkin elites, but those Precept Dominion elites were nowhere comparable to these Death Knights.

Before they even fought, the eight Precept Dominion elites from the Celestial Court already had thoughts of retreating.

“Lord Xiang is here to play with you lot.”

Xiang Chunan roared, and like a primordial savage bull, charged at the six Precept Dominion Death Knights.

Seeing this, the six Death Knights dared not be careless, and immediately changed their attack target.

They had just witnessed Xiang Chunan killing a Precept Dominion elite with just two punches. This black fool was outrageously strong, and they must not treat him with contempt just because he had not yet culminated his Precept Dominion.

“Demonic Mountain Dominion!”

Xiang Chunan roared violently as hundreds of thousands of fist precepts appeared as a massive surge of demonic Qi converged.

The demonic Qi surged and fused with the precepts of fists, forming hundreds of majestic demonic mountains as they connected with one another, unleashing a domineering demonic aura.

The six Death Knights struck out at the same time, each releasing a dark light that then fused together.

“The Reaper’s Light!”

This was a skill unique to the Fane of Death, and only the Death Knights could learn them, its power devastating.

Boom!

The Demonic Mountain burst into pieces, and transformed into roiling demonic Qi.

Voooosh!

The Metal Demonic Crown blasted out demonic Qi and suddenly became massive, as it crushed at the six Death Knights.

“Death’s Redemption!”

A powerful surge of evil death Qi emerged from the six Death Knights, forming into a Image of Death.

The Image of Death coiled its hands around the six Death Knights, protecting them tightly within its embrace.

Baaaam!!

The Metal Demonic Crown unleashed a terrifying Supreme Power, and although it managed to beat the Image of Death until it faded a little, it failed to destroy it.

“Third Brother, Second Brother is here to help you.”

Feng Yan appeared next to Xiang Chunan, forming an mystical seal as he blasted it out.

“Fengshen’s Stratagems.”

With gusts of breeze blowing, a Divine Shadow appeared behind Feng Yan’s back, faintly exuding divine aura.

The Divine Shadow reached out and pushed forward as a strong gale appeared, transforming into a divine tiger, pouncing at the Image of Death.

Whoosh!!

The Image of Death was literally torn apart, and was reduced to fragments.

It was at this moment, a massive surge of Will of Death gushed out of the bodies of the six Death Knights as they fused together and forming a massive Shadow of Death.

This was a conjuration of the Will of Death, and was completely different from the Image of Death created by the Fane of Death’s secret arts.

The six Death Knight’s have all cultivated their Will of Death to a very supremely high level.

The Shadow of Death raised its hand, and a black stallion suddenly flew over from the horizon. It was extremely fast as it charged at Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan like a comet.

“Eye of the Wind God, shatter!”

Feng Yan yelled, as the eye on the Divine Shadow’s forehead ripped open, revealing an vertical eye.

Boooom!!

A dazzling divine light shot out from the vertical eye, and collided with the black stallion charging from the horizon.

The black stallion was extremely powerful, but it was still blocked by the divine light and was quickly annihilated.

“Howl of the Wind God!”

Feng Yan wore a solemn expression as he continuously infused his own divine power into the Divine Shadow, and even roused the Precepts of Truth in his body.

“Raaaawr!”

The Divine Shadow leaned forward, and let out a terrifying roar.

An endless whistling gale shrouded the Shadow of Death.

The bracelet on the Shadow of Death’s hand flew out, and the five corporeal beads bloomed in dark light as arcane patterns appeared on each beads. They then formed a powerful barrier to block out the wind.

However, the howling gale did not weaken at all, and instead grew stronger as it merged together and transformed into countless menacing dragons and tigers as they attacked the barrier.

Crack!

The barrier was unable to withstand the howling gale’s assault and soon unravelled.

The Shadow of Death was instantly ripped apart by the howling gale, and the six Death Knights all used their secret

life-saving technique to break free. They managed to escape the slaughter and avoided being killed by the gale.

However, they were still badly hurt, their armor rend by the gale, and they have wounds all over their body as blood flowed freely.

At this moment, a look of shock appeared in the eyes of the six Death Kings. They never expected to not be a match for Feng Yan even when the six of them worked together. Was Feng Yan's cultivation level really just Greater Precept-World?

In one of the warships that had not joined the battle, Zhen Yuan and Xuanyuan Liekong stood side by side, and their eyes were set at Feng Yan's position.

"I never expected Feng Yan had cultivated the Nüwa Scripture to such a level. Even Feng Wuxing could not compare, right?" Xuanxuan Liekong said with a surprised look.

Zhen Yuan smiled and said. "Although Feng Yan is not a Shenzi, but his potential is definitely no weaker than one. In particular, he inherited Fengshen's three heads and six arms, and was beloved by Fengshen. Fengshen even personally guided his cultivation, and even used his own divine blood to cleanse his bones and body.

"Back then, Feng Yan's strength was not all that strong, it was simply because he had yet to successfully cultivated the Nüwa Scripture. How can the paramount talent of the Feng clan be a mediocre person?"

Fengshen, the ancestor of the Feng clan, was a character that was equal to Yueshen. According to the legends, he was a descendent of the the Nüxi Clan of the legendary ancient goddess, Empress Wa, and had received a true inheritance.

As a clan descending from the gods, the Feng clan's position in one of the four dominant worlds, the Great Pangu Realm, and the Fane of Truth is extremely powerful.

And the Nüwa Scripture was the peerless scripture created by Empress Wa. Even if it was a cultivation exercise, it also have secret techniques and skills in it, and was one of the techniques on the Taiyi Divine Techniques Ranking.

The Nüwa Scripture was extremely difficult to cultivate, and only a few people would have the potential to cultivate it in every generation of the Feng clan. Those who could successfully cultivate it was even lesser.

“In this way, once Feng Yan has fully developed, surpassing his sister Feng Xi is not impossible. The Feng clan is really lucky to have two peerless geniuses in the same generation.” Xuanyuan Liekong said.

Zhen Yuan only just smiled and did not say anything more.

In any case, he personally looked highly upon Feng Yan, and believed that in the near future, the three heads and six arms of the Feng clan will surely have his name spread across the realms.

“Second Brother, awesome! If I knew you’re that strong I’d let you go first instead of putting in so much effort.” Xiang Chunan could not help but to give Feng Yan a thumbs up.

Although he and Feng Yan were sworn brothers, but he barely seen Feng Yan in action, and did not know how strong Feng Yan was, and could only blame Feng Yan for being too low-key.

Now he could see it clearly. Feng Yan was very strong, ridiculously strong in fact.

Chapter 1946 - Huo Nu

Chapter 1946: Huo Nu

Feng Yan smiled. “If it weren’t for the aid of the sundial, it would have taken a long time for my strength to reach this state. The exercise I cultivated is a little special and more focused on deep accumulations before unleashing. I had some success during my previous seclusion, so I wanted to test it out on the battlefield.”

Only by personally cultivating it would one know how difficult it was to cultivate the Nüwa Scripture. It required lots of suffering and effort.

However, with what he had achieved now, looking back, it was definitely well worth it.

“In fact, you didn’t need to interfere, Second Brother. I can do it myself. My Thousand-Fold Demonic Mountain Fist has not been fully unleashed. Have a look,” Xiang Chunan said.

Immediately, he activated his Demonic Qi as hundreds of thousands of fist precepts gathered at the tip of his fist. Then, he blasted a powerful punch out.

Hundreds of thousands of precepts of the fist combined with the demonic Qi, and instantly forming tens of thousands of majestic demonic mountains, as if the gate to the Demonic Realm had been opened.

When cultivating the Thousand-Fold Demonic Mountain Fist, conjuring a Demonic Mountain was considered elementary, conjuring a hundred Demon Mountain was regarded as minor completion, and only by conjuring ten thousand Demonic Mountains was it considered full completion, and could be considered a Tongxuan level intermediate saint art, it’s power close to a high-level saint art.

The Thousand-Fold Demonic Mountain flew out and like a minor realm coming down upon the area, they crushed at the wounded Death Knights.

“Don’t even think about it!”

Another Heaven’s Reach Death Legate shouted, as he sacrifice a precious seal and clashed against the Thousand-Fold Demonic Mountains.

It was very clear to him that if he did not intervene, the six Death Knights’ death was assured.

At the same time, another Death Legate attacked Feng Yan, and did not give Feng Yan another chance to continue his attacks on the Death Knights.

Knowing that Feng Yan was no pushover, the moment he attacked, he activated his Will of Death to draw upon the power of heaven and earth to crush Feng Yan with it.

Whoosh!

Feng Yan’s closed eyes suddenly opened.

Suddenly, Feng Yan’s six arms moved together, forming an arcane mudra. The Divine Shadow behind him immediately transformed into three heads and six arms, as if an avatar of Feng Yan himself.

In this way, the Divine Shadow became even more corporeal and majestic, unleashing a terrifying power of wind and thunder.

The Nüwa Scripture was highly unpredictable, and the skills cultivated by every person would be different, and differs from person to person.

Under normal circumstances, the Feng clan disciples would cultivate the power of the wind, but Feng Yan had a unique talent, and it turned out he had instead cultivated the Thunderwind, with many changes and stronger attack power.

BOOM!!

The power of the Thunderwind transformed into a torrent of destruction, sweeping across everything.

The Will of Death of the Death Legate was instantly crushed, and could not reassemble itself.

“How can he be so strong?”

The Death Legate was shocked, as a look of fear could not help but appear in his eyes.

To think that the Will of Death he had exerted all of his strength to exert to be so easily defeated, was his opponent really just of the Greater Precept-World cultivation level?

Without giving any time for his foe to think, Feng Yan had already struck, as the power of the Thunderwind formed by countless of saint path precepts evolved into a massive Thunderwind vortex. The vortex stretched hundreds of feet and was still expanding, as if trying to swallow the entire Xianji Mountain within in.

While the Death Legate had reacted quickly, he was still sucked into the Thunderwind Vortex, and was unable to break free.

“Death Sacrifice.”

Feeling the great threat, the Death Legate immediate decided to sacrifice himself.

Suddenly, the Shadow of Death reappeared, as an even more powerful Will of Death surged. The earth shook violently as mountain peaks rose from the ground, creating a terrifying scene.

BOOM!!

Many of the peaks flew into the Thunderwind Vortex, ripping open a hole within the vortex.

Taking this opportunity, the Death Legate darted out using his fastest speed possible.

Even with the Will of Death supporting it, the peaks would not last long, and was soon crushed into dust by the Thunderwind Vortex.

“Thunderwind Spike!”

Feng Yan’s eyes were cold as the mudra formed by his six hands changed.

The violent power of the Thunderwind transformed into hundreds of razor sharp spikes as they shot out at a speed

beyond comprehension.

Both wind and thunder represented extreme speed, and the combination of the two made the speed even more terrifying.

BAM! BAM!!

The Death Legate shrouded by the Shadow of Death was pierced by the Thunderwind Spikes, as they sank into him one after another.

BOOM!!

All of the Thunderwind Spikes then exploded, unleashing their destructive power.

Suddenly, the Shadow of Death disintegrated again as the Death Legate was struck by the destructive force. His whole body was burned to cinders, and he lost an arm.

Xiang Chunan repulsed the other Death Legate with his Metal Demonic Crown, and laughed. "Second Brother, good job! Don't go easy on and kill these b*stards!"

He could not do anything to the Death Legate for the time being, but trying to hold the latter at bay was not a problem.

"Don't worry, none of them will escape. I still want to earn more merit points, and get into the Saint King Merit List." Feng Yan said.

He was once ranked thirteenth in the Saint Merit List, and now that he was a Saint King, wouldn't he be laughed at if he could not even get into the list?

Now that he had completed the cultivation of the Nüwa Scripture, his strength had greatly increased, and he should fight hard in the Battlefield of Merit, and strive to increase his merit points.

Seeing the elites on his sides suffered heavy losses one after another, Commander He Yun's expression became somewhat uncomfortable. At that moment he wanted to strike at Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan as he could not just watch his own elites get killed.

But just as soon as he moved, Zhang Ruochen blocked his path. saying. “Commander He Yun, your opponent is me.”

Whoosh!

An azure spear flew out from the center of Commander He Yun’s brow as he grabbed it.

“Get lost.”

Commander He Yun roared as he swept the azure spear at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen did not dodge as all of the acupoints on his arms and palms opened and his saint Qi surged as they infused into his Fire God’s Gauntlet and Armguards.

The Fire God’s Gauntlet and Armguards lit up in flames, forming two clouds of fire as they met the azure spear.

CLANG!

The azure spear was blocked, and Zhang Ruochen did not move a single inch.

With his current ‘Beneath a Supreme Saint’-level body, if he was staggered by Commander He Yun’s random blow, it would have appeared too weak.

The so-called Beneath A Supreme Saint meant that as long as one’s combat power was not Supreme Saint-level, it was extremely difficult to cause any damage, and the wielder would be inherently invincible.

Anyone who encounters a foe with such powerful physical body will get a headache.

While Commander He Yun was powerful, his combat power was still leagues away from Supreme Saint-level, and it was almost impossible for him to hurt Zhang Ruochen.

“Dragon Upon the Nine Heavens.”

Zhang Ruochen did not like to be passively defensive, so he immediate went on the offensive.

With a palm strike, an azure dragon flew out into the sky.

BAAAMMM!!!

The azure spear was sent flying as terrifying force passed through the spear into the arms of Commander He Yun, causing his arms to tremble slightly.

Commander He Yun's gaze sharpened as he stared at Zhang Ruochen, not daring to be distracted.

He had heard that Chixing Shenzi's third general, the Blackflame General had actually perished in Zhang Ruochen's hands, and he had felt that the Blackflame General was useless back then.

It now appeared that it was not the Blackflame General being useless, but it was Zhang Ruochen who was so strong that the latter could fight against him bare-handed, and that was completely beyond his expectations.

Although he was not a Shenzi, but he was still a true Path's Anterior-realm elite, and his strength was definitely not weak, yet he had never thought that he could do nothing to a cultivator of the Greater Precept-World-realm.

Even Yuanmo Shenzi could fight against him and defeat him only after the former had broken through the Precept Dominion realm.

If Zhang Ruochen was allowed to grow, and reached the realm of Path's Anterior, wouldn't he be stronger than Yuanmo Shenzi?

"No wonder His Highness ordered that Zhang Ruochen was to be captured. The threat from this person is enormous."
Commander He Yun thought to himself.

"Huo Nu, what are you waiting for?"

Commander He Yun yelled.

Whoosh!

A white flame flew out from the war fortress, and the temperature in the area plummeted as everyone felt like that had fallen into an ice cavern.

There was a person inside the white flame, covered in silver armor. The person's appearance was shrouded and no one could tell if the person was a man or a woman.

“Zhang Ruochen, I’ll let Huo Nu play with you. Use whatever tricks you have now, otherwise you might not stand a chance!” Commander He Yun sneered.

With Huo Nu joining the fray, he could finally be at ease.

On the surface, the three commanders were the strongest warriors under Yuanmo Shenzi, but in reality, even if the three of them were to join forces, they may not be a match against Huo Nu.

Huo Nu was from the Fane of Death, and was personally raised by Yuanmo Shenzi’s father, and absolutely obeyed Yuanmo Shenzi. It was not an exaggeration to call Huo Nu Yuanmo Shenzi’s blade that was specialized in killing.

Zhang Ruochen did not pay any attention to Commander He Yun’s provocation, and instead looked at Huo Nu as he used his Eyes of God’s Seal to carefully observe.

However, the armor Huo Nu wore was a little bizarre, and the Eye of God’s Seal could not see through it.

Without any words, Huo Nu attacked with absolute deftness as the white flames transformed into a ten-foot hand that grabbed at Zhang Ruochen.

The attack seemed very casual as if Zhang Ruochen could be captured without any effort at all.

Zhang Ruochen did not dodge, but instead immediately activated the Fire God’s Gauntlet and Armguards, unleashing two fire clouds as he slammed at the white flaming hands.

Through this blow, he should be able to test out some of Huo Nu’s capabilities.

BOOM!!

The fire clouds and the white flaming hand exploded at the same time as the two rapid disintegrated into thin air.

The two attacks were both flames, but each were undoubtedly different fundamentally. One was scorching and raging, while another was cold and quiet, literally two extremes.

A gloomy cold came radiating, causing a layer of hoarfrost to form on Zhang Ruochen's body, which nearly frozen him in ice.

"It's really strong. Yuanmo Shenzi, you sure are something. To have so many powerful underlings, I wonder how strong he really is." Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

His saint Qi stirred as the Divine Purification Flames rushed out of his body and enveloping his whole body as the hoarfrost instantly disappeared without a trace.

Through this test, Zhang Ruochen had determined that Huo Nu was a strong opponent, and deserves his serious attention.

On the other side, without needing him to speak, Ji Fanxin had moved to intercepting Commander He Yun, and relieving Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan of the oncoming threat.

Feng Yan made a show of force, using the arcane saint arts of Nüwa Scripture to rip the wounded Death Legate into pieces, destroying both his body and spirit.

Immediately after, Feng Yan assisted Xiang Chunan and severely injured another Death Legate. If it was not for the dozen of so Death General coming to the rescue in time, the latter would probably have perished as well.

The dozen Precept Dominion Death Generals were fully prepared, and soon joined forces to form the Shadow of Death with their Will of Death, otherwise they would not be able to withstand Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan's withering assault.

Chapter 1947 - God-King Fist

Chapter 1947: God-King Fist

With Xianji Mountain's five main peaks as the center, the eight war fortresses that the Deathkin had built were all lit up in the fires of battle.

Inside Xianji Mountain, a death ship made of Saint Bones hid in the mist.

Multiple figures stood on the bow as they observed the fighting outside through the mist.

Leading the party was none other than the current master of Xianji Mountain, Yuanmo Shenzi.

Standing on either side of Yuanmo Shenzi were six people: four men and two women. The aura that radiated from their bodies was extremely terrifying, and they were clearly no ordinary people.

Without exception, all these people were heirs of the gods, with high levels of cultivation and none of them were weak.

The first person to Yuanmo Shenzi's left had a slightly thin figure with a pair of grey wings behind him, exuding a decaying aura of death. He was Chixing Shenzi.

"Yuanmo Shenzi, the situation down there doesn't seem good. Are you sure Huo Nu and Commander He Yun can handle it?" Chixing Shenzi frowned slightly.

He found that Yuanmo Shenzi seemed to be a little too calm and did not even react when one of his Death Legates had died.

All of these Shenzis and Shennü had many elites under their command, but they could not withstand such losses. Losing a Death General or two was fine but losing a Death Legate or two would make anyone flinch in pain.

For example, when Chixing Shenzi had three Death Legates under his command dying one after another, it almost drove him crazy.

Yuanmo Shenzi looked extremely calm, saying. “No need to worry, Zhang Ruochen won’t be able to do anything, but that Fairy Baihua looks a little tricky to me.”

“Fairy Baihua? She’s only a Precept Dominion-realm cultivator, and her strength is at most the close to Commander He Yun, what’s so tricky about her?” Chixing Shenzi had a puzzled look.

Yuanmo Shenzi shook his head slightly, saying. “You underestimate this Fairy Baihua too much. While her martial arts cultivation is indeed not too high, her spiritual powers is extremely strong, and is perhaps no weaker than Ming Gu.”

Hearing this, Chixing Shenzi and the other Shenzis and Shennü all had a surprised look. They were not aware of this but did not doubt what Yuanmo Shenzi had said.

Yuanmo Shenzi was not only powerful in his martial arts cultivation, his spiritual power was also extraordinarily strong. He had almost no weakness, otherwise he could not have become one of the ten strongest elites of the Deathkin Saint Kings. There was barely anyone that could force him to use his full strength.

“Since Fairy Baihua is that powerful, with her around, Huo Nu may not be her match.” A rather tall Shennü frowned.

A Shenzi with four arms smiled and said. “Muling Shennü, you don’t have to worry too much, I believe that Yuanmo Shenzi had already long thought of a countermeasure.”

A smile appeared in Yuanmo Shenzi’s eyes, saying. “Have you forgotten? Qi Yang had been eyeing the nine fairies on the Nine Immortal Beauties portrait for a long time.”

“Qi Yang had already come over?” Chixing Shenzi showed a surprised look.

Yuanmo Shenzi nodded. “Yes, With Fairy Yuan appearing in the Northern Region, how could Qi Yang not come?”

“I’m afraid only beautiful women can actually pique Qi Yang’s interest. Since he is here, this battle would be a lot easier for us.” A smile appeared on Chixing Shenzi’s face.

Who is Qi Yang?

He was the same as Yuanmo Shenzi, one of the Deathkin Saint King elite ten, and his strength was terrifying.

He had a well-known hobby of collecting beautiful women. The beauties of various races were all objects of his collection.

All along, Qi Yang had wanted to take all the fairies in the Nine Immortal Beauties portrait as part of his collection, but he never had the chance.

Suddenly, Yuanmo Shenzi’s expression became serious, saying. “Later on, not only Qi Yang will make his move, we also need to make our move, and face the Celestial Court elites. Be careful, don’t go dying in their hands.”

“Zhen Yuan is mine, pick whoever else you like.” A ray of light appeared in the eyes of Chixing Shenzi.

The four-armed Shenzi laughed. “It seems like you have suffered a defeat in Zhen Yuan’s hands earlier, how about I deal with him instead?”

Chixing Shenzi turned his head and hissed coldly. “Shengku, don’t interfere with my business. It was just a test last time; do you really think I’m afraid of Zhen Yuan?”

“Just saying, why take it so seriously. I’ll leave Zhen Yuan to you then.” Shengku Shenzi shrugged.

The relationship between Shenzi and Shennü were not absolute harmonious. After all, the forces behind each of them were different, and much of the times, they were happy to see others suffer.

The laws of survival in the Infernal Court was brutal and was much more fighting and struggles than the Celestial Court.

A violent gale suddenly blew before the war fortress Zhang Ruochen was at as a golden light appeared and transforming into a massive golden demonic bird.

On the back of the golden demonic bird stood a handsome man in golden armor. He wore a smile on his face and had an outstanding temperament.

The moment he appeared, his eyes were immediately locked onto Fairy Baihua, as if everyone else had disappeared and that only Fairy Baihua existed in this world.

“Beautiful, just beautiful, as expected of Fairy Baihua on the Nine Immortal Beauties portrait, and you are much prettier than flowers.” A covetous look appeared in the eye of the handsome man in golden armor.

He was not anyone else, he was the Qi Yang that Yuanmo Shenzi had mentioned. He was one of the top Shenzi of the Deathkins and stood equally with Yuanmo Shenzi.

Ji Fanxin’s gentle palm strike sent Commander He Yun reeling backwards, and then looked at Qi Yang.

Upon seeing Qi Yang’s gaze, a look of disgust appeared in Ji Fanxin’s eyes.

Qi Yang flew off from the back of the golden demonic bird, and came to about ten feet before Ji Fanxin, smiling. “I am Qi Yang. I’ve heard of your good name for a long time, and had always been admiring of you. I wonder if fairy could fulfill my infatuation?”

“Qi Yang, one of the top ten elites of the Deathkin Saint Kings. the sixth son of King Qi Tian. Danger index level 10, loves collecting beautiful women. This will be troublesome!” Ji Fanxin frowned.

She had long memorized all of the information regarding the Infernal Court’s elite Shenzi and Shennüs in her mind.

As long as their danger index reached level ten, without exception, they all have devastating fighting power that could fight against Neverwithers Supreme Saints and even defeat those Supreme Saints.

Throughout the entire Infernal Court, there top-tier monsters whose danger index could reach level ten was few and far between. Unlike the Immortal Vampires, the Rakshashas or the Ashurans, each race only had a bare few.

Rumors has it that there is a top 100 list among the Infernal Court Saint Kings and arrayed in the list were all of the top elites of the various Infernal Court tribes.

Every single person who could get into the top 100 list all had a level ten danger index.

The extremely powerful Xuetu Shenzi in the Sword Vault actually ranked towards the back on that list.

Qi Yang on the other hand, was towards the front, ranking within the top fifty, which meant that his strength was stronger than Xuetu Shenzi.

“Huh? Qi Yang is here too!”

On the warship, Xuanyuan Liekong frowned slightly.

Before the battle, they had calculated and planned out everything, but Qi Yang was not part of the equation.

A powerhouse like Qi Yang alone was enough to influence the direction of the battle.

Zhen Yuan looked at Ji Fanxin, saying. “Qi Yang probably came for the two fairies. As long as Fairy Baihua can hold him back for a period of time, it won’t have any impact on our plan.”

“Can Fairy Baihua hold Qi Yang back?” Xuanyuan Liekong was a little worried.

Zhen Yuan said. “Junior Brother Zhang had told me that during the battle of Sword Vault, Fairy Baihua was deeply involved, and seeing how calm she is at this moment, I don’t think she’s afraid of Qi Yang.

“Well, Fairy Baihua could use her spiritual powers to forcibly obtain the Blackflame General’s memories, so her spiritual power is bound to be extremely powerful, and she could indeed fight against Qi Yang with that. However, I do worry more about Zhang Ruochen’s side.” Xuanyuan Liekong looked at Zhang Ruochen, with a look of concern appearing in his eyes.

Zhen Yuan laughed. “Junior Brother Zhang is the Scion of Time and Space, and even if he cannot fight them, he has

means to protect himself. You don't need to worry about him. And I think we might need to reply on Junior Brother Zhang's side to breach the Deathkin's second defensive line."

"You have a lot of faith in him, and it seems like your Taoism branch is ready to give him your full support." Xuanyuan Liekong shook his head.

Upon hearing this, Zhen Yuan just smiled and said nothing.

"Zhen Yuan, fight me!"

At this moment Chixing Shenzi's violent roar thundered.

The gray wings on Chixing Shenzi's back flapped, as his death Qi surged, as if billions of dead spirits were about to come rushing out from the underworld.

At the same time, Yuanmo Shenzi and the other five Shenzi and Shennüs also appeared, each unleashing an extremely powerful aura as evil death Qi rushed out in a frenzy and smothered the heavens.

"You came at the right time, Yuanmo, I've been waiting for you for a long time." Xuanyuan Liekong roared as his body exuded a powerful battle spirit.

As the new God of War of the Wanxu Realm, his strength had been increased through series of battles, and every battle made him even stronger.

For a person to be called a God of War, he needed to be undefeated in thousands of battles, and lived through ten thousand battles.

Ever since he came to the Northern Region Battlefield of Merit, Xuanyuan Liekong had been looking forward to have a good fight with Yuanmo Shenzi.

With his current strength, only through fighting against powerhouses like Yuanmo Shenzi could he improve his strength further.

Yuanmo Shenzi stepped forward, and the nether ground beneath his feet expanded as the death Qi permeated in all directions, seemingly wanting to turn this world into the underworld and annihilating all life.

“Xuanyuan Liekong, I have long wanted to fight you. I hope you won’t let me down.” Yuanmo Shenzi also unleashed a powerful battle spirit.

“Take this!”

Xuanyuan Liekong cut to the chase and instantly launched his attack.

He used the God King’s Fist, however, the kind of power he had unleashed was not at all comparable to the three Tu brothers.

To be precise, the three Tu brothers had only cultivated a simplified version of the God King Fist, and was only an intermediate-level saint art.

On the other hand, Xuanyuan Liekong had cultivated the perfect God King Fist, and was a genuine high-level saint art.

There were three types of God King Fist circulating in Wanxu Realm, namely: low-level saint art, intermediate-level saint art, and high-level saint art.

In the beginning, all cultivators of the Wanxu Realm would cultivate the low-level God King First to lay the foundation first. It was only after that would they have the hopes to successfully cultivate an intermediate-level and high level God King Fist.

According to hearsay, the real God King Fist is a very powerful divine technique, and was simplified by a top Supreme Saint into a saint art, and then spread it across Wanxu Realm.

The high-level God King Fist was already extremely powerful, and since its creation, there were scant few who could successfully cultivate it while still a Saint King.

Through this, one could see how powerful Xuanyuan Liekong was, and his title as a ‘God of War’ was well deserved.

Chapter 1948 - Breaching the War Fortress

Chapter 1948: Breaching the War Fortress

No one said a word. With Xuanyuan Liekong and Zhang Yuan leading the way, seven other top fighters from the Celestial Court lunged out of the warship to meet the Shenzis and Shennus of the Deathkin.

Both sides had selected their opponents and could not wait to fight.

This place had become a dead land. No matter how brutal the battle became, it would not turn any worse. Even if the entire Xianji Mountain sank, it would be okay.

Of course, Xianji Mountain would not be easily destroyed as a land of awakening.

Apparently, no one could really win the battle in a short time.

Like what Zheng Yuan said, he needed Zhang Ruochen and the eight companies of soldiers of his men to attack Xianji Mountain while they would hold off those nasty figures of the Deathkin.

In front of the war fortress, Zhang Ruochen and Huo Nu had exchanged tens of blows, and none of them could get advantage over the other.

Meanwhile, Ji Fanxin and Qi Yang were in a standoff, not making their moves.

Facing a Deathkin monster like Qi Yang, even Ji Fanxi was feeling intimidated.

A voice called out from out of nowhere all of a sudden. "Let me give you a hand, Fairy!"

A shadow flew from the horizon and landed like a javelin beside Ji Fanxin.

It was a very good-looking young man, in his early twenties, wearing an expensive-looking, sapphire-blue robe with a jasper hanging around his waist. The most eye-catching part of him was his pair of sapphire-blue eyes, clear and penetrating, as if there were two drops of ocean in there.

“It has been a long time, Fairy. You are still as beautiful as ever. I heard you were in Northern Region, and so rushed over from Southern Region to meet you. And here I am.” The man in an expensive robe had a bright smile on his face.

Qi Yang’s eyes flashed in a cold light as he sneered. “Are you trying to play hero here? Those who did this stupid thing in front of me last time had all died!”

The man frowned with a grim look in his eyes. “How dare a Deathkin shenzi be so cheeky in front of me? Tell me: how would you like to die?”

“I didn’t know there is anyone more arrogant than I am. Tell me your name; I don’t kill those who I don’t name their names,” said Qi Yang.

“Listen carefully, I am Bi Yunhai from Heavensea Realm. It is your honor to die at my hands.”

Bi Yunhai looked unusually confident while speaking, as if he was better than anyone else.

“I can’t believe Bi Yunhai has also come to Northern Region.”

The three Tu Brothers looked astounded.

Just then, there was a commotion among the cultivators on the four warships. All eyes were on Bi Yunhai.

“With Bi Yunhai here, winning the battle is already a foregone conclusion.”

“You are so right. Just look at how powerful he is. Even the Neverwither Supreme Saint lost to him. He was just as good as a Neverwither Supreme Saint. Qi Yang picking Bi Yunhai as his opponent is a big mistake. He is going to die.”

“I heard that Bi Yunhai had over eight million internal Precepts. It’s hard to imagine how a person could hold such an amount of Precept in the body.”

“Absolutely. Besides, Bi Yunhai has immortalized both of his arms. He has got Neverwither Supreme Saint’s Arm, which when performed, is no different from a Neverwither Supreme Saint.”

...

Many cultivators on the four warships were in high spirits, rubbing their hands as they could not wait to get down on the battlefield to fight alongside Bi Yunhai.

In their eyes, Bi Yunhai was a legend whom they had never had the chance to meet on normal days. Now, no one had any doubt that they were going to win because Bi Yunhai had come.

Upon hearing the chatter behind him, Bi Yunhai became even more confident and haughty. He was really flattered.

Meanwhile, Ji Fanxi remained silent, not letting down her guard just because Bi Yunhai was here.

Qi Yang’s expression was bitter with murderous intent in his eyes. “Oh, very well, Bi Yunhai. You will meet your death now. Aren’t you afraid?”

“A moment, please, Fairy. Let me get rid of him first.” Bi Yunhai’s confidence was at an all-time high.

He made his move, Neverwither saint light glowing on his arms as his acupoints opened and saint Qi rushed out like mad.

A jade-green sea appeared under his feet and spread in all directions, as if it was going to turn Xianji Mountain into an ocean.

The weather changed drastically within 7,000-mile radius of him as he gathered one third of the Precepts of Heaven and Earth to himself.

At this moment, Bi Yunhai seemed to be the lord of the small world within 7,000-mile radius, everything under his control.

After forming Precept Domain and as a start, he could mobilize the Precept of Heaven and Earth and harness its amazing energy.

But Percept Domain could only summon so much Precept of Heaven and Earth from within a hundred-mile radius at most, and not all the Precept could be summoned.

After attaining Heaven's Reach, the ability of summoning Percept of Heaven and Earth would increase, and its range would expand to as far as a thousand-mile radius.

Once achieving Path's Anterior and perfectly aligned with Precept of Heaven and Earth, the range would be at least a thousand-mile radius and at most, ten-thousand-mile radius.

A relatively less powerful Path's Anterior fighter like Commander He Yun could form over 30-million Precepts and his range would be limited to within a thousand-mile radius.

Huo Nu was not much better than Commander He Yun. His number of Precepts was close to 50,000 with a range of two-thousand-mile radius.

But Huo Nu and Bi Yunhai were not in the same league. After all, Bi Yunhai's effective range was a seven-thousand-mile radius and could summon one third of the Precepts. Such an ability was at all no less powerful than a Neverwither Supreme Saint.

Five-thousand miles was a threshold. Anyone who could summon Precept of Heaven and Earth beyond this range could cross this threshold and become a Neverwither Supreme Saint.

Throughout the Celestial Court and the Infernal Court, rarely anyone could have that attainment from the Saint Kingdom—not even the leader of a Macroworld.

With his own Precepts as the core and complemented with the Precept of Heaven and Earth, Bi Yunhai performed an unusually powerful palm strike.

The jade-green sea was expanding, sweeping the clouds and clearing up the sky.

“It is Azure Sky-Sea Palm, a Tongxuan-class intermediate saint technique. It looks like an advanced saint technique when performed by Bi Yunhai.”

Someone could not help but exclaim in awe when Bi Yunhai made the move.

Heavensea Realm ranked in the top one hundred in the Eastern Universe. But there were only three types of Tongxuan-class intermediate saint technique. Most people did not have the chance to learn, and even if they could, it was difficult to attain Dacheng Realm.

Azure Sky-Sea Palm was Heavensea Realm's most well-known Tongxuan-class intermediate saint technique. It was incredibly powerful, almost as good as an advanced saint technique.

Apparently, Bi Yunhai's Azure Sky-Sea Palm had attained Dacheng Realm. He totally mastered the essence of it.

If this was performed in an opened water, the power it produced would be even more incredible.

Qi Yang looked composed, not a hint showing he was panicking.

It was not until Bi Yunhai was making his palm strike that Qi Yang made his move, using his hand as a blade to slash forward.

His hand dragged a thousand-yard-long tail of blade light to meet the incoming azure sea.

Bi Yunhai's hand blade cut the azure sea in half and crushed the Precept of Heaven and Earth.

"How could this be possible?"

Bi Yunhai was shocked.

Although he knew his palm move was not going to do any harm to Qi Yang, he did not expect Qi Yang to defeat his Azure Sky-Sea Palm so effortlessly.

"That's all what you have got, huh? You are a real letdown!" Qi Yang sneered.

"Heavenly Sea Unbounded!"

Bi Yunhai immediately performed another palm strike, his looking stern.

He could only shine in front of everyone by defeating Qi Yang.

His last move was just a test. That came next was the actual battle. He was still confident that he could beat Qi Yang.

Ji Fanxin had retreated to one side and intercepted Commander He Yun.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen was still focusing on dealing with Huo Nu. The appearance of Qi Yang and Bi Yunhai had not distracted him.

Huo Nu, a Path's Anterior fighter who could summon the Precepts of Heaven and Earth within 2,000-mile radius, could have suppressed Zhang Ruochen.

But Zhang Ruochen had mastered the advanced saint technique. Using his Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike, he could also summon the Precepts of Heaven and Earth to make up for his weaknesses.

This was the amazing thing about advanced saint technique, which was something only Supreme Saint could master. Once performed, it could trigger the vision and the Precept of Heaven of Heaven and Earth within a large area.

Of course, it was also because his Sky Soaring Dragon-elephant had attained the Dacheng Realm and he had refined the Supreme Saint-class dragon and elephant souls, using the saint soul of Beast Emperor to summon the Precept of Heaven and Earth was easy-peasy.

“Heavenly Dragon-Elephant!”

By gathering his internal saint Qi, Zhang Ruochen performed the most powerful palm strike.

He summoned the Precepts of Truth to increase his attack strength by eightfold.

Supreme Saint-class dragon and elephant souls appeared and showed their puissant ability. countless Precepts of Heaven and Earth circled around them, as if they were the core of this heaven and earth.

White flame went up on Huo Nu's body as he performed a punch strike. The white flame formed into a lifelike and vicious Qiongqi beast.

Bang!

It did not take long before the Supreme Saint-class dragon and elephant souls ripped the Qiongqi into pieces.

Following immediately, a horrible energy hit Huo Nu, sending him flying out backward.

“Break this ear fortress!” Zhang Ruochen instructed as he summoned the evil spirit out of the Qiankun Realm.

After four years of closed-door self-cultivation practice, the evil spirit had completely coalesced with the corpse of the divine python and had the corpse totally under its control.

The divine python might have died a long time ago and its divine power dissipated, and Luo Ji had taken the remaining Stellar Soul of God. But this was a divine body, the residual divine power should not be underestimated.

The corpse of the divine python was especially tough—so much so that even a Supreme Artifact might not cause any harm to it.

“A piece of cake! Leave him to me.” The evil spirit was full of confidence.

Boom!

The evil spirit in the 3,000-yard-long body lunged out to attack the war fortress.

An overwhelming divine power rushed out of the evil spirit's new body like a tidal wave as it declared war on the war fortress.

The war fortress was extremely solid. On top of that, it could align itself with the power of seven other war fortresses. Destroying the war fortress was extremely difficult.

However, there was now violent tremor ripped throughout the war fortress. Even the mountain peak below was shaking and crumbling.

The war fortress cracked in the middle and broke in half amid a loud rumble.

Down below, the mountain peak tumbled as magma burst out of the ground, the thick pungent smell of sulfur permeating the air.

Chapter 1949 - The Clash of the Non-Supreme Saint Fighters

Chapter 1949: The Clash of the Non-Supreme Saint Fighters

As the war fortress cracked, the Deathkin cultivators hiding on the inside met the ordeal of being slaughtered by the ruthless divine power of the Evil Spirit.

Many of them fled the war fortress in a panic.

“Let us kill our way in!”

Zhang Ruochen issued his soldiers to attack with the wave of his hand.

Those Celestial Court cultivators on the four warships were transfixed for a second before they all came to their senses and lunged out toward the army of Deathkin.

The Deathkin were panicking, and it was the best time to attack.

“What?”

Those Deathkin Shenzis were all shocked upon seeing a war fortress fall.

At first, they thought of using the eight fortress-like barracks to stop the Celestial Court army on the outside, then slowly killed them.

They were very confident of the defense ability of the war fortresses and did not expect that one would be brought down so quickly.

“The corpse of the divine python. It is under Zhang Ruochen’s control.”

Chixing Shenzi’s face looked grave when he saw the corpse of the divine python.

Back then, Pei Yutian took the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb from him and hid at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom. He sent a Blackflame General to recover it but Zhang Ruochen captured and killed the Blackflame General.

When news of a divine body buried at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom spread, he wanted to get a piece of the action. He was stopped by Zheng Yuan and could only watch as Zhang Ruochen took the corpse of the divine python.

In Chixing Shenzi's mind, the Yuanhui Tribulation sacred herb and the corpse of the divine python should belong to him. But at the end of the day, he achieved nothing. Instead, he became a laughingstock to other Deathkin shenzis and Ladys.

Now, when he saw Zhang Ruochen used the corpse of the divine python to defeat a war fortress, he was enraged. How he wished he could spare a hand to deal with Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen has got some skill!” There was a sinister look in Yuanmo Shenzi's eyes.

“How dare you be distracted while fighting me, Yuanmo!” Xuanyuan Liekong shouted.

He performed a God King Fist, each strike more powerful than the last, as if he was god king of war-possessed.

Bi Yunhai could summon one-third of the Precept of Heaven and Earth within a 7,000-mile radius, while Xuanyuan Liekong half of the Precept of Heaven and Earth within an 8,000-mile radius. Xuanyuan Liekong was so much more powerful than Bi Yunhai.

In theory, a cultivator in the pinnacle of Saint Kinghood could summon the Precept of Heaven and Earth within a 10,000-mile radius.

But in reality, achieving a 6,000-7,000-mile radius was exceptional. Few could achieve an 8,000-mile radius.

Yuanmo Shenzi's range was also 8,000-mile radius, which was comparable to that of Xuanyuan Liekong. So the gap between them was minimal, and the battle fell into a stalemate.

“If you all think you could win just because you have brought down a bivouac, then you all are sorely mistaken. Don’t forget that Qi Yang is here. You all are going to lose,” said Yuanmo Shenzi.

Qi Yang was equal to, if not above, him in terms of strength. In the Celestial Court, who except Xuanyuan Liekong was his equal?

Now, with him holding off Xuanyuan Liekong, the Celestial Court forces would suffer huge casualties and flee with tail between their legs in just a few moments.

“Oh, yeah? We shall see.” Xuanyuan Liekong sneered.

Since Zheng Yuan trusted Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin, he could only trust them, too.

Of course, he did not like the idea of betting his hope on someone else. He trusted himself more.

He did not need Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxi to defeat Qi Yang. As long as they could hold off Qi Yang while he beat Yuanmo Shenzi, winning would be a foregone conclusion.

In front of the broken war fortress, Ji Fanxin started to attack aggressively as she no longer wanted to mess around with Commander He Yun.

An intense spiritual power formed a petal rain, drowning Commander He Yun in it.

As the petal rain dissipated after a few moments, Commander He Yun plunged straight down from the air. Apparently he was dead.

Next, Ji Fanxin appeared beside Zhang Ruochen and pressed forward toward the heart of Xianji Mountain with him.

Their purpose here was not to fight with the Deathkins but to retrieve the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, which was their actual target.

Right now, the Deathkins were retreating, overwhelmed by Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxi’s attack.

Before long, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Pei Yutian arrived and joined them.

Not that Pei Yutian was doing nothing earlier. In fact, he joined the battle from the beginning. His cultivation base might only be in the realm of the Lesser Precept World, but his level of physical strength was enough for him to challenge Precept Domain fighters.

“Are we attacking alone, Big Brother? Should we help the other teams first?” asked Xiang Chunan.

“That won’t be necessary. The situation favors us now. Let us get to the Altar of Death. Clear out all the obstacles!”

“Okay, let’s slaughter them all!” Xiang Chunan snickered.

While speaking, he had cast out his Metal Demonic Crown at the Deathkin general, who was already badly wounded.

Meanwhile, Feng Yan performed a God Shadow, striking out his six arms to grab the six Precept-Domain Death Knights.

If not for the intervention of the Death Legates, he would have killed the six Precept-Domain Death Knights.

Those Death Legates, still maintaining the massive The Shadow of Death, were trying to stop Feng Yan again.

“Sky Soaring Dragon-elephant!”

Zhang Ruochen made his move. The dragon and elephant shadows lunged out with overwhelming energy as he summoned over half of the Precept of Heaven and Earth within a 2,000-mile radius.

Bang!

The Shadow of Death formed by a few dozen Death Legates was forced to retreat as the blow almost broke it up.

Because of his advanced saint technique, Zhang Ruochen could now summon the Precept of Heaven and Earth within 2,000-mile radius, which was better than that of a Path’s Anterior fighter, comparable to that of Huo Nu.

While he could summon half of the Precept of Heaven and Earth, Huo Nu only two-fifth of it. So although Huo Nu had an

upper hand in terms of cultivation base, he still could not hold a candle to Zhang Ruochen.

When Zhang Ruochen used his Precepts of Truth, Huo Nu became a sitting duck.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen still had a long way to go before his strength could match those of Xuanyuan Liekong and Yuanmo Shenzi.

But once his cultivation base improved further, attaining the realms of Precept Domain, Heaven's Reach, and even Path's Anterior, it would be hard to tell who was better unless they squared it off.

In the realm of Lesser Precept World, Zhang Ruochen still had much room for improvement. All he needed was time.

Without the interference from the Death Legates, Feng Yan captured the six Precept Domain Death Knights with ease.

He showed the six Precept-Domain Death Knights no mercy and killed them all, then harvested their saint souls.

With these six saint souls, he could exchange for a handsome number of merits at the Grand Terminal of Merits.

While Zhang Ruochen and his mates were ready to launch a large-scale assault, the battle situation between Bi Yunhai and Qi Yang took a sudden change.

Bi Yunhai was slashed by Qi Yang's blade on his shoulder with blood oozing out of the deep cut wound.

He was badly wounded from the cut.

“Darn-it!”

Bi Yunhai was furious. A saint light glowed and a sky-blue gourd flew out of his forehead.

The gourd was at the size of the palm of a hand, engraved with esoteric inscriptions, very different from those on the Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifacts.

“Regal weapon!” Zhang Ruochen muttered.

Both the Azuresky Bow and Whitesun Arrow were regal weapons. So he was very familiar with it.

It surprised him to see Bi Yunhai possessing a regal weapon.

As Bi Yunhai continuously injected his saint Qi, the sky-blue gourd rapidly expanded to over ten-yard tall.

Over 200,000 regal-class inscriptions appeared. The regal saint power had triggered ripples to form in the dimension.

“Prepare to die, Qi Yang!”

Bi Yunhai was really mad. He trained the sky-blue gourd at Qi Yang.

Boom!

A beam of bright sky-blue saint light shot out of the gourd, almost causing the dimension to distort.

He had suffered humiliation from the first round, and now he was completely mad. He was not going to hold back anymore. He wanted to use all available means to defeat and even kill Qi Yang to redeem his pride.

Regal weapons were seriously powerful, especially when used by a top fighter like Bi Yunhai.

A streak of blood-red blade light cut the sky-blue saint light in half.

“H—how could this be possible?”

Bi Yunhai was shocked, eyes wide open. He could not believe in what he saw.

He had a regal weapon, and it was the most powerful strike he had ever used. How could he be defeated so easily?

Now, everyone saw Qi Yang holding a demonic saber that glinted in a strange blood-red light. It exuded an air of supremacy.

“A Supreme Artifact!”

The Celestial Court cultivators’ eyes were on stalks.

Bi Yun Hai’s regal weapon was terrific enough, but Qi Yang’s Supreme Artifact was even more horrible.

At this time, even Zhang Ruochen's face had turned grim. He knew better than anyone else when it came to Supreme Artifacts.

The moment he saw that demonic saber, he knew for sure that it was a hot-off-the-furnace, complete Supreme Artifact, hot off the furnace.

Because the Kunlun Realm was prohibiting the entrance of Supreme Saints, even the local Supreme Saints had evacuated.

If there were any Supreme Saints remaining in the Kunlun Realm, they could only come from the divine land, saint land, or the forbidden land of awakening.

Once they came out and discovered, they would be expelled immediately.

Most implement spirits of the Supreme Artifacts were of Supreme Saint-class in terms of strength, so they could not enter or stay in Kunlun Realm.

Those Supreme Artifacts that could enter the Kunlun Realm were without an implement spirit, or the implement spirit was relatively weak.

Just like Blood Dropper that had only become a Supreme Artifact for a few hundred years, the strength of its implement spirit had not reached its peak, so it could remain in the Kunlun Realm.

There was also Xuetu's Seamless Purgatory Tower, which was a very ancient Supreme Artifact. It had been badly damaged and its implement spirit had not fully recovered. So it was not restricted, either.

As for Xia Wenxin's Godslayer Cross-Shield, the implement spirit of which had been dormant all the time, as if no implement spirit existed.

Once the implement spirit woke up, it would certainly be expelled.

The demonic saber in Qi Yang's hands was a complete Supreme Artifact. Yet he could bring it into the Kunlun Realm. That showed its implement spirit was still weak.

But, as weak as the implement spirit was, a complete Supreme Artifact could still unleash an immense amount of power, good enough to pose a threat to a Neverwithier Supreme Saint.

“I am surprised how dare you use a little regal weapon to fight me. Where did you get your courage from? Well, that’s not important. I will use your blood as an offering to my Blood-Drinking Demonic Saber. It will be your honor to be the first person to die by my Blood-Drinking Demonic Saber.”

Qi Yang poked out his tongue to lick the demonic saber with a ruthless look in his eyes.

Chapter 1950 - The Situation Takes a One-Eighty Turn

Chapter 1950: The Situation Takes a One-Eighty Turn

At first, the Celestial Court cultivators were still exuberant, but when they saw the demonic saber in Qi Yang's hands, they freaked out and beat a hasty retreat.

Bang!

Xiang Chunan punched and smashed a Death Legate.

“Stop throwing your weight around!”

A cold light flashed in Qi Yang's eyes as he aimed one of his fingers at Xiang Chunan.

Several hundred thousand precepts, along with the Precepts of Heaven and Earth from within an 8,000-mile radius, gathered on his fingertip.

“Watch out, Brother Xiang!”

Feng Yan warned, as he was the nearest person to Xiang Chunan.

While he called out, he cast out, at the highest possible speed, an Eighth Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact, trying to block Qi Yang's finger attack.

Boom!

The Eighth Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact exploded at once, turning into scraped metal. It failed to affect the finger light a bit.

Xiang Chunan's reaction was quick. He quickly cast out the Metal Demonic Crown and gathered Supreme Power to block in front of him.

But it was useless. The finger light deflected the Metal Demonic Crown before hitting Xiang Chunan on his body.

Xiang Chunan roared. Black divine marks appeared and intertwined on his body to block the finger light.

The divine marks blocked most of the finger light but he was still sent flying out backward, burping up blood as he was badly wounded.

Had it not been for the Metal Demonic Crown and divine marks, he would have probably died.

“I can’t believe that you are still alive. You have got some skill.” Qi Yang let out a faint smile as he raised his hand to perform another strike for good measure.

At that moment, ripples suddenly formed in the dimension, then out of nowhere, Zhang Ruochen appeared and kept Xiang Chunan behind him.

Zhang Ruochen looked grave, enraged because Qi Yang almost killed Xiang Chunan in front of his eyes. Qi Yang had crossed the line.

“Dimensional Warp!”

“Dimensional Rift!”

Zhang Ruochen immediately performed his dimensional skills as soon as he saw Qi Yang striking with his finger move again.

After the breach of the war fortress, the dimensional lockdown at Xianji Mountain had been removed, and he regained control of the dimension.

Interfered and deflected by Dimensional Warp, the finger light was then devoured by Dimensional Rift.

There was a surprised look in Qi yang’s eyes. “Dimensional skills! Like that Yuanmo said, you are the Scion of Time and Space! I can’t believe that Xumi the old monk could still train a successor after he was dead for so long. Not half bad at all!”

“Let us join hands, Zhang Ruochen. You hold off Qi Yang with your dimensional skills while I attack him,” said Bi Yunhai through telepathy.

Obviously, he could see how amazing Zhang Ruochen’s dimensional skills were and could cause problems to Qi Yang

while giving him the opportunity to attack.

Qi Yang turned his head around and looked at Bi Yunhai.

A strange glow appeared in Qi Yang's eyes, which sent out a horrible energy wave.

“Not good!”

The three Tu Brothers standing nearest to Bi Yunhai sensed the danger, their faces changed.

With no hesitation, they cast out a Ninth Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact-class shield in front of them and summoned the full strength of the shield.

Likewise, Bi Yunhai quickly yanked out the sky-blue gourd when he sensed the danger.

As an invisible energy hit the shield, it melted away like ice under the scorching sun.

The three Tu Brothers screamed in pain as their bodies melted just like the shield did. They summoned their saint Qi to resist it, but it was useless.

If things kept going like this, they would be done for.

Meanwhile, Bi Yunhai's situation was better as he was blocking the attack with a regal weapon. But he was still forced to retreat, as the attack was too much to bear.

At last, a through and through bloody wound appeared in his chest. He nearly fell headfirst to the ground.

“Impossible!”

He clenched his fists tightly as he could not believe what was happening.

He could totally understand it if Qi Yang were using a Supreme Saint to beat him. But Qi Yang had no movement; with eyes alone, he had already wounded him badly. He could not believe that the gap between them was so huge.

The Celestial Court cultivators were quaking in their boots at seeing the death of the three Tu Brothers and the wounding of Bi Yunhai. How powerful Qi Yang was, really?

They did not think the three Tu Brothers were weak. Instead, each of the three brothers was powerful enough to beat any Heaven's Reach fighter, and rivaled a Path's Anterior fighter when joining hands. Yet they could not withstand a glance from Qi Yang.

Let alone Bi Yunhai, who had beaten a Neverwithers Supreme Saint before. He did not stand a chance against Qi Yang.

What kind of out-of-this-world saint technique Qi Yang had used?

This showed that the record in The Maleficent Records of the Infernal Court's Ten Clans were not accurate. Before this, no one knew Qi Yang possessed a Supreme Artifact, and no one knew he had such a pair of terrifying eyes.

Zhang Ruochen was the only person who remained calm. He took out a Dimensional Chaos Scroll, unfolded it, and hurled it at Qi Yang.

Tens of thousands of dimensional inscriptions rushed out from the scroll and became one with the Precepts of Heaven and Earth.

The dimensional structure around Qi Yang started to change. Even the earth's crust was shifting. The space within several-hundred-mile radius became a chaotic dimension in the blink of an eye.

This was a Dimensional Chaos Scroll that Zhang Ruochen made long ago. During the closed-door self-cultivation practice earlier, he remade it and burned more dimensional inscriptions onto it.

When he first made the Dimensional Chaos Scroll, his level of cultivation was still comparatively low, and his attainment of Path of Dimension was not high enough. So the first-version Dimensional Chaos Scroll had limited power. It was good enough to trap non-Precept Domain cultivators but obviously not Heaven's Reach, or even Path's Anterior fighters.

Qi Yang along with the strange energy wave of his eyes were trapped as soon as a chaotic dimension formed.

In this way, the three Tu Brothers could still live.

Qi Yang looked surprised when he sensed a strange energy wave came from behind him.

He immediately struck out his hand to block the strange energy wave while he stopped using the secret technique of the eyes.

“The attack changes course? Is it another dimensional skill?” Qi Yang carefully studied his surroundings without looking in a panic.

He had full confidence in himself. No matter how mysterious and elusive Zhang Ruochen’s dimensional skills were, it would cause him some troubles but definitely no harm.

“Bring the three Tu Brothers away,” said Zhang Ruochen.

A warship flew over at once and a few Celestial Court cultivators carried the three Tu Brothers onboard.

The three Tu Brothers might have escaped death, but they were badly wounded, part of their bodies had melted. Recovering was challenging, especially when they had lost their combat strength and were no good for the battlefield.

Bi Yunhai had also retreated, took a sacred herb, making the best of time to heal his injury.

Zhang Ruochen took out a bottle of Spring of Life from the Qiankun Realm and poured the content down Xiang Chunan’s neck.

He could see that even with the divine marks protecting him, Xiang Chunan was in a terrible shape. The blow had inflicted trauma to his internal organs. If not treated in time, the trauma could leave a chronic effect in his body.

Boom!

Qi Yang was launching an all-out attack.

The attack might have been blocked, but the chaotic dimension was shaking. There was a sign of it breaking down.

The reason was, Qi Yang’s powerful attack had overloaded the chaotic dimension.

In a matter of moments, a fine crack formed in the Dimensional Chaos Scroll.

“Your dimensional skill is not bad, Zhang Ruochen. But you couldn’t be more wrong if you think you can trap me with it.” Qi Yang roared with laughter while attacking, looking unusually at ease.

But no matter how sophisticated a skill is, it will not hold a candle to absolute power.

Just then, a glow appeared on Ji Fanxin’s forehead as an extremely ancient tortoiseshell shot out.

The tortoiseshell was at the size of the palm of a hand, silverish and covered in strange patterns, formed naturally with no signs showing that they were handcrafted.

“The tortoiseshell is a portrait of arrays, and should be good enough to keep Qi Yang in for a while,” said Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen got the hint and immediately opened up the chaotic dimension and threw the tortoiseshell into it.

The tortoiseshell glowed as strange patterns appeared and formed an esoteric array to engulf Qi Yang in it.

With the combination of a chaotic dimension and a portrait of array, Qi Yang could no longer escape, no matter how powerful he was—at least for now.

Bang!

Qi Yang struck the tortoiseshell array drawing.

But no matter how hard he tried; the tough tortoiseshell array drawing would not budge.

He hissed as he used the demonic saber to strike the tortoiseshell array drawing.

More strange patterns appeared on the tortoiseshell array drawing as the Precept of Heaven and Earth were gathered and formed into a protective shield to withstand the demonic saber’s attack.

Zhang Ruochen breathed a sigh of relief when he saw that the tortoiseshell array drawing was fine. “Taking this opportunity,

we should kill our way in!”

He immediately engulfed Ji Fanxin, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, Pei Yutian, and the evil spirit with his saint Qi.

As he performed a Dimensional Shift, the six of them disappeared into thin air.

Bi Yunhai’s eyes flashed. He stopped his healing process and faded into a stream of light as he hurled toward the heart of Xianji Mountain.

He wanted to get a piece of the action if there was any opportunity arising in Xianji Mountain.

“Not good!”

Seeing that Qi Yang was trapped, Bi Yunhai was moving toward the center of Xianji Mountain, and Zhang Ruochen and his mates were nowhere to be seen, Yuanmo Shenzi’s face looked grave.

Anxious, he tried to shake off Xuanyuan Liekong. He wanted to go after Zhang Ruochen and others.

“You won’t go anywhere, Yuanmo! You’re here to stay with me!” Xuanyuan Liekong did everything he could to hold him off.

He needed to buy Zhang Ruochen and others some time.

Meanwhile, other Deathkin shenzis and Ladies were also tied up in battles, feeling desperate.

Chixing Shenzi’s situation was not looking good either, as Zheng Yuan had pinned him down, almost breaking one of his wings.

Apparently, he had underestimated Zheng Yuan’s ability. Had he known this earlier, he would have let Shengku Shenzi deal with Zheng Yuan. He should not have looked for this trouble.

The same situation happened to Ming Gu, who was ambitious to beat Lu Baiming to become the top non-Supreme Saint array master. But things did not turn out as he had expected. Lu Baiming had got the upper hand, and it was a matter of time before he lost the battle.

The situation had taken a one-eighty turn and swung in favor of the Celestial Court.

Chapter 1951 - It's Her...

How Could It be Her?

Chapter 1951: It's Her... How Could It be Her?

Boom!

The Evil Spirit made its move, swinging its gigantic python tail and lashing at the ground as an enormous divine power surged.

As solid as the ground in the heart of Xianji Mountain was, cracks had formed in the earth, revealing an underground dimension hidden deep within the earth.

At first, Zhang Ruochen had planned to enter using his dimensional skill, but strange energy stopped him from doing so. He had no choice but to use force.

As the enchantment broke apart, a massive underground dimension came into view. The Altar of Death and the Shadow of Death looked especially conspicuous against the pitch-dark backdrop.

The last time Zhang Ruochen did a recess, the Shadow of Death was only 500-yard tall. Now it had grown to over a thousand-yard. The power he possessed must be higher than before.

The three white-robed priests were still sitting leg-crossed on the altar.

The only difference was, they were higher in their cultivation base, which had attained Path's Anterior realm.

Obviously, other than that they had attained the peak of Heaven's Reach realm in self-cultivation, the Altar of Death had a mysterious power. That was the reason they could achieve a breakthrough in their self-cultivation so quickly.

"What is happening?" Bi Yunhai came up and asked.

He came all the way from Southern Region to Northern Region for Ji Fanxin. He did not really know the situation in Northern Region.

“The Deathkin uses the Altar of Death to draw the Power of Revival of Northern Region for producing fighters. They want to open up the passage between their realm and the Kunlun Realm. The strength of the Deathkin is increasing by the day,” said Zhang Ruochen.

There was a strange look in Bi Yunhai’s eyes. “The Deathkin are scheming to fuel war with war. We can’t let that happen! Won’t they build another Altar of Death somewhere else after this one is destroyed?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “Not that easy to construct this Altar of Death. They need not only special materials but also a special location. Xianji Mountain was the base of Northern Region’s most powerful force—the Xianji Sect. This is the place of origin of Northern Region’s ancestral line, and only this place is suitable for building the Altar of Death.”

Xianji Mountain was an unusual place. Otherwise, the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree would not have been here. Not that it was impossible to find a land of awakening similar to Xianji Mountain in Northern Region. Just that it was definitely not easy.

So, destroying this Altar of Death meant ruining the hope of the Deathkin.

“Step back. Let me destroy this Altar of Death.” Bi Yunhai was full of confidence.

Earlier, he had suffered a humiliating defeat at the hands of Qi Yang. He wanted to take this opportunity to redeem his pride. He could not afford to let Ji Fanxin look down on him.

Zhang Ruochen and others were more than happy to let him do the honor. So they quickly stepped aside.

It was mainly because they had no idea what lay behind this Altar of Death. It was a good idea to let Bi Yunhai check it out first.

Bi Yunhai took out his regal weapon, using all this strength to summon one-third of the Precepts of Heaven and Earth within 7,000-mile radius as he was prepared to perform a most powerful strike ever.

He knew he was no match for Qi Yang, but he could not believe that he could not destroy something like an Altar of Death.

There were over 250,000 regal-class inscriptions appeared on the sky-blue gourd. It looked immensely powerful when combined with the countless Precepts of Heaven and Earth.

A vast amount of regal Supreme Power spurted out of the gourd and turned into a brilliant saint light.

The saint light did not hit the Altar of Death as a layer of faint light shield had blocked the saint light.

Following immediately, the Altar of Death released an immense energy that spread in all directions like water ripples.

By swaying its massive divine python body, the evil spirit neutralized all the energy emitted from the Altar of Death. Zhang Ruochen and four others were standing on the evil spirit's head. So they were not affected.

Bi Yunhai used his regal weapon to block in front of him and was unharmed. Just that he could not calm himself down as he stared dead at the Altar of Death.

“Could it be that this thing is even more powerful than Qi Yang?” Bi Yunhai was astounded.

Zhang Ruochen looked grave, realizing that destroying the Altar of Death was more difficult than he had expected.

But it made sense. When the Deathkin had spent so much effort to build this Altar of Death and made it their trump card, no way the altar could be destroyed so easily.

The three white-robed priests finally stood up on the altar. They first gave Zhang Ruochen and others a once-over, then quickly locked their eyes on Bi Yunhai.

Bi Yunhai was a Path's Anterior fighter. He was powerful enough to rival a Neverwither Supreme Saint. Naturally, he

was a bigger threat than Zhang Ruochen and others were.

“Those who attack the Altar of Death, death is the only punishment for them,” said a white-robed female priest.

“Death? Then I would like to see who could take my life!” Bi Yunhai sneered.

“Death Slit!”

The three white-robed priests joined hands to direct the thousand-yard Shadow of Death.

Wielding a sickle, the Shadow of Death struck out a black sickle light that looked as if a dimensional rift at Bi Yunhai.

“Heck! That is all what you have got?”

Bi Yunhai hissed as he performed a palm strike.

Several hundred thousand Precepts appeared and that triggered the Precepts of Heaven and Earth. Together, they formed a vast azure sea with a massive tidal wave rushing toward the Shadow of Death.

“Now!”

Zhang Ruochen cast out the Azuresky Pagoda.

In a situation like this, they could not possibly stay away from this. No way they could retrieve the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree without destroying the Altar of Death.

With no hesitation, Ji Fanxin, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Pei Yutian made their moves, performing their saint techniques and casting out their sacred artifacts.

The evil spirit did not sit idle either. It swayed its divine python tail and lashed at the Shadow of Death with an immense amount of divine power.

Compared to others, Zhang Ruochen had nothing to lose. His attack ability might not be the most powerful here, but his defense was incredible.

In fact, the evil spirit could still not fully control the power of the corpse of the divine python at this stage, because its saint

soul was still relatively weak. The divine power was too much for it to rein in.

The strength of the evil spirit had not attained the level of the Neverwithier Supreme Saint. Otherwise, it would have been invincible in the Kunlun Realm.

Bang!

The shadow of the sickle could not withstand the powerful blow. It shattered and disappeared at once.

“Help me drive the Azuresky Pagoda, everyone. Keep attacking!” Zhang Ruochen called out.

Ji Fanxin, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, Pei Yutian, and the evil spirit acted, each injecting power into the Azuresky Pagoda.

The Azuresky Pagoda vibrated and became bigger instantly. It looked like a divine mountain with azure light releasing and an endless stream of Supreme Power.

Probably because of the divine power from the evil spirit, the dormant consciousness of the implement spirit suddenly woke up.

The earth-shattering roar of a beast came from within the pagoda as it put out an even more powerful Supreme Power.

Bi Yunhai’s eyes flashed at seeing the Azuresky Pagoda.

Had he possessed a Supreme Artifact, he would not have lost to Qi Yang. Destroying this Altar of Death would have been a piece of cake.

Many thoughts flashed across his mind. He pulled back his eyes. Squeezing out a drop of blood from his fingertip, he dropped it onto the sky-blue gourd and let it permeate. The sky-blue gourd glowed brightly and gave out a full power.

In times like this, he must not let Zhang Ruochen or any others steal the limelight, no matter what.

Boom!

A Supreme Power and real saint power burst out at once. As the world was going to fall apart, it was unstoppable.

The Shadow of Death shuddered with a hint of Will of Death leaking out.

Down below, the Altar of Death was shaking, too. It became very unstable and was nearly blown away by the Supreme and the regal saint powers.

Below the altar, cracks that looked like spider webs formed in the solid earth. As soil and rocks started to sink, dust rose from the bottom and finally revealed a dark hole inside. The majestic Altar of Death looked as if it had left the earth and was suspended in the air.

Because of this, the altar could not draw the Power of Revival of Northern Region for a moment.

While the situation seemed to be in their favor, Zhang Ruochen's expression suddenly changed.

Just a while ago, he had noticed a trace of dimensional shock wave coming from the dark hole below the altar.

Danger.

Suddenly, a scream came, followed by a Death Knight lunging out from the underground. His body was engulfed in blue flame and his face looked hideous.

Before long, he dropped to the ground and was reduced to ashes by the blue flame.

Out of the ashes came a bug with a blue flame. It was the size of the nail of a finger, extremely beautiful.

“A God-Eater bug!”

When Zhang Ruochen recognized the fire bug, his expression became worse. He quickly called out Xiang Chunan and the rest through telepathy, telling them to retreat and keep away from the God-Eater bug.

He knew it; the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was right below the altar.

And the God-Eater bug was living inside the trunk. Apparently, their attack had ripped apart the dimension where

the trunk was, leaving a rift behind. That was why the God-Eater bug had come to the surface.

Without a doubt, the God-Eater bug was the nastiest thing, which could give even god a big headache.

This one right here was considered the smallest one.

Back then, when Zhang Ruochen and Canglan Warrior Saint entered the strange dimension, the God-Eater bugs they saw were the size of a fist, some as large as a washing basin.

The bigger the bug was, the more terrifying it became.

While the God-Eater had every cultivator terrified, a voice came out of a blanket of fog on the altar. “Legend has it that the God-Eater bugs are the tree worms of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. They were born together with the tree. It really is a surprise to see one here. Could there be a Divine Sky-Connecting Tree in the space under the altar?”

Along with the voice came a Nether River. It flowed out of the Altar of Death slowly. There was a behemoth inside the river. The behemoth had nine heads, and it was a Nine-Headed Black Tortoise.

A girl was standing on the back of the Nine-Headed Black Tortoise. She was tall and slim, surrounded by chains formed by the Precepts of Destiny, as if the fate of all souls in the world was under his control.

She was none other than one of the three candidates of the Lady of the Fane of Destiny, Pan Ruo.

“I can’t believe that there really is something under the altar!”

“Since there is a God-Eater Bug here, the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree is surely here. Did the tree grow a new plantlet again?”

“Entirely possible. Otherwise, how could the Kunlun Realm revive?”

...

Even the Deathkin cultivators did not expect to see another dimension beneath their Altar of Death. They were so excited

that they all rubbed their hands and could not wait to storm in to loot whatever treasure that lay inside.

Pan Ruo stood on the Nether River. She looked as beautiful as a fairy. She swept her eyes over them, before her eyes landed on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen had long been staring at her.

As soon as their eyes met, Zhang Ruochen could not help but shiver for a second, his pupils dilated as he stood like a fossil on the spot.

The beautiful figure on the Nether River also looked shocked —albeit very subtle.

For a moment, both of them were motionless like a statue, their heart stopping. It felt as if the world had come to a standstill and time stopped flowing.

Everything in the surroundings had disappeared, leaving only the two of them.

They were standing at a far distance from each other, but it felt as if the dimension had disappeared. They were now close to each other. They could see the face of each other clearly.

After a long while, Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath. As he came out of his daze, things in the surroundings reappeared in his vision, and he regained his sense of hearing and perception.

The appearance of the girl in front of his eyes had totally changed, but he recognized her from her eyes.

“It is her. It must be her. How could it be her?”

He clenched his fists involuntarily as he could not believe what he saw.

For a moment, his heart screwed up, and he felt a great pain. Countless images started to appear in his mind’s eye, and he finally found as if he was standing in front of the Ziwei Palace.

Scenes from the past that he had never forgotten seemed to be so clear.

He used to tell himself to let go. But now he realized he was merely deceiving himself.

He stared at her for a long time and his heart almost pounding through his chest. "I am sure it is her. Why did she go to the Infernal Court, and how did she become one of the Deathkin? Everything has changed. What happened to her for all these years?"

Never had there been a moment he felt so confused, had so many questions with so many types of emotions. Yet he could tell no one.

The person who was supposed to have died was now standing in front of him.

Chapter 1952 - The Temptation of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree

Chapter 1952: The Temptation of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree

While in the Fane the Truth, from the conversation between Divine Scripture Maiden and Mu Lingxi, Zhang Ruochen heard something about Huang Yanchen.

He thought she was dead.

Little did he expect he would see her again in such a place, with such identity, under such circumstance.

“What’s wrong, Big Brother? Are you all right?”

Feng Yan had noticed something was not right about Zhang Ruochen.

It was dangerous to lose one’s concentration while facing enemies like the Deathkin and the God-Eater Bugs.

Hearing Feng Yan’s voice, Zhang Ruochen, came out of his thoughts. He eased up his tightly clenched fingers and let out a sigh. “I am okay. Just thought of something.”

Feng Yan was relieved. His worst fear was to see something happen to Zhang Ruochen in a moment like this.

Just now, Zhang Ruochen looked as if he was possessed, and that scared the hell out of him.

“She is Pan Ruo. She was the one who ordered the two Deathsworn Guards to kill you,” said Ji Fanxin.

Back then, after suppressing the man and woman of Supreme-Saint elephant and dragon souls, it was Ji Fanxin who retrieved the intelligence from their souls.

The most valuable intelligence was the appearance of Pan Ruo, one of the three Lady candidates of the Fane of Destiny, in Xianji Mountain showed that the Fane of Destiny was behind the installations in Xianji Mountain.

“Pan Ruo.”

Zhang Ruochen muttered her name as he looked again at the familiar yet strange figure on the back of the Nine-Headed Black Tortoise.

After having eye-to-eye with Zhang Ruochen for a while, Pan Ruo looked away. She appeared calm, as if nothing had happened before.

As soon as Pan Ruo appeared, the three white-robed priests immediately stood behind her with respect. Although they had attained Path's Anterior in their self-cultivation, they still revered Pan Ruo.

Even if Pan Ruo might not be the Lady of the Fane of Destiny in the future, her status would still be extremely high. She was not someone they could not compare with.

A violent tremor followed by a loud rumble came as a series of forces pounded against the Altar of Death from underneath.

Pounding the altar was none other than the God-Eater Bugs.

A massive number of blue-fired bugs illuminated the underground dimension. It looked as if something happened in fantasy.

Those Death Knights hiding in the dark rushed out and climbed onto the altar for fear of getting attacked by the bugs.

It scared the hell out of them when they witnessed their mate burned into ashes alive.

Not that they were afraid of death. Just that they did not want to die for nothing.

“The God-Eater Bugs are pounding the altar, sir! The altar is not going to hold. What should we do?” A white-robed priest looked nervous.

While even the Neverwithier Supreme Saint-level attack had failed to make a dent on the Altar of Death, these unassuming God-Eater Bugs were posing a grave threat to the altar. By the looks of these bugs, they seemed wanting to eat the altar as lunch.

But Pan Ruo appeared calm. “The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree practices the Path of Life. It was the nemesis of the Deathkin. Since the God-Eater Bugs and the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree are kindred, they share the same ability. Don’t worry. I will tame them.”

The Nine-Headed Black Tortoise roared. It swept the Nether River at those God-Eater Bugs.

The Nether River engulfed the God-Eater Bugs rushing out of the dark hole in the blink of an eye.

Because of the Nether River, those God-Eater Bugs thinking of flying out were forced to retreat underground.

Without the illumination from the bugs, the underground dimension fell into darkness again. A rich evil air of death started to pervade the air.

Even then, the Altar of Death was apparently experiencing problems after the bug attack. It could no longer draw the Power of Revival, at least for now.

Pan Ruo suddenly moved, leaving the back of the Nine-Headed Black Tortoise and the altar, storming into the dark hole beneath.

“The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, the legendary spiritual root of heaven and earth in Kunlun Realm. I will become god if I can get my hands on it.” There was a light in Bi Yunhai’s eyes.

It was a fetish that was craved even by the Supreme Saints and gods.

With no hesitation, Bi Yunhai performed a technique. His body faded in a stream of light as he lunged toward the pitch-dark hole.

He was now obsessed with the fetish and couldn’t care less about any other things, not even Fairy of a Hundred Flowers.

“Kill anyone who dares get close!”

A white-robed priest with a vertical eye on the forehead shouted.

As the Shadow of Death reached out a hand, the Will of Death formed into an aggressive, black dragon from hell, which then pounced at Bi Yunhai.

A stern look flashed in his eyes as Bi Yunhai performed an Azure Sky-Sea Palm, forming a tidal wave to slam against the black dragon from hell.

Boom!

The black dragon from hell crushed the tidal wave and struck Bi Yunhai’s chest with its claw.

The blow sent Bi Yunhai flying out backward, puking a mouthful of blood. Apparently, he had been wounded badly.

“You are overconfident of yourself.” The white-robed priest with a vertical eye sneered.

Bi Yunhai put his hand on his chest, nearly burping up another mouthful of blood. He was furious.

At first, he thought since the altar was experiencing problems, it would not pose much of a threat. Little did he expect it could still easily hurt him.

He felt humiliated as Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin were watching.

Many thoughts flashed across his mind. He suddenly lifted off in the air. “The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree of the Kunlun Realm is still alive. Right under the Xianji Mountain,” he shouted.

Since he could not get in alone, he thought he might as well rock the boat, getting more people involved.

It would be a free-for-all from now on, as each was trying to take the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Bi Yunhai’s voice traveled as far as ten thousand miles. Everyone in and around Xianji Mountains had heard him.

“I can’t believe that the spiritual root of heaven and earth of the Kunlun Realm is still alive!”

“The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree is the oldest living being in Kunlun Realm, extremely powerful and possessing countless secrets. We will become gods if we could get your hands on it.”

“The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree practices the Path of Life. It is a nemesis of us, the Deathkins. We must not let it fall into the hands of the Celestial Court. We have to get it before them.”

“The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was cut down a hundred thousand years ago and has since gone missing. It turns out it is in Xianji Mountain. It looks like we aren’t here for nothing.”

...

Everyone—the Celestial Court and Infernal Court cultivators—had lost the will to fight each other when they heard the words ‘The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.’

They stopped fighting tacitly, then performed whatever techniques they could to rush toward the center of Xianji Mountain. No one wanted to miss this once-in-a-life-time opportunity.

In the underground dimension, Zhang Ruochen frowned at what Bi Yunhai had done. The broadcasting of the finding of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was a bad idea.

The more fighters there were, the harder it became in retrieving the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Zhang Ruochen turned his head to look at Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Pei Yutian. “The dimension where the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree lies is rigged with dangers. You all had better not go in there. Find a way to destroy the Altar of Death, if can. Run immediately if things get wrong. Don’t worry about me.”

He thought for a moment, then took out a Dimensional Teleportation Scroll. “Take this. Just in case.”

He could not bring himself to risk his brothers' lives. After all, this had got nothing to do with them.

“What are you talking about, Big Brother? Just because it is dangerous, we have more reasons to stick together. We are brothers, remember?” Xiang Chunan said.

Feng Yan took the scroll and pressed his hand on Xiang Chunan's shoulder. “Listen to Big Brother, Brother Xiang. We are no good here. Instead of trying to help, we could be a liability. Why not we stay outside and we might be able to help Big Brother at the critical moment?”

“But...” Xiang Chunan was very reluctant.

“There is no but. Time's a-wastin'. We can't wait anymore. Be careful, Big Brother,” said Feng Yan.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Don't worry. I will be fine. Let's move, Fairy.”

Ji Fanxin said nothing, just going ahead with Zhang Ruochen at once. She was even more eager than Zhang Ruochen was in getting the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin came rapidly toward them, the three white-robed priests made their moves to stop the two. The Shadow of Death waved its black sickle, striking it through the air at an incredible speed at the two.

The black sickle shot past Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin. It missed its target.

Using a Dimensional Shift, Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin reappeared above the dark hole, then lunged into it with no hesitation.

“Damn-it!”

The three white-robed priests were outraged after failing to stop Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin.

They could not help it. Zhang Ruochen possessed the elusive dimensional skill, and the Altar of Death had temporarily lost connection with Xianji Mountain, losing control over the surrounding space. All they could do was to watch as Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin intruded into the dimension below.

But they knew how powerful Pan Ruo was. Even though Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxi had gone inside, they would get nothing out of it.

Bi Yunhai's face was not looking good either. While Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin had gone in, he was forced to stay outside. Xuanyuan Liekong and others would laugh at him when they arrived.

Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Pei Yutian were standing on the evil spirit's head, their eyes looking up.

"It's coming fast. We have got to move to one side," said Feng Yan.

The evil spirit swayed its massive body and flew to hide in a dark corner. They did not want to be the bull's eye.

Not that they were sacred. With the evil spirit and Xiang Chunan's Metal Demonic Crown here, they might not lose if they had to fight any top fighter.

Besides, they had the Dimensional Teleportation Scroll with them. They could leave any time if something went wrong, and no one could stop them.

So they were calm, totally like spectators watching events unfolding.

Shadows rapidly descended from the sky. Those powerful forces of saint Qi, demonic Qi, evil air of death and whatnot started to spread in the air.

All eyes were on the pitch-dark hole beneath the Altar of Death.

No God-Eater Bugs were present, but there were traces of the saint Qi of the wood spirit along with a hint of Qi of the Divine Tree that counteracted the evil air of death.

Everyone could sense a rich breath of life rushing out of the dark hole, making a stark contrast with the surroundings.

Chapter 1953 - The Assembly of the Powerful

Chapter 1953: The Assembly of the Powerful

“Where is Pan Ruo?”

Yuanmo Shenzi could not help but ask when he could not find Pan Ruo anywhere.

“Shenzi, Her Excellency Pan Ruo entered the dimension below as soon as she found a God-Eater Bug. She must be taming the God-Eater Bugs right now and probably has the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree in her hand already,” replied a white-robed priest with greenish hair.

Yuanmo Shenzi smiled. “Good. I am sure that Pan Ruo will retrieve the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. We just need to guard this entrance.”

The three white-robed priests exchanged looks with each other. There was fear in their eyes, and they looked like they had something to say but were hesitant.

Noticing their expressions, Yuanmo Shenzi suddenly had a bad feeling. “What’s wrong?”

“Zhang Ruochen and Fairy of a Hundred Flowers have also entered that dimension. Zhang Ruochen’s dimensional skill was elusive; he couldn’t stop him.” The white-robed priest with green hair bit the bullet and told of what happened.

Yuanmo Shenzi furrowed his brow. “Zhang Ruochen, again? You all stay here. I will deal with him personally.”

Yuanmo Shenzi was ready to jump into the dark hole to lend Pan Ruo a hand. He might be able to impress Pan Ruo by helping her in a time like this.

How could he miss such an opportunity?

Just then, something happened.

Cracks started to appear around the dark hole, the surrounding area sank.

In the blink of an eye, a massive underground world appeared in front of everyone's eyes.

With this happening, the Deathkins could no longer stop people from entering the underground world.

Someone could not wait and lunged straight down.

Nothing ventured, nothing gained. It was totally worth the risk for the sake of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Some were more cautious and first observing the situation.

“Aah! Run!”

A few moments later, a scream was heard inside the dark dimension.

Those who had entered earlier were scrambling back out with dots of flickering blue light chasing from behind.

Those who could not make it out on time were consumed and burned into ashes by the blue flames.

In a desperate attempt to save their lives, some even cut off their arms or legs that had been bitten by the God-Eater Bugs.

A vast number of God-Eater Bugs flew out from underground. It was a beautiful but deadly sight. These things were the last things anyone wanted to touch.

With the help of the illumination from the blue flames, one could vaguely see the situation inside. There was a complex of greenish buildings, some perfectly intact, some a ruin.

“These buildings used to sit on the peak of Xianji Mountain. How did they end up underground?” Pei Yutian looked puzzled.

He was born in Northern Region, and so he knew Northern Region well. He used to explore Xianji Mountain, which was still semi-veiled last time, and the place was mysterious. So he did not go far that time.

An Eight-Step Saint King struck and crushed a nail-sized God-Eater Bug. “So much for a God-Eater Bug!”

Seeing this, others made their moves and started to attack those God-Eater Bugs coming out of the underground.

In just a few moments, they had killed nearly a hundred of the bugs, and there was more casualty on the Celestial Court and the Deathkin’s sides.

As people became more daring, they lurched into the dark underground world again.

“Let’s go down there.”

Xuanyuan Liekong lunged down at once.

Few could remain collected in front of a fetish like the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Destroying the Altar of Death could wait.

Without needing Xuanyuan Liekong to tell him, Bi Yunhai had made his move. Pan Ruo and Zhang Ruochen had been down there for a while. It would leave him with nothing if he waited any longer.

Even Zheng Yuan, Yuan Xianzi, Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect, Feng Yan and others had lurched into the dark underground world at once, let alone the Deathkins.

Except for the three white-robed priests guarding the Altar of Death, other top fighters had acted, too.

In the dark corner somewhere, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, Pei Yutian, and the evil spirit watched quietly. They remembered what Zhang Ruochen had told them. So no matter how keen they were, they did not go underground.

Right now, the situation had gotten as messy as it could get. Many people were going to die in the pursuit of the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Even those top fighters would find themselves stuck.

Inside a green building, Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxi moved like a gale of wind. At first, they were chasing Pan Ruo. But Pan Ruo moved like a flash and disappeared from their sights.

Zhang Ruochen found that this green building had changed a lot, more massive than it used to be and looking like a maze. One could get lost here easily.

There were many God-Eater Bugs circling around Ji Fanxin. They were the size of the nail of a finger, a few the size of a fist.

These were God-Eater Bugs that had been tamed by Ji Fanxin using a secret technique.

With these bugs around, Ji Fanxin could immediately detect as soon as other God-Eater Bugs approached, thus reducing the risk.

“There used to be an enchantment around this green building. Coming here wasn’t easy, and the God-Eater Bugs couldn’t get out either. The Altar of Death must have drawn the enchantment’s power, making it become fragile and broke apart during the violent impact earlier. When the green building was exposed and the God-Eater Bugs living inside the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree were disturbed, they started to come out in droves,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“The God-Eater Bugs were unlike ordinary insects and beasts; they are hard to control. Even my ancient witchcraft might not be able to rein in the more nasty ones,” said Ji Fanxin.

Witchcraft was a lost ancient secret technique. Ji Fanxin had lived in that era, and so she had learned a bit of the technique.

“Let us go to where the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree is. Since Bi Yunhai broadcast the existence of this tree, I am sure those fighters from the Celestial Court and the Deathkin are already coming to get a piece of the action. We need to hurry.” Zhang Ruochen had a sense of urgency on his face.

Ji Fanxin nodded in agreement. “We are almost there. When we get there, I will hold off Pan Ruo while you retrieve the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.”

“Okay.”

He did not want to clash with Pan Ruo. It could not have been better since Ji Fanxin was willing to help.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin found themselves in front of a blanket of greenish fog.

It was formed by the Qi of the Divine Tree; the concentration was so high that condensation almost happened.

The trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was right inside the greenish fog.

Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin did not go in, as someone was ahead of them, and that person was Pan Ruo.

She was standing in front of the greenish fog, facing a bizarre light door formed by the Precepts of Destiny. This was the Gate of Destiny.

Grayish fog was inside the Gate of Destiny, and those God-Eater Bugs appeared unusually docile.

Pan Ruo did not turn around. “You two are quick. But my advice to you two is, leave while you can. You have only one chance.” Her voice was bitter.

“We will leave, but only after retrieving the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. So stop threatening us. Show us what you have got. I am curious to know what a candidate of the Lady of the Fane of Destiny is capable of,” said Ji Fanxin nonchalantly.

This time, Pan Ruo turned around, her eyes sweeping over Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin. “You two are a perfect match.”

Upon hearing that, Zhang Ruochen looked like he was in a pickle. He had many questions on his mind, but words choked in his throat.

At last, he ended up saying nothing.

Just then, Ji Fanxin had made her move. She cast out petals to form into a bolt of purple silk, sweeping toward Pan Ruo.

Just as the purple silk was about to approach, fire went up on each petal, and the purple silk turned into a purple fire dragon.

Pan Ruo let out a faint smile. With the wave of her hand, a massive evil air of death surged to meet the purple fire dragon.

Bang!

The purple fire dragon disintegrated and turned into petal rain to engulf Pan Ruo.

Pan Ruo made a strange hand gesture while chanting an unintelligible incantation. A power Will of Death was released to scatter the petals.

Seeing what happened, Ji Fanxin pointed forward with her fingers and a beam of saint light formed. It was holy and looked as if it could expel every evil thing in the world.

But Pan Ruo appeared composed. An evil air of death rushed out of her body, as sticky as ink, and filled the entire dimension.

While Ji Fanxin was engaging Pan Ruo, Zhang Ruochen immediately acted to retrieve the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Just as he approached the greenish fog, a strange expression formed on his face.

He found that there was a special energy up ahead, isolating the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree from the outside world. He could see the tree, but not get near to it.

So he immediately contacted the sapling of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree through telepathy. "How can I retrieve the trunk, sir?"

His biggest help in retrieving the trunk came from the sapling of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. After all, they were kindred, and no one knew the trunk sealed in this place better than the sapling.

"Let me get near to the trunk. I will talk to whatever consciousness remains in the trunk," said the sapling.

Zhang Ruochen was in a pickle upon hearing that. The question was, how was he going to get near to the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree?

He could sense how powerful the forces were stopping him. It was not easy to pass through it.

Perhaps this was also the reason Pan Ruo had stopped there.

A few moments of delay had finally seen the coming of the Celestial Court and the Deathkin fighters.

“How dare you hurt Pan Ruo!”

Yuanmo Shenzi had a murderous look in his eyes.

The moment he arrived, he attacked Ji Fanxin by striking out a powerful punch.

“How dare you!” This time, it was Bi Yunhai shouting.

But he came too late. Stopping Yuanmo Shenzi was impossible now.

In a split second, Zhang Ruochen appeared beside Ji Fanxin, casting out the Azure Sky Pagoda with powerful Supreme Power.

The implement spirit had woken up, and the power of the Azure Sky Pagoda had increased tremendously.

Boom!

The Azure Sky Pagoda was forced back from the impact. But at least, it had blocked the fist of Yuanmo Shenzi.

Ji Fanxin stepped back and halted the fight with Pan Ruo temporarily.

With so many powerful fighters assembling here, she did not want to get into a fight with Pan Ruo and let others take advantage of the situation.

Chapter 1954 - Xianji Compass

Chapter 1954: Xianji Compass

In front of the greenish fog, forces from both sides were keeping a distance from each other. Anyone could see that there was something unusual about this place.

The good thing was, this building was spacious and empty. It was not crowded, even with several hundred people from both sides gathered there.

Those who dared to go there were mostly top fighters of the Nine-Step Saint King rank who wanted to get their hands on the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

“That’s a rich concentration of Qi of the Divine Tree. Is that ancient towering tree the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree mentioned in the legend? It is truly extraordinary! But why are its leaves yellowish brown?”

Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect came up, his eyes flashing.

If he could get his hands on the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, he would no longer be the Six Fatafs of the Fane of Youshen, but the most powerful among the younger generation. He would trample Cang Long and Ruan Ling under his feet. He could ascend into divinity by self-cultivation, becoming the second-in-command of the Fane of Youshen.

Back then, it was because of the presence of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree that many deities were born. So everything thought that the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree possessed the secret to divinity.

“Why can’t we move past this point?”

Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect looked puzzled.

Just like what happened to Zhang Ruochen before, a strange force was preventing Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect from entering.

The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was within view, but he just could not touch it.

“Break!”

Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect made a move. He opened his ten eyes and focused them all at one point, then turned that focal point into a brilliant saint light to strike the invisible barrier in front of him.

“Don’t do anything stupid!”

Someone tried to stop him, but it was too late.

Bang!

A slight tremor ripped through the dimension, creating ripples and causing the saint light to dissipate quickly.

Some strange sounds came from within the tree trunk as groups of blue flames appeared. there were so many of them that when looking from afar, it appeared like the beautiful blue starlight in the night sky.

Each flame was a God-Eater Bug.

“Where are so many God-Eater Bugs from?”

Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect’s face changed, and he quickly retreated.

Looking over, there were thousands of God-Eater Bugs inside the tree trunk. Not all the bugs were the size of the nail of a finger, some as large as a fist and water basin. There were even larger ones still hidden inside the deep part of the trunk.

Any of these God-Eater Bugs could pose a grave threat to Saint King fighters. Those bigger ones could even threaten Supreme Saint fighters.

More God-Eater Bugs flew out of the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, passing through the invisible barrier, and swarmed into the building where the fighters were.

Everyone freaked out at seeing what happened.

Just when Zhang Ruochen was about to perform a Spatial Domain, Ji Fanxin was one step ahead of him. She directed the

tamed God-Eater Bugs to disperse and created a special shield around them.

With this special shield, those God-Eater Bugs coming out of the tree trunk ignored them and flew toward other people.

“Dummy!”

Someone could not hold back his anger.

But it was not the time to make an issue of it. Everyone was focusing on protecting themselves while attacking the God-Eater Bugs.

There is always strength in numbers. As the number of God-Eater Bugs grew, those Saint King fighters would be quickly overwhelmed.

Screams rose as some fighters had failed to ward off the God-Eater Bugs' attack.

There were more screams followed.

It did not take long before ashes piled up on the ground.

A God-Eater Bug the size of a water basin flew out and ate one of the bugs circling Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin.

Apparently, this large bug had sensed something wrong. It devoured its own kind.

Zhang Ruochen needed to act. Using his flaming Fire God's Gauntlet and Bracers, he hit the larger God-Eater Bug.

He did not perform any saint technique in this move, just his physical strength. This was to prevent something worse from happening.

With his current level of bodily strength and power, a punch was powerful enough to destroy a higher-order Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact.

But a punch like this could only deflect the bug, not hurting it.

The larger bug was apparently pissed, judging by the more intense blue flames burning on its body as it charged at him.

Zhang Ruochen did not dodge. With a precise calculation of timing, he triggered the Qiankun Realm as soon as the God-

Eater Bug approached. The bug was powerful and should be able to get itself out of trouble.

But when it sensed the air of the sapling of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, its eyes brightened up, and it flew toward the Qiankun Realm.

The dimension contorted slightly to suck the God-Eater Bug into the Qiankun Realm.

Before this, Zhang Ruochen had communicated with the sapling, and was confident of taming this larger God-Eater Bug. After all, God-Eating Bugs were nurtured in the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Even though the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree in the Qiankun Realm was still small, it was the same with those Divine Sky-Connecting Trees back then. Most likely, the bug would not resist it.

God-Eater Bugs were extraordinary creatures. It would be nice if he could tame them for his own use.

After a few moments, the larger God-Eater Bug had calmed down. It burrowed into the root of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

“I can only pacify the God-Eater Bug temporarily, Zhang Ruochen. I need more time to tame it,” said the sapling of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

There was a smile on Zhang Ruochen’s face. That was all he needed.

He immediately opened up the Qiankun Realm to let in more God-Eater Bugs.

He wanted to capture enough God-Eater Bugs so he could form a terrifying army composed of these bugs. It would be another trump card for him.

In just a few moments, other than those God-Eater Bugs that were killed, and those tamed by Pan Ruo, Zhang Ruochen had captured over 3,000 of them, including seven the size of a water basin.

All eyes were on him suddenly. It surprised them to see he could so effortlessly capture thousands of God-Eater Bugs.

“Why didn’t you do this earlier since you can capture the bugs, Zhang Ruochen? Many people didn’t have to die,” said Shi Lingkun.

A fist-sized God-Eater Bug bit his arm just now, and he had to cut off that arm to save his life.

This was the reason he was upset, wanting to confront Zhang Ruochen for his suffering.

But Zhang Ruochen was not nonchalant. “First, it was not my responsibility to protect anyone. Second, who told you I could effortlessly capture those God-Eater Bugs? If you are not happy with me, I can release them back out.”

Shi Lingkun’s face changed upon hearing that. And he dared not say anything else.

If Zhang Ruochen wanted to pick on him, he might not make it out of here alive.

After a round of God-Eater Bug attacks, both sides suffered great casualties. Everyone’s face looked gloomy.

Meanwhile, Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect had retreated to the rear and dared not show his face again. After all, he knew he was the one who caused this tragedy, and he was responsible for it.

Right now, there were still many God-Eater Bugs inside the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. They were giving out beautiful blue flames and could come out at any moment.

In this circumstance, no one dared to act recklessly for fear that it would trigger another round of God-Eater Bug attack.

“Now I see.”

Pan Ruo suddenly spoke.

“What have you found, Pan Ruo?” asked Yuanmo Shenzi.

Pan Ruo pointed a finger upward. “It is that thing that forms the strange barrier.”

Everyone looked up at the ceiling at once.

On the dome of the building was what might look like an old bronzed compass. It slowly spun and emitted a strange energy.

“Isn’t that the Xianji Compass?” There was a hint of surprise in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

From what he had heard, the Xianji Sect had an heirloom that was known as Xianji Compass. It was a powerful Supreme Artifact that had existed since time immemorial.

After the fall of the Xianji Sect, the entire Xianji Mountain had been sealed off. No one went in. Many people coveted the Xianjin Compass, but no one knew where it was.

“It is Xianji Compass, the heirloom of the Xianji Sect!”

Someone exclaimed in surprise.

Apparently, the Celestial Realm cultivators who had entered the Kunlun Realm had learned a lot of information about the Kunlun Realm.

After the Xianji Sect was wiped out, people thought the Xianji Compass must have fallen in the hands of the Deathkin. Little did they expect the compass was still in Xianji Mountain.

People’s eyes started to light up in excitement. They all could not wait to keep the Xianji Compass to themselves.

Different Supreme Artifacts had different levels of power. Sometimes, the gaps could be very huge. The Xianji Compass was a top-class Supreme Artifact, which meant it would give the holder an incredible power.

An ancient, eternal macroworld like the Kunlun Realm had few top-of-the-lines Supreme Artifacts even in its glorious days.

Those weaker macroworlds might not even have a single piece of top-tier Supreme Artifact.

“I happen to be short of a Supreme Artifact. This Xianji Compass looks right to me.” Pan Ruo reached out her hand to grab at the Xianji Compass remotely.

“Not so easy!” Xuanyuan Liekong shouted.

“No one can take the thing that Pan Ruo wants.” Yuanmo Shenzi hissed.

He waved his Demonic Spear, gathering his Supreme Power to strike Xuanyuan Liekong.

Just like the Demonic Saber of Qi Yang, Yuanmo Shenzi’s Demonic Spear was a newly forged Supreme Artifact. It was flawless and had a higher level of strength.

But Xuanyuan Liekong did not budge. He swung his Sky-Piercer Halberd to meet Yuanmo Shenzi.

The Sky-Piercer Halberd was also a Supreme Artifact, the strength of which was no less than Yuanmo Shenzi’s Demonic Spear.

Without this weapon, how could Xuanyuan Liekong sit at the helm of Northern Region Base, and challenge Yuanmo Shenzi?

At this time, others also made their moves, starting fighting for the top-tier Supreme Artifact.

The presence of the Xianji Compass here had significant meaning. Who knows, if they could get the compass, they could also take the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, too?

Shi Lingkun was staring greedily at the Xianji Compass in a corner.

While everyone fought, he performed a secret technique of the Blackdemon Realm, hiding in the shadow, and quietly made his way up to the dome.

“The Xianji Compass is mine!”

His heart fluttered as he drew close to the Xianji Compass.

As soon as he got the Xianji Compass, he would immediately leave with the help of a talisman, then find a place to refine the Xianji Compass. No one could do anything about him by then.

Just then, five God-Eater Bugs flew out of the Gate of Destiny behind Pan Ruo, landed on the back of Shi Lingkun in a flash before burrowing into his body.

“No—”

He howled in fear, his voice filled with indignation.

He fell straight down from the dome. He tried to fight back, but could just do so for a few seconds before the God-Eater Bugs burned him into ashes.

Seeing what happened to Shi Lingkun, the fighters from the Blackdemon Realm looked grave. They had wanted to charge at Pan Ruo, but they were also wary of her and could do nothing about her.

Chapter 1955 - The Null Dimension

Chapter 1955: The Null Dimension

It was not until now that many people noticed Zhang Ruochen had not captured all the God-Eater Bugs. At the Gate of Destiny behind Pan Ruo, there were still close to one hundred of them.

More importantly, Pan Ruo was controlling these bugs. Anyone could be caught unawares and lose their lives as a result. Shi Lingkun was a good example of this.

Despite how careful they were in guarding themselves against Pan Ruo, there were bound to be people who would be attacked by these God-Eater Bugs.

However, that also meant more God-Eater Bugs were being killed, and the number of God-Eater Bugs that Pan Ruo controlled was decreasing.

Chixing Shenzi flapped a wing, releasing an immense amount of evil air of death to rip the Xianji Compass off the dome.

Seeing what he did, fighters from both sides fought tooth and nail to get the compass.

Zhang Ruochen performed a dimensional technique, trying to get the compass remotely.

If he performed a Dimensional Shift to come close to the Xianji Compass, he could easily get the Xianji Compass.

By doing that, however, he would become a bull's eye, which meant great trouble for him. Even if he could get the Xianji Compass successfully, he could no longer retrieve the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Instead, he could just flee.

There was no way he would give up the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree for the Xianji Compass.

He made the move now just to rock the Deathkin's boat so that the Xianji Compass would not fall into their hands.

“You're not going to get it!”

Yuanmo Shenzi shouted. He released a powerful Will of Death to form strands of silk to catch the Xianji Compass, pulling it toward him.

Xuanyuan Liekong would not let him get it, though. He attacked with his Sky-Piercer Halberd, more aggressively this time. The halberd pierced through the air and cut off the Will of Death.

Smelling the opportunity, Bi Yunhai lunged out in a flash, powering his regal weapon-class sky-blue gourd to release a powerful suction force to catch the Xianji Compass.

As Bi Yunhai was about to get his hands on the compass, Pan Ruo lunged up into the air. Golden Buddha light glowing on her body formed into a majestic golden statue of Bodhisattva.

“Hand of Perfected Wisdom!”

The golden Bodhisattva reached out a hand to strike Bi Yunhai.

Sensing the immense pressure, Bi Yunhai dared not take chances. He quickly gathered his saint Qi and performed a palm strike to meet the hand of the golden Bodhisattva.

Bang!

The golden Bodhisattva did not budge a bit, as sturdy as a mountain.

Bi Yunhai, meanwhile, was forced a step back. His haphazard response did not get him any advantage over his opponent.

I can't believe that the Deathkin has such a high level of mastery of Buddha fist technique. This woman is not that simple

. Bi Yunhai was shocked.

This was not the first time he fought with a Deathkin. But it was definitely his first time fighting a Deathkin capable of Buddha fist technique.

After a brief engagement, he already knew how powerful Pan Ruo was. She was no less powerful than he was. So he must not underestimate her.

Left with no choice, he had to give up the Xianji Compass for now and directed his attention to deal with Pan Ruo.

He could not afford to lose to Pan Ruo after being beaten by Qi Yang. Otherwise, his reputation would go to the dog on the battlefield of Northern Region.

Since he could not summon the Precepts of Heaven and Earth inside the green building, he could only depend on his bodily strength to fight.

As he summoned his saint Qi, 80,000 Precepts appeared on his body to form a powerful Precept Domain.

With the wave of his hand, a wave of water appeared in the air. The Precepts rushed in to form a water dragon, which then charged at Pan Ruo.

Pan Ruo appeared calm, almost nonchalant as the golden Bodhisattva behind her performed a move slowly.

As slow as it might seem, the golden Bodhisattva precisely blocked the water dragon's attack before it performed an attack move.

"How did she learn her Buddhist saint technique, and how did she practice it to such a high level of attainment when she is a Deathkin?" Zhang Ruochen was looking in surprise at the golden Bodhisattva from behind.

As far as he could remember, Huang Yanchen had never come into contact with Buddhism, let alone practicing Buddhist saint technique.

In a brief span of a few years, she had become a Lady candidate of the Fane of Destiny, her cultivation base attaining Path's Anterior, and she had mastered a Buddhist saint technique. It was hard to imagine what she had gone through all these years.

While the fight between Pan Ruo and Bi Yunhai was ongoing, a shadow suddenly appeared nearby and ran away with the

Xianji Compass.

It was none other than Nie Yundao, the leading figure of Soul Realm in Northern Region. His cultivation base was originally at the zenith of Heaven's Reach realm. But after a round of great battle, he had attained Path's Anterior.

There was a murderous look in Nie Yundao's eyes.

I will kill you after I get the Xianji Compass, Zhang Ruochen!

Nie Yundao was hostile to Zhang Ruochen because of King Daxi. How he wished you could cut Zhang Ruochen into pieces right now.

“Get the hell out of here!”

Bi Yunhai roared as he aimed a palm strike at Nie Yundao.

This palm strike might just be a casual move, but its power must not be underestimated.

No one must snatch the Xianji Compass under his nose.

Nie Yundao was shocked, his face changing as he quickly parried the attack with all his strength.

He did not expect a Celestial Court fighter to stop him from taking the Xianji Compass, because all this while, even the Deathkins did not attack him.

Bang!

The blow sent Nie Yundao flying out backward. He puked a mouthful of blood.

“How dare you attack me, Bi Yunhai!” Nie Yundao roared.

“So what if I have attacked you? If you think you could take the Xianji Compass with your level of ability, then you would be sorely mistaken.” Bi Yunhai hissed.

“You...”

Nie Yundao was furious. No one had ever belittled him like this since he started out as a fighter.

Just then, a flash of sword light suddenly appeared from behind and cut Nie Yundao in half.

Things happened so suddenly that Nie Yundao could not even get a chance to fight back.

But as a Soul Realm cultivator, his saint soul was unlike any ordinary people. In that critical moment, his saint soul left his body as he tried to flee.

But as soon as his saint soul was out, a sword pierced through it, and the saint soul shattered at once. Nie Yundao was as dead as a doornail now.

After killing Nie Yundao, the sword dissolved to become silver droplets before disappearing into Pan Ruo's forehead.

Needless to say, it was Pan Ruo who killed Nie Yundao with what might look like a special saint sword.

Poor Nie Yundao; he did not even know who killed him.

“It is a Primeval Sword!”

Zhang Ruochen muttered.

He knew this sword all too well. It was this sword that pierced through his body in front of the Ziwei Palace. This sword was stained with his blood.

Refined from Primeval water from the outer universe, this sword used to be the weapon of Tianyu Beast King, the overlord of a wild, mysterious realm in the Kunlun Realm. This sword was a regal weapon through and through.

With Pan Ruo's current strength, using a regal weapon to kill a Path's Anterior fighter like Nie Yundao couldn't have been easier.

Nie Yundao had himself to blame for his greediness. He should not have tried to get his hands on the Xianji Compass with only this level of strength. He could blame no one but himself for his death.

Zhang Ruochen pulled back his attention and looked at the greenish fog. Since the Xianji Compass had fallen from the dome, that invisible barrier should have also gone.

He probably could retrieve the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree while others were fighting for the compass.

He moved in a flash and passed through the greenish fog. He found himself coming into a strange dimension where the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was.

Just as he had expected, there was no invisible barrier stopping him.

Looking from the outside, the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was right in front of him. But once he was inside the greenish fog-filled dimension, he realized that the tree was still a great distance away, beyond reach.

Not only that, he also found that movement in this dimension was difficult, as if he was moving in the mire.

“Could this be the Null Dimension?”

The Secret Tome of Time and Space’s record about the Null Dimension suddenly came to mind.

The Null Dimension differed from normal dimensions in that any living things inside this dimension would find their movement restricted.

It was not a naturally occurred dimension but artificially formed with special means. The dimensional structure was complex—so much so that even dimensional cultivators found it hard to understand.

With Zhang Ruochen’s current level of cultivation, he could not understand the structure of the Null Dimension, and so he could not control it.

The only Kunlun Realm cultivator who could create a Null Dimension was Saint Monk Xumi.

So did Saint Monk Xumi create this dimension to house the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree?

“Who? Who is it?”

An angry roar suddenly rose inside the green building.

Upon hearing the voice, Zhang Ruochen retreated from the Null Dimension and looked in the direction where the voice came from.

It surprised him to see that the battle in the building had stopped, and the Xianji Compass was missing. Someone had run away with it.

Just then, Ji Fanxin ran up to him. “Someone lunged out from out of nowhere and snatched away the Xianji Compass.”

“Who could it be?” Zhang Ruochen appeared puzzled.

“I don’t know. That person had never revealed itself. It disappeared without a trace after taking the compass,” said Ji Fanxin.

“Someone had been hiding in the dark, and this someone could even take away the Xianji Compass from under the nose of so many fighters. Who could it be? Did you notice anything suspicious before this, Fairy?”

“I had already sensed something amiss from the moment I stepped into this green building. That person was superb at avoiding detection; I couldn’t even find that person.”

“You mean, Fairy, that person had long been inside the green building?”

“I supposed, yeah.” Ji Fanxin nodded.

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brow, feeling that things were really weird. If that person had been inside the building since the beginning, why didn’t that person take the Xianji Compass? Could it be that the person could not find the compass?

Besides, there was an enchantment concealing the green building. Not even the Deathkins had discovered its existence. So who could enter before everyone else? At least, he could not do that.

Many thoughts came to mind. Zhang Ruochen then pulled himself out of the thought. “Let’s not worry about who stole the Xianji Compass. The priority is the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.”

Jin Fanxin got the message and lunged into the greenish fog with him.

Others saw where they had gone and also followed suit.

“Get the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree,” said Yuanmo Shenzi with a low voice.

After losing the Xianji Compass, he could not afford to lose the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Besides, he wanted the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree more than the Xianji Compass because the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was the nemesis of the Deathkin. If the tree fell into the Celestial Court’s hands, they would be in great trouble.

Several shadows flew into the greenish fog, which was the Null Dimension.

“What is happening? It is difficult to move inside here!”

The moment they entered the Null Dimension, their faces changed.

“Could it be Zhang Ruochen? What the hell have you done, Zhang Ruochen?” Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect roared.

In his mind, only Zhang Ruochen could perform such a trick to a dimension.

Everyone looked alarmed as they looked over at Zhang Ruochen.

“It is the Null Dimension, mind you. Normally, only the god practicing the Path of Dimension can create it,” said Pan Ruo faintly.

Zhang Ruochen could not help but glance at Pan Ruo. He did not know that she even knew about the Null Dimension. She had indeed a changed person.

“Movement is difficult inside a Null Dimension. Those with weaker strength had better get out as soon as possible. If you all don’t know yet, those God-Eater Bugs are not affected by this Null Dimension,” said Pan Ruo.

As soon as her voice trailed off, many cultivators had started thinking of turning back. They were quaking in their boots at the mention of the God-Eater Bugs.

Chapter 1956 - All That Matters Is Speed

Chapter 1956: All That Matters Is Speed

Many people got chills just by looking at the “blue starry sky” inside the tree trunk. They retreated from the Null Dimension as it was a second too long to stay.

However, there were still many people who found the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree too hard to resist and stayed. After all, high risks came with high rewards.

Those who chose to go were very restrained. They did not fight with each other but kept an eye on their surroundings.

Inside the Null Dimension, forces from sides used their own ways to get near to the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Amid a series of strange noises, a blanket of blue lights flew out of the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. The dotted lights looked as beautiful as the stars.

As Pan Ruo had said, the God-Eater Bugs were not affected by the Null Dimension. Their flying speed made a stark contrast with the snail pace of the Celestial Court and Deathkin cultivators.

Bang!

Yuanmo Shenzi struck with his Demonic Spear, piercing through the body of a fist-sized God-Eater Bug.

Despite being the disciple of the Fane of Destiny, and unlike Pan Ruo, Yuanmo Shenzi had not mastered the skill of enslaving the God-Eater Bugs. All he could do was to kill them.

Zhang Ruochen, Ji Fanxin, and Pan Ruo seemed to be most relaxed among the two hundred or so fighters. All Zhang Ruochen needed to do was to trigger the Qiankun Realm, and

when the God-Eater Bugs sensed the scent of the sapling of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, they would enter the Qiankun Realm automatically.

On the other hand, Ji Fanxin and Pan Ruo mastered the secret technique of controlling the God-Eater Bugs. Except for the larger ones, the God-Eater bugs posed no threat to them.

Zhang Ruochen made capturing the God-Eater Bugs his priority. There were too many people inside the Null Dimension, and they would become the obstacles preventing him from retrieving the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

So it was a good idea to let the God-Eater Bugs to help him clear the obstacles for him.

As the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree belonged to the Kunlun Realm, both the Celestial Court and the Deathkin cultivators were invaders. They would pay a high price if they wanted to take the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

A scream rose as a Celestial Court fighter was attacked by God-Eater Bugs. His body was burned into ashes in a matter of seconds.

Two more Deathkin fighters made the same fate.

The situation turned chaotic instantly. Many of them regretted it and could not wait to flee the Null Dimension.

But moving in the Null Dimension was slow, and the God-Eater Bugs were quick. Under such circumstances, they were pretty much a sitting duck no matter how strong they were.

Over ten fighters, including two Heaven's Reach cultivators, had died from both sides in the blink of an eye.

Those two Heaven's Reach cultivators were bitten to death by a larger God-Eater Bug, the vitality and defense ability of which was extremely strong. Even Path's Anterior fighters had a hard time killing it.

Now this God-Eater Bug was eyeing another Heaven's Rich fighter. It seemed that this bug chose top fighters as its target.

Zhang Ruochen had been observing this bug since the beginning and was happy to see it attacking the Celestial Court and the Deathkin fighters. But now, he changed his mind and wanted to stop it.

This God-Eater Bug was targeting Feng Wuxing, who was Feng Yan's elder cousin. He could not just let him die.

Knowing that he was no match for this God-Eater Bug, Feng Wuxing quickly triggered a piece of ancient talisman, forming a tough shield around him as protection.

He then launched a counterattack with all his strength, trying to ward off that bug. The ancient talisman would not hold for long.

But this larger bug was much more powerful than he had expected. His ancient talisman had only lasted for a moment before the bug broke through.

Feng Wuxing screamed as the bug bit his arm.

Just then, Zhang Ruochen came up. With the swing of his Ancient Abyssal Blade, he cut off Feng Wuxing's arm—the one that was bitten by the God-Eater Bug.

He had just saved Feng Wuxing's life. Had he been a second slower, the blue flame would have spread up to Feng Wuxing's shoulder.

While he used the sword, he had also triggered the Qiankun Realm to release the scent of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree's sapling.

Just like the previous God-Eater Bugs, this one was attracted by the scent and entered the Qiankun Realm at once.

"Thank you for saving my life, friend." Feng Wuxing was truly grateful.

He knew that Zhang Ruochen had come for him, and he would remember Zhang Ruochen for this.

"Think nothing of it. Feng Yan and I are blood brothers. It was the right thing to do. But take my advice: leave this place quickly. You don't want to get stuck in the Null Dimension," said Zhang Ruochen.

“I am thinking the same. Be careful, Brother Zhang.” Feng Wuxing then quietly spoke through telepathy.

“Be careful of Red Fox King, Brother Zhang.”

After saying that, he immediately left. Since he was still not deep inside the Null Dimension, it was not too much of a problem for him to go.

“Be careful of Red Fox King?” Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat, and he could not help glancing at him.

As far as he could remember, there were no grudges between Red Fox King and him. Why did Feng Wuxing warn him about Red Fox King?

But he trusted that Feng Wuxing said that for a reason, and he had better take his word seriously.

During that time, there had been over a thousand God-Eater Bugs flying out of the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Zhang Ruochen had captured over a hundred of them, while the Celestial Court and the Deathkin fighters had killed the rest.

Toward the end of the battle, and just like what Feng Wuxing did, there had been over a hundred people fleeing the Null Dimension.

There were over seventy people remaining inside the Null Dimension. They all did not want to give up the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Both sides continued to encounter God-Eater Bug attacks as they pressed on. Each time there were over a thousand bugs attacking them.

Those who stayed were top fighters, but casualty was still inevitable.

As they finally approached the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, only 57 of them remained—26 on the Celestial Court’s side and 31 on the Deathkin’s side. So the Deathkin had an advantage in terms of headcount.

Zhang Ruochen swept his eyes over those at the scene. Other than the Deathkins, quite several of them from the Celestial

Court were his enemies, too.

There were four from the Blackdemon Realm, two of the Six Fatales of the Fane of Youshen, and Red Fox King— seven of them.

He would want to take them all down at once if can.

While he was thinking, he suddenly felt something move on his body. He took out that thing, which was

The Secret Tome of Time and Space.

“This is...”

His heart missed a beat as he had apparently felt a strange energy enter

The Secret Tome of Time and Space.

He found that the changes to

The Secret Tome of Time and Space

seemed to be harmonious with the Null Dimension.

He could not help but carefully study the changes.

There was no doubt that it was Saint Monk Xumi who left behind this strange energy, which perhaps only

The Secret Tome of Time and Space

could hold.

By the looks of things, the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, which has been cut down, has withered. But the enormous Qi of the Divine Tree and Precepts of the Divine Tree inside the trunk are precious.

Everyone looked excited, standing in front of the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

“Get the hell out of here if you all don’t want to die!” Yuanmo Shenzi brandished his Demonic Spear as he made the threat.

“Everyone leaves! Otherwise, I will turn you all into dead meat!” Chixing Shenzi sneered.

He had been thinking to wipe out all the Celestial Court fighters, but it was not easy, apparently. So they were hoping

for them to go away, saving them the hassle.

If push comes to shove, they fought and won, they would still pay a high price for it. They might even lose one or two of the Shenzis and Ladies.

“Think again if you want to take the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Do you all have the ability? You never know until we fight.” Bi Yunhai scoffed.

“You still have the nerve to sound off, Bi Yunhai! You are just a loser at the hands of Qi Yang!” Shengku Shenzi sneered.

There was a murderous look in Bi Yunhai’s eyes. “Qi Yang is powerful. But who the hell do you think you are? Fight me if you dare!”

“As if I am sacred!”

Shengku Shenzi was exuding a murderous air, too. As blood inscriptions appeared on the blood ax in his hand, a powerful burst of energy seemed wanting to slash the Null Dimension in half.

“Heck!”

Bi Yunhai hissed as he injected his saint Qi into the sky-blue gourd.

He would be seen as a coward if he did not respond to this provocation.

“Kill!”

Shengku Shenzi shouted, swinging his blood ax to strike Bi Yunhai.

Bi Yunhai had also made his move, meeting the attack head-on.

Under the constraint of the Null Dimensional, fighting needed to be in close range. Or else, even with the use of Supreme Artifacts, the attacking range would still be very limited.

Shengku Shenzi and Bi Yunhai quickly clashed, both using saint techniques and sacred artifacts as they faced-off against each other.

It was impossible to summon external forces here. In a place like this, even the use of sacred artifacts was restricted. They could only fight with their bodily strength, and both of them were undoubtedly confident of their strengths.

“It seems that a fight is inevitable. It is the only way to determine who will get to keep the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Everyone, we need to work together. After beating the Deathkins, we will share the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. We can’t let the Deathkins take the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree!” Xuanyuan Liekong called out.

No one on the Celestial Court’s side objected.

It seemed they would have to make do with it under such a circumstance.

If they were not united, probably none of them could get the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, as the Deathkins could use a divide-and-conquer method to beat them.

The only thing was, the Deathkin had the advantage in terms of number, which put the Celestial Court at a disadvantage.

A brutal battle finally broke out, and no one could stay away from it.

Huo Nu summoned bone-chilling cold, ghastly white fireballs on his body, then charged straight at Zhang Ruochen.

He was no match for Zhang Ruochen on the outside. That was because Zhang Ruochen had summoned external forces. But in the Null Dimension, he was confident that he could suppress Zhang Ruochen and complete the task that Yuanmo Shenzi assigned to him.

Sensing a threat approaching, Zhang pulled his thoughts out of The Secret Tome of Time and Space.

“Die!”

Huo Nu roared in a low voice, casting out a dozen ghastly white fireballs to block Zhang Ruochen escape routes.

With such a close distance, and in the unique environment of the Null Dimension, he was confident that Zhang Ruochen

would have no way to run.

He expected Zhang Ruochen to suffer from grave injury, or even death as long as he got hit.

In a split second, Zhang Ruochen's body shifted position and dodged all the ghastly white fireballs.

“How could this be possible?”

Huo Nu looked in disbelief.

They were in the Null Dimension. Everyone's movement was slow. How did Zhang Ruochen move so quickly?

While Huo Nu was still in shock, Zhang Ruochen had come in front of him, thrusting the Ancient Abyssal Blade into his forehead.

Thousands of Marks of Time appearing like the stars in the sky engulfed Huo Nu.

He might be quick in his response, but time seemed to have come to a standstill. It was too late to parry the attack.

The indestructible Ancient Abyssal Blade had pierced through his helmet into his forehead.

A destructive sword will rushed into Huo Nu's body and destroyed his saint soul in an instant.

Huo Nu's eyes were wide open, but his pupils dilated.

He thought he could beat Zhang Ruochen in the Null Dimension. Little did he expect Zhang Ruochen could kill him instantly with a sword as soon as he made the move. He did not even stand a chance.

Chapter 1957 - Hunting in the Null Dimension

Chapter 1957: Hunting in the Null Dimension

A peculiar smile formed on Zhang Ruochen's face after he killed Huo Nu with his sword.

He kept Huo Nu's body as he knew Huo Nu had many things on his body. He would search the body when he had time.

"Saint Monk Xumi was very smart indeed. He must have foreseen that I would come here." He broke into an even bigger smile as he looked at the

Secret Tome of Time and Space in his hands.

The strange energy that entered the Secret Tome of Time and Space

was seriously unusual. It came from Saint Monk Xumi, and it contained an enormous number of Precepts of Time and Dimension, which could help him comprehend the Path of Time and Space.

More importantly, after the energy entered the Secret Tome of Time and Space

, he could use it to move freely in the Null Dimension, and even perform his Sword of Time.

This way, he would be practically invincible in the Null Dimension. He could easily attack others, but others would find it hard to attack him.

"Let's hunt!"

While he muttered, he glanced over at those Deathkin fighters.

The Deathkin were the ones he wanted to deal with first.

Using the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

, he came up behind a Heaven's Reach Deathkin fighter and performed a Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike, crushing his skull and annihilating his saint soul.

He had learned to pick his battles. To kill the Deathkins, he chose those who were weaker first, then slowly going up the rank.

Top fighters like Yuanmo Shenzi and Chixing Shenzi were not so easy to deal with, even with the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

. The difference in strength between him and them was a little too great.

It did not take long before he killed seven of the thirty-one Deathkin.

There were a few more weaklings on the Deathkin's side, but they were the opponents of the Blackdemon Realm cultivators, the two Fatales of the Fane of Youshen, and Red Fox King. He couldn't care less to help them. So he left them to it.

“What is going on? Why is Zhang Ruochen's movement not restricted?”

It shocked the Deathkin and the Celestial Court fighters to see seven Deathkins had died in succession.

“You have a death wish, Zhang Ruochen?”

Yuanmo Shenzi's eyes looked bitter.

As his Demonic Spear vibrated, tens of thousands of Supreme Inscriptions appeared. The Supreme Power seemed about to cut the Null Dimension in half.

Yuanmo Shenzi's movement suddenly sped up as he charged at Zhang Ruochen with the Demonic Spear.

It was a Supreme Artifact, after all. It possessed an extraordinary power that not even the Null Dimension could completely restrain.

Pan Ruo was also making her move at the same time. She propped up the Gate of Destiny and performed a Path of Destiny. A Light of Destiny hit a Blackdemon fighter, unaffected by the Null Dimension.

This Blackdemon fighter appeared fine on the outside, but his saint soul had been shattered by the Light of Destiny.

Following immediately, Pan Ruo performed another three beams of Lights of Destiny aimed at none other than the other Blackdemon fighters.

Two Blackdemon fighters met the same fate as the first one, their saint souls shattering as they died violently.

Meanwhile, You Yuexin was the strongest among the three, and she had a mysterious item on her body. She was badly wounded but would live.

“How dare you!”

Seeing the death of three Blackdemon fighters and a wounded You Yuexin, Xuanyuan Liekong was furious and immediately swung into action.

In everyone’s eyes, Pan Ruo’s killing of the Blackdemon fighters was a revenge for Zhang Ruochen’s killing of seven Deathkin fighters.

If no one stopped her, and with Pan Ruo’s mysterious Path of Destiny, more Celestial Realm fighters would be killed.

You Yuexin’s face looked grim. This time, five Blackdemon fighters had come to Northern Region trying to make a name for themselves. Little did she expect after a battle, she was the only one left.

Shi Lingkun was out of his depth. He was killed by the God-Eater Bugs under Pan Ru control when he tried to snatch the compass.

What about the other four, though? They had not offended Pan Ruo, yet they became her target. Did Pan Ruo take it out on them because of Shi Lingkun?

No matter how furious she was, she could do nothing about Pan Ruo because she was no match for Pan Ruo.

If not for Xuanyuan Liekong's intervention, she would have died.

Had they known it earlier, they would have not come into the Null Dimension.

Meanwhile, with the help of the Secret Tome of Time and Space

, Zhang Ruochen moved with light steps as he dodged Yuanmo Shenzi's multiple attacks.

As the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

unfolded, silverish light turned into multiple dimensions to engulf Zhang Ruochen and Yuanmo Shenzi.

“Dimensional Freeze!”

With the tap of his hand in the air, Zhang Ruochen released a Power of Dimension to freeze the silverish dimension where Yuanmo Shenzi was.

He could not perform any dimensional techniques inside the Null Dimension. But once inside the multiple dimensions formed by the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

, his hands were free and his power became higher.

“Break!”

Yuanmo Shenzi roared as 90-million Precepts appeared on his body with a burst of powerful energy.

Dimensional Freeze did not work. Even the silverish dimension trapping Yuanmo Shenzi had also shattered.

Yet, he had just broken one layer. There were still tens of layers of outer dimension that still kept him in.

Zhang Ruochen did not stop but continued to perform his dimensional techniques. He even cast out the Azure Sky Pagoda at Yuanmo Shenzi.

But Yuanmo Shenzi was so powerful that no attack could get to him.

Boom!

Yuanmo Shenzi used his Demonic Spear and triggered an immense amount of Supreme Power. He finally broke through the multiple dimensions.

Not bad for a Deathkin, one of the top ten younger generation fighters. He had got some skill. Zhang Ruochen was impressed.

If Yuanmo Shenzi were to summon the Precepts of Heaven and Earth and his Supreme Artifact was not restrained on the outside world, he would have been an even more terrifying opponent. Even with the use of the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

, Zhang Ruochen would have a hard time suppressing him for even a while.

Knowing how nasty Yuanmo Shenzi was, Zhang Ruochen did not want to mess with him. He turned to target other Deathkins. The four fighters from the Blackdemon Realm would make a perfect target.

Yuanmo Shenzi was following close behind, yet he could not stop Zhang Ruochen from killing his men.

Inside the Null Dimension, the Deathkin fighters could not perform at their best. It was because of this that Zhang Ruochen could kill them easily.

Another four Deathkins died at the hands of Zhang Ruochen. They could not even flee.

Right now, everyone was deep inside the Null Dimension. It was too late to turn back, even if they wanted to leave.

The ratio between the two sides changed with 20 people on the Deathkin's side and 23 on the Celestial Court's side.

Zhang Ruochen moved like a flash and came beside Red Fox King. He performed a Sword of Time to strike Red Fox King's opponent.

Not that he was helping Red Fox King on purpose. He was just passing by and did so as a matter of convenience.

When Sword of Time struck, it would kill.

As powerful as Red Fox King's opponent was, he still could not get away from being killed by Sword of Time.

While Zhang Ruochen was dealing with that Deathkin, a murderous intent rose in Red Fox King's eyes and he hit Zhang Ruochen on his back with a palm strike.

His palm was on fire with hundreds of thousands of fire-type Precepts and the same number of Precepts of the Palm. Together, they formed a crush-all red sacred furnace.

Sure enough!

There was a cold look in his eyes when Zhang Ruochen sensed the danger.

The

Secret Tome of Time and Space

unfolded to form into multiple dimensions and kept Red Fox King inside.

With multiple dimensional techniques performed, the sacred furnace of Red Fox King shattered and dissipated completely.

“How did you...”

Red Fox King was shocked.

He thought his surprise attack would work, but he did not expect Zhang Ruochen to come prepared. He had missed.

Without waiting for Red Fox King to finish, Zhang Ruochen closed the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

back up and Red Fox King was sealed inside the tome, becoming a portrait.

Now Zhang Ruochen was happy that Feng Wuxing had warned him beforehand. Or else Red Fox King would have got him.

Red Fox King might not be able to kill him with his palm, but wounding him would cause great trouble to him.

Many thoughts came to mind, but Zhang Ruochen did not stop. Yuanmo Shenzi was coming at him.

“Zhang Ruochen!”

Yuanmo Shenzi’s face looked grim. He was burning in anger.

However, he stopped pursuing Zhang Ruochen halfway. He knew that if he were to use the power of the Demonic Spear, it was going to over exhaust him.

Besides, he also knew that as quick as he could move, he still could not catch up with Zhang Ruochen.

The Null Dimension was like a pond, and Zhang Ruochen was a fish that swam freely in the water. No matter how good he could swim, no way he could out-swim a fish.

Not to mention that if staying in the water would burn him out, and he would drown.

“Let’s kill those Deathkins together!”

Zheng Yuan called out as he started to attack.

It was the best time to strike, as the Deathkins had been demoralized.

If they could buy Zhang Ruochen some time, no matter how powerful those Shenzis and Ladies were, they would be killed eventually.

It seemed like this Null Dimension was a tailored-made battlefield for Zhang Ruochen.

The Celestial Court fighters launched an attack on the Deathkins with no hesitation.

However, there was one person who did not go attack the Deathkin. Instead, this person was moving closer toward the trunk of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

“Fight all you want. This tree is mine!” Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect looked greedily at the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

A glow appeared on his forehead along with a beautiful, quaint jade jar. The surface of the jade jar was engraved with esoteric patterns. A dimensional energy released from these mysterious patterns could affect the Null Dimension slightly.

This jar was an artifact that he stumbled upon in the Kunlun Realm. It had a dimension inside, which he believed could keep the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree in.

Once inside the jade jar, those God-Eater Bugs inside the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree were not going to pose any threat.

“What makes you think you could take the Divine Sky-Connecting Tee? Don’t be naïve.”

Pan Ruo spoke behind him just as he was about to trigger his jade jar.

At this time, Yuanmo Shenzi had replaced Pan Ruo and was now engaging Xuanyuan Liekong.

Ten-Eyed Qiankun Insect was shocked. He cast out a talisman that glowed in a divine light as he spun around.

“Go to hell!”

It was Cang Long who gave him this talisman to use it against Zhang Ruochen. But he now used it on Pan Ruo in time of emergency.

If he could kill the Lady candidate of the Fane of Destiny, he would make a name for himself, and the value of this talisman would be even higher.

Pan Ruo appeared calm. The golden Buddha light radiating on her body formed into a golden lotus flower that wrapped around her.

Boom!

As the talisman released thousands of runes, lightning formed in the thousands and struck Pan Ruo.

Each bolt of lightning was so powerful that it could shatter a higher-order Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact, but not the golden lotus petals that wrapped around Pan Ruo.

The golden lotus flower looked like a real Buddhist artifact, made of gold, indestructible and would not decay.

Chapter 1958 - Collecting the Divine Sky-connecting Tree

Chapter 1958: Collecting the Divine Sky-connecting Tree

Seeing Pan Ruo being swallowed by the Divine Thunder, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect could not help but reveal a smile. Trying to take the Divine Thunder head-on was the same as having a death wish.

When handing the talisman to him, Cang Long had mentioned that the Divine Thunder unleashed by the talisman would be very powerful. A single thunder strike was enough to wound or even kill an ordinary Path's Anterior elite. With hundreds or even thousands of simultaneous Divine Thunder strikes, even a top-tier Path's Anterior elite would find it difficult to survive.

As strong as Pan Ruo was, she would not be able to withstand the bombardment of a thousand Divine Thunder strikes.

Of course, even if she survived, she would also be seriously injured. By then, he could take her down with a flip of his hand, and she would not be able to do anything more.

“How dare you look down on me. Do you think I'm a pushover?” The Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect's eyes were filled with malicious intent.

He was waiting for the strength of the talisman to be exhausted and see how miserable Pan Ruo would be. Just a wisp of her Saint Soul could be exchanged for a large number of merit points.

After a long while, the raging thunder finally subsided, and calm returned.

“How can that be?”

Seeing that appear before him, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect could not help but widen his eyes as if he was imagining things.

Pan Ruo stood silently on the golden Buddhist lotus as her body radiated a faint Buddhist light. Her form was solemn and dignified as if she was a living Bodhisattva who was walking the realm.

The golden lotus was completely intact, and perfectly blocked off all of the power of the Divine Thunder, not allowing it to harm Pan Ruo at all.

The Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect was dumbstruck. He had used his strongest card yet he could not even harm Pan Ruo. How strong was she?

Soon, the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect snapped back to his senses, and the first thought in his mind was to flee.

The Smiling Faceshifter noticed the danger that the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect was in, and he shot out several high-level sacred artifacts out, including one of the incomplete King's Weapons he had gotten from the Kunlun Realm. He was trying to stop Pan Ruo and buy time for the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect to escape.

“Run, you fool!” The Smiling Faceshifter had an anxious look.

The Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect dared not tarry, and immediately escape with all of the speed he could muster, no longer caring about taking the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

Pan Ruo did not move and stood on the golden Buddhist lotus as she quickly made some bizarre mudras.

Suddenly, an even more brilliant golden Buddhist light emerged from her body, forming a golden Bodhisattva that merged together with the golden lotus, as if the two were one.

Baaaam!!

The golden Bodhisattva extended a hand and easily destroyed all of the high-level sacred artifacts that the Smiling Faceshifter had deployed, reducing all of them into pieces of scrap iron.

That piece of incomplete King's Weapon was grabbed by the Golden Bodhisattva, and the King-class inscription within it was unable to unleash the slightest of its powers.

A silver droplet flew out from the center of Pan Ruo's brow and transformed into a crystal sword. The sword radiated a chilly aura as if it wanted to freeze the entire void in place.

The crystal sword flew across the void like flowing water and appeared behind the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect in an instant.

“Nooo!!!”

The Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect let out a horrified and bitter roar.

Dush!

The crystal sword stabbed through the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect's head as Precepts of the Sword in the hundreds of thousands were blasted into his body.

As a primordial species, his lifeforce was extremely powerful, and he could survive the blow. The moment the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect faded, he transformed into a bizarre bug with ten eyes. Its size was massive, comparable to a bull.

Seeing the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect die, the Smiling Faceshifter was extremely terrified and desperately tried to escape.

He was good at masquerading and transformation, but his actual combat strength was not even comparable to that of the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect.

If even the latter was so easily killed, how was he a match for Pan Ruo?

Pan Ruo did not pursue him but slowly extended her hand instead. While she did so, a series of arcane Precepts of Destiny appeared and transformed into chains as they flew at the Smiling Faceshifter.

The Smiling Faceshifter could not outrun to the Precepts of Destiny, and in an instant, he was bound by the chains.

One of the chains glowed in a strange light that directly pierced into the Smiling Faceshifter's body and pulled his Saint Soul out of his body.

Smash!!

The chain shook slightly, and the Smiling Faceshifter's Saint Soul shattered.

At that moment, the Fane of Youshen's Six Fatals lost another two members and could only be called the Two Fatals from now on.

The moment the Smiling Faceshifter died, his body changed and transformed into an unknown beast.

Pan Ruo did not let her kills go to waste and collected the corpses of both the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect as well as the Smiling Faceshifter. After all, the corpses of primordial creatures like this were still very valuable.

The next moment, Pan Ruo locked her gaze on You Yuexin and clearly did not want to let this survivor of the Blackdemon Realm go.

“I have to fight!”

You Yuexin knew that she could not escape, and she gritted her teeth as she struck at Pan Ruo first.

A demonic moon flew out of her body, unleashing monstrous Demonic Qi as it rammed into Pan Ruo.

Pan Ruo's expression was indifferent, and with a casual wave of her hand, a surge of majestic evil Death Qi emerged and collided with the demonic moon.

Bam!!

The demonic moon exploded, and all of the Demonic Qi was annihilated.

You Yuexin's body shuddered as she spat out a mouthful of blood, seemingly suffering another severe blow.

Without waiting for her foe to make another move, Pan Ruo blasted out some light of destiny, which instantly sank into the former's body.

You Yuexin's body stiffened as her consciousness rapidly disintegrated. In the end, she could not escape the disaster.

Just as Pan Ruo was about to continue her attack, Ji Fanxin stood in her path. She unleashed an ancient curse, with

countless hexes appearing in the void and striking at Pan Ruo.

Faint delight appeared in Pan Ruo's eyes as she formed another mudra, and a surge of Will of Death appeared from her body, colliding with the hexes.

With Ji Fanxin facing off with Pan Ruo, the weaker folks on the Celestial Court's side could not help but breathe a sigh of relief. They were really afraid of being targeted by Pan Ruo.

At the same moment, the group of Celestial Court elites attacked the Deathkins with all their might, creating openings for Zhang Ruochen to strike.

As long as they could exhaust the Deathkins in blocking their attacks, Zhang Ruochen could then find an opportunity to go in for the kill.

Everyone could see that with the advantage of being able to move freely, Zhang Ruochen still had a way to slay his foe even if they were far stronger than himself.

After a whirlwind of slaughter, aside from Pan Ruo and seven other powerful Shenzis, as well as Shennüs, all of the Deathkin elites had perished by Zhang Ruochen's hands.

To Zhang Ruochen, all of the Deathkin elites equaled to merit points. Adding all of them up could get him over hundreds of millions of merit points. It was far beyond the points obtained when killing the average Deathkin.

Very soon, Zhang Ruochen had selected a target to kill, and the target was Shengku Shenzi who was fighting fiercely with Bi Yunhai.

He was not as strong as Bi Yunhai and was completely on the back foot against the latter, so he was undoubtedly the best target.

His figure flickered and Zhang Ruochen suddenly appeared beside Shengku Shenzi.

The

Secret Tome of Time and Space

opened, and the dimension shook as a massive dimensional rift crept toward Shengku Shenzi.

Shengku Shenzi's expression changed drastically, and he tried to dodge with as much speed as he could muster. Yet, he was a little too slow, and he could not completely avoid the rift. Both of his arms were severed by the dimensional rift as blood gushed out.

“Die!”

Taking the opportunity, Bi Yunhai immediately struck and activated the Skyblue Gourd. He unleashed a dazzling Saint Light that comprised countless Saint Path Precepts as it shot at Shengku Shenzi.

In desperation, Shengku Shenzi could only deploy a dozen shields before him as fast as possible and used the Shadow of Death to shield himself.

Baaam!!

The Shadow of Death could not withstand the devastating attack from the King's Weapon and was punched straight through.

Immediately after, the one dozen shields that Shengku Shenzi had deployed were all shattered in succession, and he was sent flying.

Zhang Ruochen seemed to have already calculated everything, and instantly appeared behind Shengku Shenzi as a blurry sword soul flew out of his body with the Ancient Abyssal Blade, unleashing the Swordsmanship of Time.

Numerous Marks of Time appeared and enveloped Shengku Shenzi.

“Sh*t!” Shengku Shenzi cursed to himself.

Yet, when he wanted to block the attack, it was already too late.

Time seemed to come to a standstill at that moment, and Shengku Shenzi found it difficult to even think.

Dush!

A sword light flashed past, and Shengku Shenzi's head flew into the air.

Even when dealing with a powerful Deathkin like Shengku Shenzi, the sword soul still had a countering effect, and its effect was made even more pronounced.

With just a single stroke, Shengku Shenzi was dead.

The Sword Soul returned and entered Zhang Ruochen's body as if it had never appeared before.

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Ruochen collected Shengku Shenzi's corpse and all of the artifacts he used. This was all his spoils of war.

Seeing this, Bi Yunhai frowned, obviously a little unhappy. Nevertheless, he did not do anything in the end. Inside the void, he was really helpless against Zhang Ruochen, and if he wanted to fight, he might very well be the one to suffer instead.

“Shengku.”

Seeing Shengku Shenzi die, Yuanmo Shenzi was furious.

He was not particularly concerned about Shengku Shenzi's death, but in this situation, Shengku Shenzi's death meant that their situation had undoubtedly become much more perilous.

“Fall back. Use the Altar of Death to deal with them. Since they dare to step on Xianji Mountain, none of them will leave alive,” Yuanmo Shenzi ordered coldly.

Fighting inside the void was just too troublesome. They had all of the strength in the world but could not use it whatsoever. Otherwise, how could they have been beaten so badly by Zhang Ruochen?

In an instant, the remaining Deathkin elites all gathered beside Yuanmo Shenzi at the quickest speed possible. Pan Ruo was among them.

Seven top elites all unleashed their Will of Death, conjuring a massive Shadow of Death, and Yuanmo Shenzi handed the Supreme Sacred Artifact-level Demonic Spear to the Shadow of Death.

Boom!!

A group of Celestial Court elites was unleashing a frenzy of attacks. With such a good opportunity at hand, how could they let Yuanmo Shenzi and his clique go that easily?

The Shadow of Death became increasingly unstable and was on the brink of collapse.

“Death Sacrifice.”

Led by Yuanmo Shenzi, the five other Shenzis and Shennüs all sacrificed their own essence.

Pan Ruo did not sacrifice her own essence, though. Instead, she used the Gate of Destiny to unleash a technique of destiny to stabilize the Shadow of Death. At the same time, she did everything she could to eliminate the void’s impact.

With that, the Deathkin could stand their ground as they slowly fought their way out of the void.

There was no one outside the void right then. No one knew if those people had entered the void, or where those who had retreated out of it had gone.

Whoosh!

Yuanmo Shenzi and the others retreated from the void. Then, without any hesitation, they immediately rushed out of the Blue Temple at extreme speed.

“After them!”

Xuanyuan Liekong immediately pursued after them.

Seeing this, a group of elites immediately followed suit, wanting to take advantage of all the Deathkin on Xianji Mountain.

Speaking of which, Lu Baiming and Ming Gu were completely unaffected by the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, and they did not enter Xianji Mountain’s central area. They had been fighting outside all this while, and no one knew how their fight was progressing.

At the edge of the void, Zhang Ruochen halted momentarily before turning around.

With no one else there now, it was undoubtedly the best time to collect the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk.

A moment later, he arrived again before the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and unlocked the Qiankun Realm, allowing the tree's new seedling to communicate with the tree trunk's remnant will.

The others had taken the collection of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk a little too lightly. It was a powerful divine body, and if it did not recognize the individual before it, collecting it by force would not be easy.

In fact, if he had let the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect use that ancient dimensional artifact to collect the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk, not only would it have failed, but it would have also caused massive trouble.

Without waiting for too long, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree seedling successfully communicated with the tree trunk's remnant will.

“Retract.”

Zhang Ruochen opened the Qiankun Realm with all of his might, unleashing a powerful suction force.

Whoosh!

The Divine Sky-connecting Tree's immense trunk, alongside the countless God-eater Bugs lurking in the trunk, were all instantly sucked into the Qiankun Realm without any resistance.

Immediately afterward, the Divine Tree's Qi that was permeating in the realm was also all sucked into the Qiankun Realm. These were all good things and should not be wasted for nothing.

Chapter 1959 - Survivors of Xianji Mountain from 100,000 Years Ago

Chapter 1959: Survivors of Xianji Mountain from 100,000 Years Ago

After absorbing all of the Divine Tree Qi from the void, Zhang Ruochen did not tarry and immediately rushed out at his highest possible speed.

The battle of Xianji Mountain had yet to end, and Ji Fanxin, Feng Yan, as well as the rest, were still outside. He had to rush over to join them as soon as possible.

As for what kind of secrets were hidden inside the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk, it would not be too late if he only looked into it after the dust settled.

After all, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk had already entered the Qiankun Realm, so unless he perished, no one could take it away.

As soon as they rushed out of the void, Zhang Ruochen felt a sense of peril and immediately used his Dimensional Shift, leaving only an afterimage in the spot he stood.

Baaam!!

Saint Light shot out and hit the afterimage left by Zhang Ruochen, instantly shattering it.

Ji Fanxin rushed out from the side and appeared beside Zhang Ruochen before looking coldly at a dark corner and saying, “Bi Yunhai, what do you think you’re doing?”

Bi Yunhai walked out of that dark corner and saw Ji Fanxin protecting Zhang Ruochen. A bitter look appeared on his face as he said, “Fairy, this has nothing to do with you. Zhang Ruochen, hand over the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.”

“The Divine Sky-connecting Tree is something I need, so how can it have nothing to do with me?” Ji Fanxin replied.

“That’s simple then. Once I get the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, I can share it with you. Only I can protect the Divine Sky-connecting Tree,” Bin Yunhai said.

Zhang Ruochen took a step forward and replied, “The Divine Sky-connecting Tree belongs to the Kunlun Realm. No one can take it away, not even the gods.”

In response, Bi Yunhai’s eyes became much chillier as he spat, “Zhang Ruochen, know your place. My patience is limited, so hand over the Divine Sky-connecting Tree now.”

“And if I don’t?” Zhang Ruochen’s aura too became even more menacing.

Whoosh~

A series of dimensional ripples appeared near Bi Yunhai as orbs of blue flame orbs flew out of the ripples and charged at him.

The blue flame orbs were naturally the God-eater Bugs, and all of them were the size of a washbasin, enough to be a threat to a Path’s Anterior elite.

Zhang Ruochen was indeed still unable to control the God-eater Bugs. Nevertheless, he could release them from the Qiankun Realm and allow them to indiscriminately attack anything around them.

In fact, there were even larger God-eater Bugs inside the Divine Sky-connecting Tree the size of millstones, and they were enough to pose a threat to Supreme Saints.

However, Zhang Ruochen dared not touch them yet, for fear of causing serious trouble instead.

After all, a God-eater Bug of that size was just too terrifying. Once released, whether he could recover them back again was a question in itself.

According to the legends, when the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was not yet cut, there were even more powerful God-

eater Bugs living parasitically inside it, and even a top-tier Supreme Saint could be reduced to ashes.

However, after the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was cut off, those powerful God-eater Bugs were all dead.

There was no way to breed such powerful God-eater Bugs just by relying on the dead Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen had only released a dozen God-eater Bugs the size of washbasins and instantly surrounded Bi Yunhai with them.

“Damn it, Zhang Ruochen can actually control these God-eater Bugs!”

Bi Yunhai was both shocked and furious.

Baaam!!!

Using his Azure Sky-sea Palm technique, Bi Yunhai sent five of the bugs flying.

But the five God-eater Bugs did not suffer any damage, and immediately rushed over again.

At the same time, Bi Yunhai sensed some peril as he turned around and saw Zhang Ruochen holding the Azuresky Pagoda in his hand.

On top of that, a large number of hexes also appeared before Ji Fanxin, exuding an extremely bizarre and dangerous aura.

Facing off against the dozen washbasin-sized God-eater Bugs itself was difficult enough. If Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin were to attack, it would undoubtedly make the situation worse.

“Hmph.”

With a cold sneer, Bi Yunhai immediately chose to retreat.

Zhang Ruochen did not pursue and immediately opened the Qiankun Realm. He then used the Divine Sky-connecting Tree seedling and tree trunk to retrieve the dozens of God-eater Bugs.

Once he fully tamed them, these God-eater Bugs would be one of his important trump cards. Each one of them was very

precious, hence he could not afford to lose them.

Suddenly, Ji Fanxin coldly called out, “Who goes there?”

Zhang Ruochen was slightly startled. He did not expect there was someone else in the Blue Temple, and he did not even notice the person.

Tap... Tap...

A crisp sound of footstep rang out as a figure slowly walked out of the darkness.

It was a young man wearing a black and white Taoist robe with a compass hanging from his waist. His appearance was very handsome, but his face was very pale, showing a sickly disposition.

Zhang Ruochen’s gaze was fixed on the compass at the man’s waist as a strange look flashed across his eyes. “So, you are the one who took the Xianji Compass away. Who are you?” he said.

Right then, both Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin were highly vigilant. They dared not be careless.

For this person to take away the Xianji Compass so easily in the presence of the group of top elites and for no one to find him afterward meant that he was no slouch.

“Hmm?”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed slightly and sensed a very special aura from the young man’s body.

This aura was extremely special, and he had sensed it in another person before that left a lasting impression on him.

It was none other than Jiang Yunchong of the Jiang Clan.

“Could it be...”

All of a sudden, a conjecture came to Zhang Ruochen’s mind.

After calming down a little, Zhang Ruochen looked directly at the young man and spoke. “You’re a Re-awakener of the Xianji Sect.”

Hearing this, a look of surprise unwittingly flashed in the young man's eyes as he said, "It looks like you've already met someone like me. Yes, I am indeed a survivor of the Xianji Sect. My name is Hong Tianji. Zhang Ruochen, the Scion of Time and Space, I need your help."

"How can I help you?" Zhang Ruochen asked curiously.

Hong Tianji cast his gaze toward the void and said, "The void was created by Saint Monk Xumi, and it contains a powerful divine power. If this power is unleashed, it can form a space-time barrier that will lock the entire Xianji Mountain down, and only you can do this."

"You've met Saint Monk Xumi before?" Surprise flashed in Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

Hong Tianji nodded and said, "I have indeed met him before, and thus became a survivor of the Xianji Sect. With my re-awakening, the world was already so different."

Zhang Ruochen could hear a clear trace of deep sorrow despite Hong Tianji's calm voice.

With his sect destroyed and all of his fellow sect members dead, he was left all alone to bear the sect's mission. Throughout the entire time, he had been in a deep slumber since the Middle Ages.

"What am I supposed to do?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Hong Tianji pointed his finger forward and answered, "Put the Secret Tome of Time and Space

into this groove and rouse it with the power of time and space to release Saint Monk Xumi's divine power. It will form the Interdiction of Time and Space. Although it will not be able to stop the Deathkin from entering the Kunlun Realm, it will make it much more difficult for them to do so in the future."

Zhang Ruochen looked in the direction that Hong Tianji was pointing at and saw a shallow groove in the wall. The size of the groove was the same as the

Secret Tome of Space and Time

, and it had clearly been specially prepared for the tome.

As he approached the groove, Zhang Ruochen did not immediately place the

Secret Tome of Space and Time

in it. Instead, he turned to Hong Tianji and said, “The Deathkin have set up an Altar of Death that can absorb the Northern Region’s recovery power. Do you have any way to deal with it?”

“That Altar of Death is indeed something, and destroying it will be extremely difficult. However, it is not impossible. Take the Xianji Compass, and you will be able to activate the ancient formation that the Xianji Sect deployed. Even if you cannot destroy the altar outright, you will be able to severely damage it,” Hong Tianji said.

Clearly, after his reawakening, he had already secretly scouted the situation and now had a general understanding of the current situation on Xianji Mountain.

As he spoke, Hong Tianji removed the Xianji Compass from his waist and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the Xianji Compass but did not reach out to take it and instead asked, “Why don’t you do it yourself?”

“It’s not the right time for me to show up yet. There are many things that can only be left to you. As the Scion of Time and Space, you are destined to shoulder more callings than anyone else from the very start,” Hong Tianji said meaningfully.

Hearing that, Zhang Ruochen did not say anything else and simply took the Xianji Compass.

Upon seeing this, a smile appeared on Hong Tianji’s face as he turned around and disappeared back into the darkness.

Only at this moment did Ji Fanxin say, “It looks like there is much more to the Kunlun Realm’s secrets than I anticipated. But this is only right. As a great immortal world, how could the Kunlun Realm have no backup plans?”

Zhang Ruochen put away the Xianji Compass and said with a solemn expression, “Fairy, please protect me.”

Ji Fanxin did not say anything and just nodded gently as she released her mighty spiritual power, covering the entire Blue Temple.

With Ji Fanxin around, Zhang Ruochen had no more worries. He immediately lifted the

Secret Tome of Space and Time

and inserted it into the groove in the wall.

Through a shred of Saint Monk Xumi’s divine power, the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

established an arcane connection with the void.

Needless to say, Saint Monk Xumi had already calculated everything beforehand.

“Huh...”

Exhaling a deep breath, Zhang Ruochen acted as he activated all of his Precepts of Time and Space. A powerful force of space and time was released as he infused it into the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

.

Suddenly, the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

changed and glowed in silver light as even more arcane patterns of time and space appeared, merging into the void.

Boooooom!

The Blue Temple shook again as if an earthquake had struck.

In the end, the temple did not crumble, but the void rapidly collapsed instead as it returned to nothingness.

While the void collapsed, the vast divine power hidden in it was unleashed.

Crash!!!

The vast divine power surged into the sky, breaking through everything as it reached tens of thousands of feet above the sky. It surpassed even the tallest peak of Xianji Mountain.

The next moment, this divine power quickly diffused, forming a space-time barrier that completely enveloped the entire Xianji Mountain.

“What’s going on?”

The moment the space-time barrier took form, all of the cultivators on Xianji Mountain were shocked.

Be it the Celestial Court or the Deathkin, all of them were anxious as none of them knew how or when the space-time-space barrier had formed. They were worried that it was a technique used by the opposite force.

Some of the elites could not help but unleash their high-level sacred artifacts to attack the barrier.

Baaaam!!!

The high-level sacred artifacts unleashed a terrifying power but could not even scratch the space-time barrier.

“It’s the power of space and time, it’s Zhang Ruochen.”

Sending the power of the dimensional barrier, someone immediately thought of Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen again.” Yuanmo Shenzi clenched his fists tightly.

The next moment, Yuanmo Shenzi shook his head and said, “No, with Zhang Ruochen’s strength, how can he create such a powerful barrier?”

“It may not be Zhang Ruochen’s own strength, but perhaps a hidden hand left behind by Saint Monk Xumi back in the day,” Pan Ruo said softly.

Hearing the name “Saint Monk Xumi”, the expressions of all the Deathkin elites changed. Forget them, even the Deathkin gods were wary of Saint Monk Xumi.

If Saint Monk Xumi had not exhausted all of his divine power to seal all of the rifts in the Kunlun Realm, it would have been

destroyed by the Infernal Court during the Middle Ages.

If this space-time barrier was really the work of Saint Monk Xumi, then it would undoubtedly be a massive problem.

Chapter 1960 - One Person Against the World

Chapter 1960: One Person Against the World

The space-time barrier formed in an instant, and no one could withdraw from Xianji Mountain in time. All of the 400,000 Celestial Court troops and close to 200,000 Deathkin troops were all trapped within the area.

In the shortest period of time, both sides regrouped and were on high alert.

Even Lu Baiming and Ming Gu had stopped fighting, with both retreating to their own camps.

Baaam!!!

In the air, Qi Yang swung the demonic blade with all of his might, splitting the Tortoise Shell Formation Map and the Chaotic Dimension as he broke free. The brilliant blade light appeared before all of the cultivators like a heavenly stream.

“Retract!”

Qi Yang stretched out a giant hand tens of feet long and wanted to take the Tortoise Shell Formation Map, unfortunately for him, the map seemed to have its own consciousness as it submerged underground and disappeared.

Qi Yang frowned and could only give up. His figure flickered and appeared above the Altar of Death as he stood beside Yuanmo Shenzi.

“What happened?” Qi Yang looked up into the sky and felt a force that suffocated him somewhat.

A grim look appeared on Yuanmo Shenzi’s face as he said, “It’s probably a hidden hand left behind by that old monk, Xumi, trapping us in here. This barrier isn’t that simple by the looks of it.”

“A hidden hand left behind by that old monk? What is going on? Where’s Shengku?” Confusion filled Qi Yang’s eyes.

Yuanmo Shenzi said, “It’s very likely. After all, this barrier is made from the power of time and space. Aside from that old monk, Xumi, who else in Kunlun would have such technique at hand? As for Shengku, he is already dead. He died at the hands of Zhang Ruochen.”

Hearing this, Qi Yang could not help but show a look of surprise and find it hard to believe.

He knew that Zhang Ruochen was the Scion of Time and Space and he had many techniques up his sleeve. However, with Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation strength, how could he kill Shengku?

The difference in their cultivation bases was heaven and earth.

Whoosh!

At this very moment, two figures rushed out from the gloomy underground. They were Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin.

Ji Fanxin held the Tortoise Shell Formation Map in her hand, and she was clearly the one who had retrieved the map earlier.

Zhen Yuan transformed into a blue light stream and flew to Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin’s side. Opening his mouth, he asked, “Junior Brother Zhang, what is this barrier?”

A smile appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s face, and he said, “Senior Brother Zhen, don’t worry. I’ve created this barrier using Saint Monk Xumi’s divine powers in order to trap the Deathkin.”

Zhang Ruochen then sent him a telepathic message in secret.

“Next, I will use some special means to deal with the Deathkin. To avoid friendly fire, I hope you will pull the Celestial Court army out of Xianji Mountain, Senior Brother Zhen.”

“How confident are you?”

Zhen Yuan sent another telepathic message back, clearly feeling a little uneasy.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the Altar of Death in the distance as a confident smile appeared on his face and telepathically replied, “

Senior Brother Zhang, don't you worry. If I don't have absolute confidence, how would I dare to go and challenge the Deathkin alone?”

It was a swagger of someone high and mighty!

It was reminiscent of how Saint Monk Xumi sat among the stars in the past, looking down at the gods. Although he was but one person, he gave off the aura of a person who could make the gods kneel before him.

Zhen Yuan stared deeply at Zhang Ruochen and said nothing else. He immediately sent word for the Celestial Court army to withdraw.

A moment later, the Celestial Court army was back in their warships.

Even Bi Yunhai followed Zhen Yuan onto the warship. His eyes were fixed on Zhang Ruochen as he broke into a derisive smile. “You're really full of yourself; you think you can destroy the Deathkin Army just by borrowing Saint Monk Xumi's remaining power? Once you die, no one will even come to collect your corpse.”

Zhang Ruochen only gave Bi Yunhai an indifferent look and did not pay any attention to him. While Bi Yunhai was very strong, he was not so strong that Zhang Ruochen feared him. Therefore, he naturally could not be bothered to argue with him.

The future achievements of a person with such a wicked heart would for sure be limited.

On the Altar of Death, the Deathkin elites all had confused looks. They wondered what the Celestial Court cultivators were up to.

Pan Ruo noticed something wrong and said, “No, they plan to leave. Stop them!”

Yuanmo Shenzi and Qi Yang were also elites who had experienced countless battles, and they too noticed something was amiss and immediately attacked.

Yuanmo Shenzi's arms met as a series of demonic dragon-like air streams rushed out of his body. They proceeded to interweave into a vast demonic cloud above his head.

He struck his palm out, and a demonic handprint that was thousands of feet long flew out.

Qi Yang waved his Blood-drinking Demonic Saber and slashed out a three-hundred-mile-long blade light. In its wake was a shrill cry of the blade as if the world were being sliced apart.

“What terrifying power.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately activated the Secret Tome of Space and Time

to open a dimensional tunnel that connected directly to the outside of Xianji Mountain.

Whoosh!

All of the Celestial Court warships took to the air instantly and left the area through the dimensional tunnel, appearing thousands of miles away.

The ones who remained were only Ji Fanxin, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, Pei Yutian, and the Evil Spirit. Unlike others, they would always advance and retreat with Zhang Ruochen at a moment's notice. They did not want to leave at all, and nothing could convince them to do so.

Zhang Ruochen used the Secret Tome of Space and Time

to envelop them as he used the Greater Dimensional Shift.

The moment they disappeared, Yuanmo Shenzi, as well as Qi Yang's attacks, swept past and bombarded the space-time barrier. The impact caused countless layers of ripples to appear as if it was a water curtain.

On the Altar of Death, Yuanmo Shenzi hissed coldly. “Zhang Ruochen, so it was you all along. Have you planned all this? I did not expect you to have such things so well hidden, as expected of old monk Xumi’s heir.”

Zhang Ruochen held the
Secret Tome of Space and Time

in one hand and kept his other hand behind him as he stepped on the scorched earth. He walked toward the Altar of Death step by step while he said, “I’ll give you lot one last chance. Withdraw from the Kunlun Realm, and I will spare your lives.”

As he said this, his eyes were affixed on Pan Ruo.

However, what came in response to that was a burst of laughter, as if laughing at his ignorance and hubris.

“Zhang Ruochen, have you even figured out what situation you’re in? Do you really think that you can deal with our Deathkin army with an incomplete space-time barrier? Even Xuanyuan Liekong isn’t as crazy as you,” Yuanmo Shenzi sneered.

Qi Yang’s finger gently tapped his nose as he laughed. “Looks like someone is overconfident here! What’s that saying again... He’s too full of himself!”

Qi Yang and Yuanmo Shenzi were both top ten Deathkin elites beneath a Supreme Saint. They were existences that could challenge a Supreme Saint, and Zhang Ruochen was no different than an ant in their eyes.

They were not the only ones who felt that Zhang Ruochen had a death wish, even the Celestial Court army that had withdrawn from Xianji Mountain thought the same.

Feng Wuxing frowned deeply as he stared at Zhen Yuan, bitterly saying, “Brother Zhen Yuan, is Zhang Ruochen trapped on Xianji Mountain in order to allow us to retreat?”

Looking into the distance, Zhang Ruochen was facing off against hundreds of thousands of Deathkin troops alone, and the scene was just too tragic.

Although Zhen Yuan had full confidence in Zhang Ruochen, how could a single person fight against so many Deathkin elites? However, as a Scion of Time and Space, it won't be too difficult for Zhang Ruochen to retreat.

“Hahaha, I'll go and deal with this arrogant lunatic!”

A pair of grey wings on Chixing Shenzi's back spread open and expanded into two death clouds as he flew out of the altar.

With a distance of a dozen of miles, Chixing Shenzi punched out, and a deafening airburst thundered as countless grey lightning appeared, presenting a very bizarre scene in the sky.

“The Skyshatter Bane Fist is a fist technique that's comparable to a high-level Saint Art, and its power is limitless. By virtue of this fist technique, Chixing Shenzi has fought a Neverwithers Supreme Saint head-on for twelve exchanges before vomiting blood and losing.”

“It's over. With Zhang Ruochen's cultivation, once the Skyshatter Bane Fist locks on him, he will die for sure.”

...

Even Pan Ruo, who was standing on the Altar of Death, both her eyes were locked onto Zhang Ruochen. Before the Skyshatter Bane Fist, Zhang Ruochen appeared extremely fragile and miniscule, as if he would be turned into ashes in the next moment.

Yet, no one expected the words to come out of Zhang Ruochen's mouth would simply be, “Courting death.”

Whoosh!!

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything else, and with a wave of his hand, he took out the Xianji Compass as he infused it with a powerful surge of Saint Qi. That caused the Xianji Compass to quickly stir back to life.

“The Xianji Compass!”

The expressions of all of the Deathkin elites could not help but change.

Earlier on, the Xianji Compass was taken away by a mysterious powerhouse, and no one could find there the person was, so how did the Xianji Compass now appeared in Zhang Ruochen's hands instead?

There were only two possibilities in this situation: one was, the powerhouse who took the Xianji Compass had met Zhang Ruochen.

Second, it was Zhang Ruochen who had snatched the Xianji Compass for himself. He had disappeared back then, and it was very likely he had gone to pull that off.

No matter what, with the Xianji Compass now in Zhang Ruochen's hands, it was not a good thing.

The Xianji Compass rose by itself and floated before Zhang Ruochen, and as it rotated, it released a very arcane energy.

Suddenly, many ancient formation patterns, hidden deep underground, surfaced. Although they were severely defective, the aura that radiated from them was still very terrifying. It made one's Saint Soul tremble.

During the ancient days of yore, the Xianji Sect had Arch Array Masters and deployed many powerful formation arrays around Xianji Mountain. Even after a long period of time, despite being destroyed by the Deathkin, some of the powerful formation arrays still remained and were hidden deep in the ground. Only by using the Xianji Mountain could they be activated.

Hummmmm...

The stone blade in Pei Yutian's hand flew out of the Secret Tome of Space and Time and trembled violently as it spiraled out of control.

The next moment, the stone blade broke free from Pei Yutian's grip and flew over Zhang Ruochen's head.

The power of the formations, which were drawn by Zhang Ruochen using the Xianji Compass, all converged toward the stone blade. The power was so massive that an ordinary sacred artifact simply could not bear its might.

The stone blade continued to vibrate as lines and patterns appeared on its surface. It perfectly linked with the mountains and the rivers of the Northern Region.

At this moment, the stone blade was revived just like when it was at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom, as it drew upon the power of the entire Northern Region.

A vast power of heaven and earth passed through the space-time barrier and merged into the stone blade.

For a time, lightning and thunder roared across the entire Northern Region as various terrifying visions appeared, and the commotion caused was even larger than the one at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom.

With just a slash, it tore the Skyshatter Bane Fist as if it were cutting through air.

“Impossible... This power...”

Chixing Shenzi’s expression changed drastically as he felt a power even more terrifying than a Supreme Saint surrounding Zhang Ruochen. At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was like the god of Xianji Mountain, and that struck extreme fear in him.

Chixing Shenzi immediately flapped his wings as he tried to escape.

“Too late to escape now!”

Zhang Ruochen pointed his finger, and the stone blade slashed out again.

Schiiiing!!

The blade rent Chixing Shenzi into two.

The power contained inside the blade was so devastating that Chixing Shenzi’s corpse shattered after it was struck, being reduced into two blobs of chilling death fog.

The two blade strikes were too awe-inspiring and too devastating, so much so that they shocked the Deathkin and Celestial Court cultivators to the point of being speechless.

Some of the cultivators had their souls shocked to the point of trembling, and they almost fell to their knees in worship of

Zhang Ruochen. At that moment, Zhang Ruochen was like a Sword Divine that had descended upon the world.

Holding the Xianji Compass in his hand, the world trembled along with every step Zhang Ruochen took.

“Activate the Altar of Death.”

Yuanmo Shenzi dared not underestimate Zhang Ruochen anymore, and he roared menacingly. Immediately after, he continuously poured all of his strength into the Altar of Death.

He was not the only one; all of the Deathkin elites standing on the Altar of Death were doing the same thing.

Everyone could see that Zhang Ruochen was almost invincible now, and only by joining hands and breaking through the space-time barrier would they have a chance to survive today.

The power of the Altar of Death was pushed to its limits as a gloomy light rushed into the sky and trying to break through the space-time barrier.

The Deathkin had originally intended to let the Altar of Death draw enough power and use it to unleash an annihilation maneuver to break the dimensional barrier between the star region they were in and the Kunlun Realm. That would allow the Deathkin army to march in directly and swiftly to conquer the Northern Region.

They never expected that it would ultimately be used to resist Zhang Ruochen, their accursed nemesis.

“Shatter!”

Yuanmo Shenzi roared violently, as he empowered the Altar of Death with all of his might.

As long as they break the space-time barrier, Zhang Ruochen and the other Celestial Court elites were not to be feared.

Even though the space-time barrier was related to Saint Monk Xumi, the Saint Monk had fallen so many years ago. How much divine power could be left?

With the arcane powers of the Altar of Death, it was not impossible to rip the barrier open.

“You won’t escape!”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold and teeming with murderous intent.

Vooosh!

The power of the stone blade was pushed to the extreme as it suddenly slashed down at the Altar of Death with a brutal stroke.

A terrifying blade light blasted out, and the dimension became extremely unstable as tiny cracks begin to appear.

Boom!!

The Altar of Death emanated an even more brilliant glow as it tried to ward off the blade light.

Yet, the blade light could cut through everything, and no matter how strong the Altar of Death’s defensive power was, it was like cut through like paper.

Crack!

The moment the blade light made contact, the Altar of Death cracked.

Booom!

Like a thunderclap, the blade light exploded as a destructive force spread out in all directions, totally engulfing the Altar of Death.

With the Altar of Death as the center, a large plate of Xianji Mountain ruptured, and similar to a major earthquake, it was beyond anyone’s ability to stop.

A series of cyan brilliance emerged from the gloomy underground, protecting the Blue Temple.

A moment later, the Altar of Death completely shattered and was reduced to billowing ashes.

Not only was the Altar of Death reduced to ashes and wiped out without a trace, but even the dozens of top elites on the altar were all gone. Nothing was left of them.

The Deathkin elites on the Altar of Death were all extremely powerful, and at least a dozen of them had reached the Heaven's Reach realm.

Seeing this, Xiang Chunan's eyes could not help but pop out as he said in shock, "Bloody hell, this is just too damn terrifying, no? So many Deathkin elites were annihilated just like that. Not even a splatter's been left behind."

It now appeared that his previous worries were all completely unnecessary.

"Run!"

Seeing this, the Deathkin army fell into disarray as they routed and fled in all directions.

Even the Shenzis and Shennüs were all annihilated, how could they fight against Zhang Ruochen?

Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly and looked at the location where the gloomy light from Altar of Death had struck.

The moment the stone blade smashed into the Altar of Death, he vaguely felt a slight fluctuation in the space-time barrier.

Unsurprisingly, at that exact moment, someone likely crossed the barrier and escaped.

It was just that he could not determine how many had escaped and who had escaped.

It was important to note that these Deathkin were really powerful, and in that situation earlier, there were people who had actually escaped.

"A pity, all of the Deathkin elites were completely destroyed without leaving anything behind. That's so many merit points wasted." Feng Yan sighed.

Xiang Chunan nodded and said, "Yeah, what a waste. All of the treasures in their possession are also completely busted."

"There are still many merit points left." Zhang Ruochen cast his eyes on the fleeing Deathkin.

As he spoke, he once again activated the Xianji Compass to control the incomplete formations hidden within Xianji

Mountain. He had no intentions of letting any of the remaining 200,000 Deathkin troops go.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was about to use the same trick again, Xiang Chunan hurriedly said, “Big Brother, relax a little. Don’t go annihilating all of them. All our efforts will then be in vain!”

Zhang Ruochen responded, “Don’t worry, I know my limits.”

Boom!!

The formation roused to life, and thousands of silver bolts of lightning appeared out of thin air, striking the fleeing Deathkin.

“Arrrghhh!!!”

Screams rang out one after another.

Whoever were struck by the silver lightning, those Deathkin all fell from the air one after another. Many straight-up perished, and some, even when they were not killed outright, were so seriously injured that they lost any ability to fight back.

Some of the Deathkin were very courageous and did not panic as they moved into battle formations and tried to fight Zhang Ruochen.

Sadly for them, there were no top elites among them, and the strongest was only of the Precept Dominion realm. Even with their numbers, they were of no help.

It did not take too long for Xianji Mountain to become quiet. Most of the Deathkin were slain by Zhang Ruochen using the formation. Meanwhile, the rest were dealt with by Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, and Pei Yutian.

“It’s over!”

Zhang Ruochen exhaled lightly, and then sent the Xianji Compass deep into the gloomy earth.

With the war ended, the Xianji Compass was returned to its original owner.

Without stopping even for a moment, Zhang Ruochen and the other six quickly swept through the battlefield and collected their spoils of war.

Everything aside, all of the near 200,000 Deathkin troops were Saints and above. The merit points that could be exchanged were also at least two to three billion points. That was enough for two or three of them to ascend to the Saint King Merit List.

Plus, two to three billion merit points could be exchanged for an even larger amount of precious merit treasures. It was extremely significant.

Chapter 1961 - Greed

Chapter 1961: Greed

It was extremely quiet outside the space-time barrier at that very moment. As the sound of a needle could be heard, many revealed a stunned expression.

Originally, when Zhang Ruochen stayed inside the space-time barrier, many thought that he had a death wish. It was simply impossible for him to win against so many Deathkin elites.

Yet, no one thought that Zhang Ruochen could turn the tide and wiped out nearly 200,000 Deathkin elites with his own strength, and even the Deathkin Shenzis and Shennüs were unable to escape. This was an achievement beyond all comprehension!

“I’ll be damned, Zhang Ruochen, you are really amazing. No wonder Feng Yan would become sworn brothers with him. Feng Wuxing could not help but exclaim.

Zhang Ruochen was his lifesaver, and he was naturally very happy to see such a result. His tensed heart could finally completely relax now.

A bizarre glint appeared in Fairy Yuan’s eyes as her eyes were affixed on Zhang Ruochen, she felt that Zhang Ruochen getting more and more unfathomable to her.

“Zhang Ruochen is really amazing. He has not even cultivated his own Precept Dominion, yet he managed to play a leading role in this battle.”

“He is indeed amazing, but that’s also because he took advantage of the hidden hands left behind by Saint Monk Xumi and used the Xianji Compass’ power.”

“How did the Xianji Compass ended up in Zhang Ruochen’s hands?”

“At that time, the one who snatched the Xianji Compass was definitely not Zhang Ruochen. Could it be that Zhang

Ruochen has other helping hands lying in the dark?”

“I never expected the Xianji Compass to have such a great function, and could actually activate the powerful formations left behind by Xianji Sect back in the day. With the Xianji Compass, Xianji Mountain is literally invincible, and no matter how many Deathkins were to come, they’ll only be running into a dead end.”

“I heard that Zhang Ruochen has become the Prince of the Eastern Region. Is he going to be the Prince of the Northern Region now?”

...

For a moment, many of the Celestial Court powerhouses were discussing the matter, and they found it difficult to calm their minds. They were deeply shocked by Zhang Ruochen’s accomplishments at the very end.

Zhen Yuan smiled. “Junior Brother Zhang really did have full confidence. He alone was enough to defeat armies of hundreds of thousands. Now that the Deathkin on Xianji Mountain have been annihilated and the Deathkin’s pathway to invade the Kunlun Realm has been temporarily blocked, things will be much easier for us.”

Lu Baiming nodded and said, “Junior Brother Zhang has indeed made great contributions, and I believe this news will spread across the realms soon enough. His fame will probably surpass the top-ranked fellows on the Saint King Merit List. For him to be named as Saint Monk Xumi’s heir can only mean that he is no ordinary person.”

From his perspective, there were barely any people whom he looked up to, and Zhang Ruochen was a new addition to that list.

On one of the warships, the three Tu brothers leaned on the guardrail as they looked at Zhang Ruochen’s figure from a distance. Their emotions were very complicated at the moment.

Looking back, the three of them had been extremely arrogant. They had refused to accept Zhen Yuan’s arrangement and

wanted to challenge Zhang, only to suffer complete defeat in the end.

On the surface, they had submitted, but there was still some dissatisfaction in their hearts. They felt that the only reason Zhang Ruochen could defeat them was due to trickery, and he was not really much stronger than them.

However, in the battle of Xianji Mountain, they were almost killed by Qi Yang's terrifying ocular technique, and it was Zhang Ruochen who intervened at the most critical moment that allowed them to survive the ordeal.

At that moment, they were truly convinced, and no longer doubted that Zhang Ruochen was indeed stronger than them. Additionally, there was a hint of gratitude in their hearts.

Now, they were full of admiration for Zhang Ruochen and felt that Zhang Ruochen was deserved the moniker of the Kunlun Realm's God of War.

A glint appeared in Xuanyuan Liekong's eyes, no one knew what he was thinking.

Without a question, he had totally never expected Zhang Ruochen to pull off a stunt like this.

However, as he thought in the beginning, Zhang Ruochen's value was indeed great, far beyond the Ten-eyed Qiankun Insect's ability to compare.

"Damn it, Zhang Ruochen actually wiped out the Deathkins in Xianji Mountain." Bi Yunhai clenched his fists, and his expression was extremely bitter.

He was not at all happy. He thought that Zhang Ruochen was dead meat, yet who would have thought that the end result would turn out the way it did. Those Deathkin were straight-up useless.

However, with things as they were, no matter how angry he was, he could no longer change anything.

Whoosh!

A series of communication talismans were sent out one after another in all directions because many could not wait to pass

on the news about the outcome of the battle on Xianji Mountain.

All of the cultivators present were all from different major worlds, and as long as they sent out word, all of the major worlds would soon know the results of the battle.

In a blazing cavern near the Tomb of the Gods in the Easter Region, Shang Ziyan was sitting inside it as he practiced his cultivation.

Right then, Shang Ziyan was divided into three, and all bodies received the flaming cultivation of the Earthfire. Each of them exuded an extremely powerful aura as densely packed Saint Path Precepts appeared on his body, approaching 15 million in number.

When he first came to the Kunlun Realm, Shang Ziyan had only broken through the realm of the Eight-step Saint King. Currently, he was already at the peak of the Greater Precept World realm and was only a step away from culminating his Precept Dominion.

Many factors contribute to his ability to make such great progress in a short period of time. One of them was Shang Ziyan's excellent talents. He was not beneath Zhang Ruochen in every aspect. He had cultivated the Path of the Three Corpses, which was on the Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank, and it was equivalent to three people cultivating together. Besides, its effect was by no means just a simple stacking effect.

Secondly, Shang Ziyan had a very deep and profound background. With the support of the clans behind him and with Yanshen's personal cultivation, whatever training resources he wanted, he could get.

Thirdly, Shang Ziyan's own luck was strong, and after arriving in the Kunlun Realm, he had encountered a series of great finds.

For example, this cavern with raging flames was one of the great finds Shang Ziyan had come across.

The flames burning in the cavern were extremely unusual, and they were of great help to Shang Ziyan in his cultivation of the

Path of Flames.

As a disciple of Yanshen, how could Shang Ziyan not cultivate the Path of Flames?

In addition, there was an extraordinary fire lotus inside the cavern, and after refining it, Shang Ziyan's cultivation base greatly improved.

Whoosh!

All of a sudden, a figure appeared in the cavern.

Shang Ziyan's three bodies merged into one as he opened his eyes and said, "Si Han, why are you here?"

"Ziyan, something big has happened," Si Han said with a serious expression.

Shang Ziyan stood up. As he got out of the pool of fire and walked to Si Han's side, he asked, "What happened?"

"I've just received news from the Northern Region. Xuanyuan Liekong and Zhen Yuan assembled an army to attack Xianji Mountain. The battle started poorly but Zhang Ruochen unexpectedly turned the situation around. He activated the hidden hand that Saint Monk Xumi had set up, as well as the contraptions that the Xianji Sect had left behind, completely destroying a 200,000-strong Deathkin army by himself. Many of the Deathkin Shenzis and Shennüs, on top of a candidate for the Lady of the Fane of Destiny, failed to escape.

"Also, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree has fallen into Zhang Ruochen's hands."

A cold glint appeared in Si Han's eyes.

Knowing that Zhang Ruochen had made the headlines again, he was naturally very upset.

Hearing this, a strange gleam appeared in Shang Ziyan's eyes. "Zhang Ruochen is my arch enemy, and there will be a battle between me and him someday. The stronger he gets, the better. Otherwise, this battle will appear meaningless."

"Zhang Ruochen is now in full swing. He first became the Prince of the Eastern Region, then he stopped the Immortal

Vampires in the Central Region Sword Tomb, and now, he has annihilated the Deathkin on Xianji Mountain. His strength is climbing by the day, and there are few who can stop him.

Ziyan, aren't you worried?" Si Han said with a frown.

Shang Ziyan's eyes were calm as he lightly said, "If I'm worried, I will certainly be defeated in my battle with Zhang Ruochen. If he is not strong enough, what right does he have to be my opponent then?"

"Let's go to the underworld, kill the Bloodridge Ghost Lord, and seize the Earth Soul Fluid."

As he said that, Shang Ziyan took a step and left the cavern.

Seeing this, Si Han immediately followed after Shang Ziyan. He could not refuse to take part in the slaying of the Bloodridge Ghost Lord after all.

On Xianji Mountain, Zhang Ruochen and the five others cleaned up the battlefield at the fastest speed possible.

"The Deathkin are indeed richer than the Immortal Vampires. Any random Nine-step Saint King has high-level sacred artifacts. Big Brother, this time, your Ancient Abyssal Blade will not have to worry about lack of food." Xiang Chunan guffawed.

After the battle of the Sword Vault, he had also helped clean up the battlefield, and the treasures that the Immortal Vampires possessed truly could not be compared to that of the Deathkin.

Although they were unable to get their hands on the treasures of the Deathkin Shenzis and Shennüs, their haul this time around was still very spectacular. It was far beyond what they had expected and far greater than the haul they had gotten in the Sword Vault.

Zhang Ruochen put the Evil Spirit back into the Qiankun Realm and smiled. "Let's head out first. Senior Brother Zhen Yuan and the others are still waiting for us outside."

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen took out the Secret Tome of Space and Time and used a secret dimensional technique.

The space distorted slightly, and the five disappeared without a trace. When they reappeared again, they were already outside the space-time barrier.

Zhen Yuan greeted him with a smile, “Junior Brother Zhang, you have shocked all of us this time around, leaving everyone with nothing but admiration. I even suspect this to be an elaborate trap that you’ve deliberately set up for the Deathkin.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Senior Brother Zhen Yuan, you flatter me. This is not my contribution alone. Without everyone’s help, I wouldn’t even be able to step on Xianji Mountain, and we can just forget about what happens next.”

“Junior Brother Zhang, you don’t have to be too humble. You were the key to winning this battle. To be able to see such a spectacular battle, this trip was not in vain.” Lu Baiming laughed.

After what he just went through, his attitude toward Zhang Ruochen had undoubtedly changed greatly, and he was even more willing to get close to Zhang Ruochen.

With the abilities Zhang Ruochen had shown, he was indeed worthy of getting the support of the Taoist clans, and if there was a need, he would not mind providing Zhang Ruochen some aid.

“Let’s go. Let’s go back to the Northern Region Basecamp to celebrate Junior Brother Zhang’s achievements!” Zhen Yuan smiled.

Xuanyuan Liekong interjected. “Wait a moment, Junior Brother Zhang, will there be any problem on this side of Xianji Mountain?”

“Senior Brother Xuanyuan, you can rest easy. Now that the Xianji Mountain is covered by the space-time barrier, the Deathkin will not be able to easily enter the Kunlun Realm anymore. While I dare not vouch for it in the long term, maintaining it for a few years should not be a problem. The battle can be shifted to the realms behind Xianji Mountain,” Zhang Ruochen said with confidence.

The space-time barrier had been activated by his own hands, and he knew how powerful the barrier was. It would take a very long time for the Deathkin to break through it.

Xuanyuan Liekong nodded and said, "Since there won't be any problem, let's go back to the Northern Region Basecamp."

Immediately, everyone boarded the warship and returned to the Northern Region Basecamp.

All of the top elites who had participated in the attack had gathered inside Zhen Yuan's manor.

"Come, everyone, cheers for Junior Brother Zhang." Zhen Yuan stood up and raised his glass.

Immediately, everyone present stood up and raised their glasses, even Bi Yunhai joined in. After all, he could not afford to spoil the mood at this moment.

However, while everyone else was smiling, he wore a gloomy face.

Zhang Ruochen straight up ignored Bi Yunhai as he raised his glass to the many elites present with a smile on his face as he finished the wine in his glass in a single shot.

As the banquet progressed, many continued to toast Zhang Ruochen, all wanting to forment a good relationship.

To this, Zhang Ruochen would naturally not refuse such gestures as he returned their toast one by one. He got along very well with the group of elites.

Bi Yunhai suddenly stood up and walked toward Zhang Ruochen's table before he said, "Zhang Ruochen, even though you have contributed greatly to the attack on Xianji Mountain, you still owe us an explanation regarding certain matters."

Zhang Ruochen got up and faintly asked, "What matters are you referring to?"

"There are two in total. First, who took the Xianji Compass away? And why did it appear in your hands earlier on? Secondly, what do you plan to do with the Divine Sky-connecting Tree?" Bi Yunhai stared sharply at Zhang Ruochen.

For a moment, everyone's eyes were all locked on Zhang Ruochen.

Anyone could tell that Bi Yunhai was deliberately looking to cause Zhang Ruochen trouble, but these two things were indeed everyone's concern.

So, many were waiting for Zhang Ruochen to answer.

How could Zhang Ruochen not know what Bi Yunhai was on about, so he plainly said, "Who took the Xianji Compass? That has nothing to do with anyone here. As for why it appeared in my hands earlier, the owner of the Xianji Compass was obviously being righteous and willing to aid me in destroying the Deathkin."

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen continued, "With regard to what I plan to do with the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, your concern is totally unnecessary."

"Hmph, Zhang Ruochen, are you planning to take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree for yourself? Then you have to ask if everyone present if they agree to that." Bi Yunhai snorted.

Undoubtedly, Bi Yunhai had still not given up, and he wanted to use the name of the Celestial Court elites to force Zhang Ruochen to submit.

The Divine Sky-connecting Tree was a rare item with many legends surrounding it. It was by no means comparable to ordinary divine bodies, and its value was most likely no less than that of a divine artifact.

Anyone would be tempted and eager to get their hands on it when in the face of such a rare divine item.

Xuanyuan Liekong rose up and smiled faintly. "Junior Brother Zhang, how about you take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and let us have a look?"

While his tone might have sounded diplomatic, in reality, it was an inviolable command.

"Why? Are you afraid that we'll snatch it away from you?" a short young man said, somewhat displeased.

This person had a short-stature with a plain look, but his eyes were extremely deep, and the aura exuding from his body was even more powerful. The most conspicuous thing was the vertical eye on his forehead that had black lightning faintly flashing inside it.

“Brother, he is Lei Juexing from the Thunder Clan of the Cloudthunder Realm. While he may look human, he isn’t one. He was born with three eyes, and he has powerful talents related to controlling thunder. More importantly, he is a scion of a god and is extremely powerful.”

Feng Yan sent a secret telepathic message.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen was not too surprised. How could someone who was good enough to sit with Zhen Yuan, Xuanyuan Liekong, and the like, as well as fight against the Deathkin Shenzis and Shennüs, be someone ordinary? Even if he was not a Shenzi himself, his background had to be extraordinary.

Looking lightly past Lei Juexing, Zhang Ruochen calmly said, “There are countless God-eater Bugs inside the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. If I take it out, no one will be able to control them, and there may very well be a catastrophe.”

“Zhang Ruochen, you underestimate us too much. This is not the void, what can a mere God-eater Bug do to us?” Lei Juexing snorted coldly.

Xiang Chunan put down his wine jar and said irritably, “The Divine Sky-connecting Tree was retrieved by my Big Brother, so what right do you have in asking him to take it out?”

Bi Yunhai gave Xiang Chunan a cold glance and said, “Without us, how could Zhang Ruochen even take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree? That thing should belong to everyone. How can Zhang Ruochen take it for himself?”

“This is daylight robbery, and I will never agree to it.” Xiang Chunan’s chest was burning with fury.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and held Xiang Chunan’s shoulder as he said, “Chunan, don’t have to be so agitated.”

“Big Bro, they are just too much. I cannot bear it any longer!”
Xiang Chunan was furious and now pissed at everyone.

Bullying his big brother was something he absolutely could not tolerate. Even if his opponent was someone amazing and powerful, he would not take a step back.

Ever since he started cultivating, he had never been afraid of anyone.

Seeing Xiang Chunan’s reaction, Zhang Ruochen could not help but feel very moved as he smiled and comforted the former. “Don’t need to be so angry. If they want to see it, just let them have a proper look then.”

As she spoke, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the hall, opened the Qiankun Realm, and simply just took out the Divine Sky-connecting Tree as he suspended it in the sky above the manor.

The Divine Sky-connecting Tree was dozens of miles wide, not to mention its height. It could really connect with the heavens.

A pity however, all of the leaves on the Divine Sky-connecting Tree had already withered, and there was no trace of vitality in it.

“What is that?”

For a moment, the entire Northern Region Basecamp was startled as countless of cultivators looked up at the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

The Divine Sky-connecting Tree was indeed too large that it covered the entire Northern Region Basecamp.

With the huge amount of Divine Tree Qi being released, they formed into a blue mist, causing the entire Northern Region Basecamp to become hazy.

The majestic divine aura that emanated from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree caused many to feel compelled to kneel down and worship it.

All of the elites in the manor all rushed out as they cast their gaze at the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk, all showing shocked expressions.

There were divine trees in many major realms, but none of them could compare with the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

For a while, a look of greed appeared in the eyes of many, and Bi Yunhai, as well as Lei Juexing, were no exceptions.

“Let’s divide the Divine Sky-connecting Tree between ourselves,” Lei Juexing said with anticipation.

It was as though the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was his, and he never thought of asking for Zhang Ruochen’s opinions.

Bi Yunhai was the first to agree. “Yes, it is only right to do so.”

While the rest did not speak, many were obviously very tempted. If it was at another place, they would have already snatched it themselves.

“Damn you all, I dare any one of you to touch the Divine Sky-connecting Tree!” Xiang Chunan blew his top again as he took out the Metal Demonic Crown.

Feng Yan too opened his four closed eyes as wind blowed around his body, making it clear that he was standing unwaveringly on Zhang Ruochen’s side.

Pei Yutian had also infused his Saint Qi into the stone blade. As long as Zhang Ruochen gave the word, he would strike without hesitation and use everything he had to rouse the stone blade. Although he would die, he could still very well take a few down with him.

A purple petal appeared in Ji Fanxin’s hand as a powerful spiritual force was unleashed. She could not be bothered about any other thing, but no one was allowed to touch the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen was extremely calm and composed as if everything had nothing to do with him.

Zhen Yuan frowned and said, “This is improper. The Divine Sky-connecting Tree was collected by Junior Brother Zhang from the void, and it should belong to him by right.”

Lu Baiming nodded and added, “Moreover, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was left behind by Saint Monk Xumi. As

Saint Monk Xumi's heir, it is only right that Junior Brother Zhang inherits the tree."

It was clear that the two were standing on Zhang Ruochen's side and had no intentions of taking the Divine Sky-connecting Tree for themselves.

Xuanyuan Liekong stood out and said, "Allow me to say a few fair words. As Brother Bi said, everyone has contributed much effort in the battle of Xianji Mountain. It was also with everyone's efforts that Junior Brother Zhang managed to retrieve the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. Therefore, it stands to reason that everyone should get a share of the boon. What say you, Junior Brother Zhang?"

While he said this, Xuanyuan Liekong looked at Zhang Ruochen with a faint smile on his face as if he want to discuss something with Zhang Ruochen.

"Brother Xuanyuan is right. It was through everyone's efforts that the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was taken. No one should take sole credit for it." Bi Yunhai followed up.

He was in a very good mood now. With Xuanyuan Liekong and Lei Juexing piling on the pressure, he was not afraid of Zhang Ruochen not coming to a compromise.

Even if he could not get the entirety of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, getting a part of it was good enough.

Plus, being able to take advantage of the opportunity to cause Zhang Ruochen trouble was something even more of a pleasure for him.

Chapter 1962 - Discordant Parting

Chapter 1962: Discordant Parting

All of the people present turned their eyes toward Zhang Ruochen, wanting to see how Zhang Ruochen would react.

Many had cold gazes, and for the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, they did not care about offending Zhang Ruochen.

Feng Wuxing shook his head silently. He wanted to speak for Zhang Ruochen, but when Xuanyuan Liekong spoke, it would be meaningless even if he spoke.

Fairy Yuan too frowned slightly as she did not expect things to develop to this juncture.

After some thought, Feng Wuxing still opened his mouth and said. "Collecting treasures had always been based on one's own ability since time memorial, and since the Divine Sky-connecting Tree is collected by Brother Zhang, it should belong to him by right, and there is no reason for him to share with everyone."

Hearing this, Bi Yunhai gave Feng Wuxing an immediate glare, saying. "Based on one's ability? Without everyone's help, does Zhang Ruochen have the ability to take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree? If you don't want it, no one will force you, but don't hinder us either."

Feng Wuxing did not say anything else, and just stood aside silently, making his stand clear.

Immediately afterwards, Fairy Yuan, Ling Kongzi and several others also walked to the side, and did not want anything to do with this matter.

At this very moment, Zhang Ruochen opened his mouth. "The Divine Sky-connecting Tree is here, why are you asking me?"

In everyone's ears, Zhang Ruochen sounded very helpless at this moment, he could not defy the will of the people, and could only hand over the Divine Sky-connecting Tree as a compromise.

“At least you know your place. Don't worry, you'll have your share.” A gleeful look appeared on Bi Yunhai's face.

Xuanyuan Liekong also smiled, clearly satisfied with Zhang Ruochen's attitude. He liked people who knew one's place like him.

In fact, he had wanted to woo Zhang Ruochen, if it weren't for the fact that the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was just too precious, he would have chose to help Zhang Ruochen at this very moment.

“Big Brother, are you really going to hand over the Divine Sky-connecting Tree to them?” Xiang Chunan's eyes were opened wide, filled with anger and bitterness.

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything and only stretched his hand out to gently pat Xiang Chunan on the shoulder, while casting a 'relax' glance at the latter.

A confused look appeared in Xiang Chunan's eyes, he could not understand why Zhang Ruochen could still be so calm at this moment.

However, he still kept his temper in check, and did not make any rash movements.

Bi Yunhai walked up next to the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and clearly felt a terrifying aura as his soul felt like it was being crushed.

He could feel that the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was repulsed by him, and did not allow him to approach.

“You're already cut off dead wood, and you still dare to defy me, wanting to scare me away with your aura. Naive, too naive, just see how I crush you.” Bi Yunhai's eyes were full of greed.

As he spoke, Bi Yunhai took out his King's Weapon-level Bluesky Gourd out, and roused it with all of his might.

Bi Yunhai was extremely confident with his own strength, especially with the King's Weapon-level weapon in hand. Cutting off the Divine Sky-connecting Tree that had withered for a hundred thousand years should be a breeze.

200 thousand King-grade inscriptions appeared on the surface of the Skyblue Gourd, unleashing a brilliant light as it blasted at the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk.

The saint light had a brutal offensive power, enough to destroy an extraterrestrial star. It easily punctured through the blue mist formed by the Divine Tree Qi, and slammed against the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

BOOM!!

The Divine Tree Qi surrounding the Divine Sky-connecting Tree shuddered violently as they gradually dissipated, causing the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk's form to be further exposed.

However, the saint light did not manage to damage the Divine Sky-connecting Tree at all, with nary a trace. Even the dead, withered leaves on the tree were not knocked down.

Seeing this, Bi Yunhai frowned deeply. This was something totally unexpected.

He had used the full might of the King's Weapon artifact to attack, and yet the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was totally undamaged, and this undoubtedly cause him to lose face.

“I don't buy it.”

Bi Yunhai got even more menacing as he once again roused the Skyblue Gourd.

At this moment, Xuanyuan Liekong's expression changed drastically, and shouted loudly. “Watch out! Fall back!”

In a flash, Bi Yunhai felt a sense of terror as he turned to flee.

It was too late. A massive surge of divine power rushed out from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, and hit Bi Yunhai square on his body.

DUSSHH!

Bi Yunhai was simply unable to resist the divine might, and his body immediately burst into pieces.

“NOO!!!”

Bi Yunhai’s saint soul still struggled desperately as he tried to escape, but in the end, he could not escape the fate of being crushed.

Even the Skyblue Gourd shattered in an instant, turning into pieces of scrap metal as all of the King-level inscriptions were obliterated.

Seeing this, everyone present showed a horrified look as they backed away one after another, seeing the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was a scourge of the gods.

Bi Yunhai was a top elite of the Path’s Anterior-realm, and he could defeat a Neverwithier Supreme Saint. His strength was unrivalled and yet he was obliterated in just an instant, it was just too terrifying.

Forget anyone else, even Xuanyuan Liekong was equally terrified, and was now extremely wary of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

Fortunately, the divine power that destroyed Bi Yunhai quickly retracted away after wiping the latter out, and did not spread further. Otherwise, none present would have survived.

“What’s going on?” Lei Juexing turned his eyes to Zhang Ruochen as he questioned the latter in a chilly tone.

In his view, this had everything to do with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen glanced indifferently at Lei Juexing, saying. “The Divine Sky-connecting Tree is the spiritual root of Kunlun Realm back in the day, all of the beings in Kunlun Realm, including the gods, are birthed from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. Even when it had been cut down, and had withered for over a hundred thousand years, it is still not something you can violate at will. Especially if a non-Kunlun Realm denizen dares to violate the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, it is as good as signing his own death warrant.”

“Since you knew about it, why didn’t you tell us in advance?”
Lei Juexing’s eyes became chillier.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled coldly and said. “I’ve only followed what you asked since the beginning. Now that something had gone wrong, what does that have to do with me? Do you think I should help you cut up the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, and then hand it over to you lot one by one?”

“Hmph, what does my brother has to do with you lot being a bunch of brainless fools? Only an idiot would attack a divine body. Bi Yunhai was too full of himself, and his death was all the more warranted.” Feng Yan sneered, and did not have the slightest sympathy for Bi Yunhai.

He had long been pissed off at Bi Yunhai, and now that the latter courted his own death, and was obliterated by the Divine Sky-connecting Tree’s divine power, it felt really nice.

Hearing this, Lei Juexing’s expression became extremely uncomfortable, yet he did not know how to refute what was said.

After seeing the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, they were indeed overwhelmed by their greed, and had forgotten many important things, even attacking the Divine Sky-connecting Tree without compunction.

At this moment, Lei Juexing actually felt lucky, he was glad that he did not acted earlier, or else the one killed would have been him instead.

On other hand, Xuanyuan Liekong’s expression also became much more grim. Even he was careless just now, and had the same thought as Bi Yunhai, thinking that the Divine Sky-connecting Tree would not be that dangerous.

Now it seemed like the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was still extremely dangerous, and its divine power had not faded just because of the passing of aeons.

Zhang Ruochen walked slowly towards the Divine Sky-connecting Tree as he looked at everyone present, saying. “Is there anyone else who wants to take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree?”

Those who were originally eager were now all silent at this very moment. It was not that they did not want to take it, they dared not even want it now.

With a precedent in Bi Yunhai, who would dare to have any funny ideas about the Divine Sky-connecting Tree?

Even Xuanyuan Liekong was silent at this moment. While he was much more powerful than Bi Yunhai, but if he were to act against the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, his end will probably be no better than Bi Yunhai's.

It was a complete miscalculation this time around, not only did he not get his hands on the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, he had also fell foul of Zhang Ruochen.

“Since no one wants to take the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, I'll be keeping it then.” Zhang Ruochen said.

He opened the Qiankun Realm, and a powerful suction force appeared as it instantly sucked the Divine Sky-connecting Tree into it.

Even if it was him, without the Divine Sky-connecting Tree seedling, he would not have any chance of keeping the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen turned around and said, “Senior Brother Zhen Yuan, Senior Brother Lu, Brother Feng, Fairy Yuan, Fellow Ling, I still have some matters to deal with, so I need to take my leave first. We shall meet again.”

“Brother Zhang, take care.” Feng Wuxing said with a salute.

Fairy Yuan too saluted. “Master Ruochen, we shall meet again.”

“Fellow Zhang, please take care. I look forward to a good exchange of our path of swords when we have the time.” Ling Kongzi saluted and smiled.

Zhen Yuan sighed slightly, saying. “Junior Brother Zhang, you can contact me at any time if there's anything.”

For such an unpleasant thing to have happened, it was obviously impossible for him to get Zhang Ruochen to stay in

the Northern Region. He felt a little guilty that things had turned out like this.

Lu Baiming came over and patted Zhang Ruochen on the shoulder with a smile. “Now that the matter in the Northern Region is settled, I have no reason to stay here. I’ll go with you, Junior Brother Zhang.”

Nodding at Zhen Yuan and the others, Zhang Ruochen said. “Let’s go.”

Immediately, Zhang Ruochen, Ji Fanxin, Feng Yan, Xiang Chunan, Pei Yutian and Lu Baiming all flew into the sky, using their skills as they transformed into six streams of light and flew out of the Northern Region Basecamp in a blink of an eye.

Although some were still bitter, they dared not stop them at this moment as everyone was particularly wary. Especially when Lu Baiming was going along with Zhang Ruochen, no one even dared to make any rash actions.

“This will be the end of the celebration banquet. I’m a little tired, please leave.” Zhen Yuan opened his mouth and gave out an eviction order.

With this getting to this point, no one was in the mood to continue staying here, and so they left one after another.

When the news of what happened here spread, Zhang Ruochen’s star will shine even brighter while many Celestial Court elites will end up as a laughing stock.

In addition, Bi Yunhai’s death may also cause plenty of shocks, especially in the Skysea Realm, and some sort of action may be taken there.

After leaving the Northern Region Basecamp, Zhang Ruochen and the rest headed to the nearest merit sub-terminal, and went straight to the Main Terminal of Merits at Sirius.

With him annihilating so many Deathkins at Xianji Mountain, it was natural for him to come and exchange merit points.

“Junior Brother Zhang, I’ll head back to the Five-Elements Temple first, if you have time, you can look for me there.”

When they arrived at the Main Terminal of Merits, Lu Baiming bade farewells to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen replied. "Senior Brother Lu, take care."

Lu Baiming nodded, and rode on the Primordial Demonic Serpent as he flew towards the Teleportation Hall.

Through the teleportation arrays in the Main Terminal of Merits, going to the great celestial realms across the Celestial Court is very convenient indeed.

"Let's go and redeem our merit points."

Seeing Lu Baiming leaving into the distance, Zhang Ruochen turned around and said.

He was very much looking forward to exchanging his merit point this time around, wondering what sort of surprise that awaited him once he enters the top 10,000 of the Saint King Merit List.

...

Chapter 1963 - Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light

Chapter 1963: Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light

The Merit Exchange Hall was as packed as always, and someone came over to exchange merit points.

The moment Zhang Ruochen and his party walked into the hall, they immediately attracted the attention of many.

“It’s Zhang Ruochen. It hasn’t been long since his last visit, and he has come to the Merit Exchange Hall again.”

“Don’t you know? Zhang Ruochen went to the Northern Region, and in the battle of Xianji Mountain, he destroyed the Deathkin’s 200,000-strong army alone. Many of the Shenzis and Shennüs perished as well.”

“How is that possible? The Deathkin are one of the top three clans of the Infernal Court, and their strength is unparalleled. The ones on Xianji Mountain were their elites, how did Zhang Ruochen wipe all of them out alone?”

“It’s true. One of my clan brethren is in the Northern Region Basecamp and was selected to assault Xianji Mountain. He saw Zhang Ruochen unleashing his power and destroyed Altar of Death and the 200,000 strong Deathkin army with his own eyes. Not only that, Zhang Ruochen even retrieved the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and caused friction with a group of elites in the basecamp before parting ways. I’ve heard the Master Yunhai even died because of the tree.”

“Master Yunhai is dead? He is a person who can defeat a Neverwithers Supreme Saint though.”

...

For a moment, the looks in the eyes of many looking at Zhang Ruochen changed.

Many did not witness the battle of the Central Region Sword Vault, so many did not believe that it was Zhang Ruochen's credit.

But for the battle of Xianji Mountain, hundreds of thousands of cultivators witnessed the battle, so it was impossible to fake it. To be able to have such a shocking combat achievement, anyone would be wary of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen naturally heard the surrounding discussion, but he paid no heed to it as he walked straight to the Saint King Merit List and started to exchange merit points.

As the Deathkin blood continued to flow out from the dimensional jade bottle, Zhang Ruochen merit points began to increase rapidly, and correspondingly, his ranking also rose.

Before then, his merit points were 3.5 billion points, and ranked beyond 10,000, close to the ranking and merit points collected by the number one Saint King of Guanghai Realm.

After pouring out all of the collected Deathkin blood and saint soul from the bottle, Zhang Ruochen's merit points climbed all the way to 6.6 billion points, far surpassing the number one Saint King of Guanghai Realm.

And his ranking on the Saint King Merit List had also greatly improved, climbing all the way to 3,342. Such a ranking was already extremely high, especially the time he had been on the Saint King Merit List was still very short.

Many major realms had used all of their strength accumulated over hundreds or even thousands of years may not even be able to get a person to where Zhang Ruochen was currently ranked now.

“6.6 billion merit points.”

At this moment, the entire Merit Exchange Hall appeared extremely quiet as everyone was stunned as they looked at Zhang Ruochen's merit points and placement on the Saint King Merit List.

In less than a month's time, Zhang Ruochen had actually gained another 3.1 billion merit points that it beggared belief; since when did merit points become so easy to collect?

“I really envy Zhang Ruochen, he had entered the top 10,000 of the Saint Kings Merit List so quickly. Getting his body and soul baptized by a large amount of Merit Qi aside, more importantly, he would get a Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, and that cannot be bought no matter how much saint stones you have.” A purple-haired saint king said with envy.

“What’s a Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light?” Someone asked curiously.

The purple-haired saint king explained. “The Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light is a top-tier armor refined by the Fane of Merits. Its defensive power is amazing, and even a Neverwithier Supreme Saint could not destroy it. More importantly, the armor could unleash thousand times the speed of sound, so be it offense or defense, it is of great help.”

“Given how powerful the armor is, why don’t the Fane of Merits create more of them?”

A puzzled look appeared on the man’s face.

The purple-haired saint king shook his head and said. “Every single Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light consumes a large amount of treasures of heaven and earth, and is invaluable, so naturally not too many will be created.”

“Based on the rules of the Fane of Merits, if one wants to get the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light permanently, they need to stay within the top 10,000 for at least five hundred years. Should they be kicked out of the top 10,000, the Fane of Merits will take back the armor.

He once had entered the top 10,000 of the Saint King Merit List and owned the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light for a period of time. Unfortunately for him, he was squeezed out of the top 10,000, and had never managed to get back in since.

Many years ago, it only took 3 billion merit points to enter the top 10,000 of the Saint King Merit List. Over the years, the requirements had continuously increased, and now at least 4 billion merit points were needed, which was an extremely prohibitive requirement.

Before the Saint King Merit List, a large amount of Merit Qi appeared and engulfed Zhang Ruochen.

Anyone who entered the top 10,000 of the Saint King Merit List would be able to enjoy this benefit.

Zhang Ruochen's body and soul was already very powerful and getting the baptism of the Merit Qi was still beneficial for him, allowing his body and soul to become even more tenacious and immaculate.

After receiving the baptism of merit, a strange armor gleaming in silver light appeared out of thin air and automatically put itself onto Zhang Ruochen's body.

The armor fitted him perfectly, as if it was tailor-made for Zhang Ruochen.

After putting on the armor, Zhang Ruochen's looked even more heroic and extraordinary, like a God of War riding across the battlefield.

"Congratulations, brother, for entering the top 10,000 of the Saint King Merit List and obtaining the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light." Feng Yan said with a smile.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "Just as I was thinking about not having a proper armor, the trip to the Northern Region this time is very worthwhile."

"The Fane of Merit had prepared four types of Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light for the powerhouses ranked towards the front. The speed the armor can unleash is a thousand times, two-thousand times, five-thousand times, and ten-thousand times the speed of sound, and correspondingly its for the top 10,000, top 1,000, top 100, and top 10."

"The Fane of Merits places great importance to those who can get into the top 10,000 of the Saint King Merit List. After all, they are all capable of playing a great role in the Battlefield of Merits, so that's why they specially created the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light to enhance the survivability of these elites."

Feng Yan explained with a smile. He understood these things better than anything.

If it weren't for such great benefits, how could so many want to get themselves into the top 10,000 of the Saint King Merit List?

Perhaps there were other similar armors, but those will be extremely precious, and a top-level Saint King made not be able to afford them even with all of his wealth.

Zhang Ruochen cast his sight on the Saint King Merit List and locked onto to rank 9325. The person was Ji Kongyuan, the only person in Guanghan Realm who was on the Saint King's Merit List.

Ji Kongyuan was the first son of Emperor Ji Mie, and he was an extraordinary talent. He had many managed to get into the top 10,000 of the Saint King Merit List many years ago and had managed to maintain his ranking after so many years without being pushed out of the top 10,000.

When Zhang Ruochen first entered the Celestial Court, Ji Kongyuan's merit points were 3.8 billion, and it had grown to 4.3 billion now. This was also one of the reasons he was not pushed out of the top 10,000.

After some calculation, Ji Kongyuan had been in the top 10,000 of the Saint King Merit List for more than 500 years now, which meant that he could own the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light for perpetuity. Even if he were to become a Neverwithier Supreme Saint, the Fane of Merit will not take the armor back.

In recent years, Guanghan Realm had become extremely weak, it wouldn't have been easy for them to get Ji Kongyuan into the top 10,000 and maintain his ranking for so many years.

"Emperor Jimie sure is amazing, for him alone to have so many heirs, and many of them are extremely talented." Zhang Ruochen said in secret admiration.

He felt that if Guanghan Realm had a few more Emperor Ji Mie, her overall strength would have increased by a lot.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen was done exchanging his merit points, Feng Yan also took out the Infernal Court cultivators' blood

and souls he had collected and started exchanging them.

“Eight hundred million merit points. Another 200 million more and I’ll be able to get into the Saint King Merit List.” Looking at his merit points, Feng Yan could not help but smile.

Originally, Zhang Ruochen intended to give Feng Yan some of the Deathkin cultivators blood and saint soul, but Feng Yan refused it. He had the help of the Feng clan, so getting onto the Saint King Merit List, and getting into the top 10,000 was just a matter of time.

Pei Yutian also took out a dimensional jade bottle as he poured out a good number of Deathkin blood and saint souls, his merit points easily crossed the 100-million-point mark.

Without further delay, Zhang Ruochen and the other four walked towards the Merit Treasure Exchange Counter.

With a large amount of merit points, he naturally had to use them to redeem merit treasures to make himself stronger.

There were many merit treasures that the Fane of Merit had made available for redemption. Each of them was extremely precious and would require one to have sufficient merit points.

The last time around, Zhang Ruochen spent more than three billion merit points and redeemed many merit treasures, but most of them were redeemed for others. After all, the battle of the Sword Vault was not his work alone.

He had only exchanged a single treasure for himself, the Meritorious Sword Cleansing Marrow to cleanse and refine his sword soul.

After using a dozen of bottles of Meritorious Sword Cleansing Marrow, Zhang Ruochen’s soul sword had become very powerful, and it was no longer comparable to the sword soul of ordinary sword cultivators.

“If I use another 20 bottles of that Sword Cleansing Marrow, my sword soul should be able to undergo the essence evolution. The sword soul I’ve cultivated is already very strong to begin with, and it actually needed seventy Sword

Cleansing Marrow to evolve, it sure isn't easy." Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Every bottle of Meritorious Sword Cleansing Marrow required 10 million merit points to exchange, and seventy bottles meant 700 million merit points. It was not something any ordinary persons could afford.

After pondering for a moment, Zhang Ruochen exchanged another twenty bottles of the Meritorious Sword Cleansing Marrow as a graceful figure suddenly emerged in his mind.

"It's time to meet her at Wuding Mountain. I should face what I need to face after all."

Zhang Ruochen had long thought of going to Wuding Mountain to meet Ling Feiyu, but he was caught up in many things and had to delay it time and time again. When he remembered the vehemence Ling Feiyu showed when she left, Zhang Ruochen let out a long sigh.

The twenty bottles of Meritorious Sword Cleansing Marrow shall be a meeting gift for her.

"Chunan, what merit treasures do you need?" Zhang Ruochen turned around and ask.

Xiang Chunan shook his head and said. "No need. I've not used up the Meritorious Turbid Sacred Fire. Refining the eye is a little more troublesome as it takes too much time. I've not been able to use my Telescopic Sight lately at all."

Zhang Ruochen nodded, and then turned to Ji Fanxin, asking. "Fairy, do you need anything?"

"You don't need to worry about me." Ji Fanxin said.

In this regard, Zhang Ruochen would not insist, so he turned around and carefully looked at the introductions of various merit treasures, looking for those that will be of great help to him.

Chapter 1964 - The Heart of the Divine Tree

Chapter 1964: The Heart of the Divine Tree

“The Meritorious Pure Water will be able to cleanse one’s body and Saint Soul to the point of immaculateness... Suitable for culminating an Immortal Body, 100 million merit points per unit.”

“The Zhifu Liquid of Merit enhances spiritual power and improves the quality of one’s spiritual power. It can aid in one becoming a spiritual power Supreme Saint... Three hundred million points per unit.”

“The Meritorious Primordial Water. Top-tier water-element sacred relic, can aid with the cultivation of a top-tier water-element Immortal Body and high-level water-element saint arts. 500 million merit points per unit.”

“The Meritorious Bloodsoul Wood. Top-tier wood-element sacred relic, can aid in the cultivation of top-tier wood-element Immortal Body and high-level wood-element saint arts. 500 million points per unit.”

...

“The Meritorious Soul Liberation Soil. Top-tier earth-element sacred relic, can aid in the cultivation of top-tier earth-element Immortal Body, and also earth-element divine techniques. 5 billion merit points per unit.”

“The Meritorious Nine-nether Fire, fire-element sacred relic, can aid in the cultivation of top-tier fire-element Immortal Body, and also fire-element divine techniques. 5 billion merit points per unit.”

“A Meritorious Chaotic Essence Stone. An ultimate divine object, and has infinite uses. 50 billion merit points per unit.”

...

Zhang Ruochen's gaze swept over the introductions of the merit treasures and was secretly surprised. He found that the merit points he had right now could not be exchanged for much.

The merit treasures he looked were all merit artifacts of a wide variety, and the amount of merit treasures required to exchange also varied greatly.

All of the better merit artifacts would need hundreds of thousands of merit points to exchange, and the top-tier ones would require tens of billions of merits points, almost to the point of unachievable.

The reason why he looked at all those merit artifacts was because Zhang Ruochen wanted to prepare to cast his Immortal Body.

Although it was easy to cast an Immortal Body as long as one's cultivation reached to the level of Path's Anterior, and step into the realm of a Neverwithier Supreme Saint, but there is a strong and weak divide among the Immortal Bodies. The stronger one's Immortal Body was, their strength will be even greater once they step into Supreme Sainthood, and their future achievements will be even greater.

If he was to cast the most normal of Immortal Body, his strength will be very weak, and there will be no hope for him to go on further and would only stop at the first level of the Supreme Sainthood.

These sort of Neverwithier Supreme Saints may not even be able to beat a top-tier Path's Anterior powerhouses.

Zhang Ruochen was naturally not satisfied with just asting an ordinary Immortal Body. His goal was to become god, so he must cast the most powerful of Immortal Bodies to lay a solid foundation for his future godhood.

And to cast the most powerful Immortal Body, it would undoubtedly require top-tier treasures of heaven and earth.

Zhang Ruochen now had the Innate Five-Element Chaotic Body and was one of the strongest body-types in the realm, so

he wanted to cast the strongest Innate Five-Element Chaotic Immortal Body.

But it will be difficult and needed Great Rarities of the Five Elements that were more precious than the Essence of Five Elements.

The second-class Innate Five-Element Chaotic Immortal Body would be casted, even if barely, using top-tier sacred artifacts like the Meritorious Primordial Water, the Meritorious Bloodsoul Wood and the likes.

The five top-tier sacred relics would need 2.5 billion merit points, and Zhang Ruochen now had enough merit points to redeem them.

But Zhang Ruochen was not satisfied with just that. He wanted to cast the perfect Innate Five-Element Chaotic Immortal Body, so he was looking at Five-Element Divine Relics like the Meritorious Soul Liberation Soil, the Meritorious Nine-nether Fire and the likes.

Each of the Five-Element Divine Relic would requires 5 billion merit points, and five of them would see a total of 25 billion merit points, and it was an astronomical figure.

At this stage, he only had 2.7 billion merit points, and could not even afford a single one of the Five-Element Divine Relic.

The number one on the Saint King Merit List had only just passed the 30 billion points, and one could only wonder how long it look for that person to accumulate that much merit points.

Unless he did not spend his merit points at all, otherwise there was no way for the person to exchange all Five-Element Divine Relic at once.

In fact, most people would accumulate merit points while redeeming various items at the same time to strengthen themselves. Few would simply just accumulate merit points without spending them.

“Big brother, I’ve already exchanged everything I needed. You’re not done figuring out what merit treasures you want to exchange?” Feng Yan asked with a smile.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said. “The ones I want to exchange needs a lot of merit points, and I’m not able to exchange them for the time being. Oh right, second brother, what did you exchanged?”

“It seems like Big brother you’ve fancied some good stuff. I’ve redeemed Thunderwind-element treasures to help with my cultivated of Empress Wa’s Stratagems. But all of them are just too expensive, with my hundreds of million of merit points, I could only barely exchange a few Thunderwind merit treasures.” Feng Yan said helplessly.

Zhang Ruochen stretched his hand out and patted Feng Yan on the shoulder, smiling. “Don’t worry, take your time, there’s still much merit points to get gained on the battlefield. I also need to slowly accumulate my merit points to exchange a few very precious merit treasures.”

Now he was determined to cast the strongest Immortal Body, it was just too difficult to obtain Five-Element Divine Relics through other channels. On the other hand, using merit points to exchange the merit treasures would be comparatively easier, and at the very least he could gather all of them.

“Big brother, I’m going to return to the Northern Region battlefield of merit to get more experience and earn more merit points along the way. What are your plans?” Feng Yan asked.

Zhang Ruochen pondered for a moment, saying. “I’ll head to the Central Region first, there’s something that I need to deal with.”

“Then I’ll head to the Northern Region for a while, and train together with Second Brother on the battlefield of merit. I think only by fighting in the battlefield of merit I can culminate my Precept Dominion.” Xiang Chunan said.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Yeah, that’s fine. The both of you can take care of each other. If there’s anything, just drop me a message.”

He was not worried Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan would face any trouble staying behind in the Northern Region. Feng Yan

had the Feng Clan behind him alongside the Fane of Truth, even Xuanyuan Liekong would need to be wary.

As they had nothing else to do in the Main Terminal of Merit, Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan left immediately, and Pei Yutian also followed them.

Pei Yutian's roots were in the Northern Region, unless there was a need, he would not leave the place.

“Zhang Ruochen, please give me a Heart of the Divine Tree, I will return it to you once I'm done with my enlightenment.” Ji Fanxin said.

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything, and immediately used his spiritual power to get into the Qiankun Realm as he communicated with the seedling of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

Trying to get something from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was something even he could not accomplish, and he can only rely on the seedling of the tree to do so.

The Heart of the Divine Tree was condensed from the essence of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and contained the thoughts and learnings of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree on the Path of Life, which was extremely precious.

It was extremely difficult to condense a Heart of the Divine Tree, and it would take an entire Yuanhui for one to be formed.

The Divine Sky-connecting Tree had existed since the founding of the Kunlun Realm. It had survived for countless of ages until a hundred thousand years ago. Even the greatest king of Kunlun Realm, Lord Wentian of Ten Tribulations, was nothing but a junior before it.

After such a long time, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree had condensed many Heart of the Divine Tree, and there were at least dozens of them.

However, when the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was cut down by one of malefactors during the Middle Ages, at least half of the Heart of the Divine Tree inside the trunk were taken by someone.

Now there were only seven Heart of the Divine Tree left inside the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

Although the Divine Sky-connecting Tree had been cut down for 100,000 years, and yet the Hearts of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree were still full of vitality and contained a surging essence of the divine tree. If one were to be refined, no matter how grievous the wounds one suffered, one could recover from it. It was almost akin to a Divine Medicine of Immortality.

With seven Hearts of the Divine Tree was equivalent to having seven more lives.

After some time had passed, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree seedling finally took out one of the Heart of the Divine Tree and stored it inside a box made out of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

With a turn of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out the box containing the Heart of the Divine Tree and handed it over to Ji Fanxin. "I shall gift this Heart of Divine Tree to you, Fairy. I hope it will be of use to you."

He was naturally very happy to befriend top-tier elites like Ji Fanxin and gifting her a Heart of the Divine Tree was totally worth it.

Ji Fanxin looked deeply at Zhang Ruochen and reached out to take the box, saying. "Thank you so much. I should take my leave now, and I hope there will be opportunities for us to work together again in the future."

"It's me who should be thanking Fairy for your help in during this period. If you need anything in the future, as long it is something within my ability, I shall never refuse." Zhang Ruochen said with a smile.

He and Ji Fanxin were in a cooperative relationship, and since that cooperation had ended, it was a given that Ji Fanxin would leave, so he was not surprised.

Ji Fanxin nodded. "Alright, we shall meet again."

"Fairy, take care." Zhang Ruochen saluted.

Ji Fanxin did not make any further delays and immediately left through the Main Terminal of Merit's the dimensional teleportation array.

Zhang Ruochen did not know where Ji Fanxin was heading to, and what he was sure that she was still in Kunlun Realm and had not left the place.

As he thought about it, Ji Fanxin probably is going to meet with the cultivators of Qianrui Realm. As the leader of the Qianrui Realm, she could not keep on leaving the many cultivators of the realm behind and act alone.

“Have you heard? Cang Long is preparing to attack the Moon Worship Demonic Sect!”

“Why would Cang Long act against the Moon Worship Demonic Sect?”

“The Moon Worship Demonic Sect has a very deep connection with Yueshen, and there is a deep conflict between Youshen and Yueshen, it's normal for Cang Long to act against the Moon Worship Demonic Sect. I've heard that Cang Long wants to snatch a treasure that Yueshen had left in the Moon Worship Demonic Sect in the past.”

“I see. The Moon Worship Demonic Sect has long since been in decline and are without any elites. With Cang Long striking, the Moon Worship Demonic Sect will not be able to stop him. By the looks of things, the treasure will definitely fall into Cang Long's hands.”

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to leave through the teleportation array, he suddenly heard some comments, and his expression changed slightly.

Cang Long was a disciple of Youshen and was called the number one elite beneath a Supreme Saint in the Fane of Youshen.

Zhang Ruochen had already met four of the Six Fatales of the Fane of Youshen. All of them were extremely powerful, and Cang Long was who knows how many times stronger than them. If he was to attack the Moon Worship Demonic Sect,

with their strength at the moment, they would not stand a chance.

He had already planned to go to Mount Wuding and had even prepared gifts already.

Now it seems like this trip was even more paramount.

“Hopefully it won’t be too late!”

Zhang Ruochen secretly prayed.

The Moon Worship Demonic Sect had very deep ties with Mu Lingxi, Ling Feiyu and even Yueshen, he could not allow anything to happen to it.

He immediately set off and used the dimensional teleportation array to rush to the merit sub-terminal closest to Mount Wuding.

And seeing Zhang Ruochen left, the two person who were discussing earlier let out a strange smile as they sent a communication talisman out.

Chapter 1965 - Feiyu

Chapter 1965: Feiyu

After leaving the Merit Sub-Terminal, Zhang Ruochen went straight to Mount Wuding. He was worried that it might have been too late and Cang Long had already attacked Mount Wuding.

Although the Moon Worship Demonic Sect was the first of the seven ancient Kunlun Realm sects, it was long past its heyday. Even when the Kunlun Realm was recovering, it did not see the birth of too many elites, with barely any Saint King powerhouses. It was literally impossible for them to fight against Cang Long.

Of course, the Moon Worship Demonic Sect had a long history, and it was possible for it to have some deep hidden reserves that could not be underestimated.

“Mount Wuding.”

Standing on the vast Copper Furnace Plains, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to stop as he looked at the huge and majestic mountains in the distance.

He thought that he was already well-prepared to calmly face Ling Feiyu, but when he arrived at the front of Mount Wuding, he felt a trace of nervousness, and dared not approach the mountain.

When Ling Feiyu heard his conversation with Mu Lingxi, she resolutely left the Celestial Domain of Truth, and no one knew where she went. Perhaps Ling Feiyu was heartbroken, and felt that he had wronged her that time, so Zhang Ruochen had wanted to look for an opportunity to explain everything to her.

“I should face what I need to face. Avoiding it will only cause more troubles and sorrows, I hope I will be able to talk to her this time.”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath, as he once again walked ahead.

With the revival of Kunlun Realm, Mount Wuding had undergone great changes, and had become much more majestic than before. It had become an awakened holy land, nay, divine land, as it radiated potent saint Qi, and was very suitable for cultivation.

“Who goes there? Who dares to intrude upon the grounds of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect.”

The moment Zhang Ruochen stepped into the foot of the mountain, he was stopped by someone.

Zhang Ruochen did not force himself through, and said calmly. “Please inform the Master Ling that Zhang Ruochen is here for a visit.”

The expression Moon Worship Demonic Sect disciple blocking Zhang Ruochen’s path changed drastically, he stared at Zhang Ruochen for a good while before saying. “Master Zhang, please wait. I will report to Master Ling at once.”

Zhang Ruochen was not in a hurry, and he stood quietly at the foot of the mountain as he waited.

Seeing how peaceful the Moon Worship Demonic Sect was, he was slightly relieved, realizing that he had not arrived too late.

Not long after, the Moon Worship Demonic Sect disciple returned and respectfully said,, “Master Zhang, Master Ling is already waiting for you inside the Hall of the Saintess. Please go ahead.”

There was a saying, “trees have shadows, and people have names”. Zhang Ruochen had literally carved a bloody path on his way to fame, so how could people not be in awe of him?

Zhang Ruochen nodded slightly, as he moved and climbed the Saint Water Peak, and needed no one to lead the way.

He had been to Mount Wuding more than once, and even with such changes taking place all over the mountain, he still knew which mountain Saint Water Peak was, and was knew exactly where the Hall of the Saintess was.

Saint Water Peak appeared very quiet. Unlike the several other holy peaks that were in verdant spring, Saint Water Peak was

now experiencing winter, and it was snow white. At a glance, it was a scene of pure white, and it was extremely beautiful.

From a distance, a beautiful figure appeared in Zhang Ruochen's vision.

After not seeing each other for many years, Ling Feiyu's temperament had gotten more and more otherworldly. She was like a divine lady from high above who did not meddle with mortal matters, allowing people to only gaze at her.

Seeing Ling Feiyu, Zhang Ruochen could not help but pause for a moment before slowly walking over.

At this moment, he could not afford to take any steps back.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen walked closer to Ling Feiyu and stood less than a meter apart from her.

Their eyes met one another's as their gazes gleamed. Time and space seemed to come to a standstill at this moment.

Zhang Ruochen's heart, which took him much effort to finally calm down, started beating fast again. He was much more nervous now than when he was fighting against the most powerful elites.

Today's Ling Feiyu was not wearing the Dianmu Purple Robe, but instead a white robe, almost blending in as one with the surrounding snow. Her tall figure was perfectly presented, and her chest and hips were well-rounded, her slender, jade-like legs were the most eye-catching, it was both fair and lovely, making it impossible to look away.

Coupled with that exquisite, beautiful face, she was like those perfect ladies in the drawing, so beautiful that it could not be real.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to recall a scene of the past. It was Ling Feiyu suffering spiritual damage after the battle with the Azuresky Blood Emperor, and she had become a stone beauty as she was auctioned off by Zhuguang Pavilion. He still remembered that Ling Feiyu was dressed the same as she was now as she sat by the lake, looking very serene.

Thinking of this scene, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to have many thoughts appearing as the bits and pieces he had experienced with Ling Feiyu in the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths were clearly reflected in his mind. It was so profound that he had not forgotten about it.

“I thought you were afraid to come to see me.”

While Zhang Ruochen’s thoughts were in flux, Ling Feiyu spoke first and broke the silence.

Zhang Ruochen snapped back and recalled his rampaging thoughts as he shook his head and said, “I thought you would not want to see me and would keep avoiding me.”

“I’m not as fragile as you think I am. My path was not in the Celestial Domain of Truth, so I chose to leave.” Ling Feiyu said calmly.

Zhang Ruochen smiled slightly and said, “Yeah, I was the one who was overthinking things. Since the Sword Emperor, how could the Kunlun Realm’s most amazing Sword Saintess, Feiyu be disturbed by mundane things?”

In fact, he was very surprised, Ling Feiyu had only left the Celestial Domain of Truth for barely a few years, yet her cultivation base had progressed by leaps and bounds. She had already reached the realm of the Greater Precept World, and he wondered what kind of opportunities she had encountered over these few years.

Of course, for exceptional talents like Ling Feiyu, she had already broken into the realm of a Saint King before the Kunlun Realm’s recovery and had cultivated her Sword Nine to full completion. So, no matter what amazing achievements she had, it was not really surprising at all.

Ling Feiyu turned around and walked slowly, saying. “Come, walk with me.”

“Alright.” Zhang Ruochen immediately followed her.

Soon, Zhang Ruochen caught up with Ling Feiyu as he walked side by side with her.

The two did not speak and just walked on quietly, leaving two rows of footprints in the snow behind them.

“It’s snowing.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and looked at the crystal clear snowflakes falling from the sky.

The snowflakes were beautiful, snow white and crystal clear, without any flaws, just like Ling Feiyu beside him.

“I received news that you won a big battle in the Northern Region. How did you come to Mount Wuding so soon?” Ling Feiyu asked.

Zhang Ruochen turned his head to look at Ling Feiyu and asked, “You don’t want to see me?”

“Whether I see you or not, it doesn’t really matter all that much. After all, I’m not that person in your heart.” Ling Feiyu said faintly.

Zhang Ruochen stopped and grabbed Ling Feiyu’s hands as he stared at her in the eye, saying. “You always had a place in my heart. Although I know it is unfair to you and Lingxi when I say this, but I want to tell you, I’ve never treated the experience we been through together in the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths as a dream. All we have gone through there, I’ve remembered them clearly, as they are engraved within my very self. They will never be erased.”

“The bond between you and I is just a twist of fate, and we are destined to never have anything between us. In fact, you should let go sooner, and cherish Lingxi. She had given you way too much, she is the one that could stay beside you as the one in your life.” Ling Feiyu gently shook her head.

As she said that, Ling Feiyu tried to pull her hands away.

However, Zhang Ruochen did not let go, and instead grasped her hands even tighter, as if he was afraid if he let her go, he would lose Ling Feiyu again.

“I will cherish Lingxi, but I won’t let you go either. I don’t believe you would not care about what we had been through in

the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths. Do you want to keep running away like this?” Zhang Ruochen said seriously.

Ling Feiyu looked at Zhang Ruochen’s eyes with a bitter expression, saying. “Then, what do you want me to do? What about Lingxi? Zhang Ruochen, let me go. Nothing will come of us.”

Zhang Ruochen stretched his hands out and pulled Ling Feiyu directly into his arms as he hugged her tight. “We haven’t tried it, how can you know there will be nothing between us? This time, no matter what you say, I will never let go again.”

Being hugged tightly by Zhang Ruochen, Ling Feiyu’s body stiffened, a complicated look appeared in her eyes.

At this moment, the snowfall got bigger and bigger, as they fell on the two, seemingly wanting to drown them.

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything more but hugged Ling Feiyu tightly. He refused to let go no matter what she said.

At the Celestial Domain of Truth, he had already missed Ling Feiyu once, he did not want to miss her again.

If he were to let her go once again, perhaps this time it will be for their entire lives, and that will make him regret it for the rest of his life.

After a long while, Ling Feiyu finally raised her hands and gently hugged Zhang Ruochen. Her razor-sharp eyes gradually became tender and watery, as a drop of crystal-clear tear appeared in her eyes.

And after being hugged by Ling Feiyu, Zhang Ruochen’s heart suddenly trembled slightly, as he hugged Ling Feiyu even tighter.

He really hoped that time could stop forever at this moment, and make this moment eternal.

Some time later, Zhang Ruochen slowly let go and pulled himself away from Ling Feiyu. Yet, his hands still held on to hers tightly.

A beautiful smile appeared on Ling Feiyu’s face as she said. “Tell me what you had been through all these years.”

“Well, if you want to know, I will tell you everything.” Zhang Ruochen nodded.

The two held hands as they walked in the snow, looking like a divine couple.

As they walked, Zhang Ruochen recounted all kinds of things that had happened to him since his parting with Ling Feiyu and did not hide much.

With a turn of his hands, Zhang Ruochen took out the Meritorious Sword Cleansing Marrow that he had exchanged from the Main Terminal of Merits, saying. “This is the Meritorious Sword Cleansing Marrow I’ve specially exchanged for you. You should be able to use them.”

Ling Feiyu did not play hard to get, and very naturally took the twenty Meritorious Sword Cleansing Marrow as she said. “Where is the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, I want to pray to it.”

As cultivators of Kunlun Realm, it was natural to want to pray to the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. After all, all creatures in Kunlun Realm were all born from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, and it could be considered the Mother of All Life in Kunlun Realm.

Hearing that, Zhang Ruochen demurred slightly, saying. “The Divine Sky-connecting Tree is now inside the Qiankun Realm and is not convenient to take it out. If you want to pray to it, you can only do so by entering the Qiankun Realm.”

“Since it’s on you, there is no need to rush. Let’s go, let’s head back first.”

Ling Feiyu smiled and said.

The two walked for a long while, and now the sky gradually dimmed. The wind and snow had already stopped as the snow on the ground had clearly thickened.

If an ordinary person were to walk on it, the person’s whole body will most likely sink into it.

Zhang Ruochen smiled as he took Ling Feiyu’s hand and used the Dimensional Shift as he took Ling Feiyu before the Hall of

the Saintess.

Baaam!!!

The two sacred doors of the hall automatically opened.

Ling Feiyu broke her hand free from Zhang Ruochen's grasp, and flew to into the palace hall, before landing on the floating island at the top of the palace.

Normally, Ling Feiyu would retreat back here to cultivate, although the layout was simple, it was also very elegant.

The most conspicuous thing was a chilly sacred jade bed with many delicate patterns on it that seemed to have formed naturally, without any signs of any man-made carvings.

Ling Feiyu was sitting on the sacred jade bed at the moment, as she smiled at Zhang Ruochen outside the palace hall.

Zhang Ruochen's figure flickered and instantly appeared on the floating island.

Inside the palace hall, a faint fragrance permeated, it was refreshing and made one feel extremely at peace.

Zhang Ruochen sat down by the side of the sacred jade bed as he looked at Ling Feiyu, and a lot of memories subconsciously flooded his mind. "Feiyu, do you remember the seventh life we experienced in the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths? In that life, I could no longer restrain myself, and I unleashed all of my suppressed emotions in the previous six lives. We became husband and wife in the portrait world and had children..."

Ling Feiyu quietly looked at Zhang Ruochen and listened to him recalling the sweet memories.

In the end, a smile appeared on Ling Feiyu's beautiful face that was carved out of cold ice. "To be able to spend a lifetime in the illusion as we grow old... Such an experience is the envy of who knows how many cultivators."

As she said that, a slight blush appeared on Ling Feiyu's face, showing the bashfulness of a young woman.

However, Zhang Ruochen perked up, a strange look appeared in his eyes as he stared at Ling Feiyu, a shred of doubt appearing in his heart. “In the seventh life, during the later years, I had clearly snapped out of the illusion and retreated. Why did she say we had spent a lifetime together? There’s something off. Is she actually Feiyu?”

As soon as he raised his head, Zhang Ruochen suddenly pushed himself forward as he embraced her again.

Ling Feiyu was suddenly pushed under him as he stroked her graceful and well-curved body with both his hands.

Ling Feiyu wanted to resist.

However, Zhang Ruochen was quite aggressive as he pressed his palm on the back of her head as he kissed her glossy red lips. A smooth and delicate feeling soon followed.

Chapter 1966 - True Form Revealed

Chapter 1966: True Form Revealed

Against such an aggressive Zhang Ruochen, Ling Feiyu's body could not help but freeze as a murderous intent flashed past her eyes undetected.

However, she did not strike. Instead, she gradually gave up resistance and displayed a posture of reluctant welcoming.

"I wonder, how long can you pretend?" Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

He then got even more into it as his breathing became heavier and heavier. Meanwhile, his hand wandered around Ling Feiyu's beautiful body with wanton abandon.

With a tear, Zhang Ruochen suddenly ripped the white robe off Ling Feiyu's body.

"No... Stop..."

Ling Feiyu wanted to resist, but Zhang Ruochen kissed her petite mouth forcefully, and she could not say anything clearly at all.

Not too far away from the floating island, there was a very special white dimension in the palace hall. It was like a dream-like bubble; it was clearly there, yet it was invisible and intangible.

It was an illusory dimension that had been created by an extremely skilled Illusion Master. Even a top-level powerhouse might not be able to sense it.

Within the white illusory dimension were several people. Leading them was a burly man who was three meters tall and radiating a terrifying black Saint Light. There were tens of millions of Saint Path Precepts flowing slowly on his skin, demonstrating his strength.

He was none other than the Fane of Youshen's number one elite beneath a Supreme Saint, a personal disciple of Youshen, Cang Long.

Behind Cang Long were all of the Fane of Youshen's top powerhouses, and the remaining two of the Six Fatales were there as well.

In addition, there was a valiant-looking man with purple qi lingering all over his body. He was staring at Zhang Ruochen with vengeful eyes at that moment.

The man had a significant origin and had been born in the number one faction of the Hongyang Macroworld, the Purple Sky Hall. He was called Zifeng. He was the elder twin brother of the Ziyang Saint King, whom Zhang Ruochen had killed at the bottom of the Cliff of Doom.

The Zifeng Saint King was even more powerful than the Ziyang Saint King, and his cultivation base had already reached Path's Anterior.

Although no one saw Zhang Ruochen slay the Ziyang Saint King, by virtue of blood connection and certain arcane techniques, the Zifeng Saint King had managed to lock onto Zhang Ruochen. He deemed Zhang Ruochen his nemesis for killing his younger brother.

Looking at the scene on the cold sacred jade bed, Cang Long's body trembled as his eyes burned with raging fury. "Damn you... Damn you!"

"Senior Brother Cang Long, calm down. Any rash actions will ruin the plan!"

Seeing that Cang Long was about to explode in rage, one of the Fane of Youshen's Six Fatales, the Great Dragon Spirit Lord, immediately spoke to calm the former down.

One of the Six Fatales, the Nine-headed Dragon Prince also echoed his sentiment. "Yes, this plan has been concocted by Senior Sister Ruan Ling, and we can only take the Qiankun Realm, as well as seize the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, in one fell swoop if we get Zhang Ruochen to fully lower his guard.

The overall situation is more important, Senior Brother Cang Long. Please restrain yourself.”

Even the Zifeng Saint King chimed in, “Brother Cang Long, please don’t be rash. Zhang Ruochen is extremely cunning and has many tricks up his sleeves. If he becomes alarmed, then all of our efforts may go up in smoke. Are you willing to let the Qiankun Realm, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, and so on just fly away like that?”

“Arghh!”

Cang Long let out a furious roar and almost kicked up a fuss.

In the end, however, he still resisted the urge and did not make any rash moves.

He knew very well what kind of temper Ruan Ling had. If he interfered and ruined the plan, Ruan Ling would never forgive him that easily.

Nevertheless, seeing Zhang Ruochen toy with Ruan Ling with such ruthless abandon really pushed him to the brink of insanity. He had always seen Ruan Ling as his woman and never thought that the woman, whom he had yet to touch, would be taken advantage of by Zhang Ruochen.

Cang Long clenched his fists as he gritted his teeth. “Zhang Ruochen, I will definitely make sure that you wish you were dead. I’ll torture you for a thousand years... no, ten thousand years, to sate my hatred.”

Seeing Cang Long not act, both the Great Dragon Spirit Lord and the Nine-Headed Dragon Prince could not help but breathe sighs of relief. They were really afraid that Cang Long would charge out in a fury.

If they caused Ruan Ling’s plan to fall apart, the two of them would definitely suffer horrible consequences.

Thinking of what Ruan Ling could do, both of them shuddered.

In order to not get punished by Ruan Ling, they had to keep Cang Long in check.

“He’s doing it!”

On the sacred jade bed, Zhang Ruochen pushed away Ling Feiyu’s hands and made a forward grabbing motion as he tore off the last layer of her bodice.

At that moment, the white illusory dimension that Cang Long and the rest were in suddenly became blurry, and they could no longer see or hear what was going on outside.

“Zhang Ruochen! I will kill you!” Cang Long roared as he unleashed a terrifying murderous intent.

The Great Dragon Spirit Lord’s expression changed as he extended his hand to hold Cang Long. “Brother Cang Long, remember the Qiankun Realm and the Divine Sky-connecting Tree!”

The Nine-headed Dragon Prince also held Cang Long back as he tried his best to console him. “Senior Sister Ruan Ling is doing this for you. Brother Cang Long, you must not ruin her good intentions. Don’t worry, Senior Sister Ruan Ling will definitely not be taken advantage of.”

“With things already at such a state, you’re still saying that Ruan Ling won’t be taken advantage of?” Cang Long glared at the Nine-headed Dragon Prince.

A look of fear appeared in the eyes of the Nine-headed Dragon Prince, and he quickly added, “Senior Sister Ruan Ling intends to have Zhang Ruochen totally lower his guard. She will definitely be making her move soon enough and will not allow Zhang Ruochen to do as he pleases.”

“Yes, yes, Zhang Ruochen will not be hopping around for too long now. Everything is under Senior Sister Ruan Ling’s control,” the Great Dragon Spirit Lord agreed.

Cang Long’s fury was now at its breaking point, and he was just a step away from exploding. His tiny bit of remaining reason was about to get overwhelmed by rage.

On the ice-cold sacred jade bed, seeing Zhang Ruochen was completely lost in his lust, a cold sneer appeared in Ling Feiyu’s eyes as she suddenly raised her hand, and stabbed at Zhang Ruochen’s brow like lightning.

Simultaneously, a glint appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. His movement was faster than Ling Feiyu as he held his hand out and grabbed her by the neck, pressing the latter hard against the bed and immobilizing her.

“You...”

Ling Feiyu's face was full of shock as she did not expect this to happen.

“Watch out!”

At that exact moment, a voice warned as a hidden illusory dimension at the center of Ling Feiyu's brow shattered. A figure flashed out of it and transforming into another Ling Feiyu.

At the same time, the face of the “Ling Feiyu”, whose neck was being held by Zhang Ruochen, changed as she transformed into a different person. Her body and appearance were no less beautiful than the real Ling Feiyu's.

With this, the situation could not have been clearer.

Looking at the stunning beauty whose neck was in his grasp, Zhang Ruochen coldly said, “Ruan Ling, Youshen's personal disciple who majors in spiritual power and is the top Illusion Master beneath a Supreme Saint. You sure sacrificed a lot to set a trap for me.”

The person before him was one of the Fane of Youshen's two leaders, Ruan Ling. Her spiritual power was extremely powerful, and her illusion techniques were her trump card. Even a top-tier Path's Anterior powerhouse could be fooled by her.

Despite Zhang Ruochen's powerful Level 59 spiritual power, he could not see through Ruan Ling's illusions in the beginning. That was a testament to how terrifying her illusions were.

Of course, no matter how strong Ruan Ling's spiritual powers and illusions were, now that Zhang Ruochen was holding her by the neck, she could no longer do anything.

Turning his head, Zhang Ruochen looked at the real Ling Feiyu and asked with concern, “How are you?”

He was sure that she was the real Ling Feiyu because Ling Feiyu wore the Dianmu Purple Robe and held the Heaven’s Fall Blade as she radiated a terrifying Sword Will from her body. Her sword was something that Zhang Ruochen was most familiar with, and no one could imitate it.

Ling Feiyu shook her head and said, “I’m fine. This person took your appearance not too long ago to test my waters. Although I saw through her illusion, I was still entrapped by her and locked inside an illusory dimension. After that, she took my appearance and waited for you to be hooked in.

“She wanted me to see with my own eyes how you would fall into her trap step by step as she took all of your treasures away from you. Then she would take you back to the Fane of Youshen.”

“So, you’re saying that you are in the illusory dimension between her eyebrows? You could hear and see everything outside?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

A strange emotion flashed in Ling Feiyu’s eyes as she nodded.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but feel a little embarrassed. It meant that Ling Feiyu not only heard what he had said to Ruan Ling, she had also witnessed the scene earlier.

“How did you find out?” Ruan Ling suddenly asked right then.

She had thought her setup flawless, without any cracks, and Zhang Ruochen had indeed fallen for it. So, why did he suddenly strike at her?

Zhang Ruochen composed himself and turned to look at Ruan Ling before he explained, “Your disguise was indeed perfect. Even without the Dianmu Purple Robe or the Heaven’s Fall Blade, I didn’t have much doubt. You almost made me believe that you were the real Feiyu.

“However, when I talked about the seventh life in the Portrait of Seven Lives and Seven Deaths, you actually said that we lived together for the rest of our lives. That was a massive

flaw, which made me doubtful. Hence, I just took the opportunity to test you, and sure enough, you exposed more flaws as I went on. The real Ling Feiyu would not have acted the way you did.”

He knew Ling Feiyu very well, and under normal circumstances, if he dared to be as brazen as he was earlier, Ling Feiyu would definitely teach him a painful lesson. She would never allow him to act so wantonly.

Inside the white illusory dimension, Cang Long constantly paced in place as time passed extremely slow for him.

Now that he could not see or hear what was going on outside, he had no idea what was happening there.

He teetered on the edge of explosive rage, especially when he recalled the scene of Zhang Ruochen pulling Ruan Ling’s last bodice off and pressing himself on her

“I can’t wait any longer!”

A moment later, Cang Long roared, no longer able to hold back his anger.

Boom!!

Cang Long struck and forcibly tore the illusory dimension open.

Both the Great Dragon Spirit Lord and the Nine-headed Dragon Prince wanted to stop him, but they were too late.

As soon as he rushed out, Cang Long’s gaze was locked on Zhang Ruochen and Ruan Ling. When he saw that Ruan Ling was being restrained by Zhang Ruochen and that her face showed her struggling in pain, Cang Long went into a fit of rage.

“Zhang Ruochen, you b*stard! I’ll kill you!”

Cang Long’s mind had already filled in the blanks as to what happened between Zhang Ruochen and Ruan Ling. His eyes immediately turned red as his body exuded a terrifying desire to kill.

In fact, how he wished he could rip Zhang Ruochen into a million pieces now, but with Ruan Ling in Zhang Ruochen's hands, he had to be cautious. He could not afford to make any rash moves.

Ling Feiyu's expression had changed slightly. Just now, the scene of Zhang Ruochen being affectionate with Ruan Ling had subconsciously appeared in her mind, and an inexplicable feeling had crept into her heart. As a result, she had totally forgotten about Cang Long and the others who were hiding inside a nearby illusory dimension. She failed to warn Zhang Ruochen in time.

Zhang Ruochen appeared extremely calm and showed no signs of panic as if he had already noticed the existence of Cang Long and the others.

With a flip of his hand, he took out a Saint Binding Rope and bound Ruan Ling.

He also treated Ruan Ling well enough as he wrapped her in a single-layer white gown.

"Cang Long, I came to look for you specifically, but I did not expect you to be so useless that you'd let a woman deal with me instead. I'm really disappointed in you." Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

Hearing this, Cang Long became even angrier as he growled. "Zhang Ruochen, I am here, let go of Ruan Ling, all of our grievances will be settled between you and me."

Zhang Ruochen shook the sacred rope in his hand, his gaze turning sharp. "All right, I'll give you this one opportunity. Follow me," he said.

While he spoke, Zhang Ruochen wrapped Ling Feiyu and Ruan Ling in a dimensional domain. Then he transformed into a ray of rainbow light as he flew out of the palace hall.

Seeing this, Cang Long did not hesitate at all as he immediately chased after him.

The Great Dragon Spirit Lord, the Zifeng Saint King, and the others did not tarry either. They followed suit one after another.

Chapter 1967 - The Battle With Cang Long

Chapter 1967: The Battle With Cang Long

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Ruochen had taken Ling Feiyu and Ruan Ling out of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect and appeared on the vast Copper Furnace Plains.

Opening the Qiankun Realm, Zhang Ruochen summoned the Evil Spirit, and the three then landed on his head.

Zhang Ruochen handed the Saint Binding Rope to Ling Feiyu and said, “Stay back and watch her. I’ll deal with Cang Long.”

Ling Feiyu took the Saint Binding Rope and looked at Cang Long, as well as the others, fly over rapidly. A look of worry flitted past her eyes, and she said, “Cang Long is very strong, and he won’t be easy to deal with. Let’s go back to Mount Wuding first. Let me mobilize the sect’s entire power, then we’ll fight him together.”

The Mount Wuding earlier had just been an illusion. It was not the real Mount Wuding that housed the sect’s base.

“Don’t worry, as long as Ruan Ling is in our hands, the initiative is with us. It’s precisely because Cang Long is very strong that I want to fight him,” Zhang Ruochen replied.

Hearing this, Ling Feiyu could not help but take a deep look at Zhang Ruochen before she said, “Be careful.”

Zhang Ruochen revealed a confident smile as his figure flickered, and met the pursuing Cang Long and the others.

Whoosh!

Ling Feiyu drew the Heaven’s Fall Blade and pointed it at Ruan Ling’s forehead.

If she noticed something wrong, she would take Ruan Ling’s life without any hesitation.

Ruan Ling sneered and said, “Zhang Ruochen is just too conceited. He will definitely die in Cang Long’s hands. Just wait to collect his corpse. Watching your beloved getting killed must be very painful?”

“Zhang Ruochen will not die. You, on the contrary, just look so pitiful. You thought you had control of everything, but you were outsmarted instead. You totally did not expect to fall into Zhang Ruochen’s hands, right? This is the price for underestimating him!” Ling Feiyu sneered in return.

Fortunately, Cang Long and Ruan Ling had been overconfident. They had felt that they could toy with Zhang Ruochen, so they never used her to threaten him. Otherwise, it would have been really troublesome.

Ruan Ling remained silent as cold killing intent flashed past her eyes. She had indeed screwed up big time. Not only had she gotten nothing out of this, but she had even allowed Zhang Ruochen to take advantage of her.

If she had acted any slower, her virgin, immaculate body would have been sullied by Zhang Ruochen.

With things as they were now, she could only hope that Cang Long could take Zhang Ruochen and let her slowly torture him later.

“Zhang Ruochen, you dare fight me?” Cang Long roared.

Zhang Ruochen stood in midair as he casually swept his gaze past Cang Long and the rest, faintly saying, “Why wouldn’t I? I’ve come to Mount Wuding just to fight you. I wonder, what kind of look will Youshen have once I kill you?”

When he had just returned to the Kunlun Realm, he had encountered many elites from the Fane of Youshen. It was clear that Youshen had been targeting him and deliberately sending many elites to the Kunlun Realm to deal with him.

Come to think of it, it was normal. Youshen had two sons; one had been killed by Zhang Ruochen and another had died because of him. How could Youshen not hate him?

To get a god to be vengeful against you was not something an average person could pull off.

“Cut the nonsense. Die!” Cang Long roared as he went straight into the offensive.

He had long been on the verge of losing it. At that moment, he vented everything out, wanting to tear Zhang Ruochen into pieces.

A dark light circulated around Cang Long’s body and converged on his fist as he blasted out a fist strike at Zhang Ruochen.

“Raawr!”

A sky-shaking dragon’s roar rang out as a black dragon, which was several hundred feet long, flew out of Cang Long’s fist.

Zhang Ruochen was not afraid, and he immediately responded with a palm strike. A Supreme Saint Dragon Soul appeared and met the giant black dragon that Cang Long had unleashed.

Baaam!!

The black dragon collided violently with the azure dragon, and both of them recoiled from the impact.

Neither side was able to get the upper hand during the first exchange.

“Die!”

Cang Long unleashed a phantom-like technique as he instantly came to Zhang Ruochen’s side. His hand simultaneously transformed into a dragon claw, and he tried to mutilate Zhang Ruochen with it.

The dragon claw was not a phantasmic transformation but a real dragon claw. It had been taken from a Neverwithier black dragon.

Cang Long had expended a great deal of effort to refine the Neverwithier black dragon claw and the black dragon soul into his arm. It had become one of his biggest trump cards.

With this black dragon arm, he could easily kill any ordinary Path Anterior elite.

Seeing the black dragon claw attack coming at him, Zhang Ruochen did not dodge. Instead, he clenched one hand into a

fist and struck.

A surge of Saint Qi manifested and infused into his Fire God's Gauntlet and Fire God's Armguards. They suddenly turned bright red with raging flames, causing a red fire cloud to rise.

Dummm!!!

Zhang Ruochen's body shook, he took three steps back as he completely neutralized the terrifying force from the black dragon claw.

His body was very strong and had reached the realm of Beneath a Supreme Saint. However, Cang Long had a Neverwithier black dragon claw, which was undoubtedly even stronger.

If it were not for the Fire God's Gauntlet and Armguards, he would have suffered even more than he did from that head-on clash.

His figure flickered as Zhang Ruochen pulled some distance from Cang Long as he quickly took out the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and put it on himself.

"You think you're the only one to have a Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light?" Cang Long snorted coldly as he took out the armor and put it on.

As the Fane of Youshen's leader and even the entire Ruiya Realm, Cang Long had climbed onto the Celestial Court's Saint King Merit List for an extended period of time. Plus, he was ranked very high. That meant he had gotten the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light long before Zhang Ruochen had.

After putting on the armor, Cang Long's speed became even faster, and like a flowing light, he once again closed in on Zhang Ruochen as he struck at the latter's heart with his black dragon claw.

With his strength and the Neverwithier black dragon claw, even if Zhang Ruochen was clad in the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, Cang Long was confident that he could dig Zhang Ruochen's heart out with one strike of his claw.

Whoosh!

The Eight-Dragon Umbrella appeared as more than 120,000 inscription patterns emerged, and a series of perfect power surges were unleashed one after another.

Clang!

The Eight-Dragon Umbrella blocked the black dragon claw and did not let Cang Long do as he pleased.

Immediately after, eight golden dragons flew out of the umbrella, and like a real dragon, all crashed into Cang Long.

While Cang Long was not wounded, he was pushed backward by the impact of the eight golden dragons.

“Shatter!”

Cang Long roared, and a silver sword appeared in his hand as he slashed down at the Eight-Dragon Umbrella with a murderous, lightning-fast stroke.

Baaam!!

The eight golden dragons instantly burst into pieces, unable to withstand the attack of the sword light.

The sword light was unstoppable. It then fell upon the surface of the Eight-Dragon Umbrella.

With that single slash alone, the golden light on the Eight-Dragon Umbrella’s surface faded. All of its inscriptions were blocked, and a shallow white crack appeared on its surface.

“A King’s Weapon.”

Zhang Ruochen expression changed slightly as he immediately stored the Eight-Dragon Umbrella away.

Although the quality of the Eight-Dragon Umbrella was very close to that of a King’s Weapon, it was in essence still very far away from one. It could not really withstand attacks from a King’s Weapon. If it were to take another blow or two, it might be damaged.

Compared with Bi Yunhai’s King’s Weapon, the one in Cang Long’s hand was far more powerful, with nearly 300,000 King

inscriptions on it. Its blade was razor-sharp, and there was nothing it could not destroy.

“Zhang Ruochen, my master gave me this Hidden Moon Saber to specifically deal with you. I want to see how many blows you can actually take.” A cold light appeared in Cang Long’s eyes.

A King’s Weapon was extremely precious. If it had not been for the purpose of dealing with Zhang Ruochen, Youshen would not have given him the Hidden Moon Saber.

Cang Long lifted the Hidden Moon Saber up high as nearly half a million Saint Path Precepts converged around it. They surged alongside the Saint Qi and flowed into the saber.

At the same time, almost thirty percent of the heavenly and earthly precepts within a radius of 4,005 miles were being roused. They all gathered toward the Hidden Moon Saber in the process.

To be able to mobilize thirty percent of the heavenly and earthly precepts within a radius of 4,005 miles meant that Cang Long was extremely powerful. It indicated that he was already not too far away from a Neverwithers Supreme Saint’s power level.

In fact, with the Neverwithers-realm black dragon claw, Cang Long was already able to somewhat fight against a Neverwithers Supreme Saint for a few bouts.

Seeing this, Ling Feiyu could not help but to show look of worry, wishing she could help Zhang Ruochen.

Ruan Ling sneered and said, “By angering Cang Long, Zhang Ruochen’s death has been determined. He won’t be able to survive more than a few hits. Release me now, then perhaps both you and Zhang Ruochen may be able to live a bit longer. Otherwise, both of you will only end up as a dead couple in the underworld.”

Ling Feiyu’s eyes were cold as the hand that held the Heaven’s Fall Blade trembled slightly. Its tip bit into Ruan Ling’s forehead, causing a drop of red blood to flow out.

Sensing Ling Feiyu's killing intent, Ruan Ling dared not say anything else. She was really worried that Ling Feiyu would stab her in the head.

At that moment, the Great Dragon Spirit Lord, the Nine-headed Dragon Prince, the Zifeng Saint King, and other five Fane of Youshen elites were all standing by. They actually wanted to rescue Ruan Ling.

However, they were afraid that Ling Feiyu would simply off her, and they were also quite wary of the Evil Spirit at the same time.

A vast divine might emanated from the Evil Spirit's body, and anyone could clearly feel it. That caused the Great Dragon Spirit Lord and the others to feel somewhat threatened.

Whoosh!

When Cang Long slashed his saber down, Zhang Ruochen used the Dimensional Shift and avoided the blow in an instant, choosing not to take the attack head-on.

“You think you can dodge this?”

Cang Long roared as the light blade suddenly changed directions and slashed straight at Zhang Ruochen.

Seeing that he could not avoid the light blade, Zhang Ruochen pulled the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

out. He formed a multi-dimensional space as he sheltered himself within it.

Crack!

The multi-dimension space was unable to withstand the light blade, and several layers of space were instantly shattered.

Zhang Ruochen did not panic and stretched his hand forward a little as a massive Dimensional Rift appeared, swallowing the light blade whole.

With the aid of the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

's dimensional techniques, be it his speed or power would be greatly increased.

With another hand stretched out, the Azuresky Pagoda appeared, and as it spun it released an azure radiance.

When Cang Long slashed again, Zhang Ruochen blasted out the Azuresky Pagoda without any hesitation.

Boom!!

The Azuresky Pagoda shook as it unleashed bursts of formidable supreme power, smashing the light blade into smithereens.

Looking at the Azuresky Pagoda, Cang Long could not help but sneer, "For you to use a Supreme Sacred Artifact without its vessel spirit against my Hidden Moon Saber... Your foolishness knows no bounds!"

As he said that, Cang Long swung the Hidden Moon Saber, and slashed out more than a dozen times in a flurry.

Baaaam!!!

In the end, the Azuresky Pagoda could not withstand the Hidden Moon Saber's attacks. Its glow gradually became dim, and it flew backward.

Cang Long was indeed too strong, and he possessed a complete King's Weapon. Even a Neverwithier Supreme Saint would not dare to underestimate him.

Vooosh!

A fuzzy sword soul flew out of Zhang Ruochen's body holding the Ancient Abyssal Blade as it slashed at Cang Long.

Countless Marks of Time appeared in the air and desnly enveloped Cang Long.

"Moonlight Song."

The sword soul swung the sword, and captured each and every Mark of Time as it used the Swordsmanship of Time and slashed at Cang Long's neck.

"Hmph."

Cang Long let out a heavy, cold sneer as tens of millions of Saint Path Precepts appeared, forming a powerful Precept Dominion.

Since they were foes, Cang Long naturally had a detailed understanding of Zhang Ruochen's abilities from long ago. He knew how arcane and unpredictable the Swordsmanship of Time was, so he was always on guard against it.

Although he had never fought against Zhang Ruochen before, he had simulated his combat with Zhang Ruochen many times in his mind, especially in terms of how to deal with the Swordsmanship of Time.

Therefore, he was fully confident he could resist Zhang Ruochen's Swordsmanship of Time.

Crack!

The black light instantly shattered, and the Precept Dominion was cut open next.

Dushhh!

Cang Long's reacted very quickly, but a wound still appeared on his neck as blood gushed out of it.

If the wound had been any deeper, his head would have been separated from his body.

"How can this be?"

Cang Long quickly pulled back as a shock filled his eyes.

Chapter 1968 - The 100,000 Precepts in Yanshen's Leg

Chapter 1968: The 100,000 Precepts in Yanshen's Leg

“Have my eyes deceived me? I can't believe that Zhang Ruochen managed to hurt Brother Cang Long!”

“It's his Sword Soul. Zhang Ruochen's Sword Soul is damn powerful. His cultivation base is only in the Greater Precept World, yet his Sword Soul has reached such a level of strength!”

“So what if his Sword Soul is powerful? Brother Cang Long was just too careless earlier. But this time, Zhang Ruochen is going to die.”

“That's right. Brother Cang Long is the Fane of Youshen's Number One Non-Supreme Saint fighter. How can he not deal with Zhang Ruochen?”

Those from the Fane of Youshen were stunned when they saw Cang Long hurt. Nevertheless, they still had confidence in him, convinced that Zhang Ruochen was not his match.

Ling Feiyu was standing on the head of the Evil Spirit. There was a glint in her eyes as she stared at Zhang Ruochen's Sword Soul.

Back in the day when she was in the Celestial Domain of Truth, Zhang Ruochen used to ask her about the secret of the Sword Soul. Before she knew it, though, his Sword Soul had surpassed hers.

Just as she had thought, Zhang Ruochen was a genius in the Sword Path. His talent was already unparalleled throughout the Celestial Court and Infernal Court, let alone the Kunlun Realm.

Not to mention, the combination of his Sword Path and Path of Time and Dimension showed sophistication as well as strength.

As evidence, Cang Long, who had studied the way to counter Zhang Ruochen's Sword of Time specifically, was still at a disadvantage in actual combat.

Ruan Ling looked a bit worried. Her heart sank when she could no longer predict the outcome of the battle.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen did not retrieve his Sword Soul but continued to use it for the Sword of Time's purpose.

The purple Godstone on the hilt of the Ancient Abyssal Blade was glowing purple, not only making the sword extremely heavy but also mobilizing the Precepts of Heaven and Earth from an extremely wide area.

That was the second characteristic of the purple Godstone that Zhang Ruochen had recently discovered.

Like higher-order Saint techniques, regal weapons, and Supreme artifacts, even if his cultivation base had not reached the Precept Domain realm, with the purple Godstone's help, he could still summon the Precepts of Heaven and Earth. Therefore, he could punch above his weight.

The Sword Soul moved as quickly as a stream of light, surrounding Cang Long and attacking him.

There was an enormous amount of Marks of Time appeared to brand the dimension around Cang Long with each swing of the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

Cang Long was waving his Hidden Moon Saber, blocking one after another attack from the sword soul.

He knew he was too careless earlier. Now that he was taking things seriously. He would not make the same mistake again, even with Zhang Ruochen's using his strange and unpredictable moves of Sword of Time.

“There's an opening!”

There was a flash in Cang Long's eyes as he deployed a Black Dragon Claw with incredible speed.

His Black Dragon Claw caught the Ancient Abyssal Blade, instantly stopping it.

Just as Cang Long was about to strike with his Hidden Moon Saber, his expression suddenly crashed. Taking his hand off the Ancient Abyssal Blade, he retreated as quick as he could.

The moment his hand caught the sword, he felt the strength all over his body weaken rapidly. He almost lost his balance and plummeted from the air.

It is the power of time; it has shortened my life!

Cang Long got the shock of his life when he realized what had happened.

His lifespan had been shortened by dozens of years moments ago. That explained the feeling of frailty.

The Sword Soul did not pursue further attacks but held the Ancient Abyssal Blade and flew back before disappearing into Zhang Ruochen's body.

“Finally! I can shorten people's lifespan using Sword Qi. This is the genuine power of Moonlight Melody. It's a pity that I still haven't understood enough of it. Performing it by force will only over exhaust myself,” Zhang Ruochen mumbled to himself.

Just now, he was using Moonlight melody to capture several Marks of Time. Before they dissipated, he superimposed them on each other and slashed Cang Long's body. He did not use the Marks of Time that already existed on the Ancient Abyssal Blade, so he had only cut away a few decades of Cang Long's life.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen was happy; he had attained a certain level of insight into the Sword of Time's fifth level.

It would be a tremendous boost to his strength if he could improve upon it further, cutting an opponent's lifespan with a casual strike of Sword Qi.

From the very beginning, Zhang Ruochen had treated Cang Long as a whetstone to sharpen his skills and test his own self-cultivation results.

The results spoke for themselves; there was a gap between his and Cang Long's strength. However, it was not a significant

gap. He could make up the gap by using the power of time and space.

Despite that, if he was thinking about defeating Cang Long, it would not be easy.

Cang Long roared like a beast as black Saint Light, which looked as thick as ink, surged out of his body, permeating the space within a hundred yards. Everything within its range, including the dimension itself, solidified.

“Not bad, Zhang Ruochen. You are nastier than I thought. But from now on, I will not give you any chance.”

Powerful energy emanated from Cang Long’s body, and the weather within a several-thousand-mile radius quickly changed. Dark clouds began to block the moon, and the Bronze Furnace Plains plunged into darkness as if the sky was about to fall. Things became extremely repressive.

With Cang Long at the center, the Precepts and the power of Heaven and Earth continuously converged, forming a huge energy vortex that connected heaven with the earth. There was no other scene more shocking than this.

Suppressed by this energy, the few weaker people from the Fane of Youshen were almost out of breath as they looked at Cang Long in reverence.

“Brother Cang Long has gone completely furious; it is the end for Zhang Ruochen.” There was delight in the eyes of the Great Dragon Spirit Lord.

“Since Brother Cang Long has utilized Obscure Divine Light, that means he has no more hesitation.” The Nine-Headed Dragon Prince nodded.

“Obscure Divine Light is a higher-order Saint technique founded by our master. Brother Cang Long has not fully mastered it yet. But before he came to Kunlun Realm, our master injected some kind of energy into Brother Cang Long’s body, so Brother Cang Long can utilize Obscure Divine Light three times. With a combination of Brother Cang Long’s strength and Obscure Divine Light, even Neverwither Supreme Saints would be intimidated.”

The Zifeng Saint King smiled upon hearing that. He could not have been happier to see Zhang Ruochen die without him intervening.

He did not doubt what Nine-Headed Dragon Prince said. How could Zhang Ruochen still survive under the attack of Youshen's power?

There was a stern look in Zhang Ruochen's eyes as he felt great pressure. The energy that Cang Long emanated rivaled that of Bi Yunhai, definitely belonging in the realm of a Neverwithers Supreme Saint.

He could vaguely sense the supernatural energy of the gods.

Youshen has gone as far as passing his power to Cang Long just so that he can kill me. It looks like the gods of the Heavenly Realm do not like to stick to the rules laid down by the Celestial Palace.

Zhang Ruochen thought to himself, his eyes turning unusually bitter.

The god was directly intervening in the conflicts of Saint King cultivators. Youshen and Yanshen seemed to share the same habit.

He was going to kill both Yanshen and Youshen once he was powerful enough.

"Cang Long has whisked out his trump card. There's no way Zhang Ruochen can survive his move this time. Let me go if you don't want to see Zhang Ruochen die. Otherwise, you might not even get the chance to bury his body," Ruan Ling sneered as she stood on the evil spirit's head.

However, Ling Feiyu ignored Ruan Ling. She just stared at Zhang Ruochen, who now looked like a god of war with an unrelenting fighting spirit; he looked fearless.

Ling Feiyu was calmer now as she believed that no matter how powerful Cang Long was, Zhang Ruochen would not be defeated.

A thought came to mind and Zhang Ruochen tucked away all his artifacts, including the Meritorious Armor of Flowing

Light.

His action puzzled everyone. They wondered why he wanted to do this.

“It is time to remove the first seal!”

Zhang Ruochen mumbled as he gathered his Saint Qi into his left leg.

His left leg turned red as a scorching energy spread.

Strands of bright-red precepts appeared on his left leg, each of them looking stout. There were 100,000 of them, and together, they released massive divine energy.

Earlier, when Zhang Ruochen was practicing a closed-door self-cultivation, he had successfully refined the 100,000 Precepts of Yanshen’s Leg. That meant he could finally remove the first seal of Yanshen’s Leg.

Just as Yueshen had mentioned, the second the first seal was removed, Yanshen’s Leg would become so powerful that not even the body of a Neverwither Saint King could take on its blow.

“What? This is...”

Cang Long’s expression changed when he sensed the massive divine energy emanating from Yanshen’s Leg.

With the absence of hesitation and the presence of power that could stun heaven and earth, Cang Long shot the black Saint Light at Zhang Ruochen.

No matter what Zhang Ruochen still had up his sleeve, there was no way he could withstand Obscure Divine Light, which contained Youshen’s power.

At that instant, Zhang Ruochen looked even more fearsome as his body gave off overpowering energy.

The first seal that Yueshen left in Yanshen’s Leg shattered at once. an immense expanse of scorching divine energy surging like a volcanic eruption inside Yanshen’s Leg.

“Yanshen’s Leg!”

Zhang Ruochen raised his left leg and struck out horizontally.

This time, he did not perform a Nine-Heaven God's Step. As the first seal was removed, he could not control the power of Yanshen's Leg freely.

As overwhelming divine power rushed out, the dimension shook violently, and cracks formed in the dimension from the violent shaking.

The earth was splitting apart, and the ground sinking as if a massive earthquake had hit.

Bright-red fire clouds swept across the horizon, almost turning the night into day. Looking from thousands of miles away, one could still see the firelight flickering, as if there were stars plunging to the earth.

For a while, the temperature in the Bronze Furnace Plains rose sharply, melting and vaporizing the thick snow on the ground.

Boom!

Facing the power of Yanshen's Leg, Obscure Divine Light seemed pale in comparison. It could not hold a candle to the violent power of Yanshen's Leg, and it was instantly annihilated.

"No..."

The fighters from the Fane of Youshen and the Zifeng Saint King cried out in fear as well as indignation. They wanted to flee, but it was too late.

The bright-red fire clouds engulfed them in the blink of an eye, and their cries subsided.

Cang Long was the first person to take the hit, but he did not die. Instead, he still tried to fight back.

The Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light emanated a dazzling silverish light as meritorious inscriptions appeared and formed a powerful shield to block the power of Yanshen's Leg.

Bang!

The protective shield formed by the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light shattered and the scorching violent divine

power hit Cang Long directly.

As that happened, divine inscriptions engraved by Youshen appeared on Cang Long's body, deflecting a large part of the divine power.

Even so, the blow sent Cang Long flying out backward while he burped up a mouthful of blood.

Despite being protected by the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and the divine inscriptions, Cang Long still suffered a heavy trauma, his internal organs shattering, his body nearly disintegrating.

“Run!”

With no hesitation, Cang Long activated the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and fled toward the horizon at a thousand times the speed of sound.

Chapter 1969 - Killing With No Mercy

Chapter 1969: Killing With No Mercy

The leg's power scorched the land for a thousand miles. It cracked the earth and nearly vaporized all of the water.

Zhang Ruochen saw Cang Long flee, but he did not pursue him.

It was not that he did not want to kill Cang Long; he just did not have the means anymore.

After removing the first seal of Yanshen's Leg and unleashing a full-power strike, he had nearly exhausted all of his Saint Qi.

Not to mention, Cang Long was wearing his Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and moving at a thousand times the speed of sound. Even if Zhang Ruochen immediately put on his own Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light now and gave chase, it was simply too late.

He had taken off the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light earlier because he had been worried that the violent power from Yanshen's Leg might damage it.

I have to be careful about using Yanshen's Leg next time. At least, I should try not to use my full strength.

Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

He figured that he should only use his entire strength in a desperate situation, or else he would be in trouble before he could finish off his enemy.

Cang Long was also suffering from severe injuries. He did not know about Zhang Ruochen's situation. Coupled with the fact that Ling Feiyu and the Evil Spirit were lurking around, he was focusing on nothing but fleeing as quickly as possible.

Ling Feiyu approached Zhang Ruochen to hold him up at once.

“Are you all right?” Ling Feiyu asked with concern.

Zhang Ruochen fought back the sense of frailty and shook his head. “I’m all right. I’m just exhausted but I’ll quickly recover.”

While he spoke, he engaged Empyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture. The Radiant Sun suspended within his Divine Light Sea of Qi rapidly spun and released pure vital qi, which then turned into Saint Qi that circulated throughout his body.

The Radiant Sun inside his Divine Light Sea of Qi was formed by the Sunleaf of the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi. It contained a massive amount of sacred herbal essence that could convert an enormous amount of Saint Qi.

As his Saint Qi slowly recovered, Zhang Ruochen extended his hand to perform a dimensional technique. He did so by remotely grabbing the corpses of those fighters who had been killed by the powerful shock waves.

Instead of checking what treasures were on those bodies, he kept them all at once and would only check them out when he had time.

“Let us get out of here.”

Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu returned to the head of the Evil Spirit.

Right then, Ruan Ling was slumped over behind the Evil Spirit, her eyes glazing over as what happened had completely stunned her.

A few top fighters from the Fane of Youshen and the Zifeng Saint King had died. Even Cang Long ended up injured and fleeing with his tail tucked between his legs.

It meant that she could only remain as Zhang Ruochen’s prisoner because she had lost all hope of getting free.

Zhang Ruochen sat down with his legs crossed on the Evil Spirit’s head as he continued to utilize Empyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture. He wanted to regain his strength as quickly as he could. He did not like that sense of frailty one bit.

The Evil Spirit swirled its massive divine body as it rose into the air, flying toward the actual Peakless Mountain.

Since Ruan Ling had been captured, the Peakless Mountain formed by her illusion technique had crumpled and no longer existed.

If news of this battle spread, Zhang Ruochen's reputation would only grow even higher.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen would not seek self-publicity. Neither would Cang Long, who considered the outcome of this battle a humiliation.

Zhang Ruochen was not worried that the Emissaries Vigilant would learn about this incident. Cang Long and Ruan Ling must have given the Emissaries Vigilant a heads-up before they targeted the Demonic Sect of the Moon. The Emissaries Vigilant would not give a hoot about things that happened in the Bronze Furnace Plains.

Ling Feiyu was standing on one side, quietly looking on. Zhang Ruochen had given her too many surprises; she felt as if she was in a dream.

At a time when she desperately needed help, Zhang Ruochen appeared out of nowhere, coming to her and the Demonic Sect of the Moon's rescue. Only then she knew that Zhang Ruochen cared so much about her.

However, she was still not too happy. Zhang Ruochen had apparently known that Ruan Ling was impersonating her, yet he had still treated Ruan Ling so well.

The intimate scene between Zhang Ruochen and Ruan Ling then came to mind; she could not help but feel angry. Ruan Ling had impersonated her, and it felt as if something had actually happened between her and Zhang Ruochen.

The Evil Spirit moved speedily and arrived at the Peakless Mountain in less than two hours.

Zhang Ruochen stopped his self-cultivation and got to his feet. He had recovered half of his Saint Qi. Given more time, the rest of his Saint Qi would be replenished too.

Zhang Ruochen kept the Evil Spirit and Ruan Ling inside the Qiankun Realm before he landed with Ling Feiyu at the foot of Peakless Mountain.

Ruan Ling might be useful to him in the future, given her special identity.

“Lady Ling!”

The face of a Saint-level cultivator changed when he saw Ling Feiyu at the entrance.

He immediately turned around to go back inside the Demonic Sect of the Moon.

Unfortunately for him, Ling Feiyu moved in a flash and blocked the cultivator from the front.

“Why did you run when you saw me?” Ling Feiyu demanded harshly.

That Saint cultivator shivered. “N-No reason.”

“Tell me, what happened?” Ling Feiyu looked stern.

The cultivator dropped to his knees in front of her, his voice quivering. “Spare my life, Lady Ling. It wasn’t me but Master Hong and the others!”

Zhang Ruochen went up to them. “People of the Fane of Youshen have entered Peakless Mountain. But they are just small fries, nothing to worry about.”

Ling Feiyu immediately knew what it was about upon hearing that.

“I can tolerate disagreement, but not those who sell us out!”
There was a horrible murderous look in Ling Feiyu’s eyes.

After Ruan Ling had lured her out recently, people from the Fane of Youshen immediately appeared inside the Demonic Sect of the Moon. There was only one explanation for this: there had been traitors in the sect letting people from the Fane of Youshen in.

Perhaps they thought she could not come back again, and that was the reason for their impunity.

Luckily for her, Zhang Ruochen had come just in time, and those people from the Fane of Youshen did not have more time for preparation. Otherwise, the Demonic Sect of the Moon would have fallen into their hands. After all, no one else in the Demonic Sect of the Moon could counter Cang Long.

“Spread my words: seal off the entire sect. No one gets in and out of the sect without my permission,” instructed Ling Feiyu.

“Aye!” A few disciples guarding the entrance quickly responded.

They all could see that Ling Feiyu was furious. No one dared to disobey her.

Ignoring the Saint cultivator, who kneeled on the ground, Ling Feiyu lifted off and flew straight into the Sanctuary of the Demon Emperor.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He stepped out, performing a Dimensional Shift and disappearing into thin air.

That cultivator was still kneeling on the ground, too afraid to get up, let alone flee.

The Sanctuary of the Demon Emperor stood on the Holy Golden Peak. Whoever entered the Sanctuary of the Demon Emperor would get to control the Demonic Sect of the Moon.

In the past, Zhang Ruochen had brought his men to storm Peakless Mountain, turning the Demonic Sect of the Moon upside down. Not even Shi Qianjue had been able to stop him.

It was also during that time that Ling Xiu, Ling Feiyu’s father, had walked out.

Many disciples were not happy with Shi Qianjue, so they followed Ling Xiu, and the sect had split in half since then.

However, after the Infernal Court invaded the Kunlun Realm, Ling Feiyu had returned to Peakless Mountain. With her powerful ability, she had reunited the two factions, and the sect had finally become whole again.

Some descendants of Shi Qianjue remained in the sect. These people were not very satisfied with Ling Feiyu and wanted to replace her.

Hence, when the people from the Fane of Youshen came, those who opposed Ling Feiyu turned against the sect by opening the door and inviting the Fane of Youshen inside.

In the Sanctuary of the Demon Emperor, Hong Yuantong and a few other Shi Qianjue's direct descendants were talking and laughing with the fighters from the Fane of Youshen.

They learned from the mouths of these fighters that Ling Feiyu had been trapped, that she could no longer come back. So they were extremely happy now, thinking that they could finally control the sect.

“Ling Feiyu is an idiot trying to go against the Fane of Youshen. She deserves to die.”

“That's right. If the Fane of Youshen wants anything from the Demonic Sect of the Moon, it is because we have something valuable to offer. We will work with all of you as best as we can.”

“Don't worry. When Cang Long arrives, I will bring him to collect the treasure that Yueshen had left behind.”

Four Saint Kings, led by Hong Yuantong, were bending backward trying to please the three fighters from the Fane of Youshen.

A Precept Domain fighter from the Fane of Youshen nodded with a smile. “Very well. Smart people do the right things at the right time. As long as you all serve the Fane of Youshen, you will be rewarded handsomely. When—”

Before he could finish, a light sword cut him in half, splattering his blood in the sanctuary.

Everyone turned to look at the sanctuary entrance.

“L-Ling Feiyu!”

The faces of Hong Yuantong and his mates collapsed as fear filled their eyes.

Ling Feiyu stood at the doorway, holding the Heaven's Fall Blade with a murderous look in her eyes.

“All of you have gone so low as to become running dogs for the Fane of Youshen, handing over everything in the sect to them! Is this what Shi Qianjue has taught you?” Ling Feiyu’s face looked frosty, her voice bitter.

“We...”

Hong Yuantong and his mates were shivering involuntarily, too afraid to look at Ling Feiyu’s eyes.

“How dare you kill our man, Ling Feiyu! Don’t you fear that this will bring disaster to the Demonic Sect of the Moon?” a fighter of the Fane of Youshen shouted.

Ling Feiyu had effortlessly killed one of them with the strike of a sword. The remaining two Fane of Youshen fighters knew that they were no match for her. If a fight were to break out, they would not even survive one round.

So they could only make a verbal threat, hoping to scare off Ling Feiyu.

They were very uneasy. As far as they knew, Ruan Ling had dealt with Ling Feiyu. So why did Ling Feiyu still appear here? Had an accident happened?

“Do you need help, Feiyu?” Zhang Ruochen appeared beside Ling Feiyu out of nowhere with a smile on his face.

“Do you think that I can’t even kill those few people?” asked Ling Feiyu.

“Zhang Ruochen?”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, the faces of the two fighters of the Fane of Youshen changed.

Cang Long and Ruan Ling’s plan was to deal with Zhang Ruochen. Now Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu had appeared on Peakless Mountain while Cang Long and Ruan Ling had gone missing. How could they not be afraid?

“Run!”

The two Fane of Youshen fighters were trying to flee at once.

“Thinking of fleeing? What do you think Peakless Mountain is?” Ling Feiyu shouted.

The two Fane of Youshen fighters went all out, performing powerful Saint techniques as two beams of black Saint Light to strike at Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyue respectively, hoping that they could kill their way out.

Zhang Ruochen waved his hand and the dimension in front of him distorted at once, deflecting the black Saint Light attack in the direction from where it came.

Bang!

The two Fane of Youshen fighters did not see this coming, and both were hit by their own black Saint Lights. They were sent flying backward before crashing into the wall of the sanctuary.

At the same time, Ling Feiyu had cut off the black Saint Light with her sword and appeared beside another Fane of Youshen fighter, severing his head with the strike of her sword.

She then followed with a Sword of Ultimacy, remotely decapitating the heads of the two Fane of Youshen fighters who had crashed into the wall earlier. Her movement was swift and clean without hesitation.

Chapter 1970 - Father of Divine Demon Rat

Chapter 1970: Father of Divine Demon Rat

Ling Feiyu caught the returning Heaven's Sear Blade, then pointed it at Hong Yuantong and his mates with powerful murderous intent.

"Do you realize you have made a grave mistake that will bring a calamity of extermination to the sect, Ling Feiyu? Do you want to keep making this mistake?" Hong Yuantong shouted.

Ling Feiyu looked at Hong Yuantong with a deadly gaze.

"Things have come to such a pass, yet you have not thought about repenting. Do you think that I'm too afraid to kill you, Hong Yuantong?"

"Repent? What wrong have I done? The Kunlun Realm is teetering now, and it could collapse at any moment. I am all for the sect. Working with the Fane of Youshen is for the good of the sect. When the Kunlun Realm falls, the sect will have the Fane of Youshen's support. This is the grand plan that the sect leader, Shi Qianjue has laid. How dare you question his wisdom?" Hong Yuantong argued eloquently.

With Shi Qianjue as his backer, he was not worried that Ling Feiyu would do anything to him. So even though things had gone south, he still had the fortitude to argue with Ling Feiyu.

"How dare you use Shi Qianjue to pressure me! If Shi Qianjue betrays the sect, I will kill him myself, moreso you!" Ling Feiyu's eyes were filled with more bitterness now.

Upon hearing that, Hong Yuantong stepped back involuntarily. "What are you going to do, Ling Feiyu? Are you trying to break the sect apart?"

While he spoke, Ling Feiyu made her move, her sword coming out in a flash.

Before Hong Yuantong knew what was going on, a flash of sword light had sliced his head off his neck.

“Ling Feiyu, how could you...”

Hong Yuantong’s eyes were wide open, indignation filling his eyes.

Until the moment he died, he could still not believe that Ling Feiyu would actually kill him.

His head dropped to the ground, and his vision dimmed as he was as dead as a doornail.

Despite having practiced self-cultivation a thousand years longer than Ling Feiyu and a cultivation base of the Greater Precept World with solid combat strength, his strength was not even one-tenth of Ling Feiyu’s.

Seeing Hong Yuantong die at the hands of Ling Feiyu, the remaining Fane of Youshen Saint Kings quaked in their boots as they sensed death looming.

They immediately dropped to their knees to beg for their lives. “Have mercy on us, Lady Ling. We were blinded by self-interest when Hong Yuantong conned us into this. Please give us a chance to redeem ourselves. We will obey your command from now on and never have two minds again.”

They knew without a doubt which side of their bread was buttered. They would not get away with it by simply dropping names. The only way to stay alive was to beg for mercy.

They had wanted to run, but they had seen the fate of the Fane of Yushen’s three Precept Domain fighters and Hong Yuantong; Ling Feiyu had effortlessly killed them all. Besides, Zhang Ruochen was there, so they could not possibly flee.

Ling Feiyu ignored their plea as her killing intent grew. “The sect does not tolerate traitors. You should have known the consequences the day you betrayed the sect.”

Once she finished, she wanted to kill the three individuals.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly appeared beside Ling Feiyu to stop her. “The Kunlun Realm is at war with enemies right now. Killing them will change nothing. Why don’t you send them to

the Battlefield of Merits to kill the Infernal Court cultivators so that they can make up for their mistakes?”

“We will kill the enemies on the Battlefield of Merit. Please give us a chance to redeem our sins, Lady Ling,” said the three fighters still kneeling on the ground.

As long as they could stay alive, they will go to more dangerous places than the Battlefield of Merits.

Ling Feiyu turned to look at Zhang Ruochen. After staring at him for a moment, the murderous look in her eyes waned. “I will give all of you one chance: bring your people and proceed to the Battlefield of Merits immediately. Fight the Infernal Court’s army and honor the good name of the sect. If anyone dares to disregard me, don’t blame me for not showing you mercy.”

“Yes. Yes. Yes.”

The three looked as if they had been shown the greatest mercy in the world.

They gave Zhang Ruochen a grateful look before leaving the Sanctuary of the Demon Emperor as quickly as possible, fearing that Ling Feiyu might change her mind suddenly.

Had they known that things would end up this way, they would not have listened to Hong Yuantong’s abetment.

If they had resisted the Fane of Youshen while they waited for Ling Feiyu to come back, it would have been a meritorious service, and they would not have to fight on the Battlefield of Merits.

The Battlefield of Merits was extremely dangerous. If they went, they might have no chance of coming back to Peakless Mountain again.

Of course, that was the best outcome they could receive now. If Zhang Ruochen had not spoken for them, they would have died by Ling Feiyu’s sword.

So in that regard, they really had Zhang Ruochen to thank.

On the same day, the three revered sect elders brought hundreds of powerful Saint cultivators and left Peakless

Mountain, rushing to the Battlefield of Merits in the Central Region.

Meanwhile, Ling Feiyu and Zhang Ruochen arrived at the Chillfrost Dungeon, where the Demonic Sect of the Moon held its prisoners.

Those sect fighters, who were strong supporters of Ling Feiyu choosing not to connive with Hong Yuantong, were being imprisoned here.

The Chillfrost Dungeon was extremely old, and no one knew how long it had existed. It was extremely deep. The lower it went, the colder it got.

Legend had it that not even Supreme Saint Great Sages dared to stay on the lowest floor of the dungeon for long, because the cold was too much to bear.

Ling Feiyu released many imprisoned sect members along the path as they traveled all the way down.

Fortunately, these fighters had just been imprisoned recently, and Hong Yuantong had not gotten the chance to execute them. Hence, they were all safe and sound.

Had that not been the case, Ling Feiyu would not have shown them any mercy; she would have killed all the traitors at once.

As soon as they came to an extremely cold floor, Zhang Ruochen saw an acquaintance in a cell.

“It’s been a long time, Sister Qi!” said Zhang Ruochen with a smile.

The prisoner was no one else but Qi Feiyu, whom he had met in the Liangyi Sect back then. She was a Saintess in the Demonic Sect of the Moon.

When Zhang Ruochen stormed up to Peakless Mountain for the sake of Mu Lingxi back then, he had also seen Qi Feiyu. After so many years, Qi Feiyu was now a powerful Saint King fighter, who was highly regarded in the Demonic Sect of the Moon.

Speaking of which, during the early stages of the Demonic Sect of the Moon’s split, the Qi Clan had followed Shi

Qianjue. However, Qi Feiyu had followed Ling Xiu, or more precisely, followed Ling Feiyu.

As such, Ling Feiyu had been looking after Qi Feiyu, allowing her to attain Saint Kinghood so quickly. Ling Feiyu had put her in charge of almost all affairs concerning the Saintess Palace.

Now, the top fighters of the Qi Clan had been sent to the Battlefield of Merits, and Qi Feiyu had become the only exception.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, Qi Feiyu could not help feeling a little surprised. She got up and bowed before Ling Feiyu. “My Lady.”

Ling Feiyu nodded in acknowledgment and waved her hand to open the prison door.

“Lady Ling, with your safe return, the sect will no longer have to fall into the hands of a sinister villain like Hong Yuantong,” said Qi Feiyu.

“Hong Yuantong colluded with the enemy and sold our sect out. I have already beheaded him and sent all the Saints, as well as Saint Kings who were involved in this matter, to the Battlefield of Merits. So you don’t need to worry about anything,” said Ling Feiyu.

Qi Feiyu was startled at first upon hearing this. She then broke into a smile. “My Lady is wise indeed.”

Needless to say, Qi Feiyu had guessed the fact that the sect could survive this catastrophe must have something to do with Zhang Ruochen.

Ling Feiyu then removed the seal on Qi Feiyu. “You go and stabilize the situation to avoid panic from happening in the sect.”

“Yes, My Lady,” replied Qi Feiyu immediately.

After nodding slightly to Zhang Ruochen, Qi Feiyu quickly went out at once.

Suddenly, a light flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes as he noticed something.

He faded into a stream and lunged into a passage on one side.

Upon seeing this, Ling Feiyu was unwittingly taken aback a little, and she followed him in a hurry.

Zhang Ruochen stopped as he came to the end of the passage, There, he saw another acquaintance in a cell.

The one imprisoned in this cell was none other than the Head Rat, also known as Divine Demon Rat, of the 36 Guardian Beasts of the Demonic Sect of the Moon.

Back then, Divine Demon Rat had been insufferably arrogant. But when he had met his nemesis Blackie, he had become obedient like a child, bearing the responsibility of protecting Mu Lingxi in the Demonic Sect of the Moon.

At this moment, other than Divine Demon Rat, there was another person in the dungeon.

Zhang Ruochen had wasted no time in rushing there precisely because he had sense this person's presence.

This person was short and thin with a sharp mouth and cheeks that were reminiscent of a monkey. He had two big, exposed yellow fangs in his mouth, and a pair of eyes that were as small as mung beans. He looked as sleazy as one could get. This person and Divine Demon Rat were cast from the same mold.

The Re-awakener!

A thought flashed in Zhang Ruochen's mind.

Having met Jiang Yunchong and Hong Tianji, he became more familiar with the aura of a Re-awakener.

Divine Demon Rat looked at Zhang Ruochen, suddenly having a pleasantly surprised look on his face. "Master Zhang, are you here to save me?"

"I thought you already ran away. I didn't expect to see you being imprisoned in the Chillfrost Dungeon too." Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Based on his understanding of Divine Demon Rat, this guy was the most slippery person he knew, and he would flee

quicker than another else at the slightest danger. Having a spine was hardly associated with him, so theoretically, Divine Demon Rat should not have been there.

Divine Demon Rat glared at him and sounded a little angry. “If not for those insidious guys attacking me from the dark, they would not have caught me.”

As he turned his head and saw Ling Feiyu, who had just appeared, a smile spread across his face. “Lady Ling, I’m glad that you are all right. The old boy, Hong Yuantong said that you were taken away by the Fane of Youshen. Please don’t spare him.”

“Don’t worry, Hong Yuantong has died under my sword. Who is this next to you?” Ling Feiyu looked at the middle-aged man who looked like Divine Demon Rat.

Divine Demon Rat chuckled. “Let me introduce; this is my father.”

Upon hearing this, both Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu had a surprised look on their faces.

Divine Demon Rat was excavated by the Demonic Sect of the Moon from a medieval ruin several decades ago. At that time, he was alone. How did this father of his suddenly come about?

In particular, both of them could see that this middle-aged man, who looked like Divine Demon Rat, possessed a very high level of cultivation. He gave off a sense of mystery.

“May I ask, how should I call you? What is your relationship with the sect?” Ling Feiyu was very solemn.

The reason for asking this was because she had never seen the middle-aged man before or even heard of his existence. Thus, she was not sure whether he was a member of the sect.

The middle-aged man behaved the same as Divine Demon Rat; his smile was sleazy. “You can call me Spirit-Devouring King. I have been in the sect for 100,000 years. So what do you think my relationship with the sect should be?”

Chapter 1971 - The Sect's Two Treasured Artifacts

Chapter 1971: The Sect's Two Treasured Artifacts

Standing in front of the Chillfrost Dungeon, Ling Feiyu's eyes were full of shock because she could not believe what the middle-aged man had said.

On the contrary, Zhang Ruochen looked calm and cheerful. "With the Demonic Sect of the Moon's history, the existence of a Re-Awakener from the ancient period is expected. But, since you have awakened, why didn't you stop the traitors from colluding with the enemies, Sir?"

The Spirit-Devouring King stroked his beard as his eyes gleamed. "You are quite knowledgeable for being aware of the Re-Awakener's existence. It's not that I didn't want to take care of the matter. I have just been hibernating in the Chillfrost Dungeon. It wasn't until recently when I sensed extremely strong energy fluctuations that I woke up."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. The powerful fluctuations in energy mentioned by the Spirit-Devouring King had to be his unreserved release of the power of Yanshen's Leg.

Even though he was far away, he had still alarmed the Spirit-Devouring King, waking him up from his deep sleep.

Speaking of which, the Chillfrost Dungeon's environment was indeed very suitable for hibernation.

Zhang Ruochen turned to look at the cave in the dungeon. It was obvious that the cave was only dug out recently, which showed what the Spirit-Devouring King said was true, and that it had indeed just come out of the ground.

"You have woken up at the right time, Sir. With you at the helm of the Demonic Sect of the Moon, I believe no one can pose a threat to the sect again." Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Normally, a Re-Awakener would be extremely powerful, a Saint King who could be regarded as a supremo of an era.

The Spirit-Devouring King looked proud. “It is true. I won’t allow anyone from sticking the sect up. But unless it is absolutely necessary, I will not act or appear in public. The fewer people know about my existence, the better.”

Sure enough, like Jiang Yunchong and Hong Tianji, the Spirit-Devouring King was also very low-key. He did not want to go into the open for the time being.

Re-Awakeners like him were the inner strength of the Kunlun Realm.

With the wave of a hand, Ling Feiyu had opened the dungeon door.

“Rest assured, Sir, we will not speak about you to anyone else,” Ling Feiyu promised solemnly.

The Spirit-Devouring King nodded. “Very well, release the other sect fighters first. Don’t worry about me.”

Hearing this, Ling Feiyu could not help but bow to the Spirit-Devouring King. Then, she turned around to free the other Saint fighters imprisoned there.

As soon as Ling Feiyu left, the Head Rat approached Zhang Ruochen. “Master Zhang, why did you come to the sect? I thought you would have gone to Lake Phoenix to look for the little Saintess?”

“I did plan to see Lingxi, but I heard that Cang Long wanted to attack the Demonic Sect of the Moon. So I rushed over first. Have you seen Lingxi recently?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Head Rat chuckled. “Of course, I have seen her. I just returned from Lake Phoenix, where major changes have occurred. Most people will not find it. If you would like to see the little Saintess, I can lead the way, Master Zhang.”

“Very well, take me there once we settle things here,” said Zhang Ruochen.

If it were not for Cang Long and Ruan Ling’s plan to set him up, he would have originally gone to Lake Phoenix to reunite

with Mu Lingxi and Concubine Lin. Only then would he come to Peakless Mountain to see Ling Feiyu.

Although his plan was disrupted, it mattered little to him.

Not long after, Ling Feiyu freed all the prisoners and left the Chillfrost Dungeon with Zhang Ruochen.

As for the Head Rat and the Spirit-Devouring King, they chose to stay in the Chillfrost Dungeon. The father and son had just met again after 100,000 years; they surely had a lot to say to each other. The Chillfrost Dungeon was extremely quiet, and no one was going to disturb them. So, it was the most suitable place for the father and son to talk.

There was a bamboo forest on Saint Water Peak, and it was quiet, as well as calming, to walk on its paths.

Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu were walking side by side. After a long while, still, no one said a word. Things became a little uncomfortably silent.

Just then, Saint Light shone from the sky and into Zhang Ruochen's hands—it was a communication talisman.

After reading the contents of the talisman, Zhang Ruochen could not help but smile. "It seems that Cang Long really cares about Ruan Ling."

"What is it about?" asked Ling Feiyu.

Zhang Ruochen handed over the communication talisman.

"Cang Long wants Ruan Ling back. He is asking me to make an offer. I am going to make good use of this opportunity."

"What are you going to do?" asked Ling Feiyu after reading the content on the communication talisman.

"I will agree with him. Since he wants Ruan Ling back, the Fane of Youshen will have to let go of something valuable. It so happens that I need something from them. Maybe this is the opportunity for me." Zhang Ruochen smiled.

It made no sense to kill Ruan Ling just like that. It was better to use her to exchange with something valuable.

After thinking about it, Zhang Ruochen engraved a communication talisman and cast it out.

Next, he took out twenty bottles of Meritorious Sword-cleansing Essence. “This is for you. It was my mistake to give it to Ruan Ling before this.”

Ling Feiyu glanced at Zhang Ruochen. She did not refuse but reached out to take the twenty bottles of Meritorious Sword-cleansing Essence.

“Feiyu, I—”

Zhang Ruochen had wanted to say something, but before he could say it, Ling Feiyu cut in. “You don’t need to say anything more. I’ve heard what you want to say before. I’ve thought it through all these years. You and I are people who pursue the greater things in life and should not be bogged down by romantic relationships. Before attaining divinity, I will not consider going into a relationship.”

Looking at Ling Feiyu’s determined eyes, Zhang Ruochen knew that she had made up her mind and would not make any further changes. He could not help but nod. “Very well, let us only talk about this after we have attained divinity. Without attaining divinity, we will only be mortals.”

The two could not help but smile at each other.

After making things clear, they felt at ease facing each other. There would be no more indecision and worries.

“What is the thing that Cang Long after, Feiyu?” asked Zhang Ruochen curiously.

A strange light flashed in Ling Feiyu’s eyes. “The Moon Soul Pearl, left by Yueshen in the past. Legend has it that it was formed by the condensed essence of the Guanghan Realm. It can nourish the flesh, as well as the Saint Soul, and is usually in the sect leader’s custody. Only those who have made significant achievements are qualified to practice self-cultivation with the help of the Moon Soul Pearl.”

Outsiders only knew that the Demonic Sect of the Moon possessed a supreme sacred artifact, the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death. It was the most powerful artifact they had.

However, few people knew that there was another artifact left behind by Yueshen; it was a divine artifact that was equally important to the Demonic Sect of the Moon.

The fact that the Demonic Sect of the Moon could stand until today with many powerful men born from generation to generation had a great deal to do with the Moon Soul Pearl.

“The Moon Soul Pearl is still on Peakless Mountain?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Ling Feiyu nodded. “Yeah, the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death and the Moon Soul Pearl are the heirlooms of the Demonic Sect of the Moon. Unless the main shrine has fallen, no one must carry the pearl out of Peakless Mountain. Let’s go. Let me show you the thing.”

As she finished speaking, Ling Feiyu faded into a stream of light and flew out of the bamboo forest, heading straight to the Saint Golden Peak.

Zhang Ruochen followed with no hesitation.

He was really interested in the artifact left by Yueshen.

There was a hidden cave on Saint Golden Peak, guarded by layers of arrays on the outside. It was difficult for even the best Saint King to break in.

Few people in the entire Demonic Sect of the Moon had mastered the way to enter the hidden cave.

As they came to a cliff, Ling Feiyu performed a secret technique, opening a passage in the cliff, and then stepped in.

Zhang Ruochen was unworried as he followed closely from behind.

The moment the two of them entered, the passage opening disappeared without a trace.

The passage was narrow, but they did not go far before the space opened up in front of them.

At the end of the passage was an open space filled with strong Saint Qi of heaven and earth. It was so thick that it was on the verge of condensation.

A quaint and tall sacred furnace suddenly attracted Zhang Ruochen's attention.

This sacred furnace was twenty yards high and over ten yards in diameter. Its body was blue and green with mysterious patterns, as records of mysterious Saint techniques had been engraved all over its surface.

No doubt this sacred furnace was the Demonic Sect of the Moon's treasure—the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death, an extremely ancient supreme artifact.

On the surface of the sacred furnace were several dark red patches, which was rumored to be the divine bloodstain.

Like the Azuresky Pagoda, the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death contained no implement spirit.

Otherwise, with the presence of this Bronze Furnace of Life and Death, and unless the top fighters came personally, no one could ever attack Peakless Mountain.

“The Bronze Furnace of Life and Death is not just an offensive supreme artifact. For the sect, the greater value lies in the furnace's internal time flow rate, which differs from the outside world and can reach a ratio of ten to one,” said Ling Feiyu.

Zhang Ruochen's expression suddenly changed upon hearing this. He was very surprised. “The Bronze Furnace of Life and Death is a treasure that contains the power of time. No wonder the Demonic Sect of the Moon cultivators could improve so fast in their self-cultivation.”

Artifacts of time were extremely precious. Even the Fane of Time possessed few of them, especially those with a high time flow ratio.

As far as Zhang Ruochen knew, the most famous time artifact in the Kunlun Realm was the Seal of the Celestial Wheel, which was in Chi Yao's hands. It had a time ratio of 30:1. It was followed by the Sword Pavilion, whose time ratio on each level was different. It was 7:1 on the seventh level.

With the help of time artifacts, one could take less time to do more things.

It had never crossed his mind that the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death was actually a time artifact with a 10:1 time ratio, which was already very rare. Ten months of self-cultivation practice inside was equivalent to one month outside.

It would be odd if the Demonic Sect of the Moon's two artifacts—the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death and the Moon Soul Pearl—could not even produce some powerful fighters.

“Not only that, the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death can also release a strange flame that refines the physique. The results would be even more wonderful when it is used in combination with the Moon Soul Pearl, which is right inside the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death. You saved the sect this time. I can use my authority to allow you to practice for a period in the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death,” said Ling Feiyu.

Few people in the Demonic Sect of the Moon knew about the secrets of the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death and the Moon Soul Pearl, let alone outsiders.

With that in mind, allowing outsiders to use the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death and the Moon Soul Pearl was even more unthinkable. Since ancient times, there had been no precedents of the Demonic Sect of the Moon allowing this to happen.

This time, however, Zhang Ruochen had saved the Demonic Sect of the Moon from a catastrophe. That made him qualify for an exception from the sect.

Chapter 1972 - Insight of Sword Ten

Chapter 1972: Insight of Sword Ten

“As far as I know, there is still a time and space artifact in the Demonic Sect of the Moon, right?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

“There is indeed another artifact called the Ten-Directions Chaotic Element Pearl made by the late Saint Monk Xumi. It contains a Chaotic Element World with a time ratio of seven to one. This is not a secret. Many people know about it.” Ling Feiyu nodded.

“However, the Ten-Directions Chaotic Element Pearl is not on Peakless Mountain right now. It has been taken away by Shi Qianjue. That’s the reason why many sect members left with Shi Qianjue.”

As Ling Feiyu talked about this, she could not help but feel a little angry. The Ten-Directions Chaotic Element Pearl was the most precious artifact of the Demonic Sect of the Moon. It should have stayed in Peakless Mountain. By taking it away, Shi Qianjue had breached the rules of the sect.

It was a pity that Shi Qianjue was too strong for even her father to defeat. For the time being, it was impossible to force Shi Qianjue to return the Ten-Directions Chaotic Element Pearl to the sect.

“It’s a shame since the Kunlun Realm is reviving now. If the Ten-Directions Chaotic Element Pearl is still on Peakless Mountain, it will definitely be able to increase the Demonic Sect of the Moon’s strength in a short period.” Zhang Ruochen sighed.

Although the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death had a higher time ratio, it possessed a limitation—only a tiny number of people had the opportunity to use it. It was far from comparable to the Ten-Directions Chaotic Element Pearl.

There was a glint in Ling Feiyu's eyes. "Once I attain Supreme Sainthood, I will definitely take back the Ten-Directions Chaotic Element Pearl from Shi Qianjue. How can he be allowed to take the sect's artifact as his own property?"

Ling Feiyu's eyes softened again as she looked at Zhang Ruochen. "You may enter the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death now. I will let it run for ten days, which will be 100 days inside. I believe it will help you."

"There's no hurry. Wait until I have talked with Cang Long. Only then I will enter the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death to practice self-cultivation." Zhang Ruochen smiled. He did not reject Ling Feiyu's kindness.

Since Ling Feiyu said that the combination of the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death and the Moon Soul Pearl would produce an amazing effect, he was eager to try it out. After all, such an opportunity was extremely rare. He wanted to seize it while it came along.

After a slight hesitation, Ling Feiyu took out a brocade box. "Although there are Godstones in the sect, there are few, and I can't appropriate them all for myself. There are four of them here."

Zhang Ruochen could not help being a little surprised upon hearing that. He did not expect that Ling Feiyu would actually give four Godstones to him. He still remembered when he had only got two Godstones from Kong Lanyou and Luo Xu each when he contacted them earlier.

Reaching out to take the brocade box, Zhang Ruochen looked at Ling Feiyu. "How many Saint Stones are needed for the four Godstones?"

"Is my life not worthy of these four Godstones?" Ling Feiyu raised an eyebrow.

"No amount of Godstones can be as good as you," Zhang Ruochen hurriedly explained.

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen reached out to hold one of Ling Feiyu's hands. "Thank you very much, Feiyu."

Ling Feiyu quickly pulled her hand away before she turned around. The corners of her mouth rose slightly in a smile as she walked outside.

Upon seeing this, Zhang Ruochen thought Ling Feiyu that Ling Feiyu was angry, he quickly caught up with her.

As soon as he walked out of the hidden cave, he received two communication talismans—one was from Cang Long, and the other was from Moyin.

He read Moyin's message first, and a smile suddenly broke out on his face. The discovery of Godstones in the mysterious ancient veins was indeed great news.

Immediately after, he sent out a communication talisman so that Moyin would come as soon as possible to join him on Peakless Mountain. It happened that he had collected a large number of Infernal Court cultivator corpses, which Moyin could absorb as a nutrient.

Then Zhang Ruochen checked the message from Cang Long. As expected, Cang Long did not agree with the condition he had put forward.

His condition was for Cang Long to prepare five types of Five-Element fetishes, which were a lot.

“I really have a good appetite there, demanding for the Five-Element fetishes! Let's not talk about whether the Fane of Youshen could collect all five Five-Element fetishes. Even if they can, they won't use them all in exchange for Ruan Ling.” Ling Feiyu shook her head.

“I know. It is just a tactic of negotiation. It is normal to set a higher bar higher first. Otherwise, it is pointless to negotiate.”

After saying so, he engraved a communication talisman again and cast it out.

This time, he lowered his demand slightly, just asking for four Five-Element fetishes.

Before long, Cang Long responded but still did not give in to his demand.

After continuous bargaining, Zhang Ruochen sent a message, asking the Fane of Youshen to prepare no less than two fetishes.

Atop a mountain that was ten of thousands of miles away from Peakless Mountain, Cang Long was sitting on its peak. He reached out to catch the communication talisman sent by Zhang Ruochen.

“Damn Zhang Ruochen!” Cang Long could not hold back his anger after he read the contents of the communication talisman.

At least two fetishes and no room for negotiation were too much.

Cang Long did not even feel like giving out a strand of hair, much less the fetishes. How he wished he could rip Zhang Ruochen into pieces right then.

Sadly, he had no choice. Ruan Ling was still in Zhang Ruochen’s hands. In any case, it was impossible for him not to save Ruan Ling.

Previously, he had been convinced that Zhang Ruochen had violated Ruan Ling. After thinking long and hard about it, he figured that it was impossible. After all, Ling Feiyu had been with Zhang Ruochen at the time, and it would have been impossible for Zhang Ruochen to do anything to Ruan Ling in front of Ling Feiyu.

Furthermore, he also believed that Ruan Ling would never let Zhang Ruochen violate her dignity.

Still feeling angry, Cang Long engraved another communication talisman and sent it back to the Fane of Youshen.

He could not decide on this matter, and so he could only ask Youshen.

He knew Youshen’s temper very well. Even if Youshen loved Ruan Ling very much, it was probably impossible for him to give away two fetishes. One was already the limit.

Sure enough, as he had expected, Youshen replied that he would only take out one fetish. He also told Cang Long that if he and Ruan Ling could not bring Zhang Ruochen back to the Fane of Youshen, the two of them would not have to go back anymore.

“Zhang Ruochen’s demand for the Five-Element fetishes must be for the preparation to form an immortal body. At this stage, he still can’t use them. Screw it! I will give him the two Five-Element fetishes first, then find a chance to kill him and take back the Five-Element fetishes,” said Cang Long to himself.

With a flip of his hand, Cang Long took out a piece of divine gold that was the color of blood. It was Heavenly Blood Raw Gold, an extremely precious metallic fetish. It was something he had stumbled upon in a macroworld that had been on the verge of collapse many years ago. At first, he had planned to use it to forge the strongest immortal body for himself.

Now, Youshen was only willing to part with one fetish. So, to get Ruan Ling back, he had no choice but to temporarily bring this Heavenly Blood Raw Gold out.

He meant for it to be temporary because he would take the Heavenly Blood Raw Gold from Zhang Ruochen later. By then, he would definitely make Zhang Ruochen suffer, so much so that Zhang Ruochen would wish he was already dead.

Saint Golden Peak, Peakless Mountain.

Zhang Ruochen could not hold back his laughter when he received Cang Long’s message. “It looks like the Fane of Youshen values Ruan Ling very much; they are willing to use two Five-Element fetishes in exchange for her.”

Zhang Ruochen quickly engraved a communication talisman and send it out at once.

Cang Long told him that it would take some time for the Five-Element fetishes to be sent to the Kunlun Realm. As such, Zhang Ruochen agreed for the exchange to be held at the Sub-Terminal of Merits nearest to Peakless Mountain half a month from now.

Before the exchange, Zhang Ruochen could first enter the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death to practice his self-cultivation.

“You are planning to forge the strongest Five-Element chaotic immortal body in the future, right? But it is difficult to gather all the Five-Element fetishes. Even if you have gotten them all, it will be very difficult to succeed. It will only be more difficult than when you cultivated the Five-Element Chaotic Body last time,” said Ling Feiyu.

“I know, of course. But if you want to be powerful enough, work harder than everyone else.” Zhang Ruochen let out a smile.

Ling Feiyu looked at Zhang Ruochen for a moment and then took out a quaint animal skin from a dimensional artifact. “You have practiced Sword Nine to the Completion Stage. You may find this thing useful.”

“What is this?” Zhang Ruochen took the animal skin in his hand.

The next moment, his attention was completely captured by the animal skin. He could not take his eyes off it.

After a long while, Zhang Ruochen finally came out of his little world, his eyes full of surprise. “How did you get this personal insight of Sword Ten, Feiyu?”

He had practiced Sword Nine to the Completion Stage, and what he desired most was to get the personal insights of Sword Ten so he could begin to comprehend Sword Ten.

However, as far as he knew, apart from the Sword Pavilion and Wanxiang City, there seemed to be no place where personal insights of Sword Ten existed—not even in the Wang Clan, which was known as the House of Swordsmanship.

“In the Heaven’s Fall Blade lineage, there once was a grand master who attained Supreme Sainthood and comprehended the mystery of Sword Ten from the

Wordless Sword Manual

. Few people know this. Legend has it that Sword Ten has five levels. It is a pity that this grand master of Heaven's Fall Blade has only attained the fourth level, which is far from the Completion Stage.”

For nearly ten thousand years, it seemed that only Sword Emperor Xue Hongchen had practiced Sword Ten to the Completion Stage. Others could not even find the entry to Sword Ten practice.

“How far have your comprehension of Sword Ten gone, Feiyu?” asked Zhang Ruochen curiously.

Ling Feiyu shook her head. “Sword Ten is too mysterious. I have been studying it for a while but have only reached the second level. I guess the Sword Soul has a great deal to do with Sword Ten's practice. The stronger the Sword Soul, the easier it will be to master Sword Ten.”

“The Sword Soul? It appears that I have to use up all the Meritorious Sword-cleansing Essence that I have exchanged for as soon as possible,” whispered Zhang Ruochen.

His Sword Soul was extremely powerful, not far from a qualitative transformation.

If Ling Feiyu's guess was anything to go by, he could comprehend Sword Ten in half the time once his Sword Soul completed the transformation.

After waiting for nearly a day, Moyin, through the teleportation array at Sub-Terminal of Merits, finally arrived at the Bronze Furnace Plains in Central Region from Dark Wasteland in the Eastern Region.

Zhang Ruochen studied Moyin for a while and smiled. “Not half bad at all. Your cultivation base has reached the Lesser Precept World. You must have benefited a lot from the ancient veins.”

“I have indeed benefited from the ancient veins to improve my cultivation level. Master, please take a look at these four Godstone that I excavated from the ancient veins.” Moyin handed a brocade box to Zhang Ruochen with both hands.

Zhang Ruochen reached to take the brocade box and opened it. A dazzling divine light burst out while the four Godstones neatly sat in the box.

“Well done, Moyin. You will get your reward. There are many corpses of the Infernal Court cultivators in the Qiankun Realm. You may have them as many as you want.” Zhang Ruochen sounded excited.

Ling Feiyu had given him four Godstones, and Moyin had brought him four more. Plus the eight unused ones he got from under the Cliff of Doom, that made it a total of sixteen Godstones. When the sundial was turned on, he could practice for sixteen years. And who knows, maybe he could successfully attain the realm of Precept Domain?

Once he was in the Precept Domain realm, his strength would increase tremendously. By then, there would be few Non-Supreme Saint beings who could pose a threat to him.

Chapter 1973 - Earth Sword Soul

Chapter 1973: Earth Sword Soul

After learning about the situation in Eastern Region from Moyin, Zhang Ruochen let Moyin enter the Qiankun Realm.

During the Battle of the Sword Vault Palace and the Battle of Xianji Mountain, he had collected hundreds of thousands of Infernal Court cultivator corpses, most of which were of Saints and even Saint Kings. If Moyin could devour and absorb them all, her cultivation base would grow tremendously.

The Saint Devourer differed from ordinary cultivators in that as long as there were enough nutrients, her strength would continue to grow with almost no bottleneck.

Zhang Ruochen looked forward to it. He was eager to see how far Moyin's cultivation base could go after refining those corpses of the Infernal Court cultivators.

Moyin was a plant of origin of his, a part of his strength. So the stronger Moyin got, the better it was for him.

Now. Moyin had left the ancient veins, and Xie Chengzi had taken over the excavation job from her. Maybe he could excavate a few more Godstones from the veins.

After arranging everything, Zhang Ruochen followed Ling Feiyu into that hidden cave again.

“It costs a lot to start the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death. So make the best of the ten days,” said Ling Feiyu before Zhang Ruochen entered the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death.

He nodded slightly before lunging into the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death. He was not worried about whether Ling Feiyu would harm him.

The Bronze Furnace of Life and Death was so large that its internal space could accommodate dozens of people practicing

self-cultivation at the same time.

It was just that, this would reduce the cultivation effect.

Zhang Ruochen sat down as he landed at the bottom of the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death.

He finally saw the Moon Soul Pearl, the treasure of the Demonic Sect of the Moon. It was a strange divine pearl the size of a fist, exuding a soft brilliance glow just like a moon.

“The treasure left by Yueshen is really extraordinary. No wonder Cang Long wants to seize it,” Zhang Ruochen could not help but exclaim in awe.

Even in the Kunlun Realm, not many people knew that the Demonic Sect of the Moon possessed the Moon Soul Pearl. It was not known how Cang Long learned about it.

Outside the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death, as Ling Feiyu struck out a strange handprint, the furnace immediately came to life.

Supreme inscription patterns started to emerge along with a greenish glow, completely wrapping around the furnace. No one could enter the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death by force within ten days.

Staring at the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death for a moment, Ling Feiyu then turned around and exited the hidden cave.

Although Zhang Ruochen had defeated Cang Long, it did not mean that it would be fine and dandy for the Demonic Sect of the Moon. On the contrary, it was now a critical period where she needed to preside over the sect just in case anything happened.

She had never thought of counting on Divine Demon Rat’s father from the beginning.

It was undeniable that Divine Demon Rat’s father was powerful. But as long as she could handle it, why should she want to disturb him and prematurely reveal the Demonic Sect of the Moon’s trump cards?

Inside the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death, flames appeared and surrounded Zhang Ruochen.

“Let me try the flames released by the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death to see what is so special about it.”

He chanted in a low voice as he performed an Empyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture, taking the fire into his body.

According to Ling Feiyu, once entering the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death, the first thing to do was to take in the fire.

After refining the physical body and the Saint Soul, he was to absorb the cool air emitted by the Moon Soul Pearl so that his body and Saint Soul could be nourished. The combination of strength and gentleness would produce the best result.

If he were to keep taking in the fire, it would not only reduce the cultivation effect but also overwhelm his body. Also, if he was not careful, the fire could burn him into ashes.

While the fire entered his body, he felt a gentle energy warm his body.

However, as time went by, he started to feel a burning sensation. His body transformed into a large furnace with his skin turning red.

Nevertheless, he was still not in a hurry to take in the cool air from the Moon Soul Pearl. Instead, he continued to absorb more fire.

He possessed a Chenyan-Class Divine Purification Flame in his body. Combined with Yanshen’s Leg, he was highly immune to fire.

Since he was to practice self-cultivation, he wanted to reach his limit. Only then could he get the best results.

When the fire was raging all over and his body almost started to melt, he stopped taking in the fire. He remained in this state for several hours until he felt he had reached the limit before expelling the fire from his body.

Immediately afterward, he continued to utilize Empyrean Emperor Ming’s Scripture and turned to take in the energy of the Moon Soul Pearl.

Only by combining strength and gentleness could he build the strongest body.

“Phew!”

Zhang Ruochen let out a long breath as a light flashed in his eyes.

“The combination of the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death and the Moon Soul Pearl is indeed amazing. My body has attained the realm below Supreme Sainthood, and it can still be strengthened further. Even my Saint Soul and spiritual power are gradually becoming stronger. It seems that I really need to make the most of this opportunity,” said Zhang Ruochen to himself.

Soon, he revealed all his six Saint Souls, ready to make the most of the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death.

Both the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

and the piece of parchment that Ling Feiyu had given to him were taken out. These were the two things that Zhang Ruochen was going to focus on comprehending.

The

Secret Tome of Time and Space

had absorbed the divine power left by Saint Monk Xumi in the Null Dimension on Xianji Mountain. It contained a lot of Precepts of Time and Dimension. If he could comprehend them all thoroughly, it would definitely enhance his Path of Time and Dimension.

Meanwhile, the parchment given by Ling Feiyu had records of insights on the first four levels of Sword Ten. That meant a great deal to him.

He knew he could not take this parchment with him. So he had to hurry to comprehend it before returning it to Ling Feiyu when he exited the furnace.

He was immersed in this self-cultivation practice without realizing how much time had passed.

At a certain moment, the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death stopped, giving out no more fire, and everything returned to

normal.

He opened his eyes and stored all his six Saint Souls back in his body.

After a hundred days of closed-door cultivation, his cultivation base had undergone little improvement, but he got tremendous growth in other aspects.

Bang!

The Bronze Furnace of Life and Death opened.

Zhang Ruochen got to his feet and lunged out of it with no hesitation.

As soon as he got out, Ling Feiyu came into view.

With a smile on his face, he walked up to Ling Feiyu with the parchment containing the insights of the first two levels of Sword Ten in his hands. "Here it is."

Ling Feiyu took the parchment. "How were things going?"

"Sword Ten is really mysterious. It is impossible to comprehend it all in such a short time. But at least, I have got something." Zhang Ruochen smiled.

"Your Sword Soul is powerful enough. Grasping Sword Ten should take you little effort," said Ling Feiyu.

"Perhaps we can test it out on each other. But as for Sword Path, I will have to test it in actual combat," said Zhang Ruochen in excitement.

Now, he had finally caught up with Ling Feiyu in terms of Sword Path, qualifying him to spar with Ling Feiyu.

The two of them instantly left the hidden cave.

At the snow-covered lakeside on Saint Water Peak

.

Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu stood side by side on the lake. Two figures were waving their swords, their moves ordinary yet mysterious, totally incomprehensible to ordinary people.

The mountain, water, and people formed into one like a beautiful landscape painting. It was an extremely elegant and

otherworldly sight.

Those two figures were exactly the same as Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu, as they showed their respective understanding of Sword One to Sword Nine.

Sword Path was broad and deep. Even if learning from the manual, different persons would have slightly different comprehension.

It was this difference that made different people achieve different attainment in Sword Path.

At this stage, Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu could be regarded as the highest achievers in Sword Path in the Kunlun Realm. If someone could see them practicing Sword Path with their own eyes, they would definitely benefit a lot from it.

After a long time, the two sword-waving figures on the lake finally disappeared, leaving only the Ancient Abyssal Blade and the Heaven's Fall Blade still floating on the water, glowing in sword light.

Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu reached out their hands at the same time to retrieve their swords.

“I never expected your Sword Soul to have actually undergone a qualitative transformation, reaching the level of the Earth Sword Soul. This is something that many Supreme Saints who practice swordsmanship have never reached.” Ling Feiyu was very surprised.

Legend had it that the Sword Soul was divided into three levels: Man Sword Soul, Earth Sword Soul, and Heaven Sword Soul.

Generally, when practicing Sword Ten until a certain level, the soul of the Sword Will would form. At this time, it was called the Man Sword Soul.

It was necessary to use various methods to refine the Sword Soul so that it would continue to grow stronger until quantitative transformation turned into qualitative transformation. Then the Earth Sword Soul would form.

In contrast, the difficulty of cultivating an Earth Sword Soul was even more difficult than cultivating a higher-order Saint technique with Saint Kinghood and becoming an Array Master.

“It must be because I’ve used seventy bottles of Meritorious Sword-cleansing Essence.” Zhang Ruochen chortled.

Ling Feiyu shook her head. “It’s not only because of the Meritorious Sword-cleansing Essence. If one can rely on the Meritorious Sword-cleansing Essence to transform the Sword Soul into Earth Sword Soul, many people would have already succeeded. There has to be a deeper reason.”

Zhang Ruochen could not help but fall into thought upon hearing that.

If the key factor was not related to the Meritorious Sword-cleansing Essence, then it was most likely related to the Sword Vault Palace.

Before this, he had retreated into closed-door cultivation in the Sword Vault Palace. He could still vaguely remember that during this period, he had absorbed some special energy there. Perhaps that had led his Sword Soul to undergo some strange changes without his knowledge.

Anyway, it was a good thing for him.

Once the soul of the Sword Will transformed into the Earth Sword Soul, the sword technique would double in strength.

Besides, he had also greatly improved the Path of Time. If he was to fight Cang Long again with the Sword of Time, he should be able to pose a greater threat to Cang Long.

While he was lost in his thoughts, a communication talisman flew from the horizon.

He caught the communication talisman in his hand; it was from Cang Long.

“Cang Long is so desperate now. He cannot wait to exchange the Five-Element fetishes for Ruan Ling before the half a month period expires,” said Zhang Ruochen with a faint smile.

Since Cang Long wanted to bring forward the exchange, he was more than happy to oblige. After all, the earlier he got the fetishes, the better for him.

“Do you need me to go with you?” asked Ling Feiyu.

“That won’t be necessary. Wait for my good news on Peakless Mountain.”

After he said this, he performed a Dimensional Shift and disappeared without a trace.

At the foot of Peakless Mountain, ripples formed in the air as Zhang Ruochen reappeared.

A while later, a shadow emerged from the ground and appeared beside Zhang Ruochen. It was none other than Divine Demon Rat.

“What can I do for you, Master Zhang?” asked the Head Rat with a sleazy look.

“I have an exchange deal with Cang Long at the Sub-Terminal of Merits. When the deal is completed, I need you to...” Zhang Ruochen whispered to him.

Hearing the plan, Divine Demon Rat’s mung-bean-sized eyes lit up with excitement as he chuckled. “You got it. I am a dab hand in this. You can rest assured. Leave it to me, I’ll get a handle on it!”

Chapter 1974 - Disinformation

Chapter 1974: Disinformation

Leaving Peakless Mountain, Zhang Ruochen put on the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and brought the Head Rat along. They traveled at a thousand times the speed of sound toward the 66th Sub-Terminal of Merits, which was nearest to Peakless Mountain.

When they were about to arrive at the 66th Sub-Terminal of Merits, Zhang Ruochen and the Head Rat parted ways, with the Head Rat continuing toward their destination first.

Assuming that the Head Rat was ready, Zhang Ruochen finally took his time to enter the 66th Sub-Terminal of Merits.

“Zhang Ruochen!”

Cang Long emerged, his eyes filled with spite.

Life had been smooth sailing for him. Never did he expect that Zhang Ruochen would screw up his life. It was his biggest disgrace in life, which could only be washed away with Zhang Ruochen’s blood.

Zhang Ruochen walked over slowly with a smile on his face.

“Have you brought what I want, Cang Long?”

“Where is Ruan Ling?” Cang Long’s expression was sullen.

Zhang Ruochen knew that without seeing Ruan Ling, Cang Long would not hand over the Five-Element fetishes. So he opened the Qiankun Realm and released Ruan Ling.

He had sealed Ruan Ling’s spiritual power using a secret technique. She had completely lost the ability to fight back, and so there was no need to restrain her with any sacred rope.

“Ruan Ling!” There was deep concern in Cang Long’s eyes.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and pressed Ruan Ling's shoulder. "Don't worry, I have always treated women with care and affection. Your junior sister is fine. Give me the items, and I will return her to you."

Ruan Ling did not display any overreactions. Since her spiritual power was restrained, there was nothing she could do no matter how hard she tried to fight back.

She was wondering what Cang Long had promised Zhang Ruochen for him to let her go.

"Isn't that Cang Long? Why is Ruan Ling and Zhang Ruochen together?"

"There is no love lost between the Fane of Youshen and Zhang Ruochen, so what's the situation here?"

"It's really weird. Is there anything that we don't know here?"

The Sub-Terminal of Merits was a busy place with people coming and going. Soon, someone had noticed Zhang Ruochen, Cang Long, as well as Ruan Ling, and people started to talk about them.

Cang Long's expression was grim when he heard those chatters, his eyes almost bursting into flames.

"Get the hell out of here!" Cang Long roared in anger at those rubberneckers.

If they had not been in a Sub-Terminal of Merits, he would have smashed those people into a pulp.

Feeling the terrifying murderous intent of Cang Long, those rubberneckers quickly dispersed, for fear of inviting disasters upon themselves.

After calming himself down slightly, Cang Long took out a brocade box. "Everything you want is in it. Let Ruan Ling go."

Zhang Ruochen released his spiritual power to examine the brocade box in Cang Long's hand.

Cang Long did not stop Zhang Ruochen but let his spiritual power reach into the brocade box.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen pulled back his spiritual power and let out a satisfied smile. “Very good, things are okay. Let us do the swap now.”

While he spoke, he and Ruan Ling stepped toward Cang Long.

As fighting was not allowed in the Sub-Terminal of Merits, Zhang Ruochen had nothing to worry about.

Coming closer, Zhang Ruochen reached to grab the brocade box from Cang Long, and Cang Long grabbed Ruan Ling’s hand.

At almost the same time, Zhang Ruochen took his hand off Ruan Ling’s shoulder while Cang Long let go of the brocade box.

Cang Long pulled Ruan Ling back quickly and distanced himself from Zhang Ruochen.

“Are you okay, Ruan Ling?” Cang Long asked with great concern.

Ruan Ling stared at Zhang Ruochen intently, “I’m fine. What did you give Zhang Ruochen?”

“Good stuff, of course! Thanks for your generosity, Cang Long. I will make a move first.” Zhang Ruochen gently waved the brocade box at them and left, disappearing into thin air.

“Damn it!” Cang Long clenched his fists as killing intent violently surged in his chest.

How he wished that he could stop Zhang Ruochen and take back the Five-Element fetishes just now.

However, his injury did not allow him to do so. Besides, he was wary that Zhang Ruochen might pull the same trick on him again. So, he told himself to calm down.

Cang Long had also thought about asking for help and secretly ambushing Zhang Ruochen. But, it was likely that the two Five-Element fetishes might just fall into the third party’s hands if that happened.

Zhang Ruochen had many tricks up his sleeve, and since he dared to come, he must have come prepared.

With that thought in mind, Cang Long had no choice but to think better of it.

“What exactly did you give Zhang Ruochen?” asked Ruan Ling again.

Cang Long’s face was grave. “The Heavenly Blood Raw Gold and the Chaotic Anima Earth.”

Upon hearing this, Ruan Ling’s expression instantly changed. She never expected that the brocade box would contain such precious artifacts.

She knew that Cang Long possessed a piece of Heavenly Blood Raw Gold, whereas Youshen must have given the Chaotic Anima Earth.

I must get rid of Zhang Ruochen and take back the two artifacts.

Ruan Ling thought to herself.

Youshen must be very disappointed this time. If they still could not complete the mission, there will be the devil to pay for both of them.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen left, the Head Rat immediately swung into action.

“Do you know what was going on?” The Head Rat’s eyes darted around.

“Do you know?” asked someone curiously.

The Head Rat chuckled, revealing his two snow-white rat teeth and looking extremely sleazy. “Of course I know. Recently, Cang Long and Ruan Ling conspired to set Zhang Ruochen up. Little did they expect that Zhang Ruochen was one step ahead of them, wounding Cang Long in the process. Despite that, Cang Long escaped. His lover Ruan Ling was captured by Zhang Ruochen, though.

“With his lover captured, Cang Long’s been desperate to rescue Ruan Ling.

“As strange as it might sound, Zhang Ruochen made an exception this time and agreed on a deal with Cang Long,

releasing Ruan ling for some precious artifacts.”

Someone shook his head vigorously. “Impossible. With Zhang Ruochen’s character, how can he let his enemy go and risk his enemy coming back to haunt him later? Especially when he has a running feud with the Fane of Youshen. The hatred between them is as deep as the sea. He’s been dead set against the Fane of Youshen, so there’s no way he would have let Ruan Ling go.”

“However, the question is, Zhang Ruochen has already let Ruan Ling go. You have all seen it with your own eyes. Isn’t it weird? Actually, the reason is simple; Zhang Ruochen has converted Ruan Ling long ago, but Cang Long is being kept in the dark. He was so stupid to trade the precious artifacts for Ruan Ling. Don’t you all think this is laughable?” said the Head Rat.

“Would Ruan Ling be so easily converted? How is that even possible?” questioned another person.

“Nothing is impossible. I heard that Ruan Ling used illusion techniques and disguised herself as Ling Feiyu to seduce Zhang Ruochen. But things got out of hand and she became Zhang Ruochen’s woman. That’s why Zhang Ruochen couldn’t bring himself to kill her. He is not as ruthless as you might think. Look, there isn’t a single bruise on Ruan Ling’s body,” said the Head Rat.

Hearing this, those people looked at Ruan Ling, carefully studying her.

Although they did not quite believe what the Head Rat said, seeing was believing. Zhang Ruochen had indeed taken some precious artifacts from Cang Long and released Ruan Ling. That was exactly what they had witnessed with their own eyes.

“It’s true, Ruan Ling has suffered no injuries at all. Not only that, her face looks ruddy. When did Zhang Ruochen become such a gentleman?”

“A gentleman? Are you kidding me? Zhang Ruochen has ever been soft on the enemy!”

“By the looks of things, Ruan Ling and Zhang Ruochen surely have something between them.”

“You are stating the obvious. Had Ruan Ling not offered herself to him, why would Zhang Ruochen want to let her go? It is hard to believe if he was solely after the precious artifacts.”

“Poor Cang Long. He is still being kept in the dark, exchanging the precious artifacts for Ruan Ling and thinking that she is still his untainted goddess.”

“Well said. I can only say that Zhang Ruochen is too ruthless, giving back what he has kissed and dismissed while taking the precious artifacts from Cang Long. This guy has some skill!”

“Stop saying that. Haven’t you noticed that Cang Long’s face is all green?”

Although they were talking in whispers, what they said never escaped Cang Long’s ears.

Right then, Cang Long’s face was indeed green, anger surging within him, so much so that he felt like blood was going to spurt out of his mouth.

Ruan Ling did not hear the chatter as her spiritual power was still sealed. At that moment, she saw Cang Long’s expression and was puzzled by it. “What’s the matter with you, Cang Long?”

Slap!

The more Cang Long thought about it, the more he felt that what those cultivators said made sense. He suddenly became angry as he looked at Ruan Ling, and the image of Zhang Ruochen going on top of her came to mind.

Unable to restrain his anger, Cang Long slapped Ruan Ling in the face. “How dare you collude with Zhang Ruochen and lie to me? I will trample Zhang Ruochen to death in front of you!”

Slapped by the Cang Long, Ruan Ling felt a hot sensation on her face. For a moment, she was baffled by Cang Long’s action; he had never treated her like this before.

“Are you mad, Cang Long?!” snapped Ruan Ling angrily.

Cang Long’s face was grim as he clenched his fists. “Don’t you realize what you have done?”

After he said this, he turned and walked into the teleportation array without looking at Ruan Ling again.

He could not bring himself to stay there anymore, or else, he would puke blood in anger.

At first, he had been very suspicious of what was going on between her and Zhang Ruochen. As much as he did not want to believe it, he could not help but think that his suspicion was true.

Ruan Ling was as angry as she was baffled. Cang Long had no hesitations about getting her back with two Five-Element fetishes, so why was he treating her like this?

Her top priority now was to break free from the restraint set upon her by Zhang Ruochen. Only then would she be able to make out the entire story and settle the score with Cang Long.

With her spiritual strength, it was only a matter of time before she would break free from the restraint.

The Head Rat was pleased, a smile breaking out on his face. He had accomplished his mission, and it was time to leave.

By a stream near the 66th Sub-Terminal of Merits, the Head Rat emerged from the ground and came up beside Zhang Ruochen.

“How were things going?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

The Head Rat chuckled triumphantly. “You knew I would handle it beautifully, didn’t you? For your information, I have even gone beyond the call of duty on this one. Cang Long must be mad now, Master Zhang. You should go and see his face. It was dramatic!”

“Beyond the call of duty?”

Immediately, the Head Rat recounted those rumors that he had just spread.

Zhang Ruochen was quite satisfied at first, but his face darkened as he listened on. He had just asked the Head Rat to spread a rumor that he had converted Ruan Ling, so Cang Long and even the cultivators of the entire Heavenly Realm would then treat Ruan Ling suspiciously as a result.

Who would have known that the Head Rat would actually spin the story and escalate things further by suggesting that Zhang Ruochen had bedded Ruan Ling and turned her into his woman? How could Cang Long not get mad?

Such a rumor had worked particularly well.

However, did it not affect Zhang Ruochen's good name?

“You...”

Zhang Ruochen did not know whether to laugh or cry. He had no words for it but just shook his head. “Never mind. Well done. You will get your reward.”

With a flick of his hand, he tossed a pair of faintly-glowing gauntlets to the Head Rat.

The Head Rat chuckled, his eyes brightening as he caught the gauntlets in his hand. “A pair of Ninth Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Gauntlets. Thank you, Master Zhang.”

His cultivation base was at that of a Six-Step Saint King only. The Ninth Radiance Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifact Gauntlets would come to sufficiently good use for him.

His strength would increase tremendously with the use of these gauntlets. When coupled with his ancient remnant lineage, he could hold his own even if went up against Eight-Step Saint Kings.

Zhang Ruochen just did not care because he already had too many higher-order Thousand-Inscription Sacred Artifacts with him after killing those Infernal Court fighters.

Not wanting to stay a minute longer, Zhang Ruochen brought the Head Rat and headed straight for Peakless Mountain.

Chapter 1975 - The Return of the Implement Spirits

Chapter 1975: The Return of the Implement Spirits

Rumors of Zhang Ruochen converting Ruan Ling and making Cang Long a cuckold quickly spread throughout not just the Kunlun realm but also the various macroworlds in the Celestial Court.

Cang Long became a laughing stock in a very short time as people everywhere were talking about him.

Consequently, Zhang Ruochen's reputation soared again. Compared with stories about him killing hundreds of thousands of Infernal Court cultivators, it seemed that people enjoyed hearing such gossip more.

Zhang Ruochen did not have time for such rumors since he was rushing back to Peakless Mountain with the Head Rat.

Upon arriving at Peakless Mountain, Zhang Ruochen parted ways with the Head Rat and went up to Saint Water Peak alone.

As soon as he arrived before the Saintess Palace, Qi Feiyu came out to greet him with a smile. "The Lady has gone into retreat, Mr. Zhang. You won't see her for the time being."

"Retreat?" Zhang Ruochen frowned.

He had been away for not even half a day, and Ling Feiyu had gone into retreat. This surprised him.

Since he and Ling Feiyu had talked it over earlier, they both knew their places. So, there was no need for him to think too much of it.

A thought then came to mind. "If that's the case, I will make a move first, Sister Qi. See you around."

The dust had settled on Peakless Mountain. Since Ling Feiyu had gone into retreat, it was pointless for him to stay there.

“See you around.” Qi Feiyu nodded at him.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the closed door of the Saintess Palace one more time before he turned around and cast a Dimensional Shift. A split second later, he reappeared at the foot of Peakless Mountain.

Not long after, the Head Rat emerged from the ground.

“Are you going to Lake Phoenix so soon, Master Zhang?” asked the Head Rat curiously.

They had just returned from outside, and he thought Zhang Ruochen would first stay on the Peakless Mountain for a few days.

“Everything’s done here. Let’s leave for Lake Phoenix now.” Zhang Ruochen nodded.

“No problem, Master Zhang. You call the shot,” said the Head Rat.

Without further delay, the two immediately set off, rushing to the 66th Sub-Terminal of Merits again.

Peakless Mountain was a great distance away from Lake Phoenix, so it was more convenient to use the teleportation array of the Sub-Terminal of Merits.

Zhang Ruochen triggered the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and flew over the Bronze Furnace Plains at high speed.

Suddenly, a large blanket of smoke rose ahead. The air turned velvety white with strange energy spreading all around.

“Something isn’t right!”

There was a flash in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes, and he was about to move backward.

Before he could do that, however, his surroundings changed, and he, along with the Head Rat, found themselves inside a bamboo forest.

The bamboo forest was dense. As the breeze blew in the air, bamboos fluttered with a unique scent of azure bamboo permeating the air.

“What is the situation, Master Zhang?” The Head Rat shrank his head back.

Zhang Ruochen did not reply, his eyes darting around to study the surroundings.

Out of nowhere, the sound of a gentle melody came to ears. It sounded like the ensemble of lute and vessel flute, very melodious.

Zhang Ruochen tried to perform a Dimensional Shift to get out of the bamboo forest but failed.

He exhaled slowly. “Let’s find out who brought us here.”

“Wait for me, Master Zhang.”

The Head Rat hurriedly caught up with him, not wanting to be left alone.

In a time like this, tagging along Zhang Ruochen closely was undoubtedly the safest thing to do.

Tracing the direction from where the lute and vessel flute came, Zhang Ruochen walked in the bamboo forest for a long while before finally seeing the persons playing the lute and vessel flute.

There were two old men; one with slightly curly red hair, dressed in sackcloth, very tall and burly, with a steely face, sharp and domineering eyes, playing the lute; and the other was dressed in an azure cloth, slightly stooped, having ferocious eyes like that of a venomous snake, and a fierce, intimidating aura throughout his body, playing the vessel flute.

Sweeping his eyes over the two elders, Zhang Ruochen’s heart missed a beat as he felt both elders were unfathomably powerful and dangerous.

The old man in azure cloth gave out a very familiar feeling, his fierce aura exuding from his body identical to the consciousness of the implement spirit in the Azuresky Pagoda. Except that this one was more powerful.

He instantly recognized the identity of the old man in azure clothes.

“What a pleasure to meet you two here, elders.” Zhang Ruochen stepped forward and bowed in salute.

The old, red-haired man and the elder in azure stopped playing their instruments and looked at Zhang Ruochen.

A light flashed in the eyes of the azure-clothed old man. He suddenly struck out a palm strike.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed. Feeling a great danger coming his way and, he quickly gathered his saint Qi and performed a palm strike at full strength.

A dragon and an elephant flew out, filling up the entire heaven and earth with various visions.

Both the dragon shadow and the elephant shadow broke apart before a powerful palm struck Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was forced back a few steps before he could completely dissipate the energy of the palm strike.

Fortunately, the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light had absorbed most of the palm energy, and his body had been toughened in the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death. He could take the hit without suffering any injury.

The azure-clothed old man looked a little surprised at seeing Zhang Ruochen unscathed.

Just as the azure-clothed old man was about to strike again, the red-haired elder stood up. “Brother Azure, don’t forget your purpose.”

“I know.”

The azure-clothed old man reached to grab Zhang Ruochen.

The Azuresky Pagoda instantly left Zhang Ruochen’s body, completely out of his control.

The old man in an azure cloth was none other than the implement spirit of the Azuresky Pagoda.

Just as the implement spirit’s consciousness of the Azuresky Pagoda said, its true form would return soon. By then, no one could control the Azuresky Pagoda by force.

One thing was certain: the level of cultivation of the old man in azure cloth was at the Supreme Saint level, not just at Neverwilt Realm. To be able to remain in the Kunlun Realm, he surely had a secret technique of concealing his breath, evading the detection of the Celestial and the Infernal Court.

Getting stopped by the implement spirit of the Azuresky Pagoda was anything but a good thing.

After all, it was the Chi Clan that the Azuresky Pagoda was guarding. When Zhang Ruochen led an army to attack the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace, he had made himself some enemies.

“Do you know what sin you have committed, Zhang Ruochen?” asked the old man in azure cloth bitterly.

Zhang Ruochen stood upright nonchalantly. “What wrong have I done?”

“You devastated the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace for your own personal gain.” The old man in azure cloth snorted.

Instead of being intimidated, Zhang Ruochen was bold and feeling justified. “So you mean the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion could kill our people in Zhang Clan while I am not allowed to destroy them?”

The old man in azure cloth’s eyes flashed. “Don’t try to justify your heinous act. By the sound of you, you must have been aberrant. On your knees immediately!”

While the old man in azure spoke, he sent terrifying energy straight at Zhang Ruochen, crushing him down like a sacred mountain.

Zhang Ruochen pushed back the tremendous pressure while gritting his teeth, still standing upright. “If you think you can bully me because you are a Supreme Saint, you couldn’t be more wrong. I’m not even afraid of Chi Yao, let alone an implement spirit like you.”

He knew that even if he were to beg for mercy, the old man in azure cloth would not let him go.

Besides, with his type of character, it was impossible for him to beg for mercy, especially when it was the Chi clan.

“How dare you disrespect me? You deserve death just for this.” The old man in azure cloth exuded a strong killing intent. An azure glow gathered at his fingertip before he struck at Zhang Ruochen.

This finger strike was extremely fearsome. Zhang Ruochen wanted to dodge, but his body would not listen to him.

Just as he thought that he would surely die, the old, red-haired man abruptly stood in front of him, blocking the azure light and terrible pressure, allowing him to move again.

“Why do you do this, Brother Red?” asked the old man in azure cloth in a deep voice.

The old, red-haired man smiled at him. “Brother Azure, why get so worked up? The situation in Kunlun Realm is bad enough. Zhang Ruochen has an important role to play in this war. You must not harm him.”

“You are overestimating him, Brother Red. He is the Scion of Time and Space. But with his level of strength, no way he could be of meaningful help to resist the Infernal Court. Compared with those ancient sleepers, he is weaker by far.” There was a sense of derision in the eyes of the old man in azure cloth.

The old, red-haired man shook his head. “Don’t doubt Saint Monk Xumi’s judgment. You will know why soon.”

Hearing this, the old man in azure cloth could not help but furrowed his brow. He could see that the old, red-haired man was determined to defend Zhang Ruochen, and he could do nothing about it.

“Very well. I will let him off this time just for the sake of you, Brother Red. But I will not hesitate to kill him next time.” The old man in azure cloth calmed down, no longer singling out Zhang Ruochen.

After a slight pause, the old man in azure cloth continued. “Since I have gotten the Azuresky Pagoda back, I will first

return to the Central Imperial City. See you around, Brother Red.”

The old, red-haired man said nothing, just nodding back at the old man in azure clothes.

The azure-clothed old man shot a glance at Zhang Ruochen before fading into an azure light and disappeared into thin air.

After the old man in azure left, the Head Rat approached him. “Are you all right, Master Zhang?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded slightly, then bowed to thank the old, red-haired man. “Thank you for saving me, Mister.”

At that moment, he already knew that this old, red-haired man was the implement spirit of the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death.

He found the aura of the old, red-haired man all too familiar. It was exactly like the aura he felt in the Bronze Furnace of Life and Death.

The old, red-haired man broke into a faint smile. “Don’t worry about it. You are Saint Monk Xumi’s successor and also Yueshen’s Divine Envoy. How could I watch you die?”

Unlike the old man in azure, the old, red-haired man was friendly without the slightest sense of arrogance.

“I have some questions and am wondering if you would answer them for me?” Zhang Ruochen said with a solemn expression.

The old, red-haired man reached out to freeze the Head Rat in place, only then he asked Zhang Ruochen to sit down.

Putting away the lute, the old, red-haired man smiled. “I know what you are going to ask. You would like to know why implement spirits like us disappeared. One hundred thousand years ago, all the implement spirits of Supreme Artifacts in the Kunlun Realm disappeared. There were two reasons for this.

“One, it was to avoid the Yuanhui Tribulation. Like the gods, the implement spirits of the Supreme Artifact and divine artifacts need to survive the Yuanhui Tribulation to become stronger. Those who failed would be annihilated.

“Two, it was to avoid a divine artifact in the Infernal Court. That artifact is called the Soul-Devouring Lamp. If we didn’t hide, I’m afraid all the implement spirits of the Supreme Artifacts would not have escaped the fate of being swallowed up by the Soul-Devouring Lamp.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly got wise to it.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen had already suspected something about the disappearance of the implement spirits of the Supreme Artifact from the Kunlun Realm. He felt that it probably had something to do with the Yuanhui Tribulation. But he did not know that there was another reason for this.

The Soul-Devouring Lamp must be extremely terrifying. If it were to swallow all the implement spirits of the Supreme Artifacts, those Supreme Artifacts in the Kunlun Realm were basically as good as useless.

The difference between a Supreme Artifact with an implement spirit and one without an implement spirit was like night and day.

“Where did you hide to avoid the Yuanhui Tribulation and the Soul-Devouring Lamp?” asked Zhang Ruochen curiously.

“You should have heard of the Altar of Path’s Soul, one of the top ten divine artifacts in the Kunlun Realm. We have been hiding in the Altar of Path’s Soul all these years.”

“The Altar of Path’s Soul?”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed face abruptly.

As a cultivator in the Kunlun Realm, he certainly knew about the ten great divine artifacts. Each of the ten divine artifacts possessed a terrifying power.

However, in this age and day, the ten greatest divine artifacts had been reduced to a legend. Some people said that they had been destroyed after some tragic battles.

Some said to have disappeared without a trace and never been seen again since middle ancient time.

As far as Zhang Ruochen knew, only the Imperial Ruler was kept in the Inscription Guild, and the Shenlong Chaos Tower

of Sun and Moon was in the hands of the mysterious fighter in the Yin Yang Sea.

As for the other divine artifacts, he had no idea where they were.

“Where is the Altar of Path’s Soul?” asked Zhang Ruochen again.

The old, red-haired man shook his head slightly. “It is too important to reveal it to you now. But all I can tell is that the existence of the Altar of Path’s Soul is closely tied to the survival of the entire Kunlun Realm. It is the key to Kunlun Realm’s resistance against the Infernal Court.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but be stunned. He believed the old, red-haired man, who was not just being an alarmist. Some enormous secrets had to be hidden in the Altar of Path’s Soul, and it was the hidden trump card of the Kunlun Realm.

Judging from this, the Kunlun Realm might have failed 100,000 years ago, but it had still reserved a card up its sleeve, waiting for the ripe time to play the card.

For a moment, many things came to mind. Zhang Ruochen could not help but connect all the dots that were seemingly unrelated previously.

All realms thought that the Kunlun Realm was weak, with no significant figures in existence. But was that really the case?

Now even Zhang Ruochen could not fathom the situation in Kunlun Realm. There were too many secrets that he did not even know about.

“Don’t think too much, Zhang Ruochen. Just do what you want to do, and you will slowly make sense of things as you go. By then you will know what your mission is,” said the old, red-haired man with a meaningful look.

After saying so, the old, red-haired man faded into a stream of red light and disappeared from the bamboo forest. Probably he was rushing back to Peakless Mountain.

Zhang Ruochen stood silently in thought in the bamboo forest, unable to calm himself down for a long time.

Chapter 1976 - She Passed Away

Chapter 1976: She Passed Away

After a long while, Zhang Ruochen exhaled and calmed himself down once he snapped out of his thoughts.

The return of the Supreme Artifacts' implement spirits was a good thing for the Kunlun Realm. Although they still could not intervene as they wished in the meantime, they could play an important role at critical moments.

It was a pity that the Azuresky Pagoda had been taken away and Zhang Ruochen had lost a huge trump card of his. However, that was something inevitable. No one could keep the Supreme Artifact once the implement spirit returned.

As the restraint on the Head Rat was lifted, he immediately came up beside Zhang Ruochen, his mung-bean eyes darting around with fear.

“What is the situation now, Master Zhang? Who are the two old men? Where are they?” asked the Head Rat in a low voice, for fear that the two old men were still nearby.

He had no idea what was going on. He just knew that the two old men were extremely powerful. Not even Zhang Ruochen could do anything about them.

Fortunately, the two old men did not target him. Otherwise, he would have become a dead rat.

“It's all right, let's move on. If you really want to know something, you can ask your father later.”

“Ask my father?”

The Head Rat became even more puzzled.

Since Zhang Ruochen did not want to tell him, he had better not ask. There must be more to things than met the eye. Knowing too much might not be a good thing.

Bringing the Head Rat together, Zhang Ruochen activated the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light to fly out of the bamboo forest and continued to head to the 66th Sub-Terminal of Merits.

When the two arrived, the 66th Sub-Terminal of Merits had become deserted, because even Ruan Ling had left.

No one knew where Ruan Ling had gone.

The Head Rat's work of disinformation had really hit Ruan Ling hard, so much so that she was having a hard time explaining herself and clearing her name.

The worst thing was that Zhang Ruochen had taken all the precious artifacts from her. Now that Cang Long had misunderstood her, she could no longer return to the Fane of Youshen. Never had she expected to end up like this one day.

Through the teleportation array of the 66th Sub-Terminal of Merits, Zhang Ruochen and the Head Rat arrived at the 62nd Sub-Terminal of Merits. It was near Lake Phoenix, being only 70,000 miles away.

"Isn't that Zhang Ruochen?"

"It's really him. He's my idol now. He actually made Cang Long a cuckold. Amazing."

"Cang Long has been screwed big time this time. He lost not only his woman but also a ton of precious artifacts. I have never seen such a miserable person like him."

"So, unless absolutely necessary, don't mess with Zhang Ruochen. If you don't get it right, you may end up worse than Cang Long."

People started to gossip when they saw Zhang Ruochen emerging from the teleportation array.

News had spread so fast that the entire Kunlun Realm had known what happened even before the day ended.

Hearing these comments, Zhang Ruochen shook his head helplessly. The Head Rat's disinformation skill was world-class. Even if he were to step forward to clarify the matter, it would be useless now.

“What do you think of this effect, Master Zhang?” The Head Rat had a smug look on his face.

The Head Rat was pleased with his work, which was absolutely beyond the call of duty.

Conversely, the same could not be said for Zhang Ruochen, who was speechless. He walked out of the Sub-Terminal of Merits without a word.

“Wait for me, Master Zhang!” The Head Rat hurriedly caught up to him.

Without wasting more time, the two of them headed straight to Lake Phoenix.

Lake Phoenix was famous during ancient times. It used to be the habitat of the Phoenix Clan.

A powerful Frost Phoenix and an ancestor of the Mu Clan had come together. So their descendants, the Mu Clan, naturally possessed the bloodline of the Frost Phoenix. In a sense, the Mu Clan could be called the Phoenix Halfling.

After a long time had passed, Mu Lingxi was the only one who had successfully awakened the Frost Phoenix bloodline in herself and become the Ancient Saint Body of the Frost Phoenix.

Now that the Kunlun Realm had recovered, Lake Phoenix had also become a holy land of awakening. Hiding itself, no ordinary people could find it at all.

With the Head Rat leading the way, Zhang Ruochen could enter Lake Phoenix’s holy land of awakening without a hitch because they were using a secret passage, and so, had alarmed no one.

The former Lake Phoenix was not that large. But now it had become so massive that it seemed like a vast ocean.

The wind was blowing over the lake, creating ripples with sparkling light on the water and a refreshing breeze on the face.

“There’s rich Saint Qi of Heaven and Earth! The Precepts of Heaven and Earth are also extremely active here. It definitely

lives up to its name as the Phoenix Clan's habitat in the past. Exceptional!" Zhang Ruochen was in awe.

In contrast, the recovery time of Lake Phoenix was shorter than that of Royal Mountain in Yunwu Commandery, so the cultivation environment seemed better.

The Mu Clan had returned to this ancestral land a long time ago, thinking that the benefits they received would definitely be no less than what they got on Peakless Mountain.

After all, given the size of the Demonic Sect of the Moon with twelve ancient clans and hundreds of Saints, even if Peakless Mountain had become a holy land of awakening that produced a vast amount of cultivation resources, there would still not be enough to go around.

"You may not have seen the recovery of Lake Phoenix back then. Countless sacred herbs grew out of thin air, and ones that were thousands of years old were aplenty. There were even sacred herbs as old as several hundred thousand years." The Head Rat chuckled.

"It was especially so at Lake Phoenix, where a huge Frost Phoenix used to emerge along with the Phoenix-shaped Yuanhui Sacred Herb. The number of precepts in the body could increase by a few dozens just through smelling the Yuanhui Sacred Herb."

Zhang Ruochen was impressed. He really did not expect Lake Phoenix to be so extraordinary. Not only had it produced sacred herbs that were a hundred thousand years old, but it had also given birth to Yuanhui Tribulation Sacred Herbs. If news of this were to leak out, powerful cultivators would instantly flock there.

To Zhang Ruochen, the 100,000-year-old ancient sacred herbs were not too unusual. He had refined a lot of them. However, only one Yuanhui Sacred Herb had appeared in Northern Region, and Pei Yutian had refined it.

Any Yuanhui Sacred Herb was immeasurably valuable. Even Precept Domain cultivators were eager to get their hands on it.

Unlike the ancient sacred herbs of one hundred thousand years, the Yuanhui Sacred Herb could not be born out of thin air. It must grow over one Yuanhui Tribulation and survive the Yunhui Tribulation. Only then could it become a Yuanhui Tribulation Sacred Herb.

So if there were any Yuanhui Tribulation Sacred Herbs in the Kunlun Realm, they must have survived the ancient times, though their number would be extremely low.

“Take me to meet Lingxi first,” said Zhang Ruochen.

The Head Rat immediately led the way in front. “Follow me, Master Zhang.”

It was not his first visit to Lake Phoenix, and he knew the place like the back of his hand. There was not an area at Lake Phoenix he had not been before.

However, Zhang Ruochen wanted to give Mu Lingxi a surprise. So he did not tell her in advance and did not alarm anyone when he arrived. He was being very mysterious.

Making his way around Lake Phoenix, Zhang Ruochen followed the Head Rat and arrived outside a quiet, elegant manor.

The manor had been built on the shore of Lake Phoenix, and it was surrounded by mountains, water, and tons of exotic flowers as well as weeds. There were also towering old trees growing on the outside, making the place full of vitality.

As soon as he approached the manor, though, Zhang Ruochen frowned.

He saw a white fabric hanging on the gate of the manor, a depressive atmosphere permeating the air.

“Who has passed away? There are few people living in the manor.” The Head Rat was puzzled.

At that moment, the gate of the manor opened.

A man walked out of the manor, stinking of alcohol, wearing a wrinkled gray robe. The man sat down by the gate, his eyes filled with sorrow as he continued to pour wine into his mouth.

Zhang Ruochen could not have known this man better. He was none other than Drunkard.

He was not surprised to see Drunkard at Lake Phoenix, because Drunkard and Gu Songzi always followed Mu Lingxi.

Just that Drunkard's current state of mind startled Zhang Ruochen very much. He started to get a bad feeling about it.

The Head Rat leaned over with a weird look on his face. "Hey, Drunkard, what is the matter with you? Who are you holding the funeral for in the manor?"

Drunkard looked up and glanced at the Head Rat, then at Zhang Ruochen.

The moment Drunkard saw Zhang Ruochen, he got to his feet and ran up to Zhang Ruochen, his eyes red. "What took you so long? What took you so long?"

After crying his heart out, Drunkard slumped back down on the ground, looking despondent.

The bad feeling grew stronger. Zhang Ruochen quickly squatted down. "What happened?"

Drunkard gulped down a mouthful of wine and shook his head continuously. "It's too late. You're too late."

Zhang Ruochen became even more anxious, grabbing Drunkard's arm. "What the hell is going on? What do you mean by too late?"

Drunkard reached up to grab his messy hair, his face filled with sorrow and tears flowing out of his eyes.

Bang!

With a flick of his hand, Drunkard threw the wine gourd away.

"Drunkard, are you okay?" The Head Rat quickly reached out to hold him.

Drunkard wiped the tears from his face as he quivered. "It's Lingxi. Why didn't you come earlier, Zhang Ruochen?"

"What?"

Zhang Ruochen staggered as if lightning had struck him. He nearly stumbled to the ground.

The words that escaped Drunkard's mouth came like a bolt from the blue.

“H-How could it be...”

Zhang Ruochen's mind went blank as he felt that the sky had crashed down on him.

The Head Rat quickly got to his feet and nervously held Zhang Ruochen up. “Please don't scare me, Master Zhang.”

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen leaned closer to Drunkard again, looking Drunkard in the eye. “Tell me what happened.”

“Why couldn't you come here earlier? Lingxi was too eager to win. She always wanted to catch up with you and help you, so she went into overdrive with her self-cultivation. Recently, she took the risk and tried to infuse the Frost Phoenix heritage. But there was an accident...” Drunkard sobbed.

Zhang Ruochen felt thunder rumbling in his head. He was trembling.

At that point, the sky had really collapsed on him.

“No... Lingxi wouldn't die...”

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were bloodshot. He could not think of anything. He was wrecked. After a long while, he pushed Drunkard away and ran into the manor.

Chapter 1977 - Cherish Those You Love

Chapter 1977: Cherish Those You Love

The manor was large but also appeared empty. There were few people living in it. Now it was even more deserted.

At a glance, white fabrics were hung everywhere in the manor, and everyone had a sad expression on the face.

Without needing a guide, Zhang Ruochen came outside the mourning hall after a while.

In the mourning hall was a coffin made of ten- thousand-year ice jade was placed. Looking through the cold air filling the hall, he could vaguely see a body lying in the coffin.

Apart from the coffin, there was another person in the mourning hall, and it was Gu Songzi.

Sensing someone approaching, Gu Songzi could not help but turn his head.

The moment he saw Zhang Ruochen, Gu Songzi immediately ran out of the hall, grabbed Zhang Ruochen's clothes on his chest. "Aren't you supposed to accompany your Fairy of a Thousand Flowers and Ling Feiyu? What did you still come here?"

"Let me in. I want to see Lingxi," said Zhang Ruochen with a trembling voice.

Gu Songzi pushed him away, eyes full of grief and anger, pointing his finger at Zhang Ruochen. "You are a jerk. When you are always together with Ji Fanxin. Have you ever spared a thought for Lingxi? Poor Lingxi. She has been here waiting for you. But in the end, she still couldn't make it."

"Now that she is gone, what's the point of you coming here? Get the hell out of here! I don't want to see you. Lingxi doesn't want to see you either."

Someone rushed over as soon as they heard the noise. Those were the faces Zhang Ruochen knew best—his fourth brother Zhang Shaochu and ninth sister Zhang Yuxi.

Zhang Yuxi came over angrily, her eyes red. “Ninth Brother, I am very disappointed in you. You failed Lingxi. She treated our family so well and Concubine Lin as her mother. But what have you done?”

After saying that, Zhang Yuxi turned and left, seemingly not wanting to look at Zhang Ruochen again.

Zhang Shaochu slowly walked over, patted Zhang Ruochen’s shoulder, and sighed. “Ninth Brother, I’m sorry for your loss. But this is something none of us have ever expected.”

Zhang Ruochen said not a word but just walked into the mourning hall.

At that moment, Gu Songzi made his move, forcing Zhang Ruochen back with a palm strike.

“I told you, Lingxi doesn’t want to see you. Get the hell out of here.” Gu Songzi roared.

Zhang Ruochen still said not a word as he continued to move forward.

Gu Songzi’s eyes were raging with anger. He struck Zhang Ruochen back again and again.

From the beginning, Zhang Ruochen had not said a word, let alone fought back. He just let Gu Songzi hit him with one palm strike after another.

Seeing Gu Songzi not going to stop, Zhang Shaochu quickly stopped him. “Please spare him, sir. Let the Nine Brothers in!”

Just then, the Head Rat had also come in, quickly reaching to pull Gu Songzi back.

Now Zhang Ruochen could finally go into the mourning hall, one step at a time, until he came in front of the ice jade coffin.

He saw Mu Lingxi lying quietly in the coffin. She appeared peaceful, as if she was just asleep.

“Why are you so foolish, Lingxi?”

He reached out a hand to touch Mu Lingxi's face lightly.

Even before entering the mourning hall, he still had a glimmer of hope, telling himself that Mu Lingxi was not dead, but just pranking him.

But now, the last glimmer of hope was shattered. Mu Lingxi's body was cold, without the slightest sign of life. She had really left him.

Losing Mu Lingxi, Zhang Ruochen felt the pain of losing someone he loved for the first time, his world dimming in an instant, colors fading from his life.

Looking back along the way, Mu Lingxi had always been supporting him quietly. But what had he done for Mu Lingxi in return? He had made Mu Lingxi sad again and again, and he could not even fulfill her simple request of companionship.

"I'm sorry, Lingxi. I have come too late. I have let you down." Sorrow filled Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He could not remember when was the last time he cried. But now tears flowed from his eyes uncontrollably.

"Let's all go out first. Give Ninth Brother some quiet moments. He must be very sad."

Zhang Shaochu sighed as he brought everyone out of the mourning hall.

"I should have come earlier. When I got back to the Kunlun Realm, I should have come to you in the first instance.

"You should have known that even if you were just a mortal, I would never leave you behind.

"I work so hard to practice because I just want to give you and everyone a better future. I will handle everything for you; you don't have to over exert yourself like that."

Zhang Ruochen started to choke up. He looked up, opening his eyes wide as he tried to fight back his tears.

"Don't worry, I will bring you back to live at whatever costs. I will take you to Yueshen; she surely can do something. There must be a way. You must live. I will not allow you to die."

Zhang Ruochen leaned down and was about to hold up Mu Lingxi's body and take her to the Celestial Court.

But what happened next stunned him.

Mu Lingxi suddenly sat up from the coffin, staring at him with her pair of beautiful round eyes and a playful smile. "So I am not allowed to die without your permission? How bossy!"

Before Zhang Ruochen knew what happened, Mu Lingxi got up, wrapped her arms around Zhang Ruochen's neck, and pressed her pastel-toned lips on his.

Time seemed to come to a standstill as Zhang Ruochen was completely stupefied, his mind blank.

It was not until Mu Lingxi pried open his mouth with her moist petite tongue, colliding with his that Zhang Ruochen came out of his shock.

He immediately reached out his hands to draw Mu Lingxi towards him as he kissed her on his own initiative.

"What's going on? She has come back to life? Can anyone tell me what is going on?" The Heat Rat was stunned outside the mourning hall.

Gu Songzi stroked his beard with a pleased smile on his face.

He then gave the Head Rat and Zhang Shaochu a pat each. "Stop looking. Let's get out of here."

Without waiting for the two to respond, Gu Songzi dragged them away forcibly.

The kiss between Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi lasted forever in the mourning hall.

Zhang Ruochen carried Mu Lingxi out of the ice jade coffin, clasping her hands as if she would leave him if he loosened his grips.

"This is too much. You colluded with everyone to prank me. It is your idea, right?" said Zhang Ruochen.

Mu Lingxi was a little worried, looking up and locking eyes with him nervously. "Are you angry?"

Zhang Ruochen let out a smile and shook his head. “Of course not. It was not until I learned you died, I realized how important you are to me. I am sorry, Lingxi.

“It is my fault. Drunkard and Gu Songzi are right; I should have come to see you as soon as I returned to the Kunlun Realm. I shouldn’t have made you worry about me.”

Zhang Ruochen knew Mu Lingxi’s well. If she were to infuse her ancestral heritage by force, then maybe what happened today would have become a reality.

He would regret it if that happened.

Mu Lingxi gently leaned her head against Zhang Ruochen’s chest with a sweet smile on her face. She nodded slightly. “I will always be by your side. You live, I live; you die, I die.”

An emotion surged within Zhang Ruochen. He drew Mu Lingxi even tighter to him.

From this moment onward, his and Mu Lingxi’s life became intertwined. For the sake of Mu Lingxi, he told himself, he must stay alive.

“I didn’t know that you could cry, kid!” Drunkard burst into laughter as he entered the mourning hall.

At the same time, Gu Songzi, the Head Rat, Zhang Shaochu, and Zhang Yuxi had also come in.

“Hey, Drunkard, what do you think of this Elixir of False Death that I made? Isn’t it amazing? Zhang Ruochen couldn’t spot any flaws at all.” Gu Songzi had a smug expression on his face.

“Truly amazing. You have got things handled flawlessly,” said Drunkard.

“It’s a pity that Lingxi woke up too early. We have rehearsed this for a long time; it has all gone to waste.” Gu Songzi sighed, shaking his head.

“You know nothing, Bro. Lingxi couldn’t wait anymore.” Drunkard then turned to Zhang Ruochen. “I really have to tell you, Zhang Ruochen. You can’t blame Lingxi for this. The

problem lies with you. How long has it been? Only now you come to Lake Phoenix. You don't really have Lingxi in mind."

"I totally agree. I have seen Lingxi sitting alone by the lake in a daze several times. Don't you feel bad about it? We do."

Zhang Yuxi echoed.

Zhang Ruochen felt guilty at hearing those words, realizing that he owed Mu Lingxi too much.

Without waiting for him to speak, Mu Lingxi pulled a naughty face with a smile. "It's not as complicated as you all said. I just want to give Zhang Ruochen a surprise."

"Obviously it was a fright." The Head Rat muttered.

"All right, you all clean up the manor while I will prepare some dishes so we can have a gathering later."

After saying that, Mu Lingxi walked out of the mourning hall with a smile on her face.

"Let me help you, Lingxi." Zhang Yuxi quickly followed.

Zhang Ruochen still stood there in a daze as he watched Mu Lingxi walking out.

"Cherish those you love while you still can." Gu Songzi patted Zhang Ruochen on the shoulder with a meaningful look.

Regardless of whether Zhang Ruochen had any relationship with other women, they all hoped that Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi would go well.

Many things are unpredictable in this world. So they really hoped they could see the day of Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi tying the knot. That was the one thing they had been most looking forward to.

Of course, they could not rush it as it was between Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi. They could not decide things on their behalf.

"Cherish those you love."

Zhang Ruochen mumbled to himself.

He realized he should cherish Mu Lingxi and marry her.

Zhang Ruochen had actually been pondering about it a long time ago. Just that the Kunlun Realm was still in a chaotic state; he had no time for other things.

His priority at the moment was to improve his level of cultivation. Only in this way could he protect all the people and things that he cared about.

Drunkard and Gu Songzi made light work of cleaning up the manor. They had pulled down all the white fabrics in no time, changing out the depressive vibe instantly.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen followed Zhang Shaochu and came in front of a separate small courtyard.

This was where Concubine Lin lived. On normal days, only Mu Lingxi, Zhang Shaochu, and Zhang Yuxi would come here.

Both Zhang Shaochu and Zhang Yuxi's biological mothers were long gone, so they both regarded Concubine Lin as their mother. When Zhang Ruochen was away, they would stay with Concubine Lin and do their filial piety.

"Fourth Brother, I thank you and Ninth Sister for everything for all these years," said Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Shaochu wrapped his arm around Zhang Ruochen's shoulders with a smile. "We are brothers, remember? So don't talk like that. Ninth Sister and I did nothing. Lingxi did most of the things. She has been taking care of Concubine Lin all this while. You must treat her well, or I won't spare you."

Zhang Ruochen nodded. "Don't worry, I will never fail Lingxi. Otherwise, I won't spare myself."

"This is more like it, my good Ninth Brother. Let's go and see Concubine Lin. She has been missing you all these years after you have left. She would be very happy to see you back."

Zhang Shaochu urged.

Zhang Ruochen said nothing more, but immediately stepped into the small courtyard. He had been away for years; how could he not miss his mother?

Chapter 1978 - Reunion

Chapter 1978: Reunion

The courtyard was small but laid out elegantly with various flowers and plants. Several types of flowers were blooming with the refreshing floral scents filling the air.

As soon as he stepped into the small courtyard, Zhang Ruochen's gaze was fixed on a beautiful woman watering the flowers.

Zhang Ruochen's face instantly brightened up with a smile.

He had purposely made Concubine Lin take some longevity elixir last time. So after so many years, by the look of her appearance, she had changed little, still young as ever, and in excellent health, with no illness or pain.

Standing beside Concubine Lin was a young woman with a slender figure, a soft appearance, and a pair of colorful wings on her back. She was no one else but Kong Xuan, the Peacock Halfling that Zhang Ruochen had spent a fortune and bought out from the Sky Moon House.

Kong Xuan had been staying beside Concubine Lin for all these years, taking care of Concubine Lin uncomplainingly.

One thing that surprised Zhang Ruochen was that Kong Xuan was now a Saint King. Although it was only a One-Step Saint Kingdom, it was already exceptional.

This proved that Zhang Ruochen teaching her

The Peacock Scripture

was an extremely wise decision. Nevertheless,

The Peacock Scripture

was incomplete. He had no idea what more she had learned.

When Kong Xuan turned her head around and saw Zhang Ruochen, excitement burst out across her face.

“Master—”

Zhang Ruochen quickly stopped Kong Xuan just as she was about to call him.

Zhang Ruochen walked with light steps beside Concubine Lin and silently watched her watering the flowers.

Just then, Concubine Lin turned around and finally discovered Zhang Ruochen.

The water pot slipped from her hand and dropped to the ground as Concubine Lin’s attention was entirely focused on Zhang Ruochen.

“Mother, I am back.” There was a gentle look in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes as he called out softly.

Concubine Lin looked excited, lunging forward to hug Zhang Ruochen. “You’re back, my son. I am not dreaming, right?”

She had constantly missed Zhang Ruochen all these years, often imagining Zhang Ruochen coming home. So, she was just afraid that this was a dream, that when she woke up, Zhang Ruochen would disappear.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel Concubine Lin’s love and longing for him. He could not help but hug Concubine Lin tightly. “Mother, you are not dreaming. This is real. I am back. I am sorry for making you worry about me.”

“It is all right as long as you have returned. We can finally be united as a family.” Concubine Lin was so emotional that tears flowed out of her eyes.

Zhang Shaochu came over and comforted her. “Mother, you should be happy that Ninth Brother is back. Why are you still crying?”

Concubine Lin quickly reached up to wipe away her tears. “You are right, I should be happy. I am just too happy. Come and sit inside. Go and make tea, Kong Xuan.”

“Yes, Ma’am.”

As they entered the house and until they sat down, Concubine Lin had never let go of Zhang Ruochen’s hand. Even if this

was just a dream, she wanted to stay with Zhang Ruochen for a little while longer.

“Wouldn’t you leave right away when you have just come back this time, would you?” Concubine Lin looked at Zhang Ruochen with a hopeful look.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Concubine Lin with a gentle smile. “Don’t worry, Mother. I am going to stay with you for a while this time.”

Concubine Fei felt a sense of great relief upon hearing that. “That’s good. That’s good.”

Not long after, Kong Xuan came back with a pot of tea and three teacups on a bronze tray.

Putting the tray on the table, Kong Xuan lifted the teapot, poured tea into the three teacups, and served them in front of Concubine Lin, Ruochen Zhang, and Zhang Shaochu.

“Thank you for taking care of my mother all these years, Kong Xuan,” said Zhang Ruochen with a smile.

Kong Xuan hurriedly shook her head. “Think nothing of it. It is my duty to do so.”

Back then, Zhang Ruochen had taken her from Sky Moon House and taught her

The Peacock Scripture

. She always remembered Zhang Ruochen for this and was willing to do whatever he asked of her to repay his kindness.

With a flick of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out a colorful Saint robe and handed it to Kong Xuan. “This is for you. I still need you to take care of my mother in the future.”

“This is too expensive. Your servant can’t accept this,” Kong Xuan declined.

Concubine Lin reached out to take the robe and shoved it into Kong Xuan’s hands. “Take it. This is a gift from my son.”

Kong Xuan could not decline anymore and accepted the gift. “Thank you for the gift, Master.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and nodded. He was a man of honor. Although Kong Xuan was a servant, he never regarded her as such. He could see Kong Xuan's loyalty to Concubine Lin, and naturally, he wanted to express his gratitude to her.

After being separated for too long, Zhang Ruochen and Concubine Lin had too many things to confide in each other.

Before they knew it, the sky had darkened. It was nighttime.

While they chatted, Mu Lingxi, Zhang Yuxi, Drunkard, and Gu Songzi came into the small courtyard.

As Mu Lingxi waved his hand, a large round table appeared out of nowhere in the courtyard, full of wine and gourmet dishes.

"The meal is ready. Everyone, please come sit down," called out Mu Lingxi with a smile.

Soon, everyone was seated. Even Kong Xuan was invited to join—Zhang Ruochen had insisted on it.

On earlier New Year's Eve, Zhang Ruochen failed to come back. This was a belated reunion dinner.

Over the years, Zhang Ruochen had been in a tense mental state. He had not felt so at ease like this for a long time. Now he wanted to think about nothing but just get together with his family and friends, eating and chit-chatting like ordinary folks.

He honestly wanted to live a simple life like this.

Unfortunately, he couldn't. Sometimes, many things were not up to him. As much as he wanted to let go, he just could not do whatever he wanted.

As he came back to Lake Phoenix, dealing with the Mu Clan became inevitable.

In the past, Zhang Ruochen had led his men to attack Peakless Mountain and grabbed their bride, ruining the opportunity for the Mu Clan and Wutong Qiuyu to form a marriage alliance. That had caused great humiliation to the Mu Clan.

Hence, most of the Mu Clan members did not like Zhang Ruochen at all. They all pulled a sour face when they saw him coming.

The Mu Clan's overall strength had risen sharply in the recent years after they returned to their ancestral land. As a result, they had become arrogant and despised Zhang Ruochen even more.

Of course, the primary reason was, they had been staying in the holy land of awakening near Lake Phoenix. Thus, they were unaware of what had happened in the outside world. They did not know the changes and incredible things that Zhang Ruochen had done in the Kunlun Realm.

"Zhang Ruochen, this is our ancestral land. You are not welcome here. You had better leave quickly," said Yun Zheng with a bitter look on his face.

As Mu Lingxi's father, he was most eager for Mu Lingxi to marry Wutong Qiuyu. Once Qiuyu grew to become the Realm Root, it would also benefit him greatly.

Yet, Zhang Ruochen had ruined everything, shattering his hopes and turning him into a laughing stock. He had held a grudge against Zhang Ruochen ever since.

"Don't pretend to be somebody just because you are the Divine Envoy of Yueshen. We don't buy it."

"Exactly. We welcome all the Saints of the Guanghan Realm, but not you."

"The traitor of the Kunlun Realm! How the heck do you still have the nerve to come back."

"Perhaps he thinks that the Kunlun Realm will not survive without him."

"He is so laughable. All the macroworlds have sent their cultivators into the Kunlun Realm to fight the Infernal Court. He is just an abbreviated piece of nothing."

The Mu Clan members wantonly belittled Zhang Ruochen, wanting to expel him from Lake Phoenix.

In fact, if it were not for Mu Lingxi's presence, they would have done that already and not waste time talking to him.

In their eyes, the Mu Clan could completely overpower Zhang Ruochen. They did not believe that his strength had grown to a

point where he was beyond their control.

With the presence of the Mu Clan's eldest patriarch in the hall, they felt especially emboldened.

The patriarch of the Mu Clan had been a powerful Saint King cultivator long before the Kunlun Realm recovered.

After the revival of the Kunlun Realm, his cultivation base had improved by leaps and bounds. Now, he had attained the rank of the Nine-Step Saint King and was expected to reach Precept Domain.

"Leave now, Zhang Ruochen. Don't make a fool of yourself here," said Mu Qingtian, the Sacred Lord of Mu Clan.

He had lost to Zhang Ruochen last time, so he disliked Zhang Ruochen the most.

The Mu Clan had three Saint King cultivators right then, and he was one of them.

The other two were Mu Xinghe, the Mu Clan patriarch, and Mu Lingxi.

As time went by, the Mu Clan would only give birth to more Saint Kings.

Mu Lingxi's face darkened when she saw so many people from the Mu Clan singling Zhang Ruochen out. Had she known this would happen, she would not have brought Zhang Ruochen to meet the Mu Clan.

She was no longer the little Saintess of the sect who was at the mercy of others. She needed no one to tell her what to do.

"Enough! Don't blame me for being rude if anyone dares to spew insults again," Mu Lingxi shouted bitterly.

Yun Zheng slammed the armrest and got to his feet. "How dare you! Do you still treat me as your father?"

The gray-haired Mu Xinghe was sitting in the principal seat while looking down and exuding a majestic personal aura.

"Don't you forget that you are also a disciple of the Mu Clan, Lingxi. It would be shameful of you to threaten your clan

members just for the sake of an outsider,” said Mu Xinghe in a low voice.

Mu Lingxi did not budge and was about to retort.

Zhang Ruochen stepped out at that moment, reaching out his hand to stop Mu Lingxi. “Lingxi is my companion of cultivation. What’s wrong with me coming here to see her?”

“Nonsense! I absolutely will not allow this.” Yun Zheng became furious instantly.

Mu Xinghe stood up, exuding a terrifying aura, his stern eyes flashing as he looked at Zhang Ruochen directly in the eyes, like a beast staring at its prey.

“Who do you think you are to befriend the Saintess of our Mu Clan, Zhang Ruochen?”

Mu Xinghe was extremely bossy at this moment, wanting to intimidate Zhang Ruochen with his authority.

In his eyes, Zhang Ruochen was just a junior. As talented as Zhang Ruochen was, how far could Zhang Ruochen grow in such a short time?

He was a Nine-Step Saint King of the Greater Precept World, just a step away from reaching the Precept Domain. He was confident enough about subduing Zhang Ruochen with ease.

Zhang Ruochen looked calm amid Mu Xinghe’s bossy pressure.

Suddenly, a powerful aura burst out of Zhang Ruochen, like the eruption of a supervolcano that had been dormant for 10,000 years.

Mu Xinghe was forced back a few steps, horror filling his eyes.

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had been low-key, and his personal aura had been completely restrained, so much so that Mu Xinghe had seriously underestimated Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation strength.

“What an aura!”

In the hall, the expressions of all the Mu Clan members changed.

What happened to make Zhang Ruochen so powerful? It's impossible. When he first left the Kunlun Realm, his cultivation base was only in the Xuanhuang Realm.

Yun Zheng was beyond shocked.

Chapter 1979 - Living Under a Rock

Chapter 1979: Living Under a Rock

They thought their patriarch could completely subdue Zhang Ruochen, but they did not expect Zhang Ruochen to be so terribly powerful.

The Mu Clan disciples who had mocked and tried to humiliate Zhang Ruochen were all swallowing hard. Fear filled their eyes as they looked at Zhang Ruochen.

They had just verbally insulted an apex Saint King, without knowing what the shot was.

Zhang Ruochen took a step forward and stared at Mu Xinghe. “You must have been in isolation for too long and unaware of what’s been happening in the outside world. Do you think you can be invincible with just a Greater Precept World cultivation base?”

“How long have you been practicing, and how could you become so powerful?” Mu Xinghe was in disbelief.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “Powerful? My cultivation base is actually lower than yours, far from reaching the pinnacle of the Greater Precept World.”

Mu Xinghe’s expression changed again. He kept shaking his head. “Impossible. Your aura is so powerful. How can you not even be at the pinnacle of the Greater Precept World? Even the aura of a Precept Domain cultivator could not be compared to yours.”

At that moment, a figure lunged into the hall in a flash, stinking of alcohol. It was none other than Drunkard.

Drunkard randomly found a spot and sat down. Looking at Mu Xinghe as if he was an idiot, he sneered, “Old man, you are living under a rock. Do you know that Zhang Ruochen has survived several battles between the Celestial Court and the

Infernal Court during his time in the Kunlun Realm? Countless Precept Domain, Heaven's Reach, and Path's Anterior fighters have died in his hands.

“Just half a month ago, Zhang Ruochen single-handedly brought down the Deathkin's massive base on Xianji Mountain in the Northern Region. He annihilated 200,000 Deathkin troops along with several Shenzis and Ladies.

“Additionally, over a month ago, he wiped out hundreds of thousands of Immortal Vampires in Lord Ming's Sword Vault Palace in the Central Region, also taking down several Immortal Vampire Shenzis.

“Much earlier, Zhang Ruochen took over the Seal of Flames from the Chen Clan patriarch, becoming the King of Eastern Region and defeating Mr. Godcliff, the array master.

“You must be kidding me if you're thinking about using your strengths of a Greater Precept World to intimidate others...”

Before Drunkard's voice trailed off, Gu Songzi had also entered the hall, his eyes sweeping over all the Mu Clan members with contempt. “Who says Zhang Ruochen is not worthy of Lingxi? Don't forget that we, the Demonic Sect of the Moon, worship Youshen. Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen is Yueshen's Divine Envoy of the highest honor.

“Even if I leave this out, Zhang Ruochen is still the King of the Kunlun Realm's Eastern Region. With such an identity, I don't see why he is not worthy of Lingxi.

“I am totally struck dumb by you people, who only know how to stay like hermits at Lake Phoenix and are totally ignorant of what is happening outside. Do you really think the Mu Clan is powerful now? Tell you what, one random cultivator from the Celestial Court or the Infernal Court could wipe out the entire Mu Clan.”

Mu Xinghe could not find the words to respond. He was speechless as what he heard shocked him.

Not only him, but the other members of the Mu Clan were also shocked beyond belief.

What a glorious and terrifying feat to wipe out hundreds of thousands of Immortal Vampires and Deathkin—it was all done by one person? It was just unthinkable to most people.

Not forgetting that array master, whom they had never met but could imagine was an extremely powerful being. He had to be almost unbeatable below the Supreme Saint realm.

Yet, Zhang Ruochen could still defeat such a powerful being.

Reminiscent of what Drunkard said, the Immortal Vampire Shenzi and Ladies who died in Zhang Ruochen's hands must have also been powerful beyond belief.

Zhang Ruochen did not give a hoot about the Mu Clan's reaction. He slowly turned around and looked at Mu Lingxi with a smile. "I have prepared two gifts and almost forgot to give them to you."

"What gifts?" There was a hint of anticipation in Mu Lingxi's eyes.

Zhang Ruochen smiled as he walked out of the hall.

Mu Lingxi followed.

Immediately after, the Mu Clan members in the hall followed her and walked out of the hall one after another. They also wanted to see what precious gifts Zhang Ruochen had brought.

Outside the hall, Zhang Ruochen waved his hand, and two gifts appeared in front of everyone.

The first gift was a phoenix that was several dozen yards tall. Its body emitted a magnificent brilliance. Plus, the aura it exuded was extremely powerful, no weaker than that of Precept Domain cultivators.

The second gift was a stone ball with a diameter of 100 yards. It was perfectly round and suspended in the air, but it was so heavy that it could almost cause the collapse of an entire dimension.

Most importantly, the stone ball gave off an extremely terrifying aura, and depressive energy pervaded every inch of the air. The weaker Mu Clan members dropped to their knees involuntarily as if they were facing an almighty god.

“How come it’s a phoenix? Does the Kunlun Realm still have phoenixes?”

“What stone ball is that? Why is it so horrible?”

“I can’t take it anymore. I feel like my Saint Soul is about to break apart.”

Everyone in the Mu Clan was horrified. Those who did not kneel to the ground were struggling to hold themselves up.

“It is a one-hundred-thousand-year-old ancient zoomorphic sacred herb. It’s so fearsome that once released, I am afraid that it can even tear me into pieces easily.” Mu Xinghe was gasping with fear filling his eyes.

Even the one-hundred-thousand-year-old sacred herb was much more powerful than him. It was really depressing.

When Lake Phoenix first awakened, several hundred-thousand-year-old ancient sacred herbs had been born, but they had not been aggressive. The ancient zoomorphic sacred herb that Zhang Ruochen took out was completely different.

The effect of refining this zoomorphic ancient sacred herb had to be much stronger than that of ordinary hundred-thousand-year-old ancient sacred herbs.

If he could get his hand on the herb and refine it, he might reach the Precept Domain.

Zhang Ruochen had gotten this one-hundred-thousand-year-old, phoenix-shaped sacred herb from the Warsoul Star in Luoshui. It was closely related to the crucified Celestial Gator.

Due to its shape that resembled a phoenix, Zhang Ruochen purposely kept it and gave it to Mu Lingxi.

His thinking was that Mu Lingxi, who had awakened the Frost Phoenix bloodline, would surely benefit from refining this ancient sacred herb.

“Is this a Divine Planet? Good Lord, you’ve even gotten this baby?” Drunkard was extremely surprised.

“What? A Divine Planet?”

The expressions of all the people on the scene changed drastically. Even Mu Lingxi was no exception. They did not expect this unassuming stone ball to be a legendary Divine Planet.

Zhang Ruochen snatched the Divine Planet from Wang Xu. It originally contained a faint trace of the Stellar Soul of God, but he had asked Yueshen to refine it. Now anyone could control it.

Everyone knew how precious the Divine Planet was. It was a star manifested in the universe after a living being transformed into a god through self-cultivation. It could illuminate the heavens and the earth. However, once the god fell, the Divine Planet would dim, and it would be difficult to find it again in the vast universe.

It could be said that the two treasures taken out by Zhang Ruochen were the rarest of the rare.

Zhang Ruochen reached to brush aside the hair on Mu Lingxi's forehead, his smile gentle. "Keep them, Lingxi. I know you lack nothing, but I want to let you know how much you mean to me."

Mu Lingxi nodded slightly, tiptoed, and gave Zhang Ruochen a peck on his cheek with a sweet smile spreading across her face.

With a wave of her hand, Mu Lingxi tucked the ancient zoomorphic sacred herb and the Divine Planet away.

She could not care less if a gift was precious. As long as it was given by Zhang Ruochen, she would happily accept it.

Without the suppressive energy of the ancient zoomorphic sacred herb and the Divine Planet, the Mu Clan members could breathe a sigh of relief. Those who fell on their knees could stand up again.

Those who did not kneel were sweating like pigs, their clothes drenched in sweat. It was as if they had just come out of the water.

"Take me to the Saints of the Guanghan Realm, Lingxi," Zhang Ruochen whispered as he held Mu Lingxi's hand.

“Sure. I believe Buji and the others will be very happy to see you.” Mu Lingxi smiled.

The two immediately left the Mu manor.

Drunkard and Gu Songzi glanced at Mu Xinghe as well as the others, shaking their heads before quickly catching up with Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi.

At that moment, Yun Zheng was stunned. At first, he had thought of showing Zhang Ruochen who the boss was. He did not expect things to end up this way.

It reminded him of the incident a few years ago. Despite knowing the tremendous danger on Peakless Mountain, Zhang Ruochen still pushed ahead to go there without hesitation. His confidence had impressed countless followers of the sect.

At that time, if the empress had not achieved divinity and returned in time, Zhang Ruochen would have killed Wutong Qiuyu, and there would have been massive bloodshed in the sect.

After a few years, Zhang Ruochen was still as strong-handed as ever. Even if their Mu Clan patriarch returned, he would still have to look up to Zhang Ruochen.

For a while, Yun Zheng could not help feeling a little bitter. Why did he mess with Zhang Ruochen again and again?

If he were not Mu Lingxi’s father, Zhang Ruochen would have probably killed him as if he was an ant.

“I’m going away for a while. You must hold down the fort and not mess with Zhang Ruochen again.” Mu Xinghe looked up at the sky helplessly.

“Where are you going, Patriarch?” asked Mu Qingtian quickly.

“I’m going to see what has become of the Kunlun Realm. Feng Zuisheng is right. I am living under a rock. Without going to the outside world, maybe I can never reach the Precept Domain.”

Before others could say anything, Mu Xinghe rose into the sky, turned into a stream of light, and disappeared from their sight in the blink of an eye.

Seeing that the patriarch had left, the Mu Clan members looked at each other. They were completely embarrassed this time. If they met Zhang Ruochen again in the future, they might have to take a detour.

“Don’t worry, as long as Zhang Ruochen likes Lingxi, he won’t do anything to us. But we definitely should not mess with him again from now on,” said Mu Qingtian with a serious look.

As good-tempered as Zhang Ruochen was, he would make mincemeat of anyone who dared to mess with him.

Chapter 1980 - Showing Him Who's Boss

Chapter 1980: Showing Him Who's Boss

“Master has sent 10,100 cultivators from the Guanghan Realm to the Kunlun Realm. Among them are 10,000 Saints and 100 Saint Kings, all of whom are elites of the Guanghan Realm,” said Mu Lingxi.

There were a couple of cultivators from different realms entering the Kunlun Realm, but all of them were elites.

Only the elites could survive better and gain opportunities in the Kunlun Realm.

The Kunlun Realm was now fully revived as an immortal world. There were too many opportunities available, which tempted any big macroworld. Cultivators from these worlds went to the Kunlun Realm on the pretense of fighting the Infernal Court's invasion, but their true intention was to plunder the Kunlun Realm's resources.

The Guanghan Realm had close relations with the Kunlun Realm. Naturally, it wanted to take this opportunity to strengthen itself so that it could help the Kunlun Realm to survive the calamity.

In the past, Yueshen had borrowed a million Saint Sources from Zhang Ruochen, allowing the Guanghan Realm to produce hundreds of thousands of Saints in a very short time. The number of Saints there had surpassed those of the Greater Demonic Realm, which was the strongest among the Shatuo Domain's seven realms.

Despite that, only having Saints was not enough. The key was to train more Saint Kings and Supreme Saints, who were the backbone of a macroworld.

“Are all the Saints of the Guanghan Realm here now?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Mu Lingxi shook her head. “For the time being, only one-third of them stay at Lake Phoenix, and the other two-thirds are in another holy land of awakening.”

“Another holy land of awakening?” Zhang Ruochen looked surprised.

“That holy land of awakening was accidentally discovered recently. The place does not only produce many sacred herbs, but it is also adjacent to an ancient vein. So two-thirds of the forces have been transferred over there,” said Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen could not help nodding. There were many advantages to being able to control one more holy land of awakening.

Besides, the Kunlun Realm’s holy land of awakening was in the hands of the Guanghan Realm cultivators. That was better than it falling into the hands of the Heavenly Realm cultivators.

“Who is guarding the other holy land of awakening?” asked Zhang Ruochen again.

At this time, Drunkard came forward with a smile. “Don’t worry, Ji Kongyuan is there guarding the place. There won’t be any problem.”

“Then who is guarding Lake Phoenix?” Zhang Ruochen was slightly surprised.

At first, he thought Ji Kongyuan was guarding Lake Phoenix, and the safety of Lake Phoenix was assured. He believed many people would covet Lake Phoenix.

“It seems you know little about the Guanghan Realm cultivators. Ji Kongyuan is the only person in the Guanghan Realm who’s made it onto the Celestial Court’s Saint King Merit List, but that does not mean there are no other powerful cultivators. In fact, there are two more persons who are just as good as Ji Kongyuan in the Guanghan Realm,” said Gu Songzi.

“Who are the two?” It aroused Zhang Ruochen’s interest.

In fact, he had thought of these things long ago, but he paid little attention to them.

As for why Ji Kongyuan was listed on the Celestial Court's Saint King Merit List, the reason was actually simple: it was because of Emperor Ji Mie's influence in the Guanghan Realm. Many of his descendants had attained the Saint rank, and they were unmatched by others.

"Here they come. As the Divine Envoy of the Guanghan Realm, you really have a lot of attention," Gu Songzi joked.

Zhang Ruochen immediately turned his head to look. Up ahead, a team of dozens of people came into view.

There were just as many familiar faces as unfamiliar faces. Among them were Buji, Su Qingling, and Wen Shusheng, all of whom were powerful figures of Guanghan Realm in their own rights.

The leading figure was a woman with a graceful figure, exquisite appearance, soft skin, incredibly beautiful. Just that she had a cold aura in her eyes like a chilling iceberg. It was prohibitively cold.

She exuded a powerful personal aura, as vast and unpredictable as the sea.

"My pleasure to meet you, Mr. Divine Envoy."

When the group approached, they all cupped their hands to greet Zhang Ruochen.

"Please be at ease." Zhang Ruochen had a smile on his face.

"We apologize. We should have come to meet you earlier," said the woman.

"This is Saint King Tianyue, the daughter of Supreme Saint Jiu Ling. As early as hundreds of years ago, she had already attained Path's Anterior. If it hadn't been for the Guanghan Realm, she would have attained Supreme Sainthood. She is the idol of many women in the Guanghan Realm," Mu Lingxi quickly introduced her with a smile.

"Thanks for your compliment, Your Highness," said Saint King Tianyue with a straight face.

After listening to Mu Lingxi's introduction, Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat. This woman was Supreme Saint Jiu Ling's daughter, which meant she was also from the Jiu Ling Divine Birds Clan. Her position and seniority were the same as, if not above, that of Ji Kongyuan.

Although the descendants of Supreme Saint Jiu Ling were no way near those of Emperor Ji Mie, their attainments were still extremely high. Zhang Ruochen had met two of them; both were Saint Kings.

Judging by Saint King Tianyue's personal aura, Zhang Ruochen could roughly make out that she had about 50 million precepts, which were right about the middle- to higher-level of Path's Anterior.

As for her specific strength, it depended on how large a radius within which she could summon the Precepts of Heaven and Earth and what kind of powerful Saint techniques and divine artifacts she possessed.

With the current situation in the Guanghan Realm, it was an achievement to have trained such a level of Saint King cultivator.

"Nice to meet you, Saint King Tianyue." Zhang Ruochen cupped his hand.

Saint King Tianyue was also a figure of leadership in the Guanghan Realm, so it was only proper not to upstage her.

"This way, please, Mr. Divine Envoy." Saint King Tianyue stepped aside and held out her hand.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and walked ahead.

As the Divine Envoy of Yueshen, he of course needed to maintain his dignity. Otherwise, he would embarrass not only himself but also Yueshen.

Not long after, they arrived before an atrium with magnificent grandeur.

Normally, only Saint King cultivators were eligible to enter this atrium.

“Huh?” As soon as they stepped into the atrium, Mu Lingxi’s eyes skipped a beat.

On the host seat inside the atrium sat a person who did not even bother to stand up as they came in.

Zhang Ruochen also shifted his eyes on the host’s seat and quietly studied the man.

The man was of medium build, and he was draped in red armor. He was also good-looking with a faint flame flickering in his eyes. The man possessed an intimidating personal aura.

The scorching energy that radiated from the man was turning the atrium into a furnace.

Right then, many of the Guanghan Realm’s Saint Kings were looking at the man in the host’s seat warily before looking at Zhang Ruochen. They all had a bad feeling about this.

Even Saint King Tianyue could not help frowning slightly, apparently not expecting this before she came.

“He is Saint King Xing Yun, Wu Zu’s eldest son. He’s moody, and he has a fiery temper,”

said Mu Lingxi to Zhang Ruochen via telepathy.

Now Zhang Ruochen realized that this man was from the Wu Clan. By behaving in such a haughty manner, the man obviously wanted to show him who the boss was.

The reason was nothing more than because of Wu Hao’s death in his hands, which was a humiliation to the Wu Clan.

Besides, Wu Hao was a talented genius whom the Wu Clan had poured all their resources into to train. They had high hopes for him. Wu Zu loved Wu Hao very much too. Wu Hao’s death had caused resentment and even hatred in the Wu Clan toward Zhang Ruochen.

However, Wu Hao had indeed been at fault, and Zhang Ruochen was also a Divine Envoy. The Wu Clan could not do anything about him.

Saint King Xing Yun was sitting in the host’s seat like an emperor looking down at everything.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen and Saint King Xing Yun locked eyes. Zhang Ruochen was calm with no fear.

Saint King Xing Yun might look intimidating, but as far as Zhang Ruochen was concerned, he should be below Saint King Tianyue in terms of strength. His precepts were definitely below 50 million.

Saint King Xing Yun should be ranked last among the three great Saint Kings of the Guanghan Realm.

“Mr. Divine Envoy, Saint King Xing Yun had yet to come out of isolation earlier, so he did not come with us to receive you. We have no idea how things have turned out this way.”

Wen Shusheng spoke to Zhang Ruochen using telepathy.

He felt that it was necessary to tell Zhang Ruochen about it, lest Zhang Ruochen misunderstood.

“I know,”

said Zhang Ruochen in return.

How could he not understand such a situation? It was apparent that Saint King Xing Yun was deliberately singling him out. He wanted to humiliate him, and it had nothing to do with the others.

Besides, he had a good relationship with Supreme Saint Jiu Ling’s men, Buji, Wen Shusheng, and the rest. They would not be so disrespectful to him.

“What took you so long, Zhang Ruochen? We have been expecting you for a long time. Maybe you have forgotten that you are the Divine Envoy of the Guanghan Realm, haven’t you?”

Saint King Xing Yun was anything but friendly.

Zhang Ruochen still maintained a calm expression. “No one may interfere with the affairs of a Divine Envoy. Besides, everything that I did was to raise the profile of the Guanghan Realm.”

“Raise the Guanghan Realm’s profile? I think you are making enemies for the Guanghan Realm. You provoked the Fane of

Youshen, the Fane of Bloody War, and the Soul Realm. Plus, you made Mr. Godcliff your enemy in the Eastern Region. In the Northern Region, you had a conflict with Xuanyuan Liekong, Lei Juexing, and others. You are definitely linked to Bi Yunhai's death. By making so many enemies, are you trying to make the situation more difficult for the Guanghan Realm?" asked Saint King Xing Yun loudly.

When Mr. Godcliff was killed in Luoshui, few people knew about it, and no one had spread the news. So many outsiders still thought that Mr. Godcliff was still alive and lying low while recuperating.

Zhang Ruochen was not upset, and his tone of voice calm. "No matter how many enemies I have made, it is just my personal business. It has nothing to do with the Guanghan Realm. I've never thought of asking the Guanghan Realm to help me."

After a short pause, Zhang Ruochen continued, "It's you, Saint King Xing Yun, who has disrespected Yueshen's appointed Divine Envoy such as myself. You knew I was coming, but you didn't come out to meet me. Yet you still have the nerve to question me. Who gave you the courage?"

"Who are you to ask me to come out to meet you? What can you do about me even if I subdue you myself, let alone question you?" Saint King Xing Yun sneered.

Others were wary of Zhang Ruochen because of his Divine Envoy identity, but not him.

Had Yueshen conducted an open Divine Envoy selection process before the Supreme Saints of the Guanghan Realm, Zhang Ruochen would have not stood a chance.

From the very beginning, Saint King Xing Yun had been unhappy with the selection of Zhang Ruochen as Guanghan Realm's Divine Envoy. He could not accept the fact that a junior was challenging him.

Chapter 1981 - Let's See What You've Got

Chapter 1981: Let's See What You've Got

Sensing the hostile atmosphere between Zhang Ruochen and Saint King Xing Yun, the others were falling between two stools. They could not side with one without offending the other.

Saint King Tianyue frowned, knowing that Saint King Xing Yun held grudges against Zhang Ruochen. Even so, Saint King Xing Yun was going too far with his actions.

She knew how hot-tempered Saint King Xing Yun was. If she spoke now, she would probably upset him.

Faced with Saint King Xing Yun's intimidation, Zhang Ruochen walked into the atrium slowly, his gaze suddenly appearing stern.

He did not want to cause trouble, but he was not afraid of causing one.

Since Saint King Xing Yun was so determined to humiliate him, he did not have to pull any punches anymore.

"Subdue me? How dare you, Saint King Xing Yun. It seems that you have no respect for Yueshen. You are mad!" shouted Zhang Ruochen.

"If you are trying to use Yueshen to threaten me, save it. You underestimate what I can do. I am going to let you know that in this world, only the strongest deserve respect." Saint King Xing Yun snorted as he stood up suddenly.

He certainly knew Zhang Ruochen's track record in the Kunlun Realm, but he had no regard for it. He believed that Zhang Ruochen was not as powerful as people painted him to be. During the three battles in the Eastern Region Holy City, the Sword Vault Palace in the Central Region, and Xianji

Mountain in the Northern Region, Zhang Ruochen had summoned external help.

However, at Lake Phoenix, Zhang Ruochen had no external force that he could summon. As long as he used a little trick, he could easily subdue Zhang Ruochen.

He did not really want to kill Zhang Ruochen, but he had no qualms about teaching Zhang Ruochen a lesson.

“Saint King Xing Yun—”

“Xing Yun, you—”

Both Mu Lingxi and Saint King Tianyue tried to stop Saint King Xing Yun at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen held up his hand to interrupt them. “You don’t have to get involved. Besides, I would like to see what he can do to me.”

While Zhang Ruochen spoke, he secretly communicated with Mu Lingxi via telepathy.

“Don’t worry, he can’t do anything about me.”

Mu Lingxi was relieved upon hearing that, believing that Zhang Ruochen would never do anything that he was not confident about.

“You have guts, Zhang Ruochen. If you can take three moves from me, I will leave you be.” Saint King Xing Yu looked at Zhang Ruochen with condescension.

“Let’s see what you’ve got,” said Zhang Ruochen nonchalantly.

“Let’s see if you’re still so cocky after this. Take my first move!”

Saint King Xing Yun made his move, unleashing a palm strike.

Over 700,000 Precept of Palms formed. The powerful energy formed into a sacred furnace of flames as it struck Zhang Ruochen.

The sacred furnace of flame was extremely solid, with countless precept patterns intertwined on it. It seemed like an

actual sacred furnace with unparalleled Saint power.

“Intermediate-level Tongxuan Saint Technique: Immolation of Heaven Palm Strike!” Buji exclaimed.

Due to invasion and plunder, there were only a few Intermediate-level Tongxuan Saint Techniques left in the Guanghan Realm. But each of these Saint techniques was extremely powerful. When practiced to the highest attainment, they were no less powerful than higher-order Saint techniques.

Immolation of Heaven Palm Strike was the most famous Intermediate-level Tongxuan Saint technique in the Guanghan Realm, and few people could master it.

No one had expected Saint King Xing Yun to perform his most powerful move. It seemed that he was really not pulling any punches.

Zhang Ruochen did not dodge, and his eyes became even more fearsome. The air in front of him distorted at once as he reached out and grabbed it, deflecting the sacred furnace and redirecting it back to Saint King Xing Yun.

After comprehending the Precepts of Dimension in the Secret Tome of Space and Time

, Zhang Ruochen’s attainment had improved tremendously. He could easily perform various dimensional techniques with incredible power now.

“Dimensional technique!”

Saint King Xing Yun squinted. He performed a palm strike, shattering the sacred furnace of flames into pieces.

“Not bad. Take that—second move!”

Saint King Xing Yun flew out of the atrium. This next move was overly destructive; he did not want to destroy the atrium.

The next moment, Saint King Xing Yun reappeared on Lake Phoenix, exuding a powerful aura, his energy steadily climbing.

Lake Phoenix was extremely mysterious. Even Supreme Saints could not cause any damage to it. Nothing would

prevent Saint King Xing Yun from going all out now.

As he performed a Saint technique, the Precepts and Power of Heaven and Earth within a 3,000-mile radius surged violently as they gathered toward Saint King Xing Yun.

A massive amount of flames emerged from Saint King Xing Yun's body to form into a huge fire phoenix. As that happened, a massive amount of Precepts of Heaven and Earth continuously infused into the fire phoenix's body, making it more solid. It began to exude more terrifying energy.

He had only been testing the waters earlier and had used little of his strength. Now the gloves were off for real.

“What is going on? Where does this powerful energy come from?”

For a while, the Saints of the Guanghan Realm were alarmed as they fixed their eyes on Lake Phoenix.

“Isn't that Saint King Xing Yun? Who is he fighting against?”

“My gosh! Is this the power of a Path's Anterior cultivator? He is mobilizing the Precepts and Power of Heaven and Earth from such a wide area. He is almost a god!”

“That seems to be His Honorable Divine Envoy. Why he and Saint Xing Yun fighting?”

“I heard that His Honorable Divine Envoy is incredibly powerful, unbeatable in the entire Kunlun Realm. Saint King Xing Yu must be having a friendly match with him.”

All the saints of the Guanghan Realm were talking about what happened, but not sure what was going on.

The noise on the lake had also alerted the Mu clan members, who poured out from the manor to take a glimpse of what was going on from afar.

“It looks like Saint King Xing Yun and Zhang Ruochen are fighting!” Mu Qingtian frowned.

There was a flash in Yun Zheng's eyes when he heard that. “I have long heard that the Wu Clan of the Guanghan Realm and Zhang Ruochen have some bad blood between them. Since

Saint King Xing Yun has struck, Zhang Ruochen is going to learn things the hard way. Let Saint King Xing Yun teach him a lesson.”

Since his own patriarch could not deal with Zhang Ruochen, he could only pin his hopes on Saint King Xing Yun, eager to see Zhang Ruochen’s embarrassing gaffe.

On the shore of Lake Phoenix, Mu Lingxi and Saint King Tianyue’s eyes were affixed on Zhang Ruochen and Saint King Xing Yun. None of them had expected things would come to such a pass. It was too late to stop them.

“Saint King Xing Yun is dead serious this time. He has mobilized the power of heaven and earth. As powerful as the Divine Envoy is, his cultivation base is only at the Greater Precept World. How would he withstand the attack?” Buji looked worried.

“The Divine Envoy is a little reckless this time. I hope Saint King Xing Yun shows restraint and wouldn’t hurt the Divine Envoy,” said Wen Shusheng.

Su Qingling looked at Saint King Tianyue anxiously. “Would you please stop them, Lady?”

“It’s too late. Now no one can separate the two of them. But you don’t have to worry too much. The Divine Envoy may have a way to deal with Xing Yun.” Saint King Tianyue shook his head as she whispered.

In fact, he was eager to see how powerful Zhang Ruochen was. The fact that he could dominate several battles, he was not depending on external ability entirely.

Mu Lingxi said nothing, just watching Zhang Ruochen intently. She always had confidence in Zhang Ruochen.

Above the lake, Zhang Ruochen and Saint King Xing Yun stood opposite each other, and Zhang Ruochen was holding the Ancient Abyssal Blade in his hand.

“He mobilized one-third of the Precepts of Heaven and Earth within a 3,000-mile radius. His strength barely sits in the middle of Path’s Anterior,” Zhang Ruochen whispered calmly.

He immediately gathered his Saint Qi, hundreds of thousands of Sword Path Precepts, and over ten thousand Precepts of Time into the Ancient Abyssal Blade.

The Violet Godstone inlaid on the hilt of the sword was glowing in lavender as he mobilized the Precepts of Heaven and Earth in the surroundings.

At this stage, Zhang Ruochen had three ways to mobilize the Precepts of Heaven and Earth: one was to perform a higher-order Saint technique, two was to trigger the Violet Godstone, and three was to use a Supreme Artifact.

He could not help it. He had not even formed a Precept Domain, he could not summon the Precepts of Heaven and Earth directly.

“Huh? He hasn’t used the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike, nor has he used any Supreme Artifact. Why can he still summon the Precepts of Heaven and Earth? And at this scale?”

It surprised Saint King Xing Yu when he sensed that Zhang Ruochen was summoning the Precepts of Heaven and Earth.

Even Saint King Tianyue was surprised. “The Divine Envoy is also summoning the Precepts of Heaven and Earth. While Xing Yun has mobilized one-third of them within a radius of 3,000 miles, the Divine Envoy has only a 2,000-mile range, yet he can summon half of the Precepts of Heaven and Earth!”

It was not that the wider the range, the more powerful it was in summoning the Precepts of Heaven and Earth. The key was in how many Precepts of Heaven and Earth were mobilized.

If a person could only summon the Precepts of Heaven and Earth within a 2,000-mile radius but could mobilize 100% of them, it would definitely be more powerful than mobilizing one-third or a quarter of the Precepts of Heaven and Earth within a 3,000-mile radius.

Hearing this, everyone could not help but be shocked. They had not even formed Precept Domain, unable to perceive the movement of Precepts of Heaven and Earth. But they believed what the Saint King of Tianyue said; she would not be wrong.

Mu Lingxi finally smiled as she was now more confident in Zhang Ruochen.

“Take that—my second move!”

Saint King Xing Yun wasted no time performing a palm strike.

A huge fire phoenix flew out, flapping its wings of flame, and setting off a terrible heat wave, almost boiling the lake below.

Zhang Ruochen did not bother to dodge but raised the Ancient Abyssal Blade to meet the fire phoenix head-on.

As he swung the Ancient Abyssal Blade, Marks of Time appeared and was imprinted in the surrounding space.

With his Path of Time improved with time, Zhang Ruochen could easily capture the Marks of Time and prevent them from disappearing for a period of time.

At the same time, the improvement of his Path of Dimension allowed him to summon more Precepts of Heaven and Earth from a larger range when activating the Violet Godstone.

Once he further comprehended the Precepts of Time and Dimension in the

Secret Tome of Space and Time

, these two abilities would be further enhanced.

Dozens of Marks of Time emerged, pulled by the Ancient Abyssal Blade to form into a strange Null Time, which seemed to be in absolute stillness.

Zhang Ruochen the Ancient Abyssal Blade and thrust through the body of the fire phoenix in an instant.

The next moment, the fire phoenix’s body split apart into two halves as two fireballs before dissipating quickly.

“It’s my turn now.”

As Zhang Ruochen whispered, the soul of the Sword Will formed, carrying the Ancient Abyssal Blade to attack the Saint King Xing Yun.

His Sword Soul had just completed its transformation and become the Earth Sword Soul. He was just in time to test it on

Saint King Xing Yun to see how powerful it really was.

Chapter 1982 - Heart-Burning Spirit

Chapter 1982: Heart-Burning Spirit

The noise on the lake was so loud that it also alerted Concubine Lin, who could not curb her curiosity. In the end, she stepped out of the small courtyard.

“Don’t go out there, Ma’am. It’s dangerous.” Kong Xuan followed her closely from behind, feeling very nervous.

Concubine Lin was just a normal person. Any runaway energy could be lethal to her.

“It’s all right.”

Coming to an open space, Concubine Lin stopped as her eyes were locked on Zhang Ruochen.

At this time, Saint King Xing Yun was performing an Immolation of Heaven Palm Strike, and a giant fire phoenix was charging at Zhang Ruochen.

“Master is in danger!” Kong Xuan had her heart in her mouth.

Yet, Concubine Lin appeared calm. “This little trick won’t hurt my son.”

Kong Xuan glanced at Concubine Lin in surprise. She felt that Concubine Lin was a little different today. She was not worried about Zhang Ruochen at all. Could it be that she was confident of Zhang Ruochen?

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen performed a Sword of Time, defeating the fire phoenix effortlessly.

“Master is so skilled!” said Kong Xuan.

Concubine Lin broke into a smile, pleased with Zhang Ruochen’s performance.

From the beginning, she had never looked worried.

Meanwhile, on the lake, Zhang Ruochen had formed a Sword soul, applying the Path of Time and Dimension to their fullest potential. The Sword Soul came before Saint King Xing Yun at once.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade was moving and vibrating a thousand times every second; it was so fast that its movements were invisible to the naked eye.

It captured a Mark of Time with each vibration.

It vibrated thousands of times and captured thousands of Marks of Time as it went around Saint King Xing Yun.

“Null Time realm.”

All captured Marks of Time appeared at once, forming a strange Null Time realm, engulfing Saint King Xing Yun.

Inside the Null Time realm, Saint King Xing Yun was in an absolute state of quiescence, just like the space and time around him.

Of course, this quiescent state could only last for a moment. But it was good enough as far as Zhang Ruochen was concerned.

By the time the Null Time realm disappeared, the Ancient Abyssal Blade was right in front of Saint King Xing Yun’s forehead, putting out a terrifying sword light.

Saint King Xing Yun was rigid, too afraid to move. He was breaking out in a cold sweat, and he still could not make out what technique Zhang Ruochen had used.

While Saint King Xing Yun was still in a daze, Zhang Ruochen had pulled back the Ancient Abyssal Blade and landed back beside Mu Lingxi.

The Sword Soul’s transformation and the comprehension of the Precept of Time had allowed Zhang Ruochen to push his Moonlight Melody into its initial phase and form the Null Time realm. No one could dodge his sword as soon as he came near.

Following this, he still needed to comprehend it further so he could speed up the formation of the Null Time realm while

expanding its range. Only this way could he threaten his enemies further.

“Ruochen’s Sword of Time is elusive indeed,” said Concubine Lin in a low voice.

Kong Xuan became even more puzzled; since when did Concubine Lin know about these things?

Before she could ask, Concubine Lin had turned around and walked back into the small courtyard.

“Sword of Time! This is Sword of Time! I didn’t even stand a chance!” Saint King Xing Yun was startled, kicking himself for his inadequacy.

He was so prideful a moment ago, wanting to teach Zhang Ruochen a lesson by challenging him to take three moves from him. He had never expected to suffer such a humiliating defeat.

If he were Zhang Ruochen’s enemy, he would have died by his sword.

“Awesome, Mr. Divine Envoy! I should have practiced Sword Path.” Buji now saw Zhang Ruochen as his idol.

Su Qingling shot a glance at him and rolled his eyes. “You won’t even be one-tenth as good as the Divine Envoy, even if you have mastered Sword Path. Don’t forget that you are not a Scion of Time and Space. How could an oaf like you comprehend the mystery of Sword Path?”

Buji scratched his head in embarrassment.

He was now a Saint King cultivator, but he and Zhang Ruochen had an immense gap between them.

Thinking back, when Zhang Ruochen first arrived in Red Dragon Domain, his cultivation base was still higher than Zhang Ruochen’s. But in the blink of an eye, he was moaning about Zhang Ruochen smoking him after a few years.

Even so, he was not upset at all. Had Zhang Ruochen not become so powerful, he would not have become Yueshen’s Divine Envoy.

“I am impressed, Mr. Divine Envoy.” Saint King Tianyue smiled.

She had initially been worried about him, that he might lose the match and not just bring shame to himself but also Yueshen.

Now, however, she realized that her worries had been unnecessary. Who was she to question Yueshen’s judgment?

“Thank you for the compliment, Saint King Tianyue.”

Since he defeated Saint King Xing Yun unexpectedly, he did not become triumphant about it. He knew that there would be stronger enemies in the future.

The only way for him to ensure his supremacy was to elevate his strength continuously.

After Saint King Xing Yun’s provocation, Zhang Ruochen was no longer in the mood to talk. After some pleasantries with Buji, Su Qingling, and the others, he left the place where the Guanghan Realm cultivators practiced their self-cultivation.

Back at the manor where Mu Lingxi lived, he became concerned with Drunkard and Gu Songzi’s situations.

As he had learned, Yueshen sent Drunkard and Gu Songzi to the Kunlun Realm on an important mission.

Both Drunkard and Gu Songzi were Yueshen’s most favored men.

It was not without reason. Master brewers and alchemists had always been highly prized people, no matter which macroworld they were in. They often became honored guests of the divine beings.

Drunkard grimaced. “The task that Yueshen has assigned us is anything but easy. I have not rested since the day I came back to the Kunlun Realm—I have been busy trying to collect as many sacred herbs as possible.

“Fortunately, the Kunlun Realm is reviving, so there are many sacred herbs growing. Otherwise, things could become a lot trickier.”

Drunkard paused for a moment as he took out a jar of spirit. “This is the Heart-Burning Spirit that I brewed under Yueshen’s instruction. It is ranked fourth among the renowned liquors of the Kunlun Realm. I have only brewed five jars in the first batch. Let us try.”

Drunkard took out four additional bowls, punctured the seal of the jar, and poured the spirit into the four bowls.

The spirit was crystal-clear with no impurity and no alcohol smell, as though it was just water.

Gu Songzi held a bowl of liquor close to his nose and immediately frowned. “Are you sure this is liquor, Drunkard?”

“Forget about it if you are not drinking. Don’t waste my fine liquor.” Drunkard glared at him.

Just then, the Head Rat suddenly came out of nowhere. “What is that, Master Zhang?”

“Pour him a bowl,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Drunkard immediately took out another bowl and filled it up with Heart-Burning Spirit.

“What is this? Let me try.”

With no hesitation, the Head Rat held up a wine bowl and poured the Heart-Burning Spirit down his throat.

“How come it tastes as bland as water?” The Head Rat had a strange look on his face.

The next moment, his face changed abruptly, putting his hand to his chest. “It’s hot. There is a fire inside. It’s burning inside!”

“Save your breath and quickly gather your inner strength to refine the alcohol. Don’t waste the Heart-Burning Spirit!” Drunkard reminded him.

The Head Rat wasted no time gathering his inner strength for fear that the fire within him would burn him to his death.

His skin reddened as steam rose from his body. He was soaked to the skin.

After a few moments, the Head Rat had returned to normalcy with a pleasant surprise. “What is this Heart-Burning Spirit? It’s amazing! After refinement, the number of precepts in my body has increased by over a thousand.”

What he said surprised Zhang Ruochen, Mu Lingxi, and Gu Songzi. If consuming a bowl of spirit could increase the number of precepts by a thousand, did that mean it would increase by tens of thousands if they drank an entire jar?

If that was true, self-cultivation could not have been easier.

Gu Songzi seemed to have guessed what they were thinking. “The precepts from drinking the Heart-Burning Spirit are of a Minor Path. The efficacy is obvious in the beginning but drinking too much will reduce the efficacy. So don’t bank on drinking the Heart-Burning Spirit to elevate your cultivation base indefinitely.

“Even if there is no limit, forming a few million or even tens of millions of Minor-Path Precepts has no significant benefits. The gain in actual strength is pathetically minor.

“Nevertheless, if you have attained the Major Path and Path of Supreme Saint in your self-cultivation, the Heart-Burning Spirit is a good supplement.

“More so because the Heart-Burning Spirit can harden your mental power and refine your Saint Soul.”

After hearing his explanation, Zhang Ruochen, Mu Lingxi, and Gu Songzi quickly held up their bowls and poured the Heart-Burning Spirit down their throats, eagerly waiting to experience its efficacy.

Before long, Zhang Ruochen had refined the Heart-Burning Spirit. He looked calm with beads of sweat on his forehead.

Similar to the Head Rat’s case, the number of precepts in his body had increased by over a thousand, but there was no change to his Saint Soul.

The reason was that his Saint Soul had been extremely powerful in the first place. A bowl of Heart-Burning Spirit would not make too much of a difference.

“Not bad at all for the fourth-ranking Heart-Burning Spirit. If it can be mass-produced, it will significantly raise the Guanghan Realm’s strength in a short time,” said Zhang Ruochen with a smile.

Drunkard was proud of his creation. “Of course. I added a large amount of higher-order sacred herbs and divine blood when I brewed the Heart-Burning Spirit. Its efficacy can’t be bad. Now that the experiment is a success, I am going to brew it in large quantities and send it back to the Guanghan Realm.”

There were over 3,000 Saint Kings in the Guanghan Realm, but most of them did not come to the Kunlun Realm. So after brewing the sacred liquor and making the elixir, a large part of these things had to be sent back to Guanghan Realm.

Gu Songzi’s mouth twitched, and he felt that Drunkard had gotten carried away. “I have collected all the ingredients here, and I can start refining the Heaven’s Reach Elixir right away. Making other elixirs is even easier. Given enough time, I can make as many elixirs as I want.”

The Heaven’s Reach Elixir was a type of Heavenly Divine Pill. Refining Heaven’s Reach Elixir was extremely difficult. It was not something ordinary alchemists could achieve.

Gu Songzi’s confidence in refining the Heaven’s Reach Elixir showed how crazily advanced his alchemical skill was. Could it be that he had become an Elixir Master?

Only Elixir Masters could mass-produce the Heaven’s Reach Pill.

So Yueshen’s trust in Gu Songzi was not without reason.

Drunkard and Gu Songzi were not the best in terms of combat strength, but what they could do was something many top cultivators could not.

Chapter 1983 - The Reappearance of the Beguiler Demon

Chapter 1983: The Reappearance of the Beguiler Demon

Many thoughts flashed in Zhang Ruochen's mind as he smiled and said, "Tomorrow morning, everyone is to gather at that small island with the Saints of the Guanghan Realm. I have a surprise for all of you."

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen pointed at a small island in the middle of Lake Phoenix.

"What surprise?" Drunkard asked hurriedly.

Zhang Ruochen replied. "If I tell you now, what would the surprise be, then? Just do as I say."

Seeing Zhang Ruochen deliberately trying to keep up the suspense, the Drunkard could not do anything and could only suppress his curiosity and wait for the reveal tomorrow morning.

Immediately, Mu Lingxi, the Shennü of Guanghan Realm came forward and passed on the message to the various saints of Guanghan Realm.

In the evening, Zhang Ruochen came to the small manor where Concubine Lin lived and accompanied her for dinner.

Zhang Ruochen put a piece of meat in Concubine Lin's bowl and smiled gently. "Mother, I plan to go into seclusion for refining starting from tomorrow. It may take seven to eight days or even up to half a month. Once I come out of seclusion, I'll accompany you again."

"Chen'er, you are a grown-up now. Do whatever you want to do. Mother will always support you. There is no need to worry about me," Concubine Lin said very tenderly.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but be slightly surprised. He did not expect Concubine Lin to be so supportive of him.

Concubine Lin continued, "I'm just a mortal, and I cannot provide you with any help. All I can do is support all of the decisions you make. Chen'er, remember, you are a man of the Zhang Clan. Stand tall and never fall."

In response, Zhang Ruochen was even more surprised. He found that Concubine Lin was a little different now than in the past. Perhaps their separation over the past few years had caused a change in her?

However, he was happy to see such a change, he really did not want to see Concubine Lin in tears for him.

As his thoughts turned around, Zhang Ruochen grabbed Concubine Lin's hand and said, "Mother, rest assured that I won't bring shame to the Zhang Clan. I will never disappoint you!"

"Yes, now that's my good son," Concubine Lin said with a gratified smile.

Zhang Ruochen accompanied Concubine Lin for a long time, late into the night. Only after she slept did he leave the manor.

It was strange to say, but previously, whenever he chatted with Concubine Lin, it would always be about home and the past. This time, however, Concubine Lin was concerned about the things that had happened to him in the world outside, and she loved listening to his experiences.

Perhaps, time really could change someone.

The next day, early in the morning.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi appeared together on the small island they had agreed upon yesterday. The Saints of the Guanghan Realm had all gathered there and had been waiting for a long while.

Of course, there was one person who did not turn up, and it was Saint King Xin Yun.

After losing to Zhang Ruochen yesterday, and his pride broken, how could he have the face to appear in front of Zhang Ruochen again?

Even if Zhang Ruochen told him there was a great boon awaiting him, he would not show up regardless.

“Divine Envoy, is there anything important that you had us gathered today?” Su Qingling asked.

Zhang Ruochen swept his gaze across everyone present and said, “I will activate an artifact of time, and everyone can use it to cultivate for a period of time.”

“What’s the difference in the ratio of time?” Su Qingling immediately followed up with a question.

Zhang Ruochen answered, “A year passes with every day.”

“What? There’s such a miraculous artifact of time in this world.” Su Qingling’s eyes suddenly widened, with a look of shock in his eyes.

At this moment, all the saints of Guanghan Realm had a shocked look, even Saint King Tian Yue as well, feeling it to be too incredible.

However, they now vaguely understood why Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation would increase so quickly. It certainly had a lot to do with this artifact of time!

Drunkard laughed out loud. “Sure is a big surprise all right. This way, I can complete the brewing of the Heart-Burning Spirit as soon as possible!”

“I can refine more Heaven Reach Elixirs too!” Gu Songzi also smiled.

The refining of a Heaven-grade Elixer could be said to be time and labor-intensive. With the help of an artifact of time, much time could undoubtedly be saved.

Zhang Ruochen activated the Qiankun Realm and summoned many elites of the Divine Sword Manor and Ming Sect out.

The sundial’s power could cover a range of two hundred feet and accommodate many cultivators to train at any single time.

Every time he activated the sundial, Zhang Ruochen hoped to use it to its maximum potential.

The Godstones were just too precious. If he only turned on the Sundial for a few to cultivate, it was just too wasteful.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen originally planned to give the Mu clan some spots, but since the Mu clan was fully hostile to him, so be it then!

After letting everyone choosing their spots, Zhang Ruochen activated the Sundial.

Instantly, the Sundial's power spread out and enveloped a radius of two hundred feet. Inside the enveloped radius, the flow of time changed drastically.

“Lingxi, you can take this opportunity to refine that beast-shaped holy medicine and the divine planets at the same time. In addition, this is a Heart of the Divine Tree, a treasure bred from the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. It has a powerful vital force in it with the ability to bring revive someone. Keep it well.”

Zhang Ruochen carefully placed one of the Hearts of the Divine Tree in Mu Lingxi's hands.

The Heart of the Divine Tree was extremely precious. There were only seven left in the trunk, and he had given one to Ji Fanxin, so he was now left with six.

For Zhang Ruochen to take one out to gift it to Mu Lingxi, it was a testament to Mu Lingxi's important position in his heart.

Mu Lingxi held the Heart of the Divine Tree tightly as a bright smile appeared on her face, and her heart was full of sweet happiness.

After explaining everything, Zhang Ruochen sat down beneath the Sundial with the Ancient Abyssal Blade and Moyin by his side. One was refining sacred artifacts while another was devouring the corpses of Infernal Court cultivators.

To Zhang Ruochen, both the Ancient Abyssal Blade and Moyin provided him with important support. They were part

of his own strength, so he naturally hoped that they would become as strong as possible.

Without asking the Ancient Abyssal Blade or Moyin, Zhang Ruochen released his six Saint Souls and started to concentrate on his cultivation.

In his seclusion, his main goal was to improve his cultivation base and try his best to culminate his Precept Dominion.

Once it formed, his strength would surely increase by leaps and bounds.

In addition, he also wanted to understand the precepts of time and space that were integrated into the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

, and also comprehend the essence of Sword Ten.

After his Sword Soul had completed its evolution, comprehending the essence of Sword Ten was undoubtedly much easier and efficient.

As the enemies he faced were getting stronger and stronger, Zhang Ruochen had a strong sense of urgency, and he was eager to improve his strength.

With a flip of his hand, Zhang Ruochen also took out a Heart of the Divine Tree and held it in his hand as he quietly studied it.

He believed that the Heart of the Divine Tree's extraordinary quality would certainly help him understand the Saint Path Precepts, especially those of the wood attribute.

While refining the Five-Elements Chaotic Body, it was natural to involve all five elements to make it become the most powerful.

As Zhang Ruochen expected, as he held the Heart of the Divine Tree in his hand and comprehended the saint path precepts, it was indeed far more effective, much more so than using imperial artifact for precept comprehension.

And through the Heart of the Divine Tree, one could comprehend the greater precepts and even the supreme

precepts, like the Path of the Wood, and Path of the Life.

Not surprisingly, Zhang Ruochen was completely immersed in his cultivation.

He had used the Black Altar to envelop the entire island, and no one can break into it easily, and there was no worry about any disturbance.

In a blink of an eye, ten years had passed.

The Saint Path Precepts in Zhang Ruochen's body had reached 15 million and met the conditions for culminating his Precept Dominion.

However, no matter how many times he tried, he failed to culminate it, seemingly missing something.

“It seems like I cannot rush the culmination of my Precept Dominion. Anyway, I've gained a lot during this seclusion. My sword precepts had also reached 750 thousand. Comprehending the Path of the Sword is indeed much easier after my Sword Soul evolved. My Sword Ten has also reached the second level, and I've finally caught up with Feiyu.”

“Also, my precept of time had reached 40 thousand, and my precept of space had reached 70 thousand, both greatly improved. Even if I failed to culminate my Precept Dominion, my strength should have increased by a lot.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded to himself and was quite satisfied with the success of his seclusion.

The increase in his precepts of time and space will undoubtedly be of great significance for him as the power of both his Swordsmanship of Time and his techniques of space and time will greatly increase.

Turning his gaze around, Zhang Ruochen looked at the Ancient Abyssal Blade and Moyin. The smile on his face automatically became brighter.

The Ancient Abyssal Blade was originally a sacred artifact of Ninth Radiance, but after absorbing the essence of many sacred artifacts, it had finally been promoted to a sacred artifact of Tenth Radiance.

After devouring the corpses of many Infernal Court cultivators, Moyin actually raised her cultivation level to Precept Dominion in one fell swoop.

That was right. Moyin had successfully culminated her Precept Dominion and was a step faster than Zhang Ruochen himself.

“The Saint-eater Flower sure is amazing.” Zhang Ruochen said in amazement to himself.

He had provided Moyin with many Infernal Court cultivator corpses, and some of them were corpses of elites who had reached the realm of Precept Dominion, Heaven’s Reach, and even Path’s Anterior.

After absorbing such a bountiful nutrient, it was not surprising that Moyin could culminate her Precept Dominion.

As long as he provided Moyin with sufficient nutrients, it would not be difficult for her to grow all the way to a Supreme Saint. One needed to know that the last Saint Devourer in the Kunlun Realm of old almost became a god.

With a thought, Zhang Ruochen put both the Ancient Abyssal Blade and Moyin back into his body.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen looked at Mu Lingxi who was seated not too far away.

At this moment, Mu Lingxi was still cultivating with many saint path precepts appearing all over her body, as she radiated an extremely powerful aura.

“Lingxi’s cultivation base had also reached the pinnacle of the Greater Precept-World-realm. She had in the end obtained half of the inheritance of the Frostfire Phoenix of Zuling Realm and many boons from Lake Phoenix. The speed of her cultivation sure is enviable.” Zhang Ruochen whispered with a smile.

The half of the inheritance from the Frostfire Phoenix was nothing trivial. After all, it was an inheritance left behind by a top Supreme Saint, enough to allow Mu Lingxi a much easier path to reach Supreme Sainthood than an ordinary person.

Thinking of Warrior Saint Canglan who had gotten the other half of the Frostfire Phoenix inheritance, his cultivation speed should not be slow either.

Zhang Ruochen did not disturb Mu Lingxi and quietly put away the Sundial and the Black Altar.

Suddenly Zhang Ruochen noticed a very faint and bizarre aura.

Immediately, he used the Dimensional Shift and appeared in the manor Concubine Lin had lived by the lake.

He saw a graceful figure standing on the stone wall of the manor. A pair of charming eyes looked down at Zhang Ruochen, her eyelashes trembled slightly as an enchanting smile appeared.

“Qiu Yichi, how did you come to Lake Phoenix?” Zhang Ruochen’s gaze sank, and with a wave of his hand, the Ancient Abyssal Blade appeared in his hand.

The woman on the stone wall was the wife of the Sect of the Blood God’s leader, Qiu Yichi. At the same time, she was also the great Beguiler of the Celestial Court. After the opening of the Kunlun Realm battlefield of merit, she had conquered over a dozen of Nine-step Saint Kings.

Concubine Lin was also in the manor, and she was standing under a sycamore tree. He was not sure if she was frightened or not, but her face was quite pale.

Chapter 1984 - The Crisis of Shengming City

Chapter 1984: The Crisis of Shengming City

Qiu Yichi's sudden appearance on the secret grounds of Lake Phoenix had indeed surprised Zhang Ruochen and caused some anxiety in his heart.

Zhang Ruochen had always been wary of Qiu Yichi. This wife of the Sect of the Blood God's former leader had extremely terrifying abilities. Besides, she had almost completely destroyed the Sect of the Blood God.

More importantly, Qiu Yichi had some vague relation to the Blood Empress, and that intrigued Zhang Ruochen the most.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to take Qiu Yichi down this time, but he dared not act rashly for fear that Concubine Lin and Kong Xuan would be harmed.

Of course, if Qiu Yichi dared to touch Concubine Lin and Kong Xuan, then he will make her pay a blood price for it.

Secretly, he had slowly released his spatial domain, covering the entirety of the small courtyard.

"Zhang Ruochen, why the fury, I had only just accidentally discovered this awakened land, so I came in to have a look. I've not harmed anyone at all. You need to know; we are not enemies." Qiu Yichi smiled charmingly.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze was icy cold as he said, "But we are not friends either. So, are you going to surrender yourself, or should I make you?"

"Zhang Ruochen, it won't make any sense for you to act against me. On the contrary, I think you should go to Shengming City now," Qiu Yichi said calmly.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze sank. "What do you mean?"

“Many of your enemies have already rushed over to Shengming City. If you are late, Shengming City may very well be reduced into ruins.” Qiu Yichi said faintly.

Hearing that, Zhang Ruochen was stunned. If what Qiu Yichi said was true, that meant things were undoubtedly serious.

At this moment, Qiu Yichi turned around and left.

“Don’t even think of leaving.”

Zhang Ruochen reacted extremely quickly and struck immediately.

In any case, he did not plan to let Qiu Yichi leave. Only by capturing her will he be more confident in his journey to the Endless Abyss.

“Chen’er.”

Concubine Lin let out a gentle cry before fainting under the sycamore tree.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed drastically. He could no longer be bothered to chase after Qiu Yichi as he rushed into the small courtyard.

Taking advantage of this, Qiu Yichi promptly fled and left Lake Phoenix before disappearing into the unknown.

Zhang Ruochen appeared beneath the sycamore tree and held Concubine Lin up.

What made him felt a little relieved was that Concubine Lin was only a little surprised and was not harmed.

Looking around, Zhang Ruochen saw the pavilion by the side and Kong Xuan had collapsed unconscious inside it.

Kong Xuan was just a One-step Saint King, and the gulf between her and Qiu Yichi was just too great. Against Qiu Yichi, she had no means to fight back.

Zhang Ruochen released a spiritual power and penetrated into Kong Xuan’s body.

The next moment, Kong Xuan slowly woke up and quickly got up and ran over, as she said nervously. “Master, what’s wrong

with milady? It's my fault, I did not take good care of milady.”

Between words, Kong Xuan knelt fearfully on the ground, thinking she had made a grave mistake.

“Get up. This has nothing to do with you. Please take good care of my mother for me.” Zhang Ruochen said as gently as he could.

Kong Xuan got up and held Concubine Lin with her hands.

Zhang Ruochen then used Dimensional Shift and appeared on the small island they had been secluded on.

“Zhang Ruochen, what happened?”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen's rather anxious look, Gu Songzi could not help but ask.

He had been refining elixirs for the past ten years and had not been immersed in the state of cultivation like the rest.

A grim look appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face as he said, “I need to go to Shengming City, and I'm not sure when I can return. Earlier on, Qiu Yichi the Beguiler sneaked into Lake Phoenix. That means Lake Phoenix is no longer hidden. You need to be on your guard.”

Hearing this, Gu Songzi let out a look of surprise. The surroundings of Lake Phoenix had formation arrays he had personally deployed, and for Qiu Yichi to be able to sneak in without being noticed, that meant she was quite capable.

“Leave this to me. I will change the formation structure of Lake Phoenix.” Gu Songzi nodded.

At that moment, Mu Lingxi suddenly stood up and spoke seriously. “I will accompany you to Shengming City.”

Although she did not exactly know what had happened, she assumed that trouble was upon Shengming City. Right then, she needed to be by Zhang Ruochen's side.

Seeing Mu Lingxi's determined eyes, Zhang Ruochen knew that no matter what he said, there was no stopping Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen could only nod and say, “All right, let's rush over together.”

Just as the two were about to leave, Gu Songzi took out two jasper-colored pills and said, “These are Heaven’s Reach Elixirs I’ve refined. Take them with you, they may be of use.”

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi did not dither and took one pill each from Gu Songzi’s hands.

Immediately after, they took off into the air and left Lake Phoenix at top speed.

To get to Shengming City, going through the Merit Sub-terminal’s teleportation array was undoubtedly the fastest.

Zhang Ruochen put on the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, and with Mu Lingxi in tow, they traveled at a thousand times the speed of sound. A moment later, they arrived at the 62nd Merit Sub-terminal.

Using the teleportation array, Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi soon appeared at the 54th Merit Sub-terminal. This Merit Sub-terminal was just ten thousand miles away from Shengming City.

“Zhang Ruochen had come, there’s something exciting to see now!”

“I heard that Zhang Ruochen was the crown prince of Shengming Central Empire in the past, and Shengming City is the imperial city of the Shengming Central Empire. Most of the old Shengming cadres are all inside the city, and now that crisis is upon it, it’s normal for Zhang Ruochen to come.”

“Zhang Ruochen should not have come. He should choose forbearance at this moment instead.”

“That’s not necessarily true. Since Zhang Ruochen dared to come, that means he must have something up his sleeve. Let’s follow him and see.”

...

At the 54th Merit Sub-terminal, many cultivators were discussing as they all had the mind of watching the drama unfold.

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen’s heart sank.

It seems like Qiu Yichi had not lied to him; something had indeed happened to Shengming City.

Ever since the Lingxiao Heavenly Lord Manor was destroyed, Shengming City had been the basecamp for the old Shengming cadres, and even Empress Chi Yao had never disturbed them since.

For the First Central Empire, placing all of the old Shengming cadres in Shengming city aided in governing them and removing many procedural obstacles.

In any case, as long as Empress Chi Yao was around, the old Shengming cadre will not be able to kick off anything major in Kunlun Realm.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi did not tarry at the 54th Merit Sub-terminal and immediately rushed toward Shengming City at the fastest speed possible.

Those old Shengming cadres had always been loyal to the Shengming Central Empire, and be it at any moment, it was impossible for Zhang Ruochen to ignore them.

Outside Shengming City, many elites from all over had gathered, and they noticed Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi's arrival at the first moment.

"I never thought that Zhang Ruochen would rush over like this."

"It's no use even if he had rushed over. The destruction of Shengming City is a foregone conclusion, and no one can change anything about it!"

"You have a point. The Heavenly Realm faction has sent out so many elites and is determined to destroy Shengming City. Major realms like the Soul Realm, Ruiya Realm, Cloud Realm, Cha Realm, Yinyang Realm, Hongyang Realm, Tiangui Realm, and the like have acted together. Their forces are massive; it's just impossible for Zhang Ruochen to resist alone."

"Zhang Ruochen should have known this long ago, but he still rushed over without hesitation. He really treasures his bond

and relationship, no wonder those old Shengming cadres were willing to follow him to the death.”

“I think Zhang Ruochen is foolish. He knows that he is powerless to do anything, yet he still insists on it. Him rushing over now is just rushing to his death.”

...

Seeing Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi rushing over to Shengming City, many of the observers outside the city could not help but to shake their heads, feeling that Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi were like moths to the flame.

Since the Heavenly Realm faction had made such a big move, even if some of them had good feelings about Zhang Ruochen, they dared not get involved in this time. No one wanted to offend the Heavenly Realm.

“Zhang Ruochen, don’t go there. This is a setup by Shang Ziyao. The destruction of Shengming City is just a facade. Dealing with you is their true goal.”

A voice suddenly entered Zhang Ruochen’s ears, trying to stop him from entering the city.

Zhang Ruochen was very familiar with this voice. It was the daughter of the Greater Demonic Realm’s First Heaven Lord, Lady Lingyan. He had no idea why she would appear outside Shengming City.

Zhang Ruochen immediately responded with his spiritual power. “Thank you for the warning, but even if this is a trap, I must still jump into it.”

He had thought about this long ago, but could he just turn a blind eye to the plight of the old Shengming cadres? Obviously, he could not.

Lady Lingyan stood on the branch on a towering ancient tree, shaking her head as she looked at Zhang Ruochen’s departing figure and sighed.

During the battlefield of merit on Zuling Realm, she had formed some friendship with Zhang Ruochen, so she naturally

did not want to see him charge headlong to his death, but unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen did not heed her advice.

What's more, she could not aid him either. After all, she was a representative of the Greater Demonic Realm, and could not afford to court trouble for her realm.

“Zhang Ruochen, I hope you can survive this. It will be an absolute pity if you die here.” Lady Lingyan whispered to herself.

Inside Shengming City was a scene of destruction. Half of the city had been reduced to rubble with an unknown number of deaths.

The elites of the Heavenly Realm faction had all turned into butchers as they slaughtered everyone inside Shengming City, be it cultivators or mere mortals, without any hesitation or remorse.

In mid-air, Cang Long had a menacing expression as his body radiated a terrible murderous aura.

It was actually because of him that the Heavenly Realm faction had attacked the city so quickly. He was the one who had persuaded Shang Ziyang to act as soon as possible, to sever Zhang Ruochen's link to the Kunlun Realm.

“Zhang Ruochen, you forced my hand. You dared to touch my woman, and I'll make you regret it!” Cang Long said viciously.

Killing everyone that was related to Zhang Ruochen inside Shengming City with wanton abandon made him feel good. Zhang Ruochen and Ruan Ling had got together to deceive him, and he will exact a blood toll on Zhang Ruochen.

Moreover, this was also a mission arranged by Youshen, to kill everyone associated with Zhang Ruochen, and cause Zhang Ruochen untold pain and sorrow.

This time Cang Long had gathered all of the Fane of Youshen elites that had entered Kunlun Realm for the full assault on Shengming City.

It was a pity that the Six Fatales of the Fane of Youshen were dead, and only a few Precept Dominion level elites were left. Especially now when Ruan Ling was not of one mind with him any longer, compared to the other factions in the Heavenly Realm, the Fane of Youshen was undoubtedly very weak now.

However, all of these were immaterial. As long as his goal was achieved, so what if the other factions got to stand out?

Chapter 1985 - Fighting Cang Long Again

Chapter 1985: Fighting Cang Long Again

On Mount Kongyue outside Shengming City, Shang Ziyan and a group of powerhouses were standing together while looking down on Shengming City. They were observing the battle inside the city with utmost clarity.

Shengming City had been destroyed, with almost half of the city smashed into the ground. Corpses littered the ground as if it was a scene from hell.

By Shang Ziyan's side was a young 14- or 15-year-old boy clad in a robe. He had a handsome face, and every inch of his skin radiated sacred light.

He was none other than Chi Kunlun who had sworn to seek vengeance from Zhang Ruochen back in the Celestial Domain of Truth. He had the body of a true god and was a controller of space. His potential for growth was unlimited.

Chi Kunlun had originally fought on the Battlefield of Merits and killed countless Infernal Court cultivators. However, he had gotten trapped by the elites of the Heavenly Realm faction and fallen into Shang Ziyan's hands.

"Ziyan, what are you doing expending so much effort for this kid? A look of confusion appeared in Si Han's eyes.

Shang Ziyan smiled, saying. "This kid must have a great link to Zhang Ruochen. Perhaps keeping him might be of use later."

"Kill me if you can. While I may have blood feuds with Zhang Ruochen, you can forget about getting me to help you deal with Zhang Ruochen!" Chi Kunlun snorted coldly.

Although he hated Zhang Ruochen, he would definitely never work with anyone from the Heavenly Realm faction.

“Ziyan, Zhang Ruochen is already outside Shengming City, want to take capture him now?” Si Han asked again, as his gaze locked onto Zhang Ruochen who was fast approaching Shengming City.

Shang Ziyan also cast his gaze over and said lightly. “There are people inside Shengming City that will deal with Zhang Ruochen. He can’t escape even if he wanted to. Let’s head over to the Peacock Manor first, capture Kong Lanyou, and destroy the Ming Sect. I want Zhang Ruochen to watch as his friends and family die one by one.”

He had already arranged plenty of elites in Shengming City to ensure that Zhang Ruochen could not escape, so he had no worries at all now.

The attack on Shengming City was indeed a ploy set by Shang Ziyan to lure Zhang Ruochen over.

Otherwise, why would he need to mobilize so many people to deal with that small bit of cultivators in Shengming City. Any Nine-step Saint King could just annihilate them.

Now that Shengming City was on the verge of completely falling, even if there were fishes that had slipped through the net, it was nothing but a futile struggle.

At this moment, Shang Ziyan took out a warship and set off for Peacock Manor.

In contrast, he paid more attention to Kong Lanyou. After all, Kong Lanyou was once a Supreme Saint, and even if her Immortal Body was shattered, her strength was definitely not to be underestimated.

On the other side, Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi approached Shengming City at the greatest speed.

Seeing the murderous aura rising from Shengming City, Zhang Ruochen’s heart sank to the bottom.

From a distance, Zhang Ruochen saw two figures standing on top of a tower. One of them was Cang Ling, and another one looking even stronger, with even more disheveled hair. The aura exuded from that person was as majestic as an ancient divine mountain and was not at all beneath Cang Long.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’re finally here. I’ve been waiting.”
Cang Long sneered.

Zhang Ruochen stopped and looked at Cang Long. “Loser, you actually dare to show your face before me again.”

Hearing this, Cang Long’s face suddenly became gloomy as he said. “Who are you calling a loser? If you did not borrow any external force, you would have perished in my hands the last time!”

“So, what if I borrowed external powers? You still ended up losing to me, running away like a coward.” Zhang Ruochen sneered.

Just as Cang Long was about to retort, an even harsher voice rang out. “Cang Long, what are you pretending for? You’re straight-up impotent, otherwise, how could Ruan Ling become Lord Chen’s woman? You have been pursuing Ruan Ling for ages and could not even touch her finger, yet our Lord Chen dominated her in just minutes!

“If I were you, I’d find a piece of tofu and kill myself by bashing myself with it. How could I even have the face to come out a further embarrass myself?”

Hearing this, forget Cang Long, even Zhang Ruochen was dumbstruck.

Zhang Ruochen already knew who the pottymouth was without even needing to look.

Baaam!!

A pothole appeared in the ground as the Head Rat dug out of it with a wretched smile on his face.

“Lord Chen, why were you two in such a hurry? You made me chase you two all the way here, and I’ve finally caught up.”
The Head Rat panted a little.

It was obvious that he had not even figured out the situation yet and did not know why Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi had rushed here for.

Otherwise, with his timid and fearful character, he would not dare to join in the fun like this.

Mu Lingxi turned and looked at Zhang Ruochen, obviously wanting Zhang Ruochen to give her a reasonable explanation.

“The story is rather long. I’ll talk about it... later.” Zhang Ruochen secretly transmitted his voice.

Mu Lingxi was a person who knew time and place for everything and understood this was not the time for all this, so she did not pursue the question.

Cang Long’s face was flushed red, and almost spat a mouthful of blood out. He was clearly badly shaken by the Head Rat’s words.

“You have a death wish.”

Cang Long’s face distorted a little, and his expression was menacing.

Whoosh!

The Head Rat instantly hid behind Zhang Ruochen and continued to loudly mock, “Fight Lord Chen if you can then. See if he smashes your teeth all over the ground!”

In any case, with Zhang Ruochen around, he was not worried at all.

Cang Long unleashed an extremely terrifying aura as the black saint light transformed into black dragons that coiled around him. The entire world suddenly became darker as the clouds revolved around Cang Long.

“Zhang Ruochen, this time around, I will stomp you beneath my feet before everyone.” Cang Long roared.

He had been suppressing his rage for far too long now. If he did not kill Zhang Ruochen with his own hands, Zhang Ruochen would be the demon inside him and torment him forevermore.

The Head Rat chuckled and said, “Lord Chen, don’t be merciful. Teach this b*stard, Cang Long a good lesson. Beat him up until his own mother cannot recognize him!”

He was only spectating the battle and did not care if more oil was added to the flames, nor did he care if Cang Long was

about to vomit blood from rage.

“Protect yourself,” Zhang Ruochen whispered to Mu Lingxi.

The next moment, he rushed out with his sword pointed at Cang Long.

The last time he was not strong enough and allowed Cang Long to escape. This time around, Cang Long will not get any more chances.

“Cang Long is the number one elite beneath a Supreme Saint for the Fane of Youshen, even if Zhang Ruochen is the Scion of Time and Space, I’m afraid his chances of victory against Cang Long is not high.”

“For a Greater Precept-World cultivator to challenge a top-tier Path’s Anterior elite, this kind of thing, forget even seeing it before, I’ve never heard of it before.”

“Didn’t you know that Cang Long lost to Zhang Ruochen not too long ago? It’s said that Zhang Ruochen had captured Ruan Ling in that battle and conquered her as his own woman.”

“Are you for real?”

“I’ve heard that Zhang Ruochen had used a trump card Yueshen had given to him to defeat Cang Long. In terms of true strength, Zhang Ruochen is definitely not Cang Long’s match.”

“You actually believe that? Did Zhang Ruochen use his trump cards to kill several Shenzi of the Infernal Court at the Sword Vault and Xianji Mountain as well? How can there be so many trump cards? Anyone who underestimates Zhang Ruochen dies in his hands.”

...

Zhang Ruochen had not started the battle against Cang Long and the spectators were already talking about it.

While there were some who supported Zhang Ruochen, many more were optimistic about Cang Long’s chances instead.

The difference between Zhang Ruochen and Cang Long’s cultivation level was just too great, the possibility of crossing

two realms to defeat Cang Long was very slim.

“Zhang Ruochen, I shall cleanse away my shame with your blood!”

Cang Long roared, and the immortal black dragon claw appeared as numerous Precepts of Heaven and Earth gathered, forming a terrifying vortex.

Zhang Ruochen continuously infused his Saint Qi into the Ancient Abyssal Blade in his hand, activating the violet Godstone that was inlaid on the sword’s hilt.

Suddenly, over fifty percent of the precepts of heaven and earth within three thousand miles were roused and converged over in a frenzy.

With the improvement in Zhang Ruochen’s Path of Sword and the cultivation of Sword Ten’s second level alongside the evolution of his Sword Soul, the ability of the violet Godstone to mobilize the Precepts of Heaven and Earth improved greatly.

“Sword Ten.”

The Ancient Abyssal Blade slashed out like a lightning bolt, releasing a blinding white sword light as it met the immortal black dragon claw.

Baaam!!

The vortex formed by the immortal black dragon claw was instantly shattered by the white sword light.

Immediately after, the tip of the Ancient Abyssal Blade hit the immortal black dragon claw.

If it was any normal sacred artifact of the Tenth Radiance that dared to clash against the immortal black dragon claw, it would have long been damaged.

However, the Ancient Abyssal Blade was unscathed. Instead, it unleashed a terrifying force that shook Cang Long until he staggered backward again and again.

“Hahaha, Cang Long, I’ve said, you just cannot make it. Your body is just so impotent you’d be better off taking some

aphrodisiac!” The Head Rat laughed out loud.

“What’s going on? Cang Long is actually on the back foot while using his immortal black dragon claw?”

“Is Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation level really just the Greater Precept-World realm? How can someone mobilize the precepts of heaven and earth so easily without culminating one’s Precept Dominion?”

...

Seeing Cang Long being pushed back, many of the spectators could not help but be dumbstruck.

At this moment, Cang Long’s eyes became even more gloomy. In less than a month’s time, Zhang Ruochen’s strength had obviously increased by a significant amount, and the speed of his improvement was really terrifying.

“I cannot let him continue to live.” Cang Long swore to himself.

If this continued, he would really not be Zhang Ruochen’s match anymore after a short while.

“Lord Chen, don’t give Cang Long any chance to catch a breath, hurry up and cut him down!” the Head Rat shouted.

A cold light flashed past Cang Long’s eyes. When he is done dealing with Zhang Ruochen, he would certainly smash that damned rat into pieces.

Upon seeing the cold light in Cang Long’s eyes, the Head Rat was not afraid at all. He wore a provocative look, which was indescribably wretched.

With a thought, Cang Long pulled his Hidden Moon Saber out and infused 500,000 Saber Precepts into it as he slashed at Zhang Ruochen with raging fury.

He had wanted to use Youshen’s power, and unleash the Divine Light of the Hidden Sky, and kill Zhang Ruochen in one fell swoop.

He thought that the power from Zhang Ruochen’s left leg probably had a limit and could not be used wantonly; so as

long as he used the Divine Light of the Hidden Sky again, he was sure he could kill Zhang Ruochen.

Unfortunately for him, the Divine Light of the Hidden Sky can only be used three times, and he had used the last charge when he fought against Zhang Ruochen the last time. He thought he could easily kill Zhang Ruochen and never expected an accident to happen.

“Dimensional Collapse!”

Zhang Ruochen pointed forward as 70 thousand space precepts appeared and densely covered the space ahead.

Boom!!

The space before him collapsed as the destructive energies of the power of space surged wildly.

Cang Long’s light blade was powerful, but it was quickly devoured by the shattered space, and it dissolved into nothingness.

Chapter 1986 - : One-Strike Beheading

Chapter 1986: One-Strike Beheading

“What? He actually blocked my full blow with his technique of space?”

Cang Long was shocked and felt incredulous.

It was not that he had never seen the means available to a cultivator of space. But forget one of a Greater Precept World levels, even a Precept Dominion, Heaven’s Reach, or even a Path’s Anterior space technique might not be as terrifying as the ones displayed by Zhang Ruochen.

The Path of Space was an eternal path, and it was extremely difficult to even comprehend a single space precept.

Many space cultivators of the Greater Precept-World-realm often only had thousands of space precepts, and only be reaching Precept Dominion realm would their space precepts break through into the ten of thousands.

However, Zhang Ruochen had not even culminated his Precept Dominion, and the number of his space precepts had reached 70 thousand. By the time he fully comprehends the precept of space inside the Secret Tome of Time and Space, it would not be a difficult thing for his space precepts to reach a hundred thousand of them.

“As expected of the Scion of Time and Space, his space techniques are so terrifying.” Lady Lingyan could not help but to exclaim.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen gaining the upper hand, she was undoubtedly very happy. After all, she did not want to see Zhang Ruochen die in Shengming City.

Inside Shengming City, a powerhouse stood on an extremely high pavilion as he watched Zhang Ruochen’s battle with Cang Long from a distance.

The person's figure was blurry, with the space around his body being faintly distorted, making it impossible for someone to see him clearly.

What was certain that this person was without a doubt a space cultivator.

When he saw Zhang Ruochen resisted the full might of Cang Long's blow with the Dimensional Collapse, a bizarre glint appeared in the person's eyes.

"Zhang Ruochen had never entered the Fane of Space to train before, yet his Path of Space could reach such a level. The inheritance left behind by Saint Monk Xumi must be really great." The space cultivator hiding in the dark said.

In his hand was an Exquisite Dimensional Orb, and one could faintly see many figures inside it struggling desperately but were unable to break free.

...

...

Outside Shengming City, Cang Long struck again, using both the immortal black dragon claw and the Hidden Moon Saber at the same time to maximize his strength without any reservation.

"Cang Long, is that a dragon claw? More like a chicken claw I say, with no offensive power at all. Even my claws are sharper than yours." The Head Rat jeered out loud.

Back then, people from the Fane of Youshen dared to ambush him, and drove him into the Dungeon of Ice. He had always remembered this grudge, and even if he could not beat Cang Long, he would still want to piss the latter off to death using words.

"Dimensional Distortion."

Zhang Ruochen calmly unleashed his space techniques.

A massive distortion suddenly appeared in the space before him, causing the blade light of the Hidden Moon Saber to reverse its direction and slash at Cang Long's immortal black dragon claw.

At such close range, even if Cang Long wanted to dodge, it was already too late.

BAAAMMM!!!

The blade was extremely sharp, and even if the immortal black dragon claw was extremely sturdy, a tiny crack appeared at this moment.

Upon seeing this, the Head Rat could not help to clutch his stomach and laughed. “Cang Long, you want to eat chicken feet that badly? You actually cut yourself! Oh god that’s hilarious!”

“Go to hell.”

Cang Long shuddered in fury as he forcefully deflected the blade light on the immortal black dragon claw towards the Head Rat.

The Head Rat shrank and instantly escaped into the ground. His speed was blindingly fast.

BOOM!!

The blade light smashed onto the ground, and even though there was barely any power left, it still left a hundred-meter-long crack on the ground that ran several meters deep.

One needs to know, the ground outside Shengming City is extremely solid, and any ordinary attacks could not cause any obvious damage at all.

The next moment, the Head Rat popped out from the ground and patted his chest as he said proudly. “Cang Long, you are still ages away from killing me. Just you wait, Lord Chen will lob your head off soon enough!”

“Cang Long, was you to one who encouraged Shang Ziyan to attack Shengming City?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Cang Long let out a sneer and said. “Yes, that was me. This is the price for touching my woman!”

“In that case, die!”

Zhang Ruochen's gaze became extremely sharp as a terrifying killing intent exuded from his body.

His sword soul rushed out of his body in an instant, grabbing the Ancient Abyssal Blade as it ignored the distance and instantly appeared near Cang Long.

“You think the same move will work on me twice?” Cang Long sneered.

With the Hidden Moon Saber in his hand, Cang Long was fearless as he used tens of millions of saint path precepts to form a powerful Precept Dominion as it firmly guarding him.

With the lesson of the past, he will not be harmed by Zhang Ruochen’s Swordsmanship of Time this time.

The sword soul swung the sword, and instantly caught over hundreds of Marks of Time as they imprinted themselves in the space around Cang Long.

The Imaginary Time Domain was successfully constructed, and for the area enveloped by the domain, time instantly went into a standstill.

The sword light flashed, and Cang Long’s head flew high into the air as blood spurted all over.

“How could this be...”

Cang Long’s eyes opened wide as one final thought appeared in his mind.

Immediately, the consciousness faded from Cang Long’s eyes as his saint soul was quickly annihilated.

“What just happened? How did Cang Long get beheaded?”

“It’s the Swordsmanship of Time, it must be the legendary Swordsmanship of Time!”

“Zhang Ruochen is a master of time and space. Not only he can control space, but he could also control the power of time. I did not expect the Swordsmanship of Time to be so terrifying that Cang Long did not had time to react at all.”

“With such an unfathomable sword technique, how does one guard against it?”

...

Seeing Cang Long getting beheaded, all of the spectators were equally stunned. The look of awe gradually appeared in their gaze at Zhang Ruochen.

Atop the city tower, the expression of another powerhouse changed drastically as the figure took a step back, clearly a little afraid of Zhang Ruochen's Swordsmanship of Time.

"Lord Chen is mighty, the Swordsmanship of Time is invincible!" The Head Rat cheered.

Mu Lingxi heaved a sigh of relief, as her tensed heart could not finally relax.

Even she did not anticipate that Zhang Ruochen's Swordsmanship of Time had gotten to this level. It was even more unfathomable compared to when he found Saint King Xing Yun.

With Cang Long's death, the Hidden Moon Saber wanted to escape.

Zhang Ruochen took out his Secret Tome of Time and Space and activate it, forming a multi-dimensional space as it wrapped the Hidden Moon Saber within it.

Immediately after, he closed the Secret Tome of Time and Space, and completely locked the Hidden Moon Saber down.

A King's Weapon may be powerful, but after losing its master, it was literally a toothless tiger.

With a grasp, Zhang Ruochen ripped the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light from Cang Long's body and tossed it to Mu Lingxi.

Cang Long had entered the top ten thousand of the Saint King Merit List for more than five hundred years now, and the Fane of Merits will no longer take back this armor, and neither will they investigate if the armor was snatched away.

The defensive power of the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light was very strong and could unleash speed thousand times the speed of sound. With Mu Lingxi putting it on, her safety was much more assured.

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen put away Cang Long's corpse. The latter must have much good items on his body, but Zhang Ruochen currently do not have the time to go through it.

“Zhang Ruochen, you sure are bold, daring to kill Cang Long.” Another powerhouse on the tower shouted loudly.

A cold glint flickered in Zhang Ruochen's eyes as he looked at the powerhouse and said icily. “Not only do I dare to kill Cang Long, but I also dare to kill you.”

A look of fear appeared on the powerhouse's face, but he still remained calm. With a wave of his hand, the city gates opened, revealing the scene inside the city.

Tens of thousands of the old Shengming cadres were kneeling behind the gate, almost all of them bloodied, and none of them were unharmed.

All of these old Shengming cadres were cultivators of various cultivation levels, with a Saint King among them.

The Saint King was someone Zhang Ruochen was very familiar with, he was a general under Prince Mingjiang, Yan Kaixuan, a person who had once offended Zhang Ruochen.

After the recovery of Kunlun Realm, Yan Kaixuan had obtained many opportunities, and his cultivation base climbed and finally stepped into the realm of a Saint King.

However, he was not too strong, and had only reached the realm of a Two-Step Saint King.

“Zhang Ruochen, you dare to make any rash movements, I will assure you that all of these people will die.” The powerhouse on the tower sneered.

With tens of thousands of old Shengming cadres in his hand, he was not at all afraid of Zhang Ruochen now.

“Your highness, just leave us and run!”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen outside the city, Yan Kaixuan immediately yelled.

Yan Kaixuan was in a very miserable state now. He had lost an arm, with several holes on his body as saint blood constantly flowed out of it.

“Your Highness! Being able to see you once again before we die, we have no more regrets!”

“We were useless and will no longer be able to fight with Your Highness on the battlefield again.”

“I have no regrets joining Shengming in this life and hope I will be reborn as a citizen of Shengming in my next. Your Highness, run, and avenge us later!”

...

The old Shengming cadres spoke one after another, all of them exhorting Zhang Ruochen to leave.

There were many Heavenly Realm elites inside the city, and how could Zhang Ruochen deal with them alone?

They can die, but Zhang Ruochen must live.

As long as Zhang Ruochen was alive, the flame of Shengming will not go out, and the day it would burn bright again will come.

Seeing so many old Shengming cadres kneeling on the ground, all with mutilated bodies, a raging flame of anger instantly rose in Zhang Ruochen’s heart.

“How dare you... how dare you do this to my people of Shengming?”

Zhang Ruochen’s body trembled, his voice was low like a rumbling thunder.

The powerhouse on the tower laughed. “What? Are you angry? You want to save them? I will give you a chance to fight me, of course, you cannot use your techniques of time and space. As long as you can last a quarter of an hour, I will let all of them go!”

“If you dare not, I will kill them all right now!”

Obviously, he was very afraid of Zhang Ruochen’s techniques of time and space and was not confident he could fight against

that.

Yet, he wanted to take Zhang Ruochen down, and earn himself credit, so he could only use this method.

“Yan Ba is bloody insidious to come up with such a shameless method to fight Zhang Ruochen.”

“It’s said that Zhang Ruochen is probably the killer of Yan Wang, and Yan Wang is Yan Ba’s most beloved nephew. How can Yan Ba forgive Zhang Ruochen for such a massive blood feud?”

“Yan Ba had been cultivating for more than 1,300 years and had long reached the realm of Path’s Anterior. His cultivation is unfathomable, and is a bit stronger than Cang Long, a top powerhouse of the Yinyang Realm. Under normal circumstances, Yan Ba would be a tough foe for Zhang Ruochen’s, without the techniques of time and space, Zhang Ruochen’s defeat is almost assured.”

Many of the powerhouses watching the battle shook their heads, all of them did not expect Yan Ba to be so sinister, so shameless.

Chapter 1987 - Breaking into Emperor Ming City

Chapter 1987: Breaking into Emperor Ming City

Zhang Ruochen looked at Yan Kaixuan and the others before lifting his head at Yan Ba, saying. “Okay, I agree to that.”

“You sure are a loyal one, no wonder all these old Shengming cadres are willing to sacrifice themselves for you.” A big smile suddenly appeared on Yan Ba’s face.

As long as Zhang Ruochen took the bait, everything else was simple enough.

Seeing that face, the Head Rat got pissed off, and spat. “Yan Ba, you shameless thug. You are a top powerhouse of Yinyang Realm and well, their honor just got dragged through the mud by you!”

Hearing this, the smile of Yan Ba’s face disappeared without a trace as he growled. “Once I’m done with Zhang Ruochen, I will deal with you immediately.”

“Pffft, old coot, what are you so happy about? Even without the techniques of time and space, Lord Chen still can beat you into a pulp.” the Head Rat yelled.

At this moment, he had to do everything to support Zhang Ruochen, and at the very least he must not be weaker than Yan Ba in force of momentum.

Yan Ba found it difficult to control the anger in his heart and had an urge to lob the Head Rat’s head off.

Zhang Ruochen raised the Ancient Abyssal Blade and pointed to the sky as countless of sword Qi automatically converged into a sword domain and said with a deep voice. “Yan Ba. Let’s do this!”

“Since you want to die so badly, I will fulfill your wish.” Yan Ba looked away from the Head Rat and focused square on his

foe, Zhang Ruochen.

BOOM!!

The types of extremely terrifying flames rushed out of Yan Ba's body and spread across all directions, quickly forming onto a field of fire. The temperature inside and outside Shengming City rose rapidly, as if wanting to evaporate all of the water around it.

Among the nine types of flames, one of them was most familiar to Zhang Ruochen, the Chenyan-level Divine Purification Flames.

This moveset was exactly the same as Yan Wang's back then.

“Take this!”

Yan Ba growled as he blasted out a giant hand consisting of nine types of flames out.

“The most famous intermediate-level Tongxuan saint technique, the Nine-Flame God Searing Palm. As expected of Yan Ba, he actually managed to cultivate the palm technique to full completion.”

Seeing Yan Ba's move, some cultivators could not help but exclaim.

“Your Highness, run!”

Yan Kaixuan screamed as hard as his could as panick set over him.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze was sharp as his spiritual power merged with the Ancient Abyssal Blade as the fifty percent of the precepts of heaven and earth within three thousand miles were roused by the violet godstone and converged over in a frenzy.

“Sword Ten.”

A white sword light shot out from the Ancient Abyssal Blade, like a crescent moon soaring into the sky.

Compared to the previous battle against Cang Long, the Sword Ten that Zhang Ruochen displayed now was undoubtedly even more intricate and terrifying.

The Swordsmanship of Time needed actual combat to improve, and only by using it can he derive its variations, and truly master its essence.

BAAMM!!

The nine flames that formed the giant hand burst apart and reformed into nine groups of flames.

And Zhang Ruochen's figure also staggered a few steps back before neutralizing all of the impact of the Nine-Flame God Searing Palm strike.

Yan Ba frowned slightly, not particularly satisfied with this outcome.

The conditions he had set earlier seemed to be missing something and should have added swords techniques into the ban list.

“Again.”

Yan Ba struck again, using the same Nine-Flame God Searing Palm strike.

The difference was now, the palm strike had many changes to it as the nine flames rushed out in a frenzy from his body, forming into a sea of flames as it charged at Zhang Ruochen like a deluge.

“RAWWRRRR!”

The nine flames condensed into flame dragons as they roared and rushed at Zhang Ruochen as if they were lifelike.

Zhang Ruochen activated his Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and retreated quickly.

As for Mu Lingxi and the Head Rat, they had long since pulled back a long distance away to avoid getting caught up in the battle.

“Zhang Ruochen, if you retreat again, I will kill them all right this instant!” Yan Ba threatened coldly.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen stopped and put away the Ancient Abyssal Blade as his saint Qi surged into his palms as he blasted out a dragon shadow and an elephant shadow.

For a time, fifty percent of the precepts of heaven and earth within two thousand five hundred miles were being roused as they merged into the dragon and elephant shadows.

With the improvement of his cultivation, the radius where he could draw upon the precepts of heaven and earth while using the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm strike was also further expanded.

The dragon shadow and the elephant shadow became so massive that they looked like they were about to crowd out the realm. Even from far away, they still looked awe-inspiring.

“Dragon-Elephant Across the Heavens.”

BOOM!!

The sea of flames shattered, and all of the flame dragons burst into pieces.

BOOM BOOM!!

Zhang Ruochen was pushed back again and again, obviously suffering the blow of a powerful impact.

“Unexpectedly, even when not using his techniques of time and space, Zhang Ruochen could fight against Yan Ba. His attainments in the path of sword and path of palm are just too high!”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen taking on two successive palm strikes from Yan Ba, many of the cultivators watching could not help but to be shocked.

Yan Ba frowned, and finally jumped down from the tower as he quickly approached Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen, I really had underestimated you, but everything ends now.” Yan Ba’s eyes became extremely ferocious as his murderous intent ran rampant.

BAAAMMM!!!

Nine kind of flames abruptly came drilling out of the ground, instantly forming a flaming cage and enveloped Zhang Ruochen inside it.

If one were to look closely, there were countless of flame precepts intertwined on the flaming cage, unleashing the power of god searing as it engulfed Zhang Ruochen.

Seeing this, Yan Ba could not help but to show a sinister smile. No matter how tough Zhang Ruochen was, the latter still fell in his hands.

“Your Highness, no...!!!!”

Inside Shengming City, all of the captive old Shengming cadres were roaring in fury.

“Sigh, ZHANG Ruochen was still too rash.” Lady Lingyan, standing on top of the towering ancient tree, could not help but sigh.

“Yan Ba, your shameless wet noodle! Fight with Lord Chen fare and square if you dare!” The Head Rat shouted.

Mu Lingxi did not say a word as her eyes were locked onto the flaming cage. She did not believe that Zhang Ruochen would fall to Yan Ba so easily.

Just as everyone had locked their eyes onto the flaming cage, a figure appeared silently behind Yan Ba. It was Moyin.

The Zangshan Demonic Mirror was in Moyin’s hands as hundreds of thousands of supreme inscription patterns appeared and a surge of supreme power converged and transformed into a brilliant demonic light.

BOOM!!

The demonic light smashed directly against Yan Ba, piercing his body and leaving a massive gaping hole on it.

Yan Ba’s attention was totally on Zhang Ruochen, and totally did not expect Zhang Ruochen to deploy Moyin as his trump card.

After taking an unsuspecting blow from a Supreme Sacred Artifact, while Yan Ba was not dead, he had already suffered unimaginable damage.

“Zhang Ruochen, you...ughhh.”

Yan Ba wanted to say something but ended up spitting out a mouthful of blood instead.

Moyin unleashed many roots and stabbed into Yan Ba's body, devouring the essence of his body with all her might.

BAAMM!!

The flaming cage shattered, revealing Zhang Ruochen inside.

After surviving through the blazing flames, Zhang Ruochen's entire body was burning red like a heated iron.

If he hadn't entered the Copper Furnace of Life and Death to refine his body and soul, Zhang Ruochen may very well be injured this time, however he was totally unscathed, not even a single hair singed.

Zhang Ruochen did not pay attention to Yan Ba as he immediately used the Dimensional Shift and appeared inside the city.

An Exquisite Dimensional Orb appeared in his hand, and as he activated it, tens of thousands of the old Shengming cadres were all sent inside the orb.

If he did not pull Yan Ba away a little, it was really difficult to rescue these old Shengming cadres.

The moment Yan Ba dared to threaten Zhang Ruochen with the lives of so many old Shengming cadres, his fate was already sealed.

“Hiss...”

Seeing Yan Ba being quickly drained dry by Moyin, all of the spectating cultivators could not help but to take a deep breath.

It was only now that they realized that Yan Ba was completely led on by Zhang Ruochen, and the so-called retreat was just entirely to lure his foe away.

Once Yan Ba was away from the city gate, Zhang Ruochen unleashed his killer move, destroying his foe and saving all of the old Shengming cadres at the same time.

“Zhang Ruochen is just too terrifying, his techniques are endless as well. Must not make an enemy out of him.”

For a time, such a thought appeared in the hearts of many cultivators.

BAAAMMM!!!

Moyin's roots shook slightly, and Yan Ba's shriveled corpse was ripped apart and turned into powder.

"If I can consume a few more powerful Path's Anterior elites, my cultivation will soon be able to break through to the realm of Heaven's Reach." Moyin's heart was full of joy.

For the Saint Devourer to improve her strength, she only had to constantly devour the essence of a cultivator.

Moyin was now of the Precept Dominion realm, but her strength was comparable to those of the Heaven's Reach-realm and could even fight a bout or two with a Path's Anterior elite.

If not, the Zangshan Demonic Mirror she had activated earlier could not have so severely wounded Yan Ba in just one hit.

"Your Highness, please save the prince. He Highness is in danger!" Inside the Exquisite Dimensional Orb, Yan Kaixuan said anxiously.

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Ruochen released Yan Kaixuan, and at the same time, sprayed about ten drops of the springwater of life over. Each drop was dazzling, like a shining star.

The springwater of life fell on Yan Kaixuan's body and instantly seeped into his flesh and penetrated into his blood stream.

Soon, Yan Kaixuan had mostly recovered from his injuries, and continued. "Your Highness, earlier on, His Highness the Prince had fought out through the southeast but there were elites from the Heavenly Realm faction pursuing him. You need to hurry and rescue him. Otherwise... if you are late, then His Highness may perish."

He had followed Prince Mingjiang for hundreds of years, so naturally he did not want to see any ill-fortune befall Prince Mingjiang.

Earlier on, he was worried that Zhang Ruochen was no match for the Heavenly Realm faction elites, so that was why he wanted Zhang Ruochen to leave earlier.

But now, Zhang Ruochen had slain two Heavenly Realm faction elites in a row. His strength was like a god descending upon the mortal realms, all mighty and invincible; inspiring great confidence in him and the Shengming cultivators present and made their hearts extremely excited.

Chapter 1988 - Only Despair Remains

Chapter 1988: Only Despair Remains

Sweeping his gaze around, Zhang Ruochen could see all of the old Shengming cadres inside the Exquisite Dimensional Orb were all seriously injured. All of them had physical disabilities, and many were on the verge of death. If not for his timely intervention, their death would have been inevitable.

Zhang Ruochen took out a large amount of spring water of life and sent it into the Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

Instantly, the springwater of life transformed into a spirit rain as it poured over the body of every old Shengming cadre, seeping into their bodies and blending into their blood.

Now, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk was integrating with the Divine Sky-connecting Tree seedling, causing the seedling to grow rapidly, so the springwater of life created became more and more.

As long as the Divine Sky-connecting Tree seedling fully integrates with the essence of the tree trunk, it will grow to a very shocking level. By then, the Qiankun Realm will also expand accordingly.

In Zhang Ruochen's view, the greatest significance for collecting the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk was for the growth of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree seedling.

The better the Divine Sky-connecting Tree seedling's growth, the cultivation conditions in Qiankun realm would get better as well, and that would be the foundation for Zhang Ruochen to rebuild Shengming.

Looking at the condition of tens of thousands of old Shengming cadres gradually improving, Zhang Ruochen frowned and said with a rumbling voice. "So cruel, for them to

injure everyone's soul. This means even if they survived, their path of cultivation has been cut off.”

The springwater of life was indeed able to quickly heal everyone's physical wounds, but it was unable to heal wounds suffered by the soul. Only when the Divine Sky-connecting Tree has completely re-grown into a true divine tree that it could heal all sorts of wounds.

Including Yan Kaixuan, all of the old Shengming cadres' soul were wounded without exception, and the damage to the soul was at its fundamental level, probably caused some sort of secret technique of the Soul Realm.

Clearly, this was a deliberate move.

At this moment, Mu Lingxi interjected. “I know a secret technique that can heal the wounds suffered by the soul.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen immediately turned his head to Mu Lingxi, saying. “Lingxi, are you sure you can?”

“Don't worry, I will surely heal them back to how they originally were.” Mu Lingxi smiled.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen did not even have the time to think, so he nodded and said. “Then, you heal them first, I'll look for the twelfth royal uncle first. Remember, don't push yourself too hard.”

“Yes, I know what I'm doing.” Mu Lingxi nodded.

“Lord Chen, I'll go help the little Saintess.” the Head Rat said hastily.

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything else, and with a wave of his hand, took Mu Lingxi, the Head Rat, and Yan Kaixuan into the Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

Without any delay, Zhang Ruochen activated the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, unleashing thousand times the speed of sound as he rushed to the southeast.

The most urgent matter now was to first rescue Prince Mingjiang.

The southeast direction Yan Kaixuan mentioned was not outside Shengming City, but inside the city instead.

The Heavenly Realm faction had moved too quickly and had blockaded the entire Shengming City, so no one could escape. Prince Mingjiang and the others had only broken through the siege by a group of Heavenly Realm elites, and were not captured like Yan Kaixuan was, but their situation was still precarious.

While flying towards the direction Yan Kaixuan had mentioned, Zhang Ruochen released his spiritual power as he tried to locate Prince Mingjiang's trail.

Inside the Exquisite Dimensional Orb, Mu Lingxi cut open her wrist with her fingernails as fresh blood with a cold aura appeared.

Ever since the awakening of her Frost Phoenix inheritance, the blood inside Mu Lingxi's body was no longer the blood of ordinary human beings, but instead phoenix blood now.

"Little Saintess, what are you doing?" The Head Rat asked in both surprise and confusion.

Mu Lingxi's expression was slightly serious, saying. "To heal the damage to their soul, I can only use the phoenix blood in my body alongside the secret technique of the Phoenix clan."

"Ah? How much blood you will need to use then? If Lord Chen knew about this, he would definitely not let you do this." The Head Rat's face was anxious.

Mu Lingxi whispered. "It's exactly because of that I did not tell him. I know very well that with my current strength I can't help him much at all, but I still want to help him as much as I can."

"But Little Saintess, can your body withstand that?" the Head Rat said worriedly.

Mu Lingxi assured him. "Don't worry, there will be no problem. If I can't even do this properly, won't I appear too useless? Alright, let's get started, help me with this."

The Head Rat nodded. With Mu Lingxi already saying that, he had nothing more to add. Although he was cowardly, as long as it was something that can be done within his power, he will not refuse.

Immediately, Mu Lingxi and the Head Rat acted, using the phoenix blood alongside the secret phoenix clan technique to heal the soul wounds of the tens of thousands of old Shengming cadre.

The commotion caused by the two battles at the city gate was so great that they had already alerted all of the Heavenly Realm elites inside Shengming City as they rushed towards the city gate.

“Shang Ziyang is clearly not in Shengming City but he had left many elites inside Shengming City. With Zhang Ruochen charging in alone, although his courage is commendable, it’s not wise.”

“Feng Gudao of the Soul Realm, Chi Sheng of the Ruiya Realm, Zi Linglong of the Hongyang Realm and Gu Tianyin of the Cha Realm are all Path Anterior elites. Their strength is far above Cang Long and Yan Ba. Zhang Ruochen’s chances against them is very low.”

“Feng Gudao can be taken as Soul Realm’s number one elite beneath a Supreme Saint, and he had even used the Soul Realm’s secret technique to ambush a Neverwithers Supreme Saint, severely wounding that Supreme Saint and nearly killed him. Now, there are many Saint King elites that are under Feng Gudao’s Soulbender, and there are at least ten Nine-step Saint Kings. He alone is big enough a threat against Zhang Ruochen.”

“Chi Sheng is no less powerful and is the number one elite beneath a Supreme Saint of the Fane of Bashen and is also a leader of the Ruiya Realm. His body is extremely powerful, and rumours has it that his arms, legs, head and neck have already reached the state of Neverwithers, and it’s impossible to cause him any substantial harm.

...

Seeing Zhang Ruochen breaking into Shengming City, many of the spectating cultivators could not help but to sigh for him.

In their opinion, Zhang Ruochen rushing alone into the city was tantamount to charging headlong into the tiger's den.

As long as those top powerhouses were to strike, forget rescuing anyone, whether Zhang Ruochen could even retreat was itself a question.

Looking at the ruined Shengming City, and the bodies that all all over, Zhang Ruochen's heart could not help but to rage in anger. These were all people of Shengming, and most of them were ordinary people, yet those Heavenly Realm elites actually struck against them.

By destroying Shengming City, Shang Ziyan wanted to completely wipe out Shengming at its root, an extremely vicious move.

"Shang Ziyan, you have a death wish." Zhang Ruochen clenched his fist tightly as a killing intent raged in his heart.

There had never been a moment where he wanted to kill someone so much.

Shang Ziyan had indeed touched his very limits, and his hatred will not be sated unless the former was dead by his hands.

BOOM!!

A massive noise that shook the earth pulled Zhang Ruochen's thoughts back to reality.

The loud bang was just right in front of him, and the energy fluctuation was extremely strong, probably caused by a Saint King elite blowing himself up.

Feeling the force, Zhang Ruochen's heart could not help but tighten as he immediately used the Dimensional Shift.

Ripples appeared in the space, and Zhang Ruochen appeared out of thin air on a sacred mountain closed to the blast zone.

This sacred mountain was not too high, but it was filled with very potent saint Qi, and was a rare place for cultivation, and should have been sacred and peaceful.

Yet, at this moment, this sacred mountain was painted with blood, and many top Saints, and even Saint Kings had spilled their blood on the mountain as the aura of blood and murder spread all over.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze was affixed on a rock, or to be precise, the person lying on the rock. It was no one else but his twelfth imperial uncle, Prince Mingjiang.

Prince Mingjiang's condition was outright miserable, half of his body had already been mangled, with an arrow stuck in his chest, and he had not had the time to pull it out yet.

Beside Prince Mingjiang were four people standing guarding loyally. Zhang Ruochen was very familiar with the four of them, they were all top generals under Prince Mingjiang, and all had become Saint Kings.

If it were not for them, Prince Mingjiang would not have been able to last until now.

Originally, Yan Kaixuan was also following by Prince Mingjiang's side, but he was captured by the Heavenly Realm elites.

Needless to say, the Saint King who blew himself up earlier was undoubtedly one of Prince Mingjiang's generals.

"A mere One-step Saint King trying to push us back by blowing himself up, too naive."

A Heavenly Realm Saint King elite sneered.

That self-destruction had indeed shocked them, but no one lost their lives because of it.

The Saint King-realm elites usually cherished their lives, and those who were willing to blow themselves up were few and far between.

"Hmm? Zhang Ruochen."

Suddenly, one of the powerhouses noticed Zhang Ruochen's existence.

"Fall back!"

Without any hesitation, all of the Heavenly Realm elites pursuing Prince Mingjiang immediately chose to retreat.

There was no other way, with Zhang Ruochen's notorious reputation, and the fact that they were not top-level elites, not escaping upon running into Zhang Ruochen meant certain death.

“Moyin, deal with them.”

Zhang Ruochen said grimly.

Immediately, Moyin popped out of Zhang Ruochen's spine and released many vines as they wrapped around the retreating Heavenly Realm elites.

“ARRRGGHHHH!!!”

A moment later, screams and cries of the Heavenly Realm elites echoed.

Zhang Ruochen did not bother with them, but instead his figure flickered as he appeared by the rock Prince Mingjiang was laying on.

“Your Highness!”

The remaining four generals around Prince Mingjiang were so touched they immediately knelt down on one knee as they hailed Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen's arrival was undoubtedly gave them courage and renewed the flames of hope at the edge of despair.

“Stand, all of you.”

As he said, Zhang Ruochen waved his hand as hundreds of drops of springwater of life came raining down, seeping into the bodies of Prince Mingjiang and the four generals.

The four generals were quite badly injured with wounds all over their bodies, and they were almost at their limits.

After being nourished by the springwater of life, the wounds on the four generals recovered quickly, and the trauma on their bodies were healing at the speed visible to the naked eye.

Even Prince Mingjiang's severe injuries were recovering quickly, the mangled half of his body had healed to the state it was before.

A moment later, Prince Mingjiang sat up, and while his face was pale, his life was no longer in danger.

"Milord!"

Seeing Prince Mingjiang had regained his ability to move, the four generals were all excited.

"Ruochen, you shouldn't have come back. Shengming City has completely fallen, and no one could change anything." Prince Mingjiang sighed as he shook his head.

During the attack on Lingxiao Heavenly King Manor, Prince Mingjiang was already a Saint King-realm powerhouse.

With the recovery of Kunlun Realm, Prince Mingjiang had obtained many opportunities, and his cultivation base had advanced by leaps and bounds, reaching the realm of a Nine-step Saint King.

Inside Shengming City, Prince Mingjiang was without a doubt the the number one powerhouse.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Prince Mingjiang and said solemnly. "Shengming City is the root of Shengming, as the crown prince of Shengming, how can I not come back? Am I supposed to just watch as the people of Shengming get slaughtered?"

"I understand how you feel. How I wished I could protect Shengming City and the people of Shengming, but the enemies this time are just too terrifying. I thought that after reaching the realm of a Nine-steps Saint King I would be able to fight without fear. Yet, I was badly wounded by a casual attack, and if it wasn't for a life-saving treasure brother had left me, I would have died."

"While I managed to save my life, I was unable to protect the people of Shengming. I could only watch as they attacked and smashing half a city into the ground. Too many, just too many people of Shengming died tragically as a result."

“There’s also Kaixuan, Wang Ji and the others. In order to protect me, they were either wounded or killed. Now there are only four of them left. I’m just so useless, I could only watch on as my subordinates and people get killed, and not do anything at all!”

In the end, Prince Mingjiang could not help but cry.

After seeing too many miserable scenes, even with his mental state after many thousand years of cultivation was close to collapse, as a deep despair emerged from his heart.

Thinking of when the Shengming Central Empire was overthrown, when the Shengming line suffered a terrible blow, Prince Mingjiang had pulled through all of that, as he led his subordinates to lay dormant, and wait for the opportunity to restore the glory of Shengming.

But this time, Prince Mingjiang was completely in despair, and felt that Shengming had lost all hope, and would be completely annihilated.

Chapter 1989 - Besieged by the Elites

Chapter 1989: Besieged by the Elites

“Milord, it’s our incompetence that Shengming’s foundation was destroyed.”

The four generals all knelt on the ground; their hearts filled with self-admonition.

Seeing Prince Mingjiang and the four generals looking like this, Zhang Ruochen immediately shouted. “With me around, Shengming will never perish. For those who destroy my city, and kill my people, I will make sure those butchers pay this blood debt with their own blood.”

Hearing this, Prince Mingjiang could not help but look up. “Ruochen, how can you fight them all by yourself? Leave, leave this place. As long as you are alive, Shengming shall have hope of revival.”

“Leave? Where do you think you’re going?”

At this moment, an extremely cold voice rang out.

In a blink of an eye, dozens of figures appeared and surrounded the sacred mountain.

The dozens of people who had appeared all exuded powerful auras, and all were at the very least of the Precept Dominion realm, and there was no weakling among them.

Zhang Ruochen ignored these people, and instead cast his gaze of Prince Mingjiang and the four generals, saying. “Twelfth Imperial Uncle, your wounds are not yet healed fully, heal up first and leave the rest to me.”

Without waiting for Prince Mingjiang and the four generals to say anything, Zhang Ruochen took out the Exquisite Dimensional Orb out and send all of them inside it.

After putting away the Exquisite Dimensional Orb only did Zhang Ruochen turned his attention to the powerhouses that appeared.

Moyin had already killed all of the elites that were pursuing Prince Mingjiang and had returned to Zhang Ruochen's spine.

A powerhouse with a spatial distortion around him walked out, holding an Exquisite Dimensional Orb in his hand as he said coldly. "Zhang Ruochen, the orb in my hand contains almost half of the Shengming City's population. So, you better obediently surrender or else they will die."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen immediately cast his gaze on the Exquisite Dimensional Orb and saw there were a large number of figures inside it, ranging in the tens of thousands in both cultivators and ordinary persons.

Shengming City had a large population, and there were few cities in the entire Kunlun Realm that can match Shengming City in terms of scale.

"Even after Gong Ziyang's death, the Fane of Space seemed to not have learned its lesson." Zhang Ruochen said coldly.

Zhang Ruochen had never liked the Fane of Space as the latter was simply too close to the Heavenly Realm faction. Back then, the young leader of the Fane of Space, Gong Ziyang had teamed up with Shang Ziyang to try to get rid of him, but Gong Ziyang was the one who fell instead.

It was because of this, there is a great schism between Zhang Ruochen and the Fane of Space.

In fact, the schism had already arisen since the days of Saint Monk Xumi and was irreconcilable.

The Fane of Space powerhouse snorted coldly. "Zhang Ruochen, I advise you not to be so stubborn. Follow me back to the Fane of Space, and you may still have a way to live, otherwise your death is assured."

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything, and only waved a hand to let a person out.

The person had four huge blood wings, and his body exuded an extremely powerful dark blood aura, but unfortunately for the person, he was bound by the Saint Binding Rope and could not move.

“Hm? Tian Chen?”

A powerhouse also with four large blood wings showed a look of shock.

Without a doubt, like Tian Chen, this was also a Scarlet Angel raised by the Fane of Bloody War.

Tian Chen was captured by Zhang Ruochen when he attacked the Eastern Region Holy City with Mister Shenya and had been suppressed inside Qiankun Realm.

Unlike this scarlet angel, Tian Chen was a Scarlet Angel of the previous generation, and although his cultivation level had not reached the realm of Precept Dominion, but his strength was stronger than most Precept Dominion-realm elites.

As far as talent was concerned, there were not many in the Fane of Bloody War that could be compared to Tian Chen, so Tian Chen was highly valued by the Fane of Bloody War and was a key cultivation focus.

“Zhang Ruochen, let Tian Chen go!” The Scarlet Angel who recognized Tian Chen shouted loudly.

THWACK!

Zhang Ruochen stepped on Tian Chen’s back, planting him into the ground.

“You want to save Tian Chen, then hand me that Exquisite Dimensional Orb.” Zhang Ruochen said coldly.

The Scarlet Angel glanced at Mu Jian and then said grimly. “Zhang Ruochen, know your situation, you have no right to negotiate terms with us now.”

“Is that so? Tian Chen can just die then!”

As he said that, Zhang Ruochen lifted his leg and stomped down hard.

BAAMM!!

The force of the stomp actually ripped Tian Chen's body apart, causing his saint soul to be instantly annihilated.

"Zhang Ruochen, you..."

The Scarlet Angel of the Fane of Bloody War was extremely furious as the flames of rage burned in his eyes.

He did not expect Zhang Ruochen would dare to stomp Tian Chen to death right in front of him. It was like trampling an ant, and it was clearly meant to humiliate the Fane of Bloody War.

Insolence, absolute insolence!

Zhang Ruochen ignored the Scarlet Angel, and as if nothing had happened, turned his gaze towards Mu Jian, saying. "I know what you want. How about we make a deal? I'll hand over the Secret Tome of Time and Space to you, and you hand over the Exquisite Dimensional Orb to me. How about it?"

With a flip of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out the Secret Tome of Time and Space, as he displayed it clearly to the Fane of Space powerhouse.

Seeing the Secret Tome of Time and Space, the powerhouse's eyes immediately lit up.

The Secret Tome of Time and Space left behind by Saint Monk Xumi was something even the gods of the Fane of Space eagerly coveted.

Pondering for a moment, the Fane of Space powerhouse nodded and said. "Alright, I will exchange with you, but you better not play any tricks, or I will immediately obliterate everyone inside the orb."

In fact, he did not care about the life or death of those inside the Exquisite Dimensional Orb, and if he could use them to trade for the Secret Tome of Time and Space, it was undoubtedly better.

The dozens of Heavenly Realm elites around did not step forward to stop them and was obvious that they were giving face to the Fane of Space.

In any case, Zhang Ruochen was on the sacred mountain, and was like a bird with its wings clipped, a slight delay did not matter at all.

Almost at the same time, Zhang Ruochen sent the Secret Tome of Time and Space while the Fane of Space elite sent out the Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze was locked onto the orb while the Fane of Space elite locked his gaze on the tome. The nerves of the two were equally tensed and the atmosphere was extremely grim.

Seeing the two treasures was about to meet in mid-air, Zhang Ruochen and the Fane of Space powerhouse both acted, using techniques of space as both of them tried to seize the two treasures.

With the attainment of the two on the Path of Space, it was extremely easy for them to move items through the air.

For a time, the two treasures were deadlocked in mid-air, and no one could move them away.

"I did not expect Zhang Ruochen's attainment in the Path of Space had reached such a point that he could fight Mu Jian on equal footing."

"Although Mu Jian is not a Master of Space, he is still a divine disciple of the Fane of Space. He has cultivated for more than 1,500 years, and had long reached the realm of Path's Anterior, and his attainment on the Path of Space is unfathomable, yet he is still unable to easily deal with Zhang Ruochen. It does seem like the inheritance left behind by Saint Monk Xumi is really extraordinary. No wonder the Fane of Space had always wanted to get their hands on it."

"Should we help Mu Jian?"

"Better not. If we make a move and spoil Mu Jian's plans, we'll only earn his ire. We only need to seal this mountain off, and not allow Zhang Ruochen to escape."

...

When Zhang Ruochen and Mu Jian were confronting each other with techniques of space, the group of Heavenly Realm elites secretly talked between themselves.

Regardless of the outcome between Zhang Ruochen and Mu Jian, Zhang Ruochen will never be able to escape anyway.

“He had never stepped into the Fane of Space to train, yet his attainments in the Path of Space is so high. The Secret Tome of Time and Space is really extraordinary, and I must get it.” Mu Jian said to himself.

At this moment, Mu Jian was very frustrated. He had already used a precious Talisman of Space, and yet he still could not gain the upper hand. If he did not use the talisman earlier, he would have already lost.

On the surface, Mu Jian yelled while fighting for the Secret Tome of Time and Space. “Zhang Ruochen, you dare to play tricks, seems like you don’t really care about their life or death.”

As he spoke, Mu Jian activated the precepts of space and launched his most powerful attack, trying to wipe out everyone inside the Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

“Don’t even think about it!”

Zhang Ruochen used the Dimensional Shift and appeared near the Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

Tens of thousands of precepts of space rushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s body and filled the space, trying to freeze the area in place.

On the other hand, Mu Jian was the Dimensional Collapse to rip the space apart and destroy everything.

Two completely different spatial forces collided in an instant.

BOOM!!

The space did not collapse but several large rifts appeared instead. They were extremely dark, like a primordial beast with its jaws wide open.

Terrifying spatial ripples appeared and spread in all directions at an extremely fast speed, causing some of the Precept Dominion elites to stagger backwards.

At this critical moment, Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Exquisite Dimensional Orb and retreated quickly backwards.

The Secret Tome of Time and Space on the other hand was sent flying by the spatial ripples and was caught by Mu Jian.

“Hahaha, the Secret Tome of Time and Space belongs to me from now on.” Mu Jian could not help but to burst out laughing.

Without a word, Zhang Ruochen quickly retreated to the top of the sacred mountain.

After confirming that there was nothing wrong with the Exquisite Dimensional Orb, Zhang Ruochen immediately put it away.

Being able to a good half of the people of Shengming City, no matter how big the risk was, it was undoubtedly worthwhile.

Upon seeing this outcome, all of the Heavenly Realm faction elites smiled. Since Mu Jian had achieved what he wanted, they can now safely deal with Zhang Ruochen.

With the sacred mountain as the center, the area of thousand of miles had been tightly sealed, and Zhang Ruochen will never be able to escape even with his techniques of space.

So, even if Zhang Ruochen had captured the Exquisite Dimensional Orb, it will not be long for those people inside the orb to die as well. Everything was already predetermined, and Zhang Ruochen cannot turn the tide alone.

“ARRRGGHHHH!!!”

Just as the elites was about to strike at ZHANG Ruochen, Mu Jian’s screams suddenly rang by their ears.

Immediately, everyone turned their heads around and looked at Mu Jian.

They only saw Mu Jian with a horrified look as three washbasin-sized God Eater Bug had latched onto his body as

his body was engulfed in blue flames.

A raging flame immolated Mu Jian, and in a blink of an eye, he was reduced to ashes, leaving nothing behind.

“God Eater Bug.”

Some of the elites reduced the blue flames, and their expression changed dramatically.

None of them had seen the God Eater Bug before, but all of them had heard of what happened in the Northern Region.

Zhang Ruochen had collected the Divine Sky-connecting Tree trunk, and inside it was a large number of terrible God Eater Bugs. Even if one was a top-tier elite, should they accidentally let the bugs touch them, it was very possible that they might lose their lives.

OBviously, it was Zhang Ruochen who had hid three God Eater Bugs inside the Secret Tome of Time and Space. Mu Jian did not take any precautions before opening the tome and was instantly struck down.

Seeing Mu Jian being killed by the God Eater Bug, the expressions of all of the elites' present became extremely uncomfortable. They were too careless.

Zhang Ruochen stretched out one hand and grabbed the air, using the Spatial Grasp as he took the Secret Tome of Time and Space back into his hands.

For him to dare to use the lives of half the population of Shengming City to threaten him, Mu Jian deserved more than just death.

The three washbasin-sized God Eater Bugs instantly locked onto other prey and wanted to launch their attacks.

However, suddenly, all bodies of all three God Eater Bugs froze and could no longer move.

“Zhang Ruochen, do you think a mere God Eater Bug is enough to threaten us?”

One of the powerhouses spoke, his eyes full of contempt.

The person was thin in stature and was less than five feet tall. He was dressed in a black robe, his eyes were sunken, and like a viper, he exuded an extremely chilly aura.

He was named Feng Gudao, the number one elite of the Soul Realm beneath a Supreme Saint. His spiritual powers were extremely powerful, and his Soulbender technique has been cultivated to an astonishing level. Even a Nine-step Saint King could be easily controlled by him.

Being stared at by Feng Gudao, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to feel dizzy, as he became drowsy and was about to fall asleep.

“Soulbender.”

Zhang Ruochen reacted immediately and quickly protected his soul.

Fortunately, he was not just a martial arts cultivator, he was also a spiritual power cultivator, and his spiritual power was extremely powerful, close to the peak of the fifty-ninth level. Otherwise, he would have fallen prey to that.

“Hmm? You can actually resist my Soulbender. Zhang Ruochen, you sure are something.” A look of slight surprise appeared in Feng Gudao’s eyes.

Another powerhouse stood out and said with a gruff voice. “Feng Gudao, let me instead. I’ll just beat Zhang Ruochen to a gulp, why make things so complicated?”

The person’s figure was very tall, more than ten feet tall with his upper body exposed. His skin had a bronze hue with many arcane patterns clearly appearing on it.

He also had big eyes the size of brass bells, with ears like cattail leaf fans, with an even bigger mouth. As he spoke, two rows of jagged teeth were revealed, looking extremely hideous and terrifying.

Chapter 1990 - All in Together

Chapter 1990: All in Together

” Chi Sheng, you are nothing but a mere brute. Don’t forget, Ziyang said that Zhang Ruochen needs to be brought back alive. It will be difficult for us to explain things if you accidentally beat him to death.”

A crisp and pleasant voice like a lark rang out.

The person speaking was a petite girl in purple, looking only 13 to 14 years old. Her face was delicate and immaculate, giving out a totally harmless temperament, like a girl next door.

From the outside, the purple-robed girl could be said to be beautifully youthful and was full of vitality.

However, her eyes were extremely deep as the vicissitudes of time seeped through it and could not be hidden.

In fact, the purple-robed girl was older than anyone else present and was already 1,700 years old.

If one were to be deceived by her appearance, they might not even know how they die in the end.

Zhang Ruochen’s gaze was affixed on the purple-robed girl and could faintly see a strange purple Qi swirling around her body, giving an air of nobility.

Zhang Ruochen was very familiar with the aura of the purple-robed girl and had felt it more than once. It was almost the same as the aura released by Saint King Ziyang and Saint King Zifeng but was much more powerful in nature.

As a result, Zhang Ruochen had already determined the identity of the purple-robed girl. If he was not wrong, she should be the grandmother of Saint King Ziyang and Saint King Zifeng, Zi Linglong.

According to the rumors, Zi Linglong is extremely talented, and could be said to be a peerless elite that is only seen once every ten thousand years in the Fane of Purple Sky. She had reached the realm of Path's Anterior in less than five hundred years of cultivation. If she had wanted to, she could have already broken into the realm of Supreme Sainthood.

A thousand and two hundred years later, Zi Linglong still stayed in the realm of Path's Anterior. The reason was she cultivated the most arcane 'Purple Emperor Scripture' of the Fane of Purple Sky, which was rumored to be one of the arcane techniques on the Taiyi Divine Techniques Ranking. Should she successfully cultivate it, she could form the Purple Emperor's Sacred Body, which was extremely powerful.

The Fane of Purple Sky had not had anyone who had managed to cultivate the Purple Emperor Scripture to full completion for over tens of thousand of years now.

With Zi Linglong's supreme talents, her future should have been limitless, yet she took the risk to cultivate the Purple Emperor Scripture. Such courage was definitely beyond any ordinary persons.

And the Chi Sheng that Zi Linglong mentioned too was not a run-of-the-mill character. He was one of the top elites of a major faction in Ruiya Realm, the Fane of Bashen. He was a personal disciple of Bashen, and his strength is far stronger than Cang Long of the Fane of Youshen. So even when Zhang Ruochen had killed Cang Long earlier, Chi Sheng still did not consider Zhang Ruochen to amount to much in his eyes.

There also that Feng Gudao from the Soul Realm. He was the most insidious and cunning, but also courageous, otherwise he would not have dared to launch a sneak attack on a Neverwithier Supreme Saint.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes moved onto an extremely hideous-looking man. The man's had an extremely large head, two to three times the size of a normal head. His teeth too were extremely protruding, and his lips could not cover them all, looking nothing like a human being at all.

As soon as he saw this person, another person immediately appeared in Zhang Ruochen's mind. That was the space cultivator, Gu Feng, who was invited by Fairy Tianchu when he entered the Altar of Divinity Bestowment. The latter was also very hideous-looking and was very similar in appearance.

Not surprisingly, the two were probably of the same tribe, as they both came from Cha Realm.

Feng Gudao, Chi Sheng, Zi Linglong and that ugly man were undoubtedly no push-overs. Each of them had more than 70 million saint path precepts in their bodies, and their cultivation was unfathomable.

“Where's Shang Ziyan? He wants to get rid of me, yet why isn't he here to do the deed himself?” Zhang Ruochen asked coldly.

Feng Gudao said faintly. “As long as you surrender obediently, you'll see Ziyan soon enough.”

“What? Is Shang Ziyan afraid to face me?” Zhang Ruochen sneered.

Feng Gudao shook his head and said, “You got that wrong. Ziyan has more important matters to attend to and have no time for you. However, he had asked four of us to stay behind and deal with you, so he thinks you're quite worthy. But you are indeed strong, far stronger than we have expected. You have first killed Cang Long and Yan Ba, and then killed Mu Jian, if we allow you to continue to grow, you will be nothing but trouble.”

“We'll give you a chance, choose one of us to fight you.”

Although Zhang Ruochen's achievements in the previous few battles were extremely astonishing, it was still not enough to scare them.

In any case, they were all of leaders of a major realm, and were all people of extreme talents, so they had the pride that belonged solely to them.

More importantly, they had absolute confidence in their own strength.

Therefore, if it was not necessary, they would not choose to join hands with others at all.

If capturing a Zhang Ruochen required all four of them to make a concerted move together, if this news goes out, won't it seem like they were just too incompetent instead?

As for Cang Long, Yan Ba and Mu Jian all dying in Zhang Ruochen's hands, they did not really care.

Even if they belonged the same Heavenly Realm faction, it was inevitable that they would scheme against each other.

For example, like Chi Sheng, he represented the Fane of Bashen, and was in fact very happy to see the Fane of Youshen to suffer setbacks. This way, the status of the Fane of Bashen in Ruiya Realm would increase.

"Choose quickly, don't waste my time." Chi Sheng said impatiently.

He did not have the patience of Feng Gudao. He had always liked to do things quick and cleanly.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes moved and swept past the four elites in turn, showing no signs of fear at all as he said calmly. "Don't waste time, just come all in together. I don't believe Shang Ziyang won't show up once I'm done with the four of you."

"Hahaha! Audacious, you sure are audacious. Interesting, Zhang Ruochen, let me see if you really have the capital needed to have that audacity." The ugly-looking man laughed, his eyes full of evil intent.

Zi Linglong said indifferently. "Gu Tianyin, I have no objections if you want to fight, but let me remind you, don't underestimate Zhang Ruochen. If something were to happen, we may not be able to save you in time."

"Why? Zi Linglong, are you worried about me? That really flatters me, however it's a pity that I'm not interested in you. I only like tender ones." The ugly man Gu Tianyin smiled.

Hearing that, a cold glint flashed past Zi Linglong's eyes as a terrifying killing intent exuded from her body. What she hated the most was others calling her old.

Sensing the killing intent, Gu Tianyin could not help but to snigger, but he did not dare to continue teasing her. After all, if he really pissed Zi Linglong off, things would be very troublesome.

“Gu Tianyin, you are full of sh*t, are you fighting or not? If you aren’t, let me fight then.” Chi Sheng urged impatiently.

Gu Tianyin did not say anything as an evil smirk appeared in his eyes and a torrent of evil Qi rushed out of his body and charged at Zhang Ruochen.

One could vaguely see shadows flickering inside the evil Qi as if evil spirits wanting to penetrate Zhang Ruochen’s body.

“Gu Tianyin, is this guy planning to use his dark arts to directly control Zhang Ruochen?” Chi Sheng whispered.

Gu Tianyin came from an ancient dark cult from Cha Realm, with a long and profound heritage, and a large collection of strange witchcraft.

Anyone who meets people like Gu Tianyin would often be very wary of them.

An incomparably evil power enveloped Zhang Ruochen, but the attack was aimed directly at Zhang Ruochen’s soul.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen’s felt his vision fading to black as if he had fallen from the heavens straight into hell, and his body became cold and numb.

“Hmph.”

Zhang Ruochen let out a heavy grunt, as the Martial Mark of Time and Space at the center of his eyebrow quickly revolved as the many divine marks imprinted inside the Sea of Qi of Divine Light appeared, unleashing an extremely potent power as it warded off all of the dark power trying to infest into his body.

This was not the first time his soul came under attack and had long mastered the way of dealing with it.

Being of the passive end of an attack was never Zhang Ruochen’s style.

As he shook both his arms, the Supreme Saint-level dragon soul and elephant soul appeared as all of the acupuncture points on both his arms and hands opened at the same time, unleashing a majestic torrent of saint Qi as he infused his Fire God's Gauntlet and Armguards with them.

A terrifying flame rushed out from both the Fire God's Gauntlet and Armguards, transforming into two flaming clouds as the space around them rippled by the scorching heat.

“Sky Soaring Dragon-Elephant”

Countless of dragon and elephant shadows rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's palm, covering the terrifying flames unleashed by the Fire God's Gauntlet and Armguards, seemingly trying to fill out the entire realm.

The roar of dragons and elephants shook the heaven and earth.

BAAMM!!

The evil Qi rushing towards him were all blasted away, and a vacuum zone ten of miles wide appeared centered on him.

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen mobilized nearly one hundred thousand precepts of truth inside his body, fusing them into his fist strike, causing the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm strike's power to increase by eightfold.

BOOM!!

All of the dragon and elephant shadows became even more tangible as their aura rose sharply, causing the vacuum zone to greatly expand, reaching a radius of hundreds of miles.

“Already cultivating a High-level Saint Art even before he culminates his Precept Dominion, and with the Path of Truth increasing his attack power by eightfold, Zhang Ruochen sure isn't simple, but it doesn't matter how strong he is, he won't be able to change his fate.” Feng Gudao smiled faintly.

He himself was very powerful and controlling a Nine-step Saint King was not too difficult for him, but he had to admit that Zhang Ruochen was indeed stronger than him in some respects. He had yet to cultivate a high-level Saint Art, nor is his Path of Truth anywhere comparable to Zhang Ruochen's.

To have one's Path of Truth to increase one's attack power by eightfold beneath a Supreme Saint, few, even those divine disciples of the Fane of Truth could actually pull that off.

But it was because of this Feng Gudao became more and more interested in Zhang Ruochen. If he could enslave Zhang Ruochen, the value of that would definitely be far greater than enslaving a Neverwithers Supreme Saint.

Moreover, he can even steal Zhang Ruochen's physical body. One needs to know that Zhang Ruochen possessed the supreme perfect physique and was a master of time and space. There was no one who would not want such a body.

For a while, a strange glint appeared in Feng Gudao's eyes as he stared intently at Zhang Ruochen, as if he was admiring a perfect work of art.

Zi Linglong also had a strange glint flickering in her eyes. If she could complete the cultivation of the Purple Emperor's Scripture, she would also be able to master a powerful high-level Saint Art then and will not be any weaker than the high-level Saint Art Zhang Ruochen had cultivated.

Tracing back history, of all the Fane of Purple Sky's disciples that had successfully cultivated the Purple Emperor's Scripture, none of them were weaklings. All of them were able to reach the pinnacle of strength and could even fight against Neverwithers Supreme Saints.

Even if she was still not comparable to Yan Wushen, or the Four Heavenly Kings of the Celestial Palace, the difference would not be too great, and the gap between their strength will be infinitely closer.

Chapter 1991 - The Imperial Purple Qi

Chapter 1991: The Imperial Purple Qi

Both the Celestial Court and the Infernal Court today had countless elites beneath a Supreme Saint.

However, among them, the strongest were undoubtedly at the level where Yan Wushen and the Four Heavenly Kings stood. They could mobilize precepts of heaven and earth within a radius of nine thousand miles and have the terrifying ability to slay Neverwither-realm Supreme Saints. Their status was beyond supreme and when other Path's Anterior-realm elites mention them, their expression would often change.

Below them were the likes of Xuanyuan Liekong and Yuanmo Shenzi. They could mobilize precepts of heaven and earth within eight thousand miles and have the ability to defeat a Neverwither Supreme Saint.

Further down was the level of Bi Yunhai and Xuetu Shenzi and the likes. They could rouse precepts of heaven and earth within a radius of seven thousand miles and was equivalent in strength to a Neverwither Supreme Saint and may even have some upper hand against one.

As long as one's strength could reach the above three levels, it would be inevitable that their name will be famous and is etched into legend.

Of course, there were many factors that determined strength, and it was not limited to the extent one could mobilize the precepts of heaven and earth, one's body, skills, saint arts, sacred artifacts and the likes all had a great impact on one's strength.

In addition, although being able to mobilize the precepts of heaven and earth within a five thousand miles radius was already a Neverwither Supreme Saint-level, but that only

meant that the person has the qualifications to fight with a Neverwithier Supreme Saint.

No matter how weak a Neverwithier Supreme Saint was, the nature of their power was already differently, and could not just be simply fought against, let alone defeat them, and even killing them.

For Feng Gudao, Chi Sheng, Zi Linglong and Gu Tianyin, the saint path precepts in their bodies have already reached 67 million and could mobilize saint path precepts within five-to-six-thousand-mile radius. Their strength could be said to be extremely powerful, and if they were to climb further, they have the chance to reach the top three level all Saint Kings aspire to reach.

It was because of this they looked down on Cang Long and Yan Ba, as the two were not on the same level with them at all.

Shang Ziyan had made a commitment to them, as long as they successfully take down Zhang Ruochen, and then kill all those related to Zhang Ruochen, Shang Ziyan will give them a great boon, so they can increase their strength to the level they had dreamed off.

No one would refuse such a lucrative offer.

“Zhang Ruochen, why bother struggling? You are nothing more than a trapped beast, and your resistance is futile.” Gu Tianyin smiled sinisterly.

He was now completely toying with Zhang Ruochen, wanting to force Zhang Ruochen into despair step by step, and then force the latter to kneel before him, only then that it will give him the greatest satisfaction.

Zhang Ruochen did not speak a word, and as he supported the vacuum zone, he activated the Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Empyrean as the saint Qi of heaven and earth surged into his body.

“Hmmm? How could there be saint Qi of heaven and earth from the outside pouring into this area?”

Suddenly, Zi Linglong noticed something was wrong.

Zi Linglong's perception of the various energies flowing in the realm was extremely keen.

After Zi Linglong's reminder, both Feng Gudao and Chi Sheng also became aware of it.

Feng Gudao cast his gaze on Zhang Ruochen who was enveloped by the Evil Spirits. His eyes narrowed slightly, and then instructed the Precept Dominion and Heaven's Reach powerhouses around him. "You lot, control the formation flags this once, and completely lock this area down!"

All of the Precept Dominion and Heaven's Reach elites instantly moved out as they controlled all of the formation flags planted around the mountain with all their might.

A purple Qi, seemingly drawn by some sort of power, appeared out of thin air inside Shengming City as they quickly gathered around and pervaded above the city.

This purple Qi was very different from the purple Qi Zi Linglong had cultivated. It was clearly far more noble in nature, making one could not help but want to kneel and worship it.

"Something's off."

Feng Gudao, Chi Sheng, Zi Linglong and even Gu Tianyin all looked up as they watched the thickening purple Qi that was gathering in the sky, as an ominous feeling appeared in their hearts.

Outside Shengming City, many of the spectating on-lookers too had noticed the changes upon the city.

"What is going on? Why did so much purple Qi appear out of nowhere? What is it for?"

"Is it because Zi Linglong is using a Fane of Purple Sky's secret technique?"

"No, doesn't seem like it. The purple Qi is permeating all over Shengming City, and even spreading outside of it, covering an area of more than ten thousand miles. No matter how strong Zi Linglong is, even if she was to use a secret technique, it's impossible for such a phenomenon to happen."

“Could it be that all of this have to do with Zhang Ruochen?”

...

Many of the cultivators discussed among themselves, wishing they could head to the city right this instant to investigate what was exactly going on.

Above the towering ancient tree, Lady Lingyan stared intently at the thickening purple Qi in the sky as a look of surprise could not help but appear in her eyes.

“It’s actually the Imperial Purple Qi, is this Zhang Ruochen’s trump card?” Lady Lingyan whispered to herself, as she finally understood something in her heart.

Lady Lingyan was a concubine of a Demon Emperor of the Greater Demonic Realm and was no stranger to the Imperial Purple Qi.

The so-called Imperial Purple Qi is an invisible providence that was formed after a Supreme Saint builds a massive empire.

With the Imperial Providence, one could do anything successfully, negating all kinds of disasters, and even gaining more chances to become a god.

The former Shengming Central Empire was extremely powerful and prosperous back in the day.

And Shengming City, as the capital of the empire, it was where the Imperial Providence had gathered.

No one had expected the Shengming Central Empire’s Imperial Providence still remained, even after it was destroyed over eight hundred years ago and had not yet dispersed.

And to be able to draw upon the Shengming Providence, aside from the previous emperor, Emperor Ming, only the crown prince, Zhang Ruochen could do it now.

Ever since Emperor Ming’s disappearance, Zhang Ruochen was undoubtedly left to his own fate.

“If Zhang Ruochen could completely control such a powerful Imperial Providence, he may very well have a chance to turn the tide around.” A glint appeared in Lady Lingyan’s eyes.

She really wanted to enter Shengming City now to see what the situation was like.

Inside Shengming City, Zhang Ruochen had roused the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Emphyrean to the extreme, and then summoned the Immovable Wisdom King's visage to draw in the Imperial Purple Qi.

The Immovable Wisdom King's visage was a sacred visage that is formed only by cultivating the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Emphyrean, and it represented the legacy of the Zhang clan.

Looking at the purple Qi for a moment, Zi Linglong finally reacted as her expression changed slightly. "This is the Imperial Purple Qi, Zhang Ruochen is drawing upon Shengming's remaining Imperial Providence. Gu Tianyin, delay no longer, take Zhang Ruochen down immediately."

Hearing the words, 'Imperial Providence', Feng Gudao, Chi Sheng and Gu Tianyin's expressions all changed a little.

"Zhang Ruochen, you really surprised me. To think that you can actually draw upon the Imperial Providence, but unfortunately for you, everything ends here." A menacing look appeared in Gu Tianyin's eyes.

Gu Tianyin stretched an arm out as hundreds of thousands of precepts of the claw appeared, and a torrent of evil Qi surged, forming a dark, sinister claw.

His claws were extremely sharp, seemingly able to even shred the skies open.

Whoosh!

The vacuum zone Zhang Ruochen had deployed was instantly ripped apart.

In an instant, all of the dragon and elephant shadows were annihilated.

With the surging evil Qi no longer being stopped, they rushed at Zhang Ruochen in a frenzy.

Affected by the evil Qi impact, Zhang Ruochen's drawing of the Imperial Providence was slightly affected.

At the most critical moment, Zhang Ruochen summoned the Evil Spirit.

While the Evil Spirit was not considered top-tier in strength, but it possessed a divine body, and could withstand various attacks without fear of evil Qi.

“You think you can withstand my attacks just because you have a divine corpse?” Gu Tianyin snorted.

An even more powerful surge of evil Qi rushed out of Gu Tianyin’s body, combining with millions of saint path precepts as it transformed into an incomparably tall figure, as if an evil god had descended upon the realm.

Baaam!!!

The massive figure swung its fist and smashed brutally against the Evil Spirit.

The terrifying force blasted the Evil Spirit away as it crashed into the sacred mountain.

With just one punch, the fusion between the Evil Spirit and the divine corpse loosens a little, and there were faint signs of the connection being stripped apart.

“Zhang Ruochen, this person’s attack is too devastating, I won’t be able to take more than a few blows from him.” The Evil Spirit said anxiously to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression was grim as he said telepathically. “Hang on for a while long, buy me some time.”

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was quite surprised. He did not expect Gu Tianyin to be that powerful, that he could inspire fear in the Evil Spirit with just a single punch.

No wonder the four of them were so confident. They were all no push-overs, and compared to Cang Long and Yan Ba, they were many times stronger.

And his strategy now was to draw upon the Imperial Providence onto himself, and only then he would have the power to fight against them.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen's current strength has not yet truly reached the level of a Neverwithier Supreme Saint, and there was still a massive gap between him and the likes of Gu Tianyin.

“The ancestors of the Zhang clan, please protect Shengming, and bless me with the Imperial Providence, so that I can punish the intruders.” Zhang Ruochen let out a long scream.

Suddenly, the Zhang clan ancestors seemed to be roused as the Imperial Purple Qi surged more and more violently, breaking through the formation blockade as they continuously buffed Zhang Ruochen up.

“Stop him.” Feng Gudao said grimly.

Although he was not sure how powerful Zhang Ruochen would get with the boon of the Imperial Providence.

But at this moment, he could not allow any unknown elements to take root.

Immediately, Feng Gudao joined the fray, and with a wave of his hand, dozens of Nine-step Saint Kings appeared, standing on a specific spot as they instantly created a formation array, locking Zhang Ruochen inside it as he tried to cut him off from the Imperial Purple Qi.

At the same time, Zi Linglong also acted, unleashing a powerful purple Qi that collided with the Imperial Purple Qi.

This was Purple Regal Qi she had cultivated while cultivating the Purple Emperor Scripture. It was extremely powerful and even a high-level sacred artifact would find it difficult to resist it.

The Imperial Purple Qi formed a special barrier, blocking off the sky and isolating the descending Imperial Purple Qi.

“Raaawr!”

The Saint Aspect of the Immovable Wisdom King let out a roar that shook the heavens as his fist blasted out toward the sky.

Baaam!!!

The barrier from by the Purple Emperor Qi was extremely sturdy and was not broken by the Immovable Wisdom King Aspect's attack.

But when the Immovable Wisdom King Aspect made contact with the barrier, a burst of Imperial Purple Qi seeped through the barrier and was transmitted into the body of the Immovable Wisdom King Aspect.

“Gu Tianyin, can you do this or what? Let me take Zhang Ruochen down instead.” Chi Sheng roared as he rushed into the fray.

The black arcane patterns on Chi Sheng's body glowed, as if they had a life of their own, as they writhed around like a snake.

Suddenly, Chi Sheng's figure grew quickly as his muscles and bones creaked as he became about thirty-feet tall and extremely burly. The muscles on his body were like horned dragons, looking full of power.

“Fist of the Overlord!”

After increasing his size, Chi Sheng immediately shot out a punch.

A faint light gathered at the tip of his fist, seemingly able to destroy everything in its path.

Baaaam!!

Chi Sheng's fist slammed square on the Evil Spirit's head.

If not for the Evil Spirit move sideways slightly at the very last moment, the fist would have instead landed directly on Zhang Ruochen.

For this reason, Zhang Ruochen still suffered the blow of the attack, and even with the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light as his blood and Qi in his body roiled violently.

As for the Evil Spirit, it fell heavily from the air, smashing a massive crater in the ground.

AT the same time, the massive figure behind Gu Tianyin struck its claw out, and the target was Zhang Ruochen who

was standing on top of the Evil Spirit's head.

Boom!!

The Evil Spirit sank completely into the ground, kicking up a storm of dust and debris, completely obscuring him.

Chapter 1992 - A Nine-step Saint King Self-Destructing

Chapter 1992: A Nine-step Saint King Self-Destructing

Seeing Zhang Ruochen being smashed into the ground by Gu Tianyin's claw, Chi Sheng immediately flashed to Gu Tianyin's side as he looked at the crater and said, "You, with the Gu name, you sure didn't hold back. Relax a little, don't go killing Zhang Ruochen by accident."

"Ziyan mentioned that we have to take Zhang Ruochen alive and let him see his friends and family die one by one. We need to make him wish that death took him."

Gu Tianyin ignored Chi Sheng as his eyes twitched. His gaze was fixated on the huge dusty crater.

At this moment, the Imperial Purple Qi was still falling continuously from the air into the crater.

"He's really tenacious."

The evil Qi around Gu Tianyin's body swirled as a sharp light flashed in his eyes.

Immediately, the tall figure behind him struck again, as the sinister claws swiped at the crater a few times.

Seeing this, Chi Sheng's eyes widened as he exclaimed. "Eh, you, the one named Gu! Are you insane? You're really going to kill Zhang Ruochen?"

"You absolute dunce, if Zhang Ruochen is so easily killed, Ziyan would not had have us stay behind at Shengming City together." Gu Tianyin growled.

Chi Sheng snapped. "Who are you calling a dunce? I dare you to repeat that again."

He had always been hot-tempered and would light up with just a little provocation. Trouble would befall anyone who rubbed him the wrong way.

“Gu Tianyin is right, Zhang Ruochen is a tenacious one. As long as the Imperial Purple Qi does not dissipate, that means he is still alive. Now is not the time for infighting. Take him down first, don’t delay any further.” Feng Gudao said with a slightly grim expression.

Hearing this Chi Sheng could not help but snort coldly and put aside his grievances against Gu Tianyin for the time being as he leapt into the crater.

“RAAAWRRR!”

The Evil Spirit raised its head from the crater, letting out an earth-shaking roar.

Accompanying the roar, an extremely putrid poison flame blasted out.

“B*stard, die!”

Chi Sheng yelled violently and did not dodge the attack and instead took it head on.

The supreme overlord’s aura shook as a terrifying glint converged on Chi Sheng’s fist as he struck out in an unassailable force.

The line of Bashen cultivates a very special Supreme Overlord’s Aura and was equally powerful in both offense and defense with a particular specialty in melee combat.

Whoosh!

The poison flames spat out by the Evil Spirit were scattered by Chi Sheng’s fist as they dissipated away in all directions.

Whenever something came into contact with the poison flames, be it vegetation or rock and stones, all of them instantly melted, its destructive power terrifying.

BAAAMMM!!!

Chi Sheng’s fist once again hit the Evil Spirit square in the head again.

Naturally, while the divine python corpse was fine, but the Evil Spirit’s soul was subjected to a massive impact and was almost seperated from the body by this punch.

“Zhang Ruochen, I am at my limits. If this continues, my soul will definitely be destroyed.” The Evil Spirit said in a panic.

After suffering repeatedly attacks from Gu Tianyin, and then another two punches from Chi Sheng, its soul was severely damaged, and its synchronization with the divine python corpse had dropped drastically.

The only thing it hated was its saint soul was too weak. If it could return to its former peak state and the divine python corpse, it could simply kill Gu Tianyin and Chi Sheng with just a flick of its tail, and how could it allow itself to suffer being in such a state?

Zhang Ruochen still stood on the Evil Spirit’s head, his body straight and his eyes as sharp as an eagle as a large amount of Imperial Purple Qi swirled around his body.

There were traces of blood at the corner of Zhang Ruochen’s mouth, and he was clearly wounded.

He had to admit that Gu Tianyin’s attack was indeed terrifying. Even the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and the divine mark that Yueshen had carved could not completely ward off the attack.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen’s physical body was extremely powerful, and was stronger than the average Supreme Saints. After taking the brunt of the remaining blow, he was only slightly injured.

If it was a person with a weaker body, they would have been ripped to shreds.

Zhang Ruochen did not say a word, but instantly opened the Qiankun Realm and taking the seriously wounded Evil Spirit back into it.

The next moment, an extremely powerful aura erupted from Zhang Ruochen, like a magma erupting from the core of the planet.

Both of his arms shook as a dragon and an elephant flew out, each of them massive, as if they could fill the entire realm with their size.

“Dragon-Elephant Across the Heavens.”

Borrowing the power of the Imperial Purple Qi, Zhang Ruochen roused the might of heaven and earth, as he blasted out the twelfth palm strike of the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm.

The Imperial Purple Qi blended into the dragon and the elephant, causing their form to be extremely corporeal, exuding a very oppressive aura as they charged at Gu Tianyin and Chi Sheng.

Seeing this, the faces of Gu Tianyin and Chi Sheng both changed slightly. They did not expect after taking the brunt of their repeated violent attacks, not only Zhang Ruochen was safe and sound, but he had also instead taken the offensive to them.

They could all clearly feel that the Dragon-Elephant Prajna Palm Strike Zhang Ruochen had just unleashed was extremely powerful as if two real divine dragon and divine elephant were charging at them.

Gu Tianyin quickly mobilized all of the precepts of claw he had cultivated and combined them with the Evil King aspect as two evil claw shadows flew out.

BAAMM!!

The Purple Divine Dragon was torn apart by the claws as both the claws were shattered in the process.

“Break!”

Chi Sheng let out a violent howl.

With just a simple word ‘Break!’, the voice transformed into a terrifying sound wave as it crashed against the Purple Divine Elephant that was flying over like an ancient sacred mountain.

BOOM!!

The Purple Divine Elephant exploded into pieces as the space vibrated violently.

The collision between the two produced a terrifying ripple of power that spread out in all directions.

BOOOMM!

The sacred mountain was hit full on by the shock wave and instantly disintegrated as a surge of saint Qi of heaven and earth gushed out and forming thick layers of clouds.

The dozens of Nine-step Saint Kings released by Feng Gudao all staggered back, some were spitting blood as the formation array, they had formed was instantly destroyed.

Even Gu Tianyin and Chi Sheng all staggered a few steps back before neutralizing all of the impact.

For a moment, the eyes of the two became grimmer as their gazes were affixed on Zhang Ruochen.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen charged out of the crater and flew into the air.

A majestic surge of Imperial Purple Qi descended from the sky and blessed Zhang Ruochen. A five-color halo naturally appeared, making him look like a Supreme Emperor that was revered by all races. He was mighty and unparalleled as he surged in the air, making people want to kneel and worship him.

At the same moment, an even more astounding scenery appeared over Shengming City as a majestic force of heaven and earth roiled as the skies changed.

“RAWWRRRR!”

For a moment, the sound of dragons and phoenixes rang out.

The power of heaven and earth took the form of dragons, phoenixes, qilins, divine tortoises and the likes as the various auspicious beasts flew and danced in the air, seemingly to guard the Supreme Emperor in Zhang Ruochen.

At the same, countless of auspicious Qi rose from the ground as lights of all kinds of shades descended from the sky, creating an extraordinary scene.

“What’s going on here? Is there mystical treasure inside Shengming City?”

“No, all of this is because of Zhang Ruochen. All of Shengming’s former Imperial Providence had been awakened and were all blessing Zhang Ruochen bit by bit.”

“Kicking up such a commotion, I suppose even the coronation of the previous Emperor Ming was just as loud as this.”

“With the blessing of the Imperial Providence, the situation in the city may very well see a great reversal.”

...

Outside Shengming City, all of the spectating cultivators were startled.

Originally, the vast majority of people were not optimistic about Zhang Ruochen’s chances, feeling that Zhang Ruochen was literally throwing himself into his death by rushing into Shengming City. With the setup Shang Ziyan had arranged, there was no chance for Zhang Ruochen to turn the tide around.

But now, things were obviously turning around, and no one knew how strong Zhang Ruochen, now with the blessing of the Imperial Providence, will be.

Atop Mount Kongyue, a tall and beautiful figure appeared out of thin air. She wore an Elemental Sacred Robe as she radiated an unparalleled nobility; she was the Rakshasha Princess, Luo Sha.

Luo Sha’s eyes were cast on Shengming City as everything happening inside the city were clearly reflected in her eyes.

“To be able to draw upon such powerful Imperial Providence, and facing four top-tier elites alone, as expected of my destined one.” Luo Sha whispered as a strange glint appeared in her eyes.

Without a doubt, Luo Sha was here for Zhang Ruochen. If there was an opportunity, she would strike without hesitation, take Zhang Ruochen down, and bring him back to the Infernal Court.

And once she had brought him to the Infernal Court, she would have ways to make Zhang Ruochen absolutely

compliant.

As time passed, the sky gradually darkened.

However, the skies of Shengming were filled with auspicious Qi and rays of light, looking extremely bright.

Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng and Gu Tianyin all separated as they stood in four spots, surrounding Zhang Ruochen in the middle.

Sensing the vast, powerful aura coming from Zhang Ruochen's body, Feng Gudao's face was slightly grim as he said. "Zhang Ruochen, Zhang Ruochen, you actually have such a trump card in your hand. We had really underestimated you."

They simply could not have anticipated such a situation happening.

"Those who dare destroy my Shengming City, kill my people, no matter who it is, there is a price to pay." Zhang Ruochen looked around and made no secret of his killing intent.

Gu Tianyin smiled wickedly, as he said coldly. "Pay the price? That depends on whether you have the capability."

"Cut the nonsense, end this quick." A chilling light appeared in Zi Linglong's eyes.

The longer this dragged on, the Imperial Providence that is blessing Zhang Ruochen would get even stronger, and the combat situation would be disadvantageous to them.

"Zhang Ruochen, eat this fist!"

Chi Sheng struck first, as a special rhythm was produced by his entire body muscles, and all of his strength was concentrated at the tip of his fist.

At this moment, Chi Sheng was like a raging Overlord Dragon, and his charge was unstoppable, seemingly able to destroy an ancient divine mountain with it.

Zhang Ruochen formed a mudra with his hand as a translucent dragon shadow appeared from his body and merged with

himself as both of his hands transformed into two huge dragon claws.

“Luoshui Fist, Thirty-fifth style, Luoshui Dragonform.”

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was like a real dragon as he rode the wind and broke the waves.

BAAAMMM!!!

The powerful dragon shadow crashed against Chi Sheng.

Even when the dragon shadow shattered in an instant, but the terrible force that it had carried with it shook Chi Sheng so much that he staggered over a dozen steps back.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen stood as steady as Mount Taishan.

Zhang Ruochen actually had the upper hand in a head-on confrontation and had surpassed Chi Sheng who was nigh-invincible in melee combat by sheer strength.

Seeing this, a grim look appeared in Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong and Gu Tianyin’s eyes.

If they knew of this, they would have struck together, and not give Zhang Ruochen any chance to resist.

“Again.”

Chi Sheng roared as the momentum of his body climbed quickly.

Nearly 60 million saint path precepts rushed out of Chi Sheng’s body as they resonated with the heaven and earth, trying to draw a large number of precepts of heave and earth in a large area.

It was only through this that he could unleash his strongest attack.

“Hmm?”

Chi Sheng’s expression changed a little as he noticed something was off.

For some reason, it had become extremely difficult for him to mobilizing the precepts of heaven and earth at this very

moment.

Even when using all of his strength, he had only managed to mobilize one percent of the precepts of heaven and earth within a thousand-mile radius.

At this moment, Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong and Gu Tianyin also were aware of the anomaly, and could not help but to use their abilities to try to mobilize the precepts of heaven and earth.

In the end, their situation was the same as Chi Sheng, and could manage to only mobilize barely a percent of the precepts of heaven and earth within a thousand-mile radius. The precepts of heaven and earth also appeared unusually dormant and were not active at all as their effect in increasing the potency of a saint art were very diminished.

“No good, it’s the Shengming’s Imperial Providence locking down the precepts of heaven and earth within the city!” Feng Gudao’s expression changed drastically.

The difficulty in mobilizing precepts of heaven and earth was undoubtedly a very bad thing for them.

At the same time, the four could really feel that a surge of precepts of heaven and earth were converging upon Zhang Ruochen, and the one percent that they could mobilize earlier was now completely inert.

“Pull out of Shengming City, now!” Gu Tianyin roared.

How can they fight against Zhang Ruochen while being in a disadvantaged situation?

At this moment, all of the Heavenly Realm faction elites were in full retreat as they wanted to withdraw from Shengming City.

“Dimensional Lockdown.”

Zhang Ruochen stretched a handout and gently tapped on the space before him.

Over 70 thousand precepts of space surged out of Zhang Ruochen’s fingertips and penetrated into the surrounding space.

Suddenly, with Zhang Ruochen as the epicenter, the space with a radius of thousands of miles froze, and the movement of anyone within it was greatly restricted.

“This is bad!”

All of the Heavenly Realm elites’ heart sank, as they sense the situation had taken a turn for the worse.

Their current situation was like being trapped in a Null Dimension, everyone was moving slowly and only Zhang Ruochen was not affected.

With a twitch, Zhang Ruochen appeared not too far away from a Nine-step Saint King.

His right hand formed a palm seal, the scorching flames roared as he struck the seal at the Nine-step Saint King.

With Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation, the force of his full-powered palm strike was extremely destructive and was not something an ordinary Nine-step Saint King could withstand.

However, the Nine-step Saint King did not dodge, but instead, a sinister smile appeared on his face.

“Sh*t!”

Zhang Ruochen sensed danger as he immediately cancelled his attack as he retreated backwards.

BOOM!

The Nine-step Saint King’s suddenly exploded as an unstoppable surge that could destroy the world was unleashed, and instantly drowning Zhang Ruochen in it.

Who could have imagined that a Nine-step Saint King would self-destruct their saint source so decisively?

Those who have reached the realm of a Nine-step Saint King are those with potential to attain Supreme Sainthood; choosing self-destruction meant total annihilation of body and soul. Even in the face of death, those who would blow themselves up were extremely rare.

The Dimensional Lockdown was unraveled in an instant as a terrifying power rippled outward, resonating with the space as it rapidly spread out in all directions, and was unstoppable.

The already collapsed sacred mountain was the first to bear the brunt once again as it disintegrated in its entirety, and even the sacred stones hidden inside the mountain quickly melted away like snow under the sun.

A vicious look appeared in Feng Gudao's eyes. The reason why this Nine-step Saint King blew himself up was because of his control.

Without a doubt, he had grasped the timing extremely well, and did not give Zhang Ruochen any chance to react.

The power of a Nine-step Saint King blowing himself up was just too terrifying, and even if Feng Gudao had secretly informed, some still did not have the time to defend against it.

“ARRRGGHHHH!!!”

The Heavenly Realm faction cultivators were affected by the blast as baleful screams rang out.

“What happened?”

Sensing the huge commotion inside the city, the cultivators outside the city were all startled.

“It's a Nine-step Saint King blowing his saint source up, and Zhang Ruochen was right at the epicenter of the explosion.” An elite standing in midair said.

His eyesight was extraordinary, and even at such a distance, he could clearly see what was going on in Shengming City.

Hearing this, many cultivators could not help but to show a look of shock. It was totally beyond their anticipation that a Nine-step Saint King would choose to blow his saint source up.

“Has Zhang Ruochen been killed by that Nine-step Saint King's self-destruction?”

Many of the cultivators guessed in their hearts, wishing they could rush into the city to find out.

At this moment, a massive crater hundreds of miles in diameter appeared inside Shengming City, as if it had been struck by a meteorite.

The Heavenly Realm cultivators were only on the city's periphery, and had known of the self-destruction ahead of time, yet there were three Nine-step Saint Kings that could not dodge in time and perished, with a few wounded by the blast.

The power of a Nine-step Saint King self-destructing was simply just terrifying.

The eyes of countless of cultivators were all cast to the epicenter of the explosion.

The reason was naturally to see if Zhang Ruochen was alive or dead.

“Huh? Where's Zhang Ruochen?”

Seeing the epicenter of the explosion was empty, Feng Gudao and the others could not help but frowned.

Chapter 1993 - None of You Can Escape

Chapter 1993: None of You Can Escape

Zhang Ruochen was still alive; that was certain. The reason was that the Imperial Purple Qi above Shengming City had yet to dissipate.

As such, Feng Gudao and the others all went on high alert as they looked around, trying to locate Zhang Ruochen.

Baaaaaam!!! Baaaaaam!!!

At the bottom of the pit, the pile of hard rocks shattered as a figure emerged from the ground, bloodied. If it was not Zhang Ruochen, who else would it be?

The Nine-step Saint King's self-destruction had been too sudden, and it had totally caught Zhang Ruochen off guard as the terrifying force blasted him and sent him crashing deep into the ground.

Even with the defensive power of the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, and the Divine Mark engraved by Yueshen, Zhang Ruochen still suffered heavy injuries as he was bruised all over. His neck was wounded with blood gushing out, while his head was almost separated from his body.

If it had not been for Zhang Ruochen's unparalleled physical body, he would have been totally annihilated by the force of the explosion earlier.

That was a Nine-step Saint King of the Precept Dominion-realm blowing up his saint source, and all of the force was acting upon Zhang Ruochen. For him to survive itself a miracle.

When facing a Precept Dominion-realm elite blowing his saint source up, even a Neverwithers Supreme Saint dared not take it lightly.

Clearly, at that critical juncture, Feng Gudao no longer cared about taking Zhang Ruochen alive. If he had not done that, they might have very well died.

“Don’t give him a chance to recover.” Feng Gudao hissed.

At this moment, the Imperial Purple Qi around Zhang Ruochen’s body had dissipated, and the Imperial Canopy above him had long disappeared as well. With his serious injury, Zhang Ruochen was at his weakest point.

If they did not suppress Zhang Ruochen now, they might not have any more chances later on.

In an instant, all of the Heavenly Realm factions immediately acted. They unleashed various techniques and sacred artifacts one after another, completely engulfing the heavily-wounded Zhang Ruochen.

There were thirty-four Nine-step Saint King of the Heavenly Realm faction present, plus the twenty-six Nine-step Saint Kings under Feng Gudao’s control. So, there were exactly sixty Nine-step Saint Kings.

One needed to know that a Nine-step Saint King was no ordinary Saint King. All of them had hopes of becoming a Supreme Saint, and to raise one would require many resources.

Some of the weaker macroworlds did not even have that many Nine-step Saint Kings.

Any Nine-step Saint King would have a very high status in a macroworld. Even a Supreme Saint dare not to take one lightly. After all, who knows if one would take that crucial step to become a Supreme Saint.

It was also due to Shang Ziyan’s capability that he could muster so many Nine-step Saint Kings.

At this moment, dozens of Nine-step Saint King struck at the same time, unleashing dozens of Intermediate-level Saint Art and dozens of High-level sacred artifacts. The force of the attack was immense.

Everyone who was watching the battle outside the city saw the scene and clearly felt the terrifying power fluctuations.

For a moment, many felt a tingle down their scalps.

“My goodness, with so many Nine-step Saint Kings striking together, even a star could come apart!”

“The life form and power of a Nine-step Saint King have already begun to undergo a change in their essence. They are no longer comparable to other Saint King elites. Only in the hands of a Nine-step Saint King will an Intermediate-level Saint Art and High-level sacred artifact’s power be fully unleashed.”

“If it was other cities, with so many Nine-step Saint Kings striking at the same time, the terrifying aura exuded could instantly sink a city.”

“Zhang Ruochen seemed to be very badly injured, can he withstand the attacks of so many Nine-step Saint Kings?”

“It seems like even when Zhang Ruochen could rouse the Imperial Providence to strengthen himself, he still cannot escape defeat.”

...

In this situation, no one could have a positive outlook for Zhang Ruochen, many were already shaking their heads and sighing as they could not bear to watch Zhang Ruochen getting annihilated.

Inside the pit, while Zhang Ruochen was seriously wounded, his eyes were filled with determination as he emanated an extremely powerful fighting spirit.

With a flip of his hand, Zhang Ruochen took out the
Secret Tome of Time and Space

as he quickly formed an extremely sturdy multi-dimensional space that encased him.

Boom!! Boom!!

Dozens of Intermediate-level Saint Arts and dozens of High-level sacred artifacts all crashed upon the multi-dimensional space.

Even when the multi-dimensional space was very strong, a few layers were instantly shattered on impact.

However, the moment those several layers of dimensional barriers were broken, a new one would quickly form in their place.

“Dimensional Collapse.”

Zhang Ruochen held one hand out and pointed to the front.

Boom!! Boom!!

With Zhang Ruochen at the center, the surrounding multi-dimensional space all collapsed, unleashing a terrifying world-rending force.

After a dimension collapsed, what emerged next was absolute darkness that swallowed everything.

All of those Intermediate-level Saint Arts and High-level Sacred Artifacts were all swallowed in an instant. They could not reach Zhang Ruochen at all.

Earlier when that Nine-step Saint Kings had blown his Saint Source up, if Zhang Ruochen had possessed enough time to react and take out the

Secret Tome of Time and Space

, he would not have possibly ended up like that.

Instantly, multiple high-level sacred artifacts were shredded by the violent spatial force and reduced into pieces of scrap iron.

“This is bad, Zhang Ruochen has not lost his ability to fight. Pull back!”

Zi Linglong’s expression changed dramatically.

Several other elites hurriedly recalled their sacred artifacts with all their might and then retreated at full speed.

Feng Gudao waved his sleeves and recalled all of the 26 Nine-step Saint Kings under his control. Then he activated the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, unleashing it at a thousand times the speed of sound as he fled to outside the city.

It was not just him, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng, and Gu Tianyin all did the same as they unleashed their Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light at a thousand times the speed of sound without any hesitation.

Of course, only four of them actually had that armor, while the other 30 Heavenly Realm Nine-step Saint Kings had to escape using other methods.

All of these Heavenly Realm powerhouses were very smart as they fled in different directions. Even if someone were to be targeted by Zhang Ruochen the others could flee safely.

“Don’t you think it’s too late to escape now?” Zhang Ruochen’s icy voice clearly transmitted into the ears of every Heavenly Realm elite.

A majestic Imperial Providence once again blessed Zhang Ruochen, and the synchronization was clearly even better than before.

The Immovable Wisdom King’s Saint Aspect appeared once again, forming an arcane seal.

Suddenly, the Imperial Purple Qi that filled the skies above Shengming City quickly circulated, forming a purple curtain of light as it covered the entire Shengming City within it.

In a blink of an eye, the purple curtain of light was successfully formed, and none of the Heavenly Realm elites had managed to escape beyond the city’s perimeter.

Feng Gudao was the fastest and the first to reach the city wall. A green jade staff appeared in his hand, and with a wave, a sharp black light shot out.

The black light was like a sharp blade of light that had been fully condensed, and there was nothing that it could not destroy. Even a Neverwithers Supreme Saint could not escape unscathed.

Baaaam!!!Baaaam!!!

The purple curtain of light shuddered a little, kicking up a wave-like ripple, but it was not physically damaged.

Feng Gudao did not continue to attack but stared at the purple light curtain. After a glance, his face suddenly became grim.

“The Imperial Purple Qi has fused with the holy veins beneath Shengming City, coupled with the powerful inscriptions engraved in the city wall. Damn you, Zhang Ruochen.” Feng Gudao hissed with almost gritted teeth.

The purple light curtain seemed to be very thin, yet it was extremely tough. Even when a Neverwither Supreme Saint was to strike at it, he may not force it open.

On the other side, Chi Sheng had also arrived at the wall. Moving at a thousand times the speed of sound, he unleashed his Overlord’s Fist.

“Break!”

Chi Sheng roared violently as he unleashed all of his power, leaving nothing behind.

Baaaaam!!! Baaaam!!!

The majestic power of the Overlord Fist was instantly absorbed by the purple light curtain, as like a clay toy dissolving inside water.

“To think that I cannot break this light curtain with my power.” Chi Sheng’s eyes were full of shock.

Immediately, Chi Sheng took out a short silver whip. It had been refined from the spine of a Neverwither Supreme Saint Silver Dragon, with more than 120 thousand inscriptions on it. It was a top-level sacred artifact.

Originally the Fane of Bashen had wanted to refine it into a King’s Weapon, but in the end, it fell short.

Normally, Chi Sheng liked to use his hands and fist to fight with others, but now he was forced to use this top-tier sacred artifact.

Chi Sheng continuously infused his saint Qi into the Silver Dragon Whip, rousing it to its strongest state.

“Rawrrrr!”

Following an earth-shaking dragon's roar, and the Silver Dragon Whip transformed into a silver bone dragon as it crashed straight into the purple light curtain.

Baaam!!!Baaamm!!!

The power of the Silver Dragon Whip was terrifying, and the purple light curtain shook violently as it was smashed as several subtle cracks faintly appeared.

“Strike together.”

Feng Gudao said secretly to all of the Heavenly Realm elites through telepathy.

All of them were now at different positions in Shengming City, if they launch their attacks individually, the destructive power would be limited.

If they were to attack together, and formed an energy resonance, it was possible to directly collapse the purple light curtain.

Immediately, the group of Heavenly Realm elites all moved.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen activated the Zangshan Demonic Mirror, letting it fly into the air and fusing with the purple light curtain.

With the majestic force's blessings, hundreds of thousands of supreme inscriptions appeared on the Zangshan Demonic Mirror's surface, covering the purple light curtain.

For a moment, the entire purple light curtain seemingly transformed into a huge mirror and reflected everything within the city with absolute clarity.

The moment the purple light curtain transformed, Feng Gudao and the others launched their strongest attacks.

Various powerful Saint Arts and sacred artifacts were unleashed, as the brilliant light made Shengming City shine brighter.

Yet, a very strange scene appeared.

The moment all of the saint arts and sacred artifacts struck the purple light curtain, all of them bounced back. Hence, they

attacked the person who had unleashed the Saint Arts and sacred artifacts instead.

The sudden turn of events caught many of the Heavenly Realm elites off guard.

Baaaaam!!! Baaaam!!!

Some of them could not react in time and were struck by their own attacks, suffering serious wounds.

Even when some of them were able to react, they did not end up much better at all.

Chi Sheng was the worst, as the Silver Dragon Whip flew back and crash hard onto him.

Clang!

The Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light had blocked the attack, but the devastating force still sent Chi Sheng flying.

Dushhh!

Even the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and the Divine Marks could not fully ward off all of the power brought on by the Silver Dragon Whip. Chi Sheng got injured as a result, and he coughed out a mouthful of blood.

That was the strongest ever blow he had launched, and he never thought that the blow would land on him. At that very moment, Chi Sheng could really feel how strong his attack was.

Chapter 1994 - Aura of Invincibility

Chapter 1994: Aura of Invincibility

As they ran into this strange turn of events, all of the Heavenly Realm elites could not help but fall back and not make any rash moves.

For a moment, everyone looked over and saw Zhang Ruochen who was still standing in the air above the pit. Many of their hands had sunk straight to the bottom.

“Is Zhang Ruochen really unkillable? Even a Nine-step Saint King blowing himself up beside him failed to take him out.”

“Shengming City has been completely sealed off, no one can enter or leave. It seems like the tide has really turned.”

“Not necessarily. Don’t underestimate the powerhouses of the Heavenly Realm. They must have many trump cards hidden, and Zhang Ruochen may yet still not be able to defeat them.”

“The situation inside the city is very dangerous. If the seal is broken, trouble might come even if we are outside the city.”

...

All of the cultivators outside were surprised as everyone began to pull back and drew a distance between themselves and Shengming City.

The abilities available to a Nine-step Saint King were not trivial, and even if they were thousands of miles away, they could still be affected by them. No one wanted to be collateral damage for nothing.

Above the deep pit, Zhang Ruochen stood in the air as a potent Imperial Purple Qi swirled around him. The Imperial Canopy formed once again, and it was clearly even more solid than before.

With the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Empyrean activated, the Saint Qi of Heaven and Earth constantly poured into Zhang Ruochen's body, replenishing the Saint Qi he had consumed.

Inside his Sea of Qi of Divine Light, the divine sun transformed by the Sacred Seven-star Lingzhi's Sun Leaf quickly revolved, unleashing pure essence that flowed into Zhang Ruochen's limbs and body, healing the wounds on his flesh.

On the surface, Zhang Ruochen was still covered in blood, and he seemed to be badly wounded.

However, in actuality, his injuries were healing quickly from the inside out was far more effective than consuming the Springwater of Life.

If he had not been really badly injured this time, he would have been able to fully recover in a blink of an eye.

"To let a Nine-step Saint King blow himself up. Feng Gudao, you sure didn't hold back." Zhang Ruochen looked at Feng Gudao and spoke faintly.

Feng Gudao narrowed his eyes and gloomily said, "Unfortunately, his death was worthless. Zhang Ruochen, you sure are hard to kill."

"If I wasn't hard to kill, I would have been dead many times over. I have no grudges against you lot and have no intentions of provoking any of you, yet all of you are after my life. For that reason, you've cruelly killed so many innocent people.

"Now is the time for you to repay that blood debt with your lives. I will use your blood as a funerary offering to all of the people of Shengming who died unjustly."

As he said that, Zhang Ruochen unleashed a monstrous killing intent.

Before he even finished speaking, Zhang Ruochen had already struck and stuck one of his hands out casually.

The might of heaven and earth inside Shengming City surged and transformed into a colossal hand a hundred feet wide as it grabbed at one of the Heavenly Realm Nine-step Saint King.

The Nine-step Saint King's eyes sharpened as he immediately took out a Sacred Artifact of Seventh Radiance. It was an ancient bronze bell, and amidst its ringing, it unleashed terrifying ripples of power as it tried to destroy the colossal hand.

However, before the ancient bronze bell could even approach the hand, it was inexplicably frozen in place, and its power was shackled.

Seeing this, the Nine-step Saint King could not help but feel a chill on his scalp. He immediately wanted to flee.

Unfortunately for him, like the ancient bronze bell, he too was shackled in place and could not move.

A deep shade of horror appeared in his eyes as the colossal hand grabbed him with nary any resistance.

The next moment, the Nine-step Saint King and his sacred artifact were both brought before Zhang Ruochen.

“Moyin, your nutrients are here!”

Zhang Ruochen suppressed the sacred artifact of Seventh Radiance and summoned Moyin at the same time.

Moyin poked out of Zhang Ruochen's spine as she said with a seductive smile, “Thank you, Master.”

To get such good nutrients, she was naturally very happy.

“Saint Devourer... No, don't!”

The suppressed Nine-step Saint King showed a frightened look as hopelessness appeared in his eyes.

Moyin would not show him any mercy as her roots stretched out and all stabbed into his body.

“Arrrghhhh!!!”

An extremely chilling scream came out of the suppressed Nine-step Saint King's mouth.

His voice was so loud that it could be heard clearly if one was outside the city.

Looking at the Nine-step Saint King having his essence drained little by little, and then listening to his chilling scream, almost none of the cultivators outside felt a chill down their spine as their minds shuddered in fear.

That was a Nine-step Saint King, the top existence among Saint Kings, and now for them to end up as nutrients for the Saint Devourer, such an end was undoubtedly tragic.

In the blink of an eye, Moyin had drained all of the Nine-step Saint King's essence dry, and the precepts of heaven and earth in her body increased by a lot.

“Master, if I were to consume all of these people, this lowly servant of yours can break into the Heaven's Reach realm,” Moyin said excitedly.

She was the Saint Devourer; her essence itself was extremely powerful, and once she entered the realm of Heaven's Reach, she would be able to fight Path's Anterior powerhouses.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze swept across the Heavenly Realm elites and nonchalantly said, “Don't worry, all of them will become your nourishment.”

As he spoke, Zhang Ruochen reached his hand out again, forming another colossal hand hundreds of feet wide with the might of heaven and earth, as he grabbed at another Nine-step Saint King.

The Nine-step Saint King wanted to fight back, but it was useless, and he was easily captured and taken to Zhang Ruochen.

“I don't want to become the Saint Devourer's nourishment. Zhang Ruochen, let me go, I will submit, and serve under you.”

Seeing the fate of the earlier Nine-step Saint King with his own eyes, this Nine-step Saint King immediately begged for mercy in horror.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were ice-cold as he disdainfully said, “No need.”

The hands of these people were stained with the blood of Shengming's people, and he would not spare any of them.

“Arrrghhh!!!”

Another chilling scream rang out and permeated much more than the one before.

Seeing that the Nine-step Saint King was about to be consumed by Moyin, Zhang Ruochen immediately struck at the next person.

Anyone could see that Zhang Ruochen intended to suppress the Heaven Realm elites one by one, and then feed them to the Saint Devourer.

As this went on, the remaining Heavenly Realm elites were undoubtedly even more fearful.

Even with the powerful state of mind of a Nine-step Saint King would eventually collapse in the end.

“Zhang Ruochen, your death will be miserable.” One of the Nine-step Saint King knew that he was going to die and could not help but curse out loud before he met his end.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were calm and cold, without any emotional fluctuations. Against his foes, there was no need for mercy, especially when he remembered that at least half of the people in Shengming City had been mercilessly slaughtered by these Heavenly Realm elites.

Zhang Ruochen's heart became even colder, and against the Heavenly Realm elites, he had nothing but murderous intentions left for them.

Seeing this, the Heavenly Realm elites would naturally not sit still and die.

Since they were unable to fight their way out, they could only find a way to suppress or even kill Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen, die!”

A Nine-step Saint King of the Heaven's Reach realm showed a menacing look as he struck an ancient talisman full of cracks at Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!! Boom!!

The ancient talisman burst open, unleashing a terrifying black thunderstorm.

The black thunderstorm exuded terrifying destructive energy and almost tore the dimension apart. Its power was not much weaker than a Nine-step Saint King blowing up his Saint source.

At the same time, in another direction, a Precept Dominion-realm Nine-step Saint King took out an array flag that was on the verge of breaking apart, and the target was locked onto Zhang Ruochen.

The moment the array flags were used, a devastating Sword Qi blasted out of it and slashed at Zhang Ruochen so quickly that it was beyond imagination.

Both the ancient talisman and the array flag were ancient artifacts dug out from Kunlun Realm. They were seriously damaged and could only be used once, but their power was extremely terrifying.

In order to protect themselves, no matter how precious the treasures were, they had to use them right now.

Snap!

Snap!

Zhang Ruochen casually snapped his fingers twice.

Immediately, two massive dimensional rifts appeared, swallowing the black thunderstorm and sword Qi in an instant.

Immediately afterward, Zhang Ruochen stretched both hands out and grabbed the two elites who had unleashed their attacks. He pulled them over and tossed them to Moyin for her to feed on them.

In a short period of time, six of the Heavenly Realm Nine-step Saint Kings had been suppressed by Zhang Ruochen and had become Moyin's nourishment.

At this very moment, forget everyone else, even Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng, and Gu Tianyin all trembled as their

scalps turned numb. Fear began to involuntarily grow in their hearts.

Most of those watching the battle outside the city had terror etched on their faces, as they could not believe what they just saw.

After all, only a handful of them had actually reached the realm of a Nine-step Saint King, and many of them were not even Saint Kings.

In their eyes, Nine-step Saint Kings were undoubtedly a high and mighty existence.

However, what did they just see? Those powerful and unparalleled Nine-step Saint Kings had no way to fight back against Zhang Ruochen and could only await their deaths in despair.

Every scene of what had just happened there would be unforgettable for many, becoming a memory deeply engraved in their minds.

“Zhang Ruochen sure is terrifying. It’s like he can go against the Heavens.”

“When Shang Ziyan finds out what’s going on in Shengming City, I wonder what his expression will be?”

“I could have never imagined that the end would be like this. Perhaps this is the outcome of underestimating Zhang Ruochen.”

“If all of the elites in the city were to fall, I’m afraid it’ll cause a major storm and the gods of many worlds would probably be jumping up in anger.”

“Could it be that Zhang Ruochen actually dares to kill off all of the Heavenly Realm elites in the city?”

...

As they watched the reversal of the situation in the city, few of those who were watching the battle could remain calm.

Some had a vendetta against Feng Gudao and the others, so they were naturally happy to see things turn out like this. They

wished that Zhang Ruochen would kill Feng Gudao and the others.

There were also some who were very close to the Heavenly Realm faction, and they immediately sent out communication talismans in a hurry. They wanted to inform Shang Ziyang so that he could rush back.

On Mount Kongyue, Luo Sha, the Rakshasa Princess smiled as she looked on quietly at the situation in the city.

Before Luo Sha, many communication talismans were suspended before her.

All of the communication talismans sent out around Shengming City were all intercepted by her.

“Right now, if Shang Ziyang comes back with his men, things won’t be pretty. When the Celestial Court is fighting among themselves, the more dead elites the better,” Luo Sha muttered to herself.

As a cultivator from the Infernal Court, Luo Sha naturally wanted to see more Celestial Court elites fall, the more brutal infighting the Celestial Court had, the more beneficial it was for the Infernal Court.

Chapter 1995 - Shengming Everlasting

Chapter 1995: Shengming Everlasting

In the vast Shengming City, aside from Zhang Ruochen and the several dozen Nine-step Saint Kings of the Heavenly Realm, there was naturally a Heavenly Realm army and a small number of old Shengming cadres who were being pursued as well.

Just like Prince Mingjiang and the others, they were being pursued by a Saint King squad of the Heavenly Realm faction. If Zhang Ruochen had not arrived in time, they would have either all been dead or captured. They would then end up like those who were at the city gate.

With Zhang Ruochen obtaining the Imperial Providence's blessing, he could rouse Shengming City's might of heaven and earth as well as provide protection to those old Shengming cadres who were fleeing inside the city.

Now, there were about 54 thousand people of the old Shengming cadres who were able to stay alive while being hunted down by a Heavenly Realm army.

The reason they survived thus far was not that they were strong, but they had taken full advantage of the terrain.

Of course, if this was to drag on, the old Shengming cadres might very well be wiped out.

At that moment, all of the survivors of the old Shengming cadres were extremely excited. Originally, like Prince Mingjiang, they had only been left with despair.

Currently, they were regaining hope.

“His Highness is invincible. Kill those butchers!”

Almost all of the old Shengming cadres were shouting.

Many of the old cadres were in tears, as they saw their friends and family being slaughtered, but they could do nothing.

Now, however, everything had changed. Their crown prince was invincible, and he would avenge their fallen relatives and friends.

When Zhang Ruochen had been forced to leave the Kunlun Realm back then, a vast majority of the old Shengming cadres, who had participated in the siege of the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace and the Peakless Mountain, had all moved to Shengming City. Meanwhile, the imperial forces had been pulled back.

With Chi Yao becoming god, there was no fear of the old Shengming cadres kicking up a storm.

Inside a dilapidated ancient temple, Cai Yuanxi, the elder patriarch of the Cai Clan was covered in blood. There were two gaping holes in his chest, and his organs were badly damaged. His wounds were extremely serious.

“Hahaha! With His Highness back, and invincible, Shengming will not die.” Cai Yuxi forced himself up and burst into laughter.

The next moment, he spat out a mouthful of blood with large chunks of shattered innards mixed in, and his body swayed.

“Milord.”

Lord Cai immediately hurried forward and extended his hand to assist Cai Yuanxi. His face was full of concern.

Cai Yuanxi sat down slowly as he swept his gaze past the dozen or so Cai Clan elites.

Everyone gathered there was part of the Cai Clan’s elite force. All of them were Saint-level and above elites. Three of them were of the Saint King realm, namely Lord Cai, Cai Tong, and Cai Jinglun.

Of course, Cai Yuanxi was himself a Saint King level elite, and his cultivation base was far beyond the other three.

It was thanks to the Kunlun Realm’s recovery. Otherwise, no matter how deep the Cai Clan’s history was, it would be

impossible for them to give birth to three Saint Kings consecutively.

“Our Cai Clan has been following the Zhang Clan to conquer the world and establish the Shengming Central Empire. Shengming is the root of the Cai Clan. Remember that, no matter what, never betray Shengming.

“I’m at my limits, and I will never be able to see the day that Shengming is rebuilt. But I believe His Highness will definitely provide the people of Shengming a better tomorrow. From now on, serve His Highness well, and just like how our clan ancestors aided the Zhangs in the past, help him build another everlasting empire. Cough, cough.”

As he said that, Cai Yuanxi spat out a mouthful of blood as his breath weakened considerably.

“Milord, stop talking. You’ll be fine.”

All of the Cai Clan Saints knelt before Cai Yuanxi with a pained expression on their faces.

Cai Yuanxi smiled. There was no fear of death in his eyes at all as he said, “Eight hundred years ago, I should have perished alongside Shengming, but to protect the Cai Clan, I had to submit to Chiqing Central Empire. I am a sinner, so death to me is perhaps a form of release. I should really be going down there to meet my good brothers.”

“Milord.”

All of the Cai Clan Saints lowered their eyes as tears flowed from their eyes.

All of them knew the pain in his heart, yet they could not share his burdens. As descendants of the Cai Clan, they were just too useless.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen’s voice suddenly rang out.

“Elder Cai, you have endured much shame and burden to preserve Shengming’s strength. Shengming has not been rebuilt yet, and we need to rely on you for so many things, Elder Cai. So, how can you die now?”

Before his words even trailed off, it began to drizzle inside the dilapidated ancient temple. Rain formed from the Springwater of Life rained upon every Cai Clan elite, healing all of the wounds they had sustained.

“Your Highness.”

Cai Yuanxi’s eyes were filled with emotions as tears could not help but flow from his old eyes.

Even when Zhang Ruochen was fighting against powerful foes, he still took notice of him, and that touched Cai Yuanxi.

After he received nourishment from the Springwater of Life, the wounds on Cai Yuanxi’s body healed at a speed visible to the naked eye. His broken flesh and innards were completely restored.

Dupdup! Dupdup!

A powerful heartbeat rang from inside Cai Yuanxi’s chest, giving off a powerful vigor.

Although Cai Yuanxi’s wounds were not fully healed, he was not in any more mortal danger.

“I will definitely give my life for Shengming.” Cai Yuanxi stood up and said with ardent fervor.

To gain Zhang Ruochen’s understanding, he had no more demons in his heart. Rebuilding Shengming would be his only goal in life.

The ancestors of the Cai Clan had helped the Zhang Clan to build an everlasting empire, and he, Cai Yuanxi, could do the same as well.

Aside from the Cai Clan, Zhang Ruochen had taken out a large amount of Springwater of Life to heal the wounds of other old Shengming cadres. He would not allow any more of the old cadres to die.

Seeing the miserable state that the old Shengming cadres were in, the fury in Zhang Ruochen’s heart grew. None of those from the Heavenly Realm would be forgiven.

By rousing the might of the heaven and earth of Shengming City, Zhang Ruochen suppressed all of the Heavenly Realm elites that were pursuing the old Shengming cadres and fed them to Moyin.

All of these Heavenly Realm elites had been on a killing spree in Shengming City, and who knew how many old Shengming cadres had died in their hands. Even a thousand deaths were not enough for them to pay for their crimes.

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen used his skill to bring all of the surviving old Shengming cadre to his side.

“Greetings, Your Highness!”

All of the old Shengming cadres knelt down and respectfully saluted Zhang Ruochen.

In their eyes, Zhang Ruochen was already Shengming’s great emperor, an undefeatable god of war, and was full of awe.

“Rise, all of you. From now on, anyone who is a Demi Saint and above need not perform the kneeling salute,” Zhang Ruochen said as he helped Cai Yuanxi up.

The roughly fifty-four-thousand old Shengming cadres all rose and looked emotionally at Zhang Ruochen.

All of the surviving old Shengming cadres were cultivators and not overly weak, though. Even the weakest among them was of the Yulong Realm, while many were Demi Saints and Saints even. All of them could be considered the old Shengming cadre’s creme of the crop.

Many among them were faces familiar to Zhang Ruochen, there were those who had followed him to attack the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace, and the Peakless Mountain like Qin Yutong, Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu, all of them had seen a significant increase in their strength.

“Although Shengming City is destroyed, but I will build an even larger Shengming City in the Qiankun Realm. Shengming will never be extinguished!” Zhang Ruochen yelled.

“Long Live Your Highness!”

“Long Live Your Highness!”

...

All of the old Shengming cadres yelled emotionally with reverence toward Zhang Ruochen in their hearts.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Exquisite Dimensional Orb and brought all of the old Shengming cadres inside it. He placed them together with the other old cadres he had rescued earlier, allowing Mu Lingxi to treat their wounds.

By the time everything was settled, it would still not be too late to then relocate them to the Qiankun Realm.

Tens of thousands of Heavenly Realm cultivators all became Moyin's nourishment as chilling screams rang out one after another.

Such a scene was undoubtedly horrifying.

“It seems like none of the Heavenly Realm elites in the city will survive, it doesn't look like Zhang Ruochen is planning to spare anyone.”

“There's a saying, provoke not the dragon on the pain of death. When the Heavenly Realm attacked Shengming City, they had totally provoked Zhang Ruochen, and how would Zhang Ruochen let them go?”

“What a forceful Zhang Ruochen, what a terrifying Zhang Ruochen, only he could kill Heavenly Realm elites without any care in the world.”

“Weird, it has been a while now, why did Shang Ziyan not rush back with his forces? Did something happen?”

...

Some of the cultivators who were close to the Heavenly Realm faction could not help but feel anxious.

They had already sent news to Shang Ziyan, and after waiting for so long, they did not see him coming back with reinforcements. Did Shang Ziyan plan to just discard so many of the Heavenly Realm faction elites inside Shengming City?

In a secluded location outside Shengming City, three figures were looking at the situation in Shengming City from a distance.

If Zhang Ruochen was there, he would immediately recognize them as Fairy Tianchu, the Butcher, and the Fool.

“My Lady, it seems like there is no need for us to intervene. I never thought Zhang Ruochen was that powerful,” the Fool said with a smile.

Fairy Tianchu faintly said, “Did I said anything about intervening?”

The Fool immediately responded, “No, no, we’re just here to watch the show. Just watching the show is fine too.”

“Sister Luoji, weren’t you training in Luoshui? Why are you here outside Shengming City?”

At this moment, a voice with a tinge of playfulness rang out.

Fairy Tianchu then turned around and saw The Thousand Star Maiden in a purple robe approaching her while riding a purple cloud.

The next moment, the Thousand Star Maiden came close and stood beside Fairy Tianchu.

Fairy Tianchu smiled. “Chenjing, I didn’t expect to see you here in the Kunlun Realm. Why didn’t you come and look for me even after so long?”

“The Kunlun Realm is so lively now, how could I pass the opportunity to have a look? I know that you’ve been in seclusion to cultivate, so I didn’t want to disturb you. I never thought to see you here, Sister,” The Thousand Star Maiden said faintly.

Fairy Tianchu said, “You’re here for Zhang Ruochen?”

“Are you not?” The Thousand Star Maiden asked back.

A strange look appeared in Fairy Tianchu’s eyes but she did not answer. Instead, she turned her head and cast her gaze at Shengming City again.

The Thousand Star Maiden did not say anything else as she also looked at Shengming City. Her Divine Eyes of Origin could see everything in the city clearly.

Chapter 1996 - A Mysterious Man

Chapter 1996: A Mysterious Man

Seeing Zhang Ruochen constantly attack the elites on his side and render any counterattack useless, even Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng, and Gu Tianyin could not remain calm.

“Zhang Ruochen, if you have the ability, fight me fair and square,” Chi Sheng roared.

Seeing his own allies being reduced to become nourishment for the Saint Devourer, Chi Sheng was almost driven mad. If he was going to die, he would never want to die like that.

Zhang Ruochen turned his head and looked at Chi Sheng as he icily spat, “What right do you lot have to talk to me about being fair and square?”

Feng Gudao wore a grim look and said, “Zhang Ruochen, don’t you want to know where Shang Ziyang is? I’ll tell you right now, he has gone to the Peacock Manor.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed slightly. How could he not know what Shang Ziyang was up to?

Feng Gudao continued, “In addition, Shang Ziyang has captured Chi Kunlun.”

In response, a surge of anger suddenly erupted in Zhang Ruochen’s chest. To have the guts to strike at those who were close to him, Shang Ziyang was really looking to die.

“With you being delayed so long at Shengming City, Shang Ziyang may very well have taken Kong Lanyou captive. Only by keeping us, do you have a capital to negotiate terms with Shang Ziyang,” Zi Linglong added.

In this situation, they were no match for Zhang Ruochen at all, and since they cannot escape, they could only find a way to save their lives.

Zhang Ruochen's gaze became even icier, as a terrifying killing intent seeped out from his body.

Even though they were far apart, Feng Gudao and the others felt their scalp turning numb, as their bodies trembled uncontrollably.

They could not figure out what Zhang Ruochen was thinking right now, and if he were to kill them all in a rage, their deaths would be just too tragic.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen struck with force and captured all of the remaining Heavenly Realm elites before him, as he sealed their saint Qi and spiritual power.

Aside from Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng, and Gu Tianyin, he threw the rest to Moyin.

In Zhang Ruochen's opinion, only Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng, and Gu Tianyin had value in being bargaining chips for him to force a negotiation with Shang Ziyan.

After he sealed the four, Zhang Ruochen took out four Saint-Binding Ropes and bound the four of them before he kept them inside an Exquisite Dimensional Orb.

With a wave of his hand, he recalled the Zangshan Demonic Mirror, yet the purple light curtain constructed by the Imperial Purple Qi remained.

Taking advantage of the time he took to deal with the Heavenly Realm elites, Zhang Ruochen had fully healed his injuries and had restored his strength back to his peak form.

“Lanyou, Kunlun, wait for me!”

Without stopping for a moment, Zhang Ruochen immediately activated the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, rushing toward Peacock Manor with all his might at one thousand times the speed of sound.

“Shang Ziyan had taken a large number of people with him to Peacock Manor. Zhang Ruochen is just looking for death by rushing over now. Peacock Manor is no Shengming City, and there's no Imperial Providence to bless him.”

“Zhang Ruochen has kept Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng, and Gu Tianyin alive. Perhaps he can negotiate some terms with Shang Ziyan.”

“To think that he can get Shang Ziyan to negotiate terms with him by capturing Feng Gudao and the other three is just peak naivety. Just see, nothing good will come from Zhang Ruochen’s trip. Forget saving people, whether he can retreat alive or not is difficult to tell.”

“If you want to know what will happen, just go to Peacock Manor to find out.”

...

At this moment, many of the spectating cultivators all made their move as they followed behind Zhang Ruochen and rushed towards the Peacock Manor.

In their minds, the situation in Peacock Manor will definitely be much more interesting than in Shengming City.

There were many who did not rush over either. They were terrified of the skills that Zhang Ruochen had shown and dared not join in such fun again.

“The Peacock Manor... Interesting.” Luo Sha, the Rakshasa Princess broke into a cunning smile as her figure disappeared into thin air on Mount Kongyue.

In the other direction, Fairy Tianchu, the Thousand Star Maiden, the Butcher, and the Fool also set off for Peacock Manor.

Peacock Manor was quite far away from Shengming City, and it took Shang Ziyan, as well as the others who were riding on a warship, much time to travel before they approached it.

Shang Ziyan stood at the bow of the ship as he frowned slightly. For some reason, he felt an inexplicable uneasiness, as if something bad had happened.

“Ziyan, what’s the matter?” King Daxi stepped forward and asked.

Shang Ziyan put his hands behind him and whispered, “My emotions are in flux. Something has probably gone wrong in

Shengming City.”

“Ziyan, you’re overthinking. With Senior Brother Feng and the others standing guard at Shengming City, it will be impossible for Zhang Ruochen to kick up any storm. Just wait for them to capture Zhang Ruochen and bring him over.” Si Han laughed.

Shang Ziyan said, “I hope so.”

Just as Shang Ziyan was pondering in silence, a violent ripple suddenly appeared in space as a figure swept across the sky like a meteor and disappeared in an instant.

But the aura that figure released made everyone on the warship tremble.

Not waiting for Shang Ziyan and the others to regain their composure, four more meteors ripped through the skyline.

To be precise, the four people were going in the same direction as the previous individual, seemingly pursuing the one before them.

The aura that the four unleashed was also extremely terrifying, as though they could cause the sky to come crashing down.

“Who was that just now?”

On the warship, almost everyone was curious.

A strange look appeared on Shang Ziyan’s face as he cast his gaze in the direction they had left. Then, some speculations rose in his heart.

He knew very well that be it an elite from the Celestial or the Infernal Court, for someone to have such a tyrannical aura, they must be someone of note.

“Look, up ahead.”

An elite sudden called out.

Hearing this, everyone on the battlefield could not help but raise their heads and look straight ahead.

Directly in front of the warship was a massive lake, and at the center of the lake stood an extremely steep mountain shaped

like an unsheathed sword that pointed straight into the sky.

At that moment, a man stood on top of the mountain. His form was tall and burly, while he was clad in dark red battle armor with faint bloodstains. It was as if he had just gone through a fierce battle.

The man's expression was stern, and although he had a tired look he was still drinking wine leisurely.

There was a very strange mark on the man's forehead, looking like deep starry space. Like a black hole, it was seemingly capable of swallowing all light and heat in the world.

Any light that reached the man's side was all sucked away by the strange mark on the man's forehead.

Perhaps it was because of this reason no one could see the man's true appearance.

The warship stopped immediately and dared not continue to advance.

Anyone could see that the person had deliberately blocked their path.

"I'm not sure who you are, Sir, but why are you blocking our path?" Shang Ziyang performed a hold-fist salute and asked rather politely.

Before he had an idea of the other party's identity and the person's strength, it was better not to provoke the person.

The mysterious man did not pay any attention to Shang Ziyang, but instead looked at Chi Kunlun beside Shang Ziyang as he let out a wide grin, revealing two rows of white teeth as he said. "A body of a True God, plus a Controller of Space, what a good seedling."

Chi Kunlun also cast his gaze on the mysterious man, his eyes were firm without the slightest sign of being intimidated.

After gaining experience on the battlefield of merit, Chi Kunlun had grown a lot and was far more determined. Compared to the time at the Celestial Domain of Truth, he could be said to have been completely reborn.

“Not a bad gaze, just right up my alley. Boy, come with me.”
The mysterious man smiled.

Hearing this, Shang Ziyan’s expression soured as he said. “Sir, if you want to take someone away forcibly, that is just too unreasonable.”

The mysterious man took a step forward and instantly appeared on the warship.

As his speed was too fast, none of those on the warship could even react.

The mysterious man looked at Shang Ziyan and said indifferently. “The current generation leader of the Fane of Merit, Shang Ziyan. I’ve heard of your name before, and a rather decent genius, if your cultivation level had reached the realm of Path’s Anterior, I could give you a chance to challenge me.”

“A shame, you’re too weak now, and you can’t rouse my interest at all.”

As he said that, the mysterious man turned around and looked at Chi Kunlun.

Clearly, he was much more interested in Chi Kunlun than in Shang Ziyan.

Upon hearing this, and then watching the man’s attitude, the embers of fury burned in Shang Ziyan’s heart. Ever since he started his path of cultivation, he had never been looked down like this before.

A chilling gleam flashed past Shang Ziyan’s eyes, as a terrifying blob of flame appeared in his hand as he swiftly smashed it at the mysterious man.

The mysterious man did not even look at him, and instead just raised his head to drink. Some of the liquor spilled and one of the droplets appeared on his finger as he flicked it out.

Whoosh!

The droplet of liquor blasted out at a terrifying speed, almost ripping the space apart.

Baaaamm!! Baaaaam!!

Shang Ziyan's body was pierced by the drop of liquor, leaving a visible gaping hole on his chest as he was sent flying.

DUSSHH!

Shang Ziyan fell onto the deck and spat out a mouthful of blood.

Immediately, Shang Ziyan summoned the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and wore it to guard against further attacks.

And seeing Shang Ziyan putting on the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, a different look appeared in the eyes of the mysterious man. "To think it's a highest grade Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light. It seems like as the leader of the Fane of Merits, you have many nice toys on you. This armor is not bad, and could come in real handy. Trying to dodge those four b*stards is just too tiring."

As he spoke, the mysterious man stretched his hand out, and a jet of blue-black gas flew out and wrapped around Shang Ziyan. It instantly stripped the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light off his body.

The other elites on the warship actually wanted to help Shang Ziyan, but they were all frozen in place by the mysterious man's terrifying aura, and could not move at all.

After taking the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light into his hand, the mysterious man smiled with satisfaction. "Well, I gotta go now, or else those annoying four will be on my tails again."

Immediately, the mysterious man grabbed Chi Kunlun as he took a step forward and disappeared without a trace. No one knew which direction he had gone.

Not far behind the warship, a shuttle-shaped artifact was in stealth mode as it followed the warship unhurriedly.

There was a person on the shuttle, a coquettish-looking woman, and it was the Beguiler Qiu Yichi.

At this moment, Qiu Yichi also felt very uncomfortable, as her eyes bore a horrified look.

Suddenly, Qiu Yichi's heart thumped as she whispered to herself. "Could it be him?"

Thinking of that person, Qiu Yichi shuddered involuntarily. That kind of existence was definitely not something she could afford to provoke.

The Heavenly Realm elites on the warship took a good while before they managed to regain their ability to move.

Both King Daxi and Si Han appeared beside Shang Ziyan as they helped him up and fed him a healing sacred pill at the same time.

"Ziyan, how are you?" King Daxi asked with concern.

Shang Ziyan clenched his fist tight as the flame of fury burned in his eyes. Not only did that person severely wounded him, he had also seized the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light that could unleash ten thousand times the speed of sound that Yanshen had gave to him, and also taking away Chi Kunlun. It was just too outrageous.

"The Infernal Yanluo Qi, he's one of the high clans of the Infernal Court, the Yanluo-clan." Shang Ziyan said grimly.

When the mysterious man stripped him off his Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, what the former used was the Infernal Yanluo Qi, an ability that only the Yanluo clan can master.

"Terrifying, I've never met someone so terrifying before." A four-winged Scarlet Angel with a hideous scar on his face whispered.

That Scarlet Angel was a veteran Scarlet Angel raised by the Fane of Bloody War, named Chen Hu. He had long reached the realm of Path's Anterior and his strength was deep-rooted and unfathomable, and he was one of the top elites by Shang Ziyan's side.

To make a top level Path's Anterior elite feel fear, it was evident how terrifying that person was.

Although Shang Ziyan was furious, he was helpless as well. For the time being, he could not contend with that sort of

existence, and he had vaguely had an idea who that person was.

This time, he could only admit that he was unlucky.

On a cliff not too far away from the Peacock Manor, the mysterious man alongside Chi Kunlun appeared out of thin air silently.

“After rushing for so long, I’m a little hungry. Boy, are you hungry?”

The mysterious man waved his hand and a fire appeared, he then pulled out a leg of an unknown holy beast as he put it on the fire and began to roast it.

“Who are you? Why did you rescue me?” Chi Kunlun asked boldly.

The mysterious man sat by the fire, drinking his liquor as he stared at Chi Kunlun, saying. “You think I’m rescuing you? Sure, if you want to think like that. Boy, you’re Zhang Ruochen’s son aren’t you?”

“What nonsense are you spouting? Zhang Ruochen is my nemesis, my parents died in his hands!” Chi Kunlun said angrily.

The mysterious man laughed out loud. “Nemesis? Boy, are you really that stupid, or you’re pretending to be stupid? You have the body of a True God, and is also a Controller of Space. As far as I know, your sister also have the Five-Element Chaotic Body, and is also a Controller of Time. In Kunlun Realm, the only person that could give birth to you two siblings are Empress Chi Yao and Zhang Ruochen.”

Hearing this, Chi Kunlun expression changed drastically as he shook his head violently. “Impossible! Don’t even try to deceive me. How can I be the son of master and Zhang Ruochen?”

In fact, it was not like Chi Kunlun had never had any doubts about his birth, especially when he saw Zhang Ruochen’s face in the Celestial Domain of Truth, he grew even more suspicious.

But Empress Chi Yao had told him that both his parents had died in Zhang Ruochen's hands, and so he had no choice but to believe it.

"Boy, you are too innocent. There are no other Supreme Saints in the Chi clan another than Empress Chi Yao, how could they give birth to the body of True God and the Five-Element Chaotic Body?" The mysterious man continued.

Chi Kunlun's mind roared as he remembered when Zhang Ruochen had desperately rescued him and his sister regardless of the danger when he was in Xumi Dojo. Was there a need for Zhang Ruochen to do such things for his enemies?

"No."

Chi Kunlun showed an expression of pain and struggle, and his blood flow was constricted for a moment, causing him to spit out a mouthful of blood.

The mysterious man stretched out his hand and patted Chi Kunlun's shoulder, saying. "Boy, don't be so agitated, I'm still waiting for you to take me as your master."

Chi Kunlun raised his head and said blankly. "Why should I take you as my master?"

"Because I am strong, don't you think Zhang Ruochen is very strong? But I want to say that ten Zhang Ruochen is still no match for me."

"Forget ten Zhang Ruochens, even the Ten Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth were to strike at the same time, I can take all of them down. Take me as your master, and I can make you even more powerful than Zhang Ruochen and the Ten Divine Scions of the Fane of Truth."

The mysterious man exclaimed.

Chi Kunlun said faintly. "Not interested."

Unexpectedly, the mysterious man was not angry, and instead laughed. "You got character boy. However, you don't want take me as your master, yet I insist on being you taking me as your master. You cannot run from me, boy."

Chi Kunlun felt silent but he did not ignore the mysterious man as he kept thinking about what the latter had said just now. Was Zhang Ruochen really his father?

Chapter 1997 - : Peacock Manor

Chapter 1997: Peacock Manor

The Peacock Manor was the Peacock Demi-human Clan's greatest faction in the past. It was extremely magnificent and powerful. However, five hundred years ago, when the Peacock Manor refused Empress Chi Yao's rule, the First Central Empire suppressed and annihilated it.

With the Kunlun Realm's gradual recovery, the Peacock Manor's former site had become an awakened holy land.

Kong Lanyou had been part of the battle of the gods on Mount Yueshen, and her immortal Saint Body had been shattered, causing her cultivation realm to fall. So, she had returned to the Kunlun Realm and reoccupied the Peacock Manor while she slowly restored the manor to its former glory.

Inside the Peacock Manor was a massive, lush bamboo forest that grew flourishingly.

A gentle breeze blew, and rustled the bamboo leaves, creating a unique rhythm.

Deep inside the bamboo forest was a bamboo pavilion beside a flowing stream.

A woman with snow-white hair was sitting in the bamboo pavilion at the moment. Her face was extremely small and delicate, while her eyebrows were thin and long. Her nose was jade-like and her beauty unparalleled.

The white-haired woman held a yellowed bamboo flute in her hand as she quietly looked up at the sky and the bright moon.

The scenery was akin to a beautiful picture scroll, and the white-haired woman in the picture was like a goddess that was detached from mortal desires. She was so calm and elegant, leaving one to only admire her from afar and dare not have any blasphemous thoughts.

The white-haired woman was no one else but Zhang Ruochen's cousin sister, Kong Lanyou.

Perhaps it was because she had once reached the Supreme Sainthood in the past, Kong Lanyou had a very detached temperament that made others afraid to approach easily.

Suddenly, a strange glint appeared in Kong Lanyou's eyes, as her figure moved, flying out from the pavilion as her deep, bright eyes looked into the distance.

Even though it was still far away, Kong Lanyou could clearly see a massive warship flying toward the Peacock Manor at extreme speed.

At the same time, Kong Lanyou noticed abnormal movements around Peacock Manor. Although it was very stealthy, it could not escape her senses.

“Uninvited guests? The Peacock Manor isn't a place anyone can just intrude upon.” A cold glint flashed in Kong Lanyou's eyes.

In just one move, Kong Lanyou transformed into a seven-colored stream of light as she instantly appeared on a boulder outside the Peacock Manor.

At this moment, a person was standing on the huge boulder. He was wearing jasper armor and looking very heroic.

Upon seeing Kong Lanyou's arrival, he could not help but be very surprised.

However, his reaction was extremely quick, and he immediately roused the Saint Qi and Saint Path Precepts in his body. Turning his hand into a claw, he struck at Kong Lanyou like a thunderbolt.

Kong Lanyou had a look of indifference in her eyes as she stretched out a long, slender finger as she pointed forward, creating a blob of seven-colored flame.

The flame was like a peacock feather, its color vibrant like a beautiful work of art, yet it contained an extremely devastating destructive power that seemingly could reduce everything in the world to ashes.

It was the Peacock Brightflame that a Peacock Demi-human had mastered, and it possessed the terrifying ability to incinerate sky as well as the oceans.

The Peacock Brightflame that Kong Lanyou had unleashed was the utmost horrific as it could immolate and melt the space around it.

Baaam!!Baaam!!

Like a sharp sword, the Peacock Brightflame pierced through the incoming claw attack.

A huge portion of the Peacock Brightflame ripped through the hole on the claw and penetrated the body of the elite before her.

Instantly, the person's body lit up in flames as he was enveloped whole by the Peacock Brightflame.

The person could not help but pull back as he used various techniques to try to put out the Peacock Brightflame on his body.

However, no matter what he did, it was useless because the Peacock Brightflame continued to burn vigorously, incinerating his Saint Qi, blood, and essence.

“Arrrghhhh!!!”

A chilling scream came out of the elite's mouth.

In the blink of an eye, the elite's body was scorched red like a superheated metal, and it was beginning to show signs of melting.

“Kong Lanyou, you still dare to be so arrogant even when death is upon you.”

The top elite of the Scarlet Angels, Chen Hu rushed over as he formed a massive bloody handprint that came crashing down from the sky against Kong Lanyou.

Kong Lanyou looked up, and a cold light flickered in her eyes as the Saint Qi in her body was activated. Seven-colored Saint Light appeared on the surface of her body, making her look like an unparalleled Divine Peacock Maiden.

She only responded with a finger point as a series of seven-colored lights gathered at the tip of her finger.

With Kong Lanyou as the center, the Saint Qi and Precepts of Heaven and Earth within a radius of thousands of miles were all roused.

One could see that the seven-colored light at the tip of Kong Lanyou's finger was becoming extremely corporeal and razor-sharp as if it was a peerless light sword.

Whoosh!

There was nothing the seven-colored sword light could not cut, and it easily slashed through the massive blood handprint.

Immediately, the seven-colored sword light blasted into the sky toward Chen Hu.

“Hmm?”

Chen Hu was slightly startled, and he hurriedly flapped one of his scarlet wings to resist the strike.

A blood beam appeared on the scarlet wing, and the wing became a sharp heavenly blade that could split everything apart.

Bam!!! Baaam!!!

The seven-colored light exploded and dissipated into nothingness.

A few scarlet feathers fell from Chen Hu's scarlet wings, and he was almost wounded.

“So strong.” Chen Hu was secretly surprised.

He knew that Kong Lanyou had once been a Neverwithers Supreme Saint but her immortal Saint Body had shattered and her cultivation realm had fallen. Yet, Chen Hu never actually took her seriously and felt that he could easily take her down.

After all, with his strength, he was not much different than a true Neverwithers Supreme Saint as he was already in the top three realms of a Path Anterior elite.

Of course, he was only on the third level and was still very far away from the two levels before him.

Based on what Chen Hu knew, when Kong Lanyou had been a Neverwither Supreme Saint, she had not been very strong. After all, during that time, the Kunlun Realm's cultivation environment had been poor. Kong Lanyou had not cultivated too many Saint Path Precepts when she had been in the Path's Anterior realm either. Hence, the immortal Saint body she had cast was very generic and naturally not that strong.

So it stood to reason that after Kong Lanyou's cultivation level fell, she would not be that strong.

However, it now seemed like that was not the case. Kong Lanyou's current strength could be said to be much stronger than when she had first broken into the realm of a Neverwither Supreme Saint.

As such, Chen Hu completely put away his contempt and decided to go all out.

All of the Heavenly Realm elites had wanted to secretly surround the Peacock Manor before they circled Kong Lanyou and attacked her.

However, since Kong Lanyou had already noticed their presence, there was no need for such trouble.

In a very short period of time, many elites gathered one after another.

For them to be able to attack outside the Peacock Manor, the Heavenly Realm elites were more than willing to oblige.

In the blink of an eye, Kong Lanyou was completely surrounded by more than ten top-level elites around her.

On the warship, Shang Ziyan looked at the surrounded Kong Lanyou with a gloomy face. He was in a particularly bad mood now. He was wounded, and someone had snatched both the top-level Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light and Chi Kunlun from him. For him, this was not just a loss, it was a total humiliation.

“Capture Kong Lanyou and destroy the Peacock Manor,”
Shang Ziyang ordered grimly.

While his strength was not the best in this group, but his status was the highest, so everyone obeyed his orders.

Whoosh!

Hundreds of figures darted out of the warship as they rushed straight for the Peacock Manor.

None of these people were weaklings, and everyone of them was a Saint King-realm elite, and many of them were Nine-step Saint Kings.

Shang Ziyang had brought most of the powerhouses he had summoned to the Peacock Manor, and those who had stayed behind in Shengming City to deal with Zhang Ruochen were only small in number.

There were many great worlds of the Heavenly Realm faction, and even if each great world were to only send out a Saint King, the total sum was still very terrifying.

Sensing the movements there, Kong Lanyou’s expression unwittingly changed a little as she immediately wanted to return to the Peacock Manor.

“Don’t even think of leaving.”

Chen Hu roared as he struck with all of his might, blasting out a palm print as he tried to stop Kong Lanyou.

Kong Lanyou did not dodge but met the attack head-on instead.

The seven-colored Saint Light around Kong Lanyou expanded sharply, forming a seven-colored peacock at least a hundred feet in size. It was lifelike, and it looked as if it was about to soar into the sky.

“Heaven’s Ascension Palm”

Kong Lanyou whispered as she suddenly shot the seven-colored peacock out.

Boom!! Boom!!

The palm print Chen Hu had blasted out was shattered in an instant.

Immediately after, the peacock crashed directly against Chen Hu, knocking him away.

Kong Lanyou did not press on in her attack and instead transformed into a sacred peacock. She then ripped through the sky and entered the Peacock Manor faster than those hundreds of Heavenly Realm elites.

Suddenly, many arcane array patterns appeared on the ground of the Peacock Manor, unleashing dazzling lights as they formed a powerful formation array that covered the entire Peacock Manor.

Originally, the Peacock Manor had many Supreme Saint inscriptions engraved in it, and while they suffered destruction, but some of them survived.

After Kong Lanyou took control of the Peacock Manor, she had redeployed the array, and repaired the damaged Supreme Saint Inscriptions, making the Peacock Manor a solid bulwark to guard against the coming of this day.

For a time, all of the Heavenly Realm elites were blocked outside, unable to step into the Peacock Manor.

Chen Hu wiped away the blood from the corner of his mouth with his hand as he said in shock, “What a terrifying high-level Saint Art.”

What Kong Lanyou had unleashed earlier was a true High-level Saint Art with devastating power. If it was other Nine-step Saint Kings, he would have been ripped apart into pieces.

Even though Chen Hu was strong enough and clad in the Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light, he could not completely ward off the Heaven’s Ascension Palm strike. As such, he suffered rather significant injuries.

For any Saint King-level elites, should they successfully cultivated a High-level Saint Art, they would undoubtedly have a great advantage, it was akin to having a King’s Weapon at hand.

The Heaven's Ascension Palm was one of the two top-level techniques of the Heaven's Ascension Scripture, and the High-level Saint Art within it was extremely difficult to cultivate. If Kong Lanyou had not attained Supreme Sainthood before, it would have been impossible for her to truly cultivate this technique to full completion.

As she successfully activated the Supreme Saint Inscriptions and the arcane array, Kong Lanyou stood in midair as she stared at the Heavenly Realm powerhouses outside the manor.

“Shang Ziyan, you dare to lead the attack on my Peacock Manor, aren't you afraid of being punished by the rules of heaven?” Kong Lanyou asked coldly.

Shang Ziyan responded “The rules of heaven has always been used to restrain the weak. If you are still thinking of an Emissary Vigilant to intervene, then you are just too naive. I suggest that you surrender now, perhaps you will have a chance to see Zhang Ruochen one last time.”

Hearing this, a terrifying murderous intent instantly appeared in Kong Lanyou's eyes. As her white hair fluttered in the air, she said icily, “If my cousin has as much as a single wound, I will destroy all of you.”

Chapter 1998 - : Brothers Reunited

Chapter 1998: Brothers Reunited

After 800 years apart, Kong Lanyou had finally met the reborn Zhang Ruochen again, so how could she allow anyone to hurt him again?

Forget mere mortals, even if her foe was a god, she would fight him to the end.

Just like last time, even when she knew Chi Yao had already ascended to godhood, Kong Lanyou still went ahead to look for Chi Yao, just for Zhang Ruochen, in order to seek justice for him.

“Insolence. To think you can destroy all of us with just you alone. I’ll tell you the truth, Shengming City had already fallen, and Zhang Ruochen threw himself right into a trap. I’m afraid he has already been captured at this point. Just wait, you’ll be able to see him soon,” Si Han sneered.

Although his strength was nowhere close to Kong Lanyou, there were many top elites of the Heavenly Realm faction present, so he could speak without fear of repercussions.

Hearing that, Kong Lanyou’s expression changed again as the cold glint in her eyes grew even brighter. She knew very well how important Shengming City was in Zhang Ruochen’s heart. If the Heavenly Realm faction had set up a trap in Shengming City, there was no way for Zhang Ruochen to avoid it.

“For you to dare act against my junior brother, who gave you the balls to do that?”

At this moment, an explosive, fiery voice thundered.

As the voice boomed, several figures flew from deep inside the Peacock Manor and came to Kong Lanyou’s side.

The person who spoke earlier was a very strongly-built man with nebula clouds floating around his body. There was a vertical eye on his forehead that was deep and abyssal as if an astral plain was contained within it.

This person was none other than one of the five disciples of Emperor Ming, Bao Lie, the famous general Bao Lie of the Shengming Central Empire back in the day.

Beside Bao Lie were two persons, one had long golden hair, with each strand of hair seemingly cast out of divine gold and emanating a dazzling metallic gleam.

Not only his hair, but even his eyes were also golden, and his gaze was so piercing that no one dared to look him in the eye.

His body might have looked frail but the aura that radiated out of it was extremely fearsome.

As for the other person, he looked extremely normal, like a normal person, without any special traits about him.

But if one were to observe closely, there were lightning flashing in his eyes from time to time, as if a sea of thunder was hiding within it that could be unleashed at any moment.

The man with golden hair was the third disciple of Emperor Ming, named Jin Yu. He was not human, but instead an ancient primordial being, the Goldwing Roc, and his speed was mind-numbingly fast.

The normal-looking person, was Emperor Ming's fourth disciple, named Luo Chen. Of the six of Emperor Ming's great disciples, he was considered the most low-key.

Back then, after Bao Lie went his separate ways from Zhang Ruochen at the Sword Vault, he started to search for clues to track down his senior brothers, and he never expected to actually find his third and fourth senior brother in the end.

The reason Jin Yu and Luo Chen had disappeared without a trace all these years was because they had entered a very special Dimensional Canyon.

This dimensional canyon was extremely hidden away, it was neither in Kunlun Realm, nor was it in the Void, and normal

person would never be able to locate it, much less enter it.

Back then, after Emperor Ming disappeared, and Shengming was in internal turmoil, the Chiqing Central Empire took advantage to attack, and several disciples of Emperor Ming led their armies to resist the invasion.

Over at the Eastern Region's Darkmourn Mountains, Emperor Ming's first disciple Hong Ya, third disciple Jin Yu and fourth disciple Luo Chen, led the army as they fought desperately against the Chiqing Central Empire.

In the end, Shengming lost, and Hong Ya was killed by the number one God of War of Chiqing Central Empire, Xue Wangchao while Jin Yu and Luo Chen were seriously wounded, and managed to escape.

Seeing that their fate was sealed, with Emperor Ming missing and the crown prince dead, no one could turn the tide any longer.

Both Jin Yu and Luo Chen were demoralized, and for the safety of their kinsmen, the two brought all of their kinsmen to hide in that Dimensional Canyon, and lived a life of seclusion with no quarrel with the outside world.

The cultivation environment inside the Dimensional Canyon was extremely good with many treasures of heaven and earth being nurtured within it. That allowed Jin Yu and Luo Chen's cultivation to rise steadily and within several hundred years, they had cultivated to the level of a Nine-step Saint King.

In fact, Jin Yu and Luo Chen had thought of coming out of seclusion, but they found that the Dimensional Canyon could not be entered or left at all.

It was only until recently that the two managed to get out of the canyon, and by chance, ran into Bao Lie.

Jin Yu and Luo Chen had many doubts about what happened eight hundred years ago, and that was why they came to the Peacock Manor with Bao Lie.

In their opinion, Kong Lanyou must know many secrets.

They had originally wanted to send Zhang Ruochen a message, and get him to come to the Peacock Manor to meet, but they did not expect such a thing would happen first.

Seeing the trio that appeared, a strange look appeared in Shang Ziyang's eyes as he growled. "I never thought the Peacock Manor would have so many powerhouses prowling in it. It seems like all of you have something to do with Zhang Ruochen. That's fine, by taking all of you down together, it'll save me a lot of trouble."

Forget the three Nine-step Saint Kings that had just appeared, even if a dozen were to appear now, Shang Ziyang would not panic.

"Shang Ziyang, you dare destroy Shengming City, and plot against my junior brother, your life is mine!" Bao Lie growled as a murderous intent raged in his body.

His figure flashed, and Bao Lie charged straight out of Peacock Manor as a majestic nebula emerged from his body, transforming into a Nebula Leopard as it charged at Shang Ziyang with murderous intent.

Shang Ziyang's eyes were cold, saying. "Just you?"

As he said that, Shang Ziyang deployed the Five-colored Merits Stele and suppressed the charging nebula leopard.

The Five-colored Merit Stele was an artifact condensed from the power of merits. It was extremely powerful, and at this moment, it was as majestic as an ancient sacred mountain.

"Raaawr!"

The nebula leopard let out a sky-shaking roar, as its sharp claws ripped at the Five-colored Merit Stele.

Bamm!! Baaamm!!

The Five-colored Merit Stele came crashing from above, and no matter how the nebula leopard struggled it was useless. Its body exploded and transformed into a cloud nebula again, entering Bao Lie's body once again.

"How is that possible?" Bao Lie's eyes widened, and he felt incredulous.

In any case, he himself was also a Path's Anterior elite, and that full power attack was actually no match for a junior who had not even condensed his Precept Dominion.

Bao Lie stared intently at Shang Ziyan as he said to himself. "Could it be that this Shang Ziyan is really comparable to junior brother?"

Although he had focused his energy on searching for his senior brothers, he was very concerned about Zhang Ruochen's situation too. He knew that Zhang Ruochen already had the power to fight against Path's Anterior elites in the Northern Region. Plus, after returning to the Central Region, he had even defeated Cang Long of the Fane of Youshen.

However, in his opinion, Zhang Ruochen was a special case, and it should be very difficult to find another person that was comparable to Zhang Ruochen in this world.

Unexpectedly, he would meet one now.

Shang Ziyan was very strong in all aspects, with many trump cards hidden in his hand. It would be impossible for any common Path's Anterior elite to be his match.

"Capture Shang Ziyan, and trade him for junior brother."

The golden gleam in Jin Yu's eyes flickered, transforming into a golden light as it shot out of the Peacock Manor at lightning speed.

It was so fast that it had closed in on the warship in an instant, as one hand of his transformed into a claw and grabbed at Shang Ziyan.

The speed was so fast that many of the Heavenly Realm elites could not even react at all.

However, just as Jin Yu's hand was about to touch Shang Ziyan, Shang Ziyan moved away in an instant, avoiding Jin Yu's grasp with much agility.

One of the three supreme saint paths that Shang Ziyan cultivated was the Path of Flowing Light, which specialized in speed.

At the same time he shifted his position, the Bloodbairn appeared in Shang Ziyan's hand as he slashed at Jin Yu's claws.

Dense golden light patterns appeared on the surface of the Bloodbairn, unleashing a burst of brilliant and intense power.

Before the sword even reached him, a monstrous wave of fire had already swept before Jin Yu.

Jin Yu's expression changed a little as his body shook and a pair of golden wings appeared on his back. Each of his feathers looked like a razor-sharp dagger.

The golden wings flapped, releasing a dazzling golden light as it crashed against the monstrous wave of fire from the Bloodbairn.

Boom!! Boom!!

Jin Yu slashed apart the flame wave, destroying the power from the Bloodbairn as he struck at Shang Ziyan.

It was clear that, compared to Bao Lie, Jin Yu was much, much stronger.

“Insolence!”

As a dull voice rang, a middle-aged man in a Tri-Color Meritorious Armor stood before Shang Ziyan.

The middle-aged man delivered a simple punch, and a surge of flames instantly rushed out.

Dush!! Dushhh!!!

The golden light that was flying over shattered, and was instantly reduced to nothingness.

Seeing this, Jin Yu did not press the attack, but instead quickly fell back to Bao Lie's side.

The man standing before Shang Ziyan wore a jasper crown, his eyes were sharp and deep, and his body naturally exuded a terrifying aura of majesty.

Anyone could clearly see that there were tens of millions of saint path precepts flowing on the surface on his body, and

many of the precepts were extremely powerful, belonging to the three thousand main paths, and even seventy-two Supreme Saint Paths.

His name was Xing Yuan from the Fane of Merits, and he was also a disciple of Yanshen. Even Shang Ziyan had to call him senior brother respectfully.

Xing Yuan had been cultivating for more than one thousand and one hundred years, and was one of the top powerhouses beneath a Supreme Saint in the Fane of Merits.

Shang Ziyan had also expended much effort to get Xing Yuan to come.

The main reason was because Shang Ziyan was deeply favored by Yanshen, and his senior brother had to give him some face.

“Thank you, senior brother.” Shang Ziyan thanked him with a smile.

Xing Yuan’s face was sullen as he said in a deep voice, “Don’t delay anymore. Make this quick, and kill anyone who dares to resist.”

Seeing Xing Yuan’s giving orders, a look of displeasure appeared in Shang Ziyan’s eyes, but he did not show it out.

“Tap...tap...”

The sound of clear footsteps rang out, making many turn their heads around.

Under everyone’s gaze, the man walked out of the warship’s cabin. He was dressed in a white coat without any other colors as he held a jade fan and exuded a detached temperament.

The man’s features were very feminine and delicate, looking much more beautiful than many women.

Shang Ziyan greeted him and smiled. “Brother Di Feng, with just that few people in Peacock Manor, there is no need for you to join the fray.”

“Since I’m already here, I naturally have to contribute somewhat. Leave Kong Lanyou to me.” Di Feng cast his gaze on Kong Lanyou as a wicked smile appeared on his face.

Hearing that, Shang Ziyang immediately understood what Di Feng was going at.

Like Yan Ba, Di Feng also came from the Yinyang Realm, but his strength was much stronger than Yan Ba, and was the true top powerhouse beneath a Supreme Saint of the Yinyang Realm.

Shang Ziyang said. "With brother Di Feng joining the fray, taking down Kong Lanyou will come naturally."

Xing Yuan glanced lightly at Di Feng, as a look of disgust faintly flashed past his eyes.

Even though they were in the same camp, Xing Yuan was obviously displeased with Di Feng.

"Fall back."

Kong Lanyou frowned slightly.

Hearing that, both Bao Lie and Jin Yu did not hesitate, and immediately returned to the Peacock Manor at top speed.

There were many members of the Heavenly Realm faction here, and many among them were powerhouses. If they were to clash head on, they will definitely suffer.

"Hmm?" Kong Lanyou suddenly noticed something as a touch of joy appeared in her eyes.

Immediately, Kong Lanyou manipulated the formation array guarding the Peacock Manor, opening a gap intricately.

There was a slight ripple in the same, and Zhang Ruochen's figure appeared inside the Peacock Manor out of thin air.

"Cousin."

"Junior Brother!"

Kong Lanyou, Bao Lie, Jin Yu and Luo Chen all showed emotional looks as they darted to Zhang Ruochen's side.

Earlier on, they had all been very worried, fearing that Zhang Ruochen had fallen for the plot.

Now that they saw Zhang Ruochen before them, they could finally let go of their worries.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes moved about as he looked at the four people around him. He was naturally very familiar with Kong Lanyou and Bao Lie, but he did not know Jin Yu and Luo Chen, and only felt a little familiar with them.

Suddenly Zhang Ruochen thought of something and he could not help but exclaim. "Third senior brother, fourth senior brother, why are you two here?"

Zhang Ruochen recognized Jin Yu and Luo Chen and was extremely surprised. After all, Jin Yu and Luo Chen had disappeared for hundreds of years, and there was no news about them at all, with Zhang Ruochen even thinking that they were already dead.

He never expected to meet them again in the Peacock Manor.

Jin Yu and Luo Chen were also very emotional, and at the same time, a look of guilt appeared in their eyes. They had come out of their seclusion far too late and could not assist Zhang Ruochen in many things.

"Junior Brother. You've suffered a lot." Jin Yu said with much guilt.

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly shook his head and said. "No, this is all my own choice. Third senior brother, fourth senior brother, it's great that both of you are back."

"Yes, this time we will no longer choose to escape. Whatever you want to do, we will definitely support you." Luo Chen said very earnestly.

Zhang Ruochen nodded heavily as he held Jin Yu and Luo Chen's hands tightly.

He had come for Kong Lanyou and Chi Kunlun, but he did not expect to see Bao Lie, as well as his third and fourth senior brothers, who had been missing for so many years. That really surprised him.

Zhang Ruochen did not get into recounting the past with the four of them. Instead, he turned his attention to Shang Ziyang, as he said coldly. "Shang Ziyang, hand over Chi Kunlun."

Chapter 1999 - Slaughter

Chapter 1999: Slaughter

Shang Ziyang's eyes were locked onto Zhang Ruochen, his eyes could not help to be a little gloomier.

The disquiet and faint unease he had felt earlier had actually come true. Something wrong had happened in Shengming City.

Even he could not understand what actually went wrong. With the forces he had deployed in Shengming City, how could Zhang Ruochen even get out?

At this moment, when Zhang Ruochen asked for Chi Kunlun, that made Shang Ziyang even more pissed off. It was because of Chi Kunlun that he was wounded by a Yanluo-cnal elite, and had his top-level Meritorious Armor of Flowing Light snatched away, and he was still nursing a massive rage in his heart.

All other powerhouses of the Heavenly Realm faction all frowned, Zhang Ruochen's appearance in the Peacock Manor had indeed surprised everyone.

From the fresh blood on Zhang Ruochen's armor, plus Zhang Ruochen asking for Chi Kunlun, it was certain that Zhang Ruochen had not just escaped from Shengming City, but had also went through a brutal fight.

It was just that since something had indeed happened in Shengming City, why did they not receive any communications?

Clearly, the situation in Shengming City was far more complicated than they had expected, and many things beyond their seclusion had happened.

"Who is Chi Kunlun?" Jin Yu asked curiously.

He had just got out of the dimensional canyon, and was still unclear of what had happened in the outside world. He had

never heard of the name Chi Kunlun before, let alone Chi Kunlun's relationship with Zhang Ruochen.

But out of instinct, Jin Yu had no good impressions of anyone with the surname Chi.

If it weren't for the Chi clan, how could first senior brother die? Why would they need to hide inside the dimensional canyon?

It was not just Jin Yu who was curious, even Bao Lie and Luo Chen were also very puzzled as they did not understand why Zhang Ruochen would ask Shang Ziyan for a person with a Chi surname.

Kong Lanyou sighed a little, and then whispered. "Chi Kunlun is the son of cousin and Chi Yao."

"What? How could..."

Jin Yu and the others opened their eyes wide, and found it unbelievable.

They all knew that Zhang Ruochen was killed by Chi Yao eight hundred years ago, and that time, both of them were still very young, and it was impossible for them to cross that line.

But eight hundred years later, Zhang Ruochen and Chi Yao should still be at each other's throat, so how can they have children together?

Kong Lanyou shook her head gently and said. "The matter is very complicated, and is not something that could be explained in a sentence or two. In any case, Chi Kunlun is indeed cousin's and Chi Yao's son."

In fact, no one could clearly explain what happened between Zhang Ruochen and Chi Yao, but Kong Lanyou could vaguely guess what had happened, and this should be the reason why Zhang Ruochen would kill his way to the outside of Ziwei Imperial Palace in a maddened frenzy.

Hearing this, Jin Yu and the rest said nothing else. They did not want to upset Zhang Ruochen, and now was also not the time to talk about such things as after all, the enemy was right before them.

On the warship, Si Han appeared beside Shang Ziyan, asking loudly. “Zhang Ruochen, where is senior brother Feng and the others?”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen rushing over to the Peacock Manor, and yet Feng Gudao and the rest were nowhere to be seen nor was there any news about that, that gave Si Han an ominous feeling in his heart.

“Si Han, what are you so nervous for? Do you think Zhang Ruochen is a match for Feng Gudao and the others? Feng Gudao and the others must have been delayed by something, nothing will happen to them.” Di Feng fanned his jade fan and said calmly.

Hearing this Si Han’s heart calmed down. Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng and Gu Tianyin, the four of them were top-tier elites, and was at the third strongest level of those beneath a Supreme Saint. Zhang Ruochen alone would have never be able to be their match.

Even if the situation had changed somewhat, Feng Gudao and the others should not be in any trouble.

After all, once one strength was at their level, even Di Feng or Xing Yuan were to intervene, they could not deal with them. If one could not fight them, running away was still possible.

Whoosh!

For Saint Binding Ropes appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s hands, and each of them bound a person in place.

And upon seeing the four person bound by the rope, Di Feng’s eyes instantly sharpened and then became extremely gloomy. This was because the persons bound by the rope were Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng and Gu Tianyin.

He had just told Si Han that nothing would happen to Feng Gudao and the other three, and the next moment Zhang Ruochen put the four on display, which was a veritable slap on his face.

Si Han’s expression changed drastically as he could not believe his eyes.

“How can it be...”

All other Heavenly Realm powerhouses all could not help but frown.

This situation was something they had never even thought of.

Zhang Ruochen clasped the for Saint Binding Ropes and stepped on Feng Gudao with one foot as he said coldly.

“Shang Ziyan, hand over Chi Kunlun. I won't repeat this for the third time.”

The corner of Shang Ziyan's mouth twitched slightly, and his eyes became even gloomier. At this moment, how is he supposed to find Chi Kunlun?

On the surface, Shang Ziyan said indifferently. “If you want Chi Kunlun, then let the four of them go first.”

A cold light appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes, saying.

“Shang Ziyan, are you taking me for a fool? If you don't hand over Chi Kunlun now, all four of them will die.”

“Ziyan, hand Chi Kunlun over.” Feng Gudao looked at Shang Ziyan pleadingly.

He did not want to die, especially not a ignominious death like this.

Shang Ziyan looked calm on the surface, but his heart was in turmoil. If Chi Kunlun was still in his hands, he would had definitely exchange Chi Kunlun for Feng Gudao and the others.

After all, these four persons had very significant backgrounds, if they were to die in Kunlun Realm, the powers behind them would be furious, and even he will face a significant troubles for it.

But the problem was that Chi Kunlun had been taken away by that Yanluo-clan powerhouse, and Shang Ziyan was naturally unwilling to speak of such ignominious thing, especially when he was unwilling to bow to Zhang Ruochen.

All of the main powerhouses of the Heavenly Realm faction had been given an order of silence by SHang Ziyan, and no one was allowed to speak of the matter.

Seeing that Shang Ziyan did not respond, Zhang Ruochen's eyes became colder and colder, as he hissed icily. "It seems like you really don't care about their life and death. Moyin."

"Master."

Moyin immediately appeared out from Zhang Ruochen's spine.

There was no need for Zhang Ruochen to say anything as Moyin unleashed dozens of roots and stabbed into Feng Gudao's body.

"AHHH!! Save me! SAVE ME!!" Feng Gudao screamed as he cried out for help in terror.

At this moment, he had really felt death was creeping up on him. His spirit and essence were being drained rapidly and uncontrollably away from him.

"Ziyan. What should we do?" Si Han had a panicked look on his face.

At this moment, even King Daxi was frowning at this moment. After all, the one facing the threat of death was a top elite from their Soul Realm. If Feng Gudao died, it would be a big blow to the Soul Realm.

Shang Ziyan's eyes were cold as he growled. "Zhang Ruochen, it seems like you've not understood your situation clearly. If you dare to kill Feng Gudao, you and everyone in the Peacock Manor will die even faster."

"Are you threatening me? Shang Ziyan? You underestimate me. If you don't hand Chi Kunlun over, not just Feng Gudao, even Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng and Gu Tianyin will die." Zhang Ruochen spat back strongly, showing to signs of coming to a compromise at all.

Hearing that, a terrifying murderous intent appeared in Shang Ziyan's eyes as he looked at Feng Gudao whose body was becoming dry and shriveled, and he could not help but to hesitate in his heart.

"Shang Ziyan, is my life not even comparable to one Chi Kunlun?" Feng Gudao roared with a menacing expression.

At this moment, Feng Gudao was really regretful, regretting that he had promised Shang Ziyan to get involved in this. In the end, Shang Ziyan did not care whether he lived or died.

Shang Ziyan's gaze sharpened, as he said. "Chi Kunlun is not with me. It'll be useless even if you kill Feng Gudao."

"Even until now, Shang Ziyan, you still want to deceive me. Fine, perhaps you think I really dare not kill them." A killing intent appeared on Zhang Ruochen's body.

Moyin immediately understood his intentions, and quickened her draining of Feng Gudao's spirit and essence.

"AHHH, Not like this, not like this. Shang Ziyan, you heartless b*stard."

Feng Gudao let out an incomparably chilling scream. There were both bitterness in his heart, and also a strong hatred towards Shang Ziyan alongside.

He had personally saw Chi Kunlun standing beside Shang Ziyan, but now Shang Ziyan told him that Chi Kunlun was not with him, and that was clearly the latter forsaking him to his death.

In a blink of an eye, Feng Gudao's screaming stop abruptly, his body was totally disscated now, with no signs of life at all.

BAAAMMM!!!BAAAMMM!!!

Moyin shook her roots, and Feng Gudao's shriveled body was instantly torn apart, reduced to powder as they scattered all over the ground.

A Saint King that was comparable to a Neverwither Supreme Saint had perished just like that.

At the same time, the aura in Moyin climbed as the power of heaven and earth and the precepts of heaven and earth within two thousand miles were converging towards Moyin in a frenzy.

In Shengming City, Moyin's cultivation base had already reached a critical point, and after devouring Feng Gudao's spirit and essence, she had managed to break through the

point, and broken through from Precept Dominion to Heaven's Reach-realm.

Moyin's original body was the Saint Devourer which was extremely unusual. So when she broke through the realm of Heaven's Reach, her every parameters were not comparable at all to normal Heaven's Reach elites.

Normally, when someone breaks into the realm of Heaven's Reach, they could at most mobilize the precepts of heaven and earth within several hundred miles radius, and even an Heaven's Reach elite at its apex level could only increase the radius to a thousand mile.

But Moyin was different, she had just broke through the realm of Heaven's Reach, and can already mobilize the precepts of heaven and earth within two thousand mile radius. She was totally comparable to many of those weaker Path's Anterior elites.

Plus Moyin had some very special abilities herself; with her current strength, she could fight against and evil kill weaker Path's Anterior elites.

"I've finally reached the Heaven's Reach realm. Master, how should we deal with this three?" Moyin's gaze spun around the three with an excited look in her eyes.

She had only just broken into the realm of Heaven's Reach, and it would be even better if she could absorb more nourishments to stabilize her cultivation base.

Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng, and Gu Tianyin were no goody two-shoes themselves, and each of them were ruthless folks, but at this moment, the three of both all had a look of terror of their face.

After seeing Moyin devouring Feng Gudao whole with their own eyes, anyone would feel fear, especially when the three of them did not want to die. Each of them were top-level Path's Anterior elites, and could step into the realm of Supreme Sainthood at any time.

And with their current accumulation of their cultivation, once they step into the realm of Supreme Sainthood, they are far

beyond comparison to any normal Neverwither Supreme Saint, and their future advancements would not just stop at the Neverwither-realm.

If they were to becoming nourishment of the Saint Devourer, it was just too ignominious.

And seeing Feng Gudao die, all of the Heavenly Realm elites' expression turned extremely gloomy.

Killing a Heavenly Realm elite before them was something that had never happened before.

Even with Shang Ziyan's upbringing and status was in a fit of fury as his body unleashed an extremely terrifying murderous intent.

Chapter 2000 - A Blood Debt Must Be Repaid in Blood

Chapter 2000: A Blood Debt Must Be Repaid in Blood

“Zhang Ruochen, do you really want to not leave yourself a path of retreat?”

King Daxi frowned as she stared at Zhang Ruochen.

In her opinion, Zhang Ruochen was simply just pushing himself onto the path of no return, killing the Heavenly Realm elite could temporarily sate his thirst for vengeance, but he would also need to bear the terrible consequences that was to come.

King Daxi did not want to bother too much Zhang Ruochen’s life or death, but Zhang Ruochen had planted a terrifying fire bug in her body that was the master of her own life and death.

If Zhang Ruochen were to choose to use her as a shield at the very end, then thing will be very bad for her.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at King Daxi, sneering. “Path of retreat? With the force arrayed by the Heavenly Realm faction today, does it look like I’ll have a path of retreat?”

A murderous Qi appeared between Shang Ziyang’s eyes as he said. “Zhang Ruochen, you’re absolutely right. No matter what you do, the ending will not change. You must die.”

“Ziyang, do you not care about Zi Linglong’s and the other’s life and death?” King Daxi asked immediately.

Shang Ziyang’s eyes opened and closed, as an extremely powerful murderous intent appeared across his body, saying. “As long as we can kill Zhang Ruochen, no price is too high. They should have had known of this long ago.”

As he said that, many Heavenly Realm elites revealed a look of shock, thinking that they had hearing things wrong.

King Daxi did not say anything else as she had seen Shang Ziyán's determination to kill Zhang Ruochen, and it was immovable.

Even if she was captured by Zhang Ruochen at this very moment, Shang Ziyán would not change his mind.

"Shang Ziyán, you sure are heartless." Zi Linglong said with almost gritted teeth.

Gu Tianyin laughed at himself and said. "Everyone says that I, Gu Tianyin is vicious and cold-hearted, but when compared to you, Shang Ziyán, I'm really nothing. In your eyes, all of us are nothing but chess pieces that could be just sacrificed at a critical moment for you to achieve your goals."

"Shang Ziyán, you dare treat me like this. My master will never let you off." Chi Sheng glared at Shang Ziyán as he roared in a frenzy.

Anyone would feel angry and bitter if they were about to become an abandoned chess piece, but alas, they were powerless to change anything.

Just like Feng Gudao, Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng and Gu Tianyin all regretted everything now, regretting to get into the same boat as Shang Ziyán, and throwing themselves into a disaster of no return.

But now, it was too late to regret anything.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes became very calm as he let out a soft breath, saying. "If that is the case, there's no reason to keep them alive then."

He had never planned to let Zi Linglong and the rest go since the very beginning, because they had instigated a terrifying slaughter of Shengming City. If he did not kill them, how could he appease the souls of the victims in Shengming City?

Even if Shang Ziyán was to exchange Zi Linglong and the rest with Chi Kunlun, he would still find a way later on to kill all of them.

Now that Shang Ziyán did not want to hand Chi Kunlun over, then there was even less reason to keep Zi Linglong and the

others alive.

It was not actually necessarily for him to need Zi Linglong and the others to rescue Chi Kunlun, as long as he captures Shang Ziyang, he could rescue Chi Kunlun all the same.

“Thank you, Master.”

Moyin let out a seductive smile as she unleashed many roots and stabbed them into the bodies of Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng and Gu Tianyin.

All three top-tier Path’s Anterior elites were all hard-to-come-by nourishments, what reason does she have to refuse them?

“Shang Ziyang, things will not end well for you. I’ll wait for you in the underworld.” Gu Tianyin roared viciously.

“Ahhh, not like this! Why did I ended up like this!” Chi Sheng shouted with raging resentment in his heart.

On the contrary, Zi Linglong said nothing, as she stared at Shang Ziyang intently with a gaze that would send a chill down one’s spine.

Shang Ziyang’s expression was extremely dour now as he coldly ordered. “Destroy the Peacock Manor, and kill everyone inside it. No mercy.”

With things at it was now, Shang Ziyang no longer had any interest to play with ZHANG Ruochen. He now wanted to destroy Zhang Ruochen in the simplest, most brutal way possible, to rid himself of the hatred in his heart.

Immediately, the Heavenly Realm elites all struck, including Shang Ziyang himself.

Shang Ziyang unleashed the Five-colored Merit Stele, and like a massive ancient sacred mountain, it came crashing from the heavens towards the Peacock Manor.

BOOM!! BOOM!!

Even when the formation array outside the Peacock Manor was extremely strong, but in the face of so many devastating attacks, it still trembled and some of the formation inscriptions were damaged.

“Rather than waiting for them to break in, we might as well take the fight to them.” Bao Lie said with raging battle spirit.

The more the situation was unfavorable to them, the more they should be on the offensive and take the battle initiative into their own hands.

The golden gleam in Jin Yu’s eyes flickered as he said. “Back then, when Chiqing Central Empire attacked, I chose to retreat, and failed to protect the lands and people of Shengming. This time, I will not retreat. They dare kill our people, then they must pay a blood price for this.”

“They dare to destroy our Shengming City. No forgiveness!” A terrifying thunder glow burst out from Luo Chen’s eyes.

Kong Lanyou grabbed Zhang Ruochen’s hand, and said softly. “Cousin, eight hundred years ago, I failed to protect you, and could only watch as you were slain by Chi Yao’s sword. This time, I won’t let anyone hurt you.”

Hearing the words of the four, Zhang Ruochen’s emotions fluctuated as he tightly grasped Kong Lanyou’s hand, and then swept his eyes across the four as he said firmly. “Shengming is inviolable, and the blood of the people of Shengming must not flow in vain. None of these people Heavenly Realm will leave here alive.”

Zhang Ruochen had always knew that this day would come sooner or later a long, long time ago, so he did not fear its coming, and instead he very much looked forward to fight Shang Ziyang, and settle their score once and for all.

“Then let’s fight to our heart’s content.”

For a time, Jin Yu and the rest unleashed an unparalleled strong battle spirit.

No matter how many Heavenly Realm elites there were, they would not make them flinch in fear.

“Third senior brother, I remember that the weapon you used was a bow. I happen to have a good set of bow and arrow here that has a hundred thousand inscriptions inside it.

As he said, Zhang Ruochen took out a golden bow and a blue arrow as he handed it to Jin Yu.

Jin Yu's eyes suddenly glowed as he hurriedly took the bow and arrow, laughing. "Good stuff, with this sacred artifact of Tenth Radiance, my strength will be greatly enhanced."

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen looked at Luo Chen as his Secret Tome of Time and Space appeared in his hand. After opening it, a sacred blade with a sharp glint appeared.

This sacred sabre was the Hidden Moon Blade he had suppressed after killing Cang Long, and it was a very powerful King's Weapon.

For him to give out a King's Weapon, one could see how much Youshen wanted Zhang Ruochen dead.

"Fourth senior brother, this is a King's Weapon, and with your strength, refining it shouldn't be too difficult." Zhang Ruochen said.

He could see that among his three senior brothers, the most low-key Luo Chen was actually the most powerful, even Jin Yu was no match for him, and it could be said that he was comparable to Kong Lanyou in strength.

Emperor Ming had extremely good foresight, that he had only accepted six disciples in his life, and each of them were by no means ordinary. Even his sixth disciple, Lu Yuanzhi, while his cultivation talent may be slightly poorer, but he was an invaluable genius in his ability to refining artifacts.

Upon hearing the words 'King's Weapons', no matter how indifferent Luo Chen's temperament was, he could not help but to show a shocked expression. He did not expect at all Zhang Ruochen to possess a King's Weapon, and would give it to him.

"Luo Chen, what are you waiting for? Hurry up and refine it. The enemy is before us, stop lollygagging." Jin Yu urged.

Hearing this, Luo Chen snapped back to his senses, and immediately took the Hidden Moon Blade from the multi-dimensional space as he roused his own monstrous saint Qi to start refining it.

Zhang Ruochen put the Secret Tome of Time and Space away and cast his eyes on Kong Lanyou.

Before he could say anything, Kong Lanyou gently shook the bamboo flute in her hand and smiled gently. "Having this is enough already."

Looking at the bamboo flute, many thoughts were evoked in Zhang Ruochen's mind.

Eight hundred years ago, Kong Lanyou had always liked to follow behind him, and pestering him to play with her. She was even jealous about Chi Yao once, saying that he only had Chi Yao in his heart.

In order to make her happy, he had personally composed the 'Song of Lanyou', and played it to her with a bamboo flute.

Eight hundred years on, Kong Lanyou still kept that original bamboo flute.

Zhang Ruochen could see that the bamboo flute had become extremely extraordinary, and was infused with a Neverwithier aura, and it was not inferior to top-level sacred artifacts.

To turn an ordinary bamboo flute into a powerful sacred artifact, one could only wonder how much effort Kong Lanyou had put into it.

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen could not help but to feel agony. He had directly back into the world eight hundred years later, but Kong Lanyou had waited for him for eight hundred years.

Aside from agony, Zhang Ruochen felt even more guilty.

At this moment, the screams of Zi Linglong, Chi Sheng and Gu Tianyin came an abrupt end as they were all drained dry by Moyin, and died an extremely ignominious death.

Moyin's aura rose steadily, and her cultivation base was significantly improved.

If she were to go on like this, and if she could devour more powerful elites, the day of her reaching the realm of Path's Anterior was just around the corner.

It did not take long for Luo Chen to successfully refine the Hidden Moon Saber, and the aura of his entire person vaguely became a lot stronger.

At the same time, the formation array guarding the Peacock Manor became more and more unstable as more and more formation inscriptions were obliterated.

“Fight our way out.”

Without further delay, Zhang Ruochen and the five others immediately struck out as they charged out of the Peacock Manor.

“Since all of you want to die so badly, I’ll grant you that wish.” Shang Ziyang’s said with cold eyes.

Immediately, many Heavenly Realm powerhouses no longer attacked the formation protecting the Peacock Manor and shifted their attacks against Zhang Ruochen and his party.

Di Feng smiled wickedly and said. “Leave Kong Lanyou to me.”

As he spoke, a huge amount terrifying evil Qi emerged from Di Feng’s body, transforming into a huge hand about a hundred feet wide as it grabbed at Kong Lanyou.

Kong Lanyou lifted her finger like a sword, and with a gentle stroke, an extremely deadly sword light flew out and slashed at the incoming giant hand of evil Qi head on.

Whoosh!

The giant hand of evil Qi was extremely powerful, but it was still cut in half by the sword light.

However, after being cut apart, it instead transformed into two giant hands of evil Qi dozens of feet wide as they continued to grab at Kong Lanyou.

A vague figure flew out of Kong Lanyou’s body, holding the yellowed bamboo flute in hand.

That was Kong Lanyou’s sword soul, and while it was not as powerful as Zhang Ruochen’s, it was not to be underestimated.

The sword soul used the bamboo flute as a blade, and unleashed an exquisite sword technique.

BAAMM!!BAAMM!!

The two ten-foot wide hands were instantly obliterated, and reduced into blobs of evil Qi.

Kong Lanyou's own talent in swordsmanship was actually not too high, but because Zhang Ruochen loved swordsmanship, she also got herself to train in it.

After eight hundred years, Kong Lanyou had finally made considerable achievements in the realm of swordsmanship.

At this moment, for her to use her own swordsmanship to fight against her enemy was actually to show Zhang Ruochen, and hoping to get his approval.

Seeing so many Heavenly Realm elites surrounding him, Zhang Ruochen could not help but sneer, saying. "Do you really think there is no one on my side?"

As he said, Zhang Ruochen waved his hand, and twenty-six people appeared, each of them exuded an incomparably powerful aura, all of them Nine-step Saint Kings.

"Hmm? They are the Nine-step Saint Kings that Senior Brother Gu had controlled with the Soulbender." Si Han had a shocked expression as he instantly recognized the powerhouses Zhang Ruochen had summoned.

Feng Gudao had originally controlled thirty Nine-step Saint Kings, and in order to deal with Zhang Ruochen, he had one blow up his saints source. In the end however, not only Zhang Ruochen did not die, but the explosion took another three Nine-step Saint Kings out, leaving only twenty-six of them left.

Without a question, this was an extremely terrifying fighting force.

All of these Nine-step Saint Kings were controlled by Feng Gudao, and now that the latter's dead, the control over them were naturally lifted.

After Zhang Ruochen explained the situation to them, all twenty-six Nine-step Saint Kings agreed to help fight the Heavenly Realm powerhouses.

It was mainly because they had no other choice, if they do not fight alongside Zhang Ruochen, only death awaits them.

Shang Ziyan flew out from the warship and appeared before Zhang Ruochen as he said indifferently. "Zhang Ruochen, even if you were to summon more elites, it is useless. This time, you will not escape."

Clearly, Shang Ziyan intended to strike against Zhang Ruochen himself, and remove this scourge from his life.

Two figures appeared out of Shang Ziyan's body in succession, both of them looking exactly him, and even the aura unleashed was as powerful as Shang Ziyan's.

Against a powerful foe like Zhang Ruochen, Shang Ziyan dared not take him lightly as he used his full might from the beginning, unleashing the Way of the Three Corpses.

This technique was one of the most difficult exercises on the Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank, and since ancient times, only a few people had successfully cultivate it, and Shang Ziyan had managed to do so.

This alone was enough to see how extraordinary Shang Ziyan's talents were, and few in across many worlds and realms could match him.

Shang Ziyan's Flame Corpse and held the Bloodbairn his hand, while his Frost Corpse held the Tower of a Thousand Temperings, while the Cardinal Corpse held the Five-colored Merit Stele. All these three objects were undoubtedly unparalleled artifacts.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Ancient Abyssal Blade and held it in his hand, and at the same time he deployed the Zangshan Demonic Mirror, letting it hang over his head as it stood ready for combat.

"Shang Ziyan, let's settle whatever score we have tonight." Zhang Ruochen said.

Back then, in order to deal with him, Shang Ziyan had hired killers to kill Bai Su, Zhu Hongtao, Wan Ke, Ling Shu and a group of old Shengming cadres, and then cruelly hung their severed heads outside the Yinyang Hall.

Zhang Ruochen saw the heads of Bai Su and the others being blown up with his own eyes, and their souls annihilated. He had always kept this deep hatred in his mind, and wanted to avenge them at very moment.

“Second senior brother, third senior brother, fifth senior sister, Bai Su, the warriors of Shengming. I will take Shang Ziyan’s head tonight, to appease your spirits in heaven.” Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

He had waited too long for this day to come, and now he should get Shang Ziyan to repay the blood debt with his own blood.